

Metadata of the Book that will be visualized online

Book Title	Renaissance Averroism and Its Aftermath: Arabic Philosophy in Early Modern Europe
Book SubTitle	
Copyright Year	2013
Copyright Holder	Springer Science + Business Media Dordrecht

Editor	Family Name	Akasoy
	Particle	
	Given Name	Anna
	Suffix	
	Division	
	Organization	
	Address	Auf der Papenburg 14, 44801, Bochum, Germany
	Email	akasoy@gmx.net
Editor	Family Name	Giglioni
	Particle	
	Given Name	Guido
	Suffix	
	Division	
	Organization	Warburg Institute
	Address	Woburn Square, WC1H 0AB, London, United Kingdom
	Email	guido.giglioni@sas.ac.uk

Renaissance Averroism and Its Aftermath:
Arabic Philosophy in Early Modern Europe

1

2

Uncorrected Proof

3 ARCHIVES INTERNATIONALES D'HISTOIRE DES IDÉES

4 INTERNATIONAL ARCHIVES OF THE HISTORY OF IDEAS

5 211

6 RENAISSANCE AVERROISM
7 AND ITS AFTERMATH: ARABIC
8 PHILOSOPHY IN EARLY MODERN EUROPE

9 Anna Akasoy
10 Guido Giglioni

11 *Board of Directors:*

12 *Founding Editors:*

13 Paul Dibon[†], Richard H. Popkin[†]

14 *Director:*

15 Sarah Hutton, *University of Aberystwyth, UK*

16 *Associate Directors:*

17 J.E. Force, *University of Kentucky, Lexington, USA;*

18 J.C. Laursen, *University of California, Riverside, USA*

19 *Editorial Board:*

20 M.J.B. Allen, *Los Angeles;* J.-R. Armogathe, *Paris;* S. Clucas, *London;*

21 G. Giglioni, *London;* P. Harrison, *Oxford;* J. Henry, *Edinburgh;*

22 M. Mulsow, *Erfurt;* G. Paganini, *Vercelli;* J. Popkin, *Lexington;*

23 J. Robertson, *Cambridge;* G.A.J. Rogers, *Keele;* J.F. Sebastian, *Bilbao;*

24 A. Sutcliffe, *London;* A. Thomson, *Paris;* Th. Verbeek, *Utrecht*

25 For further volumes:

26 <http://www.springer.com/series/5640>

Anna Akasoy • Guido Giglioni
Editors

27
28

Renaissance Averroism
and Its Aftermath: Arabic
Philosophy in Early
Modern Europe

29
30
31
32

Uncorrected Proof

33	<i>Editors</i>		37
34	Anna Akasoy	Guido Giglioni	38
35	Ruhr University Bochum	Warburg Institute	39
36	Germany	London, UK	40

41 Chapter 5 is published with kind permission of © Fabrizio Serra Editore, Pisa and Rome.
42 2010. All rights reserved

43 ISSN 0066-6610
44 ISBN 978-94-007-5239-9 ISBN 978-94-007-5240-5 (eBook)
45 DOI 10.1007/978-94-007-5240-5
46 Springer Dordrecht Heidelberg New York London

47 Library of Congress Control Number: 2012947951

48 © Springer Science+Business Media Dordrecht 2013

49 This work is subject to copyright. All rights are reserved by the Publisher, whether the whole or part of
50 the material is concerned, specifically the rights of translation, reprinting, reuse of illustrations, recitation,
51 broadcasting, reproduction on microfilms or in any other physical way, and transmission or information
52 storage and retrieval, electronic adaptation, computer software, or by similar or dissimilar methodology
53 now known or hereafter developed. Exempted from this legal reservation are brief excerpts in connection
54 with reviews or scholarly analysis or material supplied specifically for the purpose of being entered and
55 executed on a computer system, for exclusive use by the purchaser of the work. Duplication of this
56 publication or parts thereof is permitted only under the provisions of the Copyright Law of the Publisher's
57 location, in its current version, and permission for use must always be obtained from Springer. Permissions
58 for use may be obtained through RightsLink at the Copyright Clearance Center. Violations are liable to
59 prosecution under the respective Copyright Law.

60 The use of general descriptive names, registered names, trademarks, service marks, etc. in this publication
61 does not imply, even in the absence of a specific statement, that such names are exempt from the relevant
62 protective laws and regulations and therefore free for general use.

63 While the advice and information in this book are believed to be true and accurate at the date of
64 publication, neither the authors nor the editors nor the publisher can accept any legal responsibility for
65 any errors or omissions that may be made. The publisher makes no warranty, express or implied, with
66 respect to the material contained herein.

67 Printed on acid-free paper

68 Springer is part of Springer Science+Business Media (www.springer.com)

Preface

69

Most of the articles in this volume were presented at the conference Renaissance Averroism and its Aftermath: Arabic Philosophy in Early Modern Europe, held in June 2008 at the Warburg Institute. We would like to thank the Warburg Institute for hosting the conference. We would also like to thank the Gerda Henkel Foundation, the British Academy, the Institute of Philosophy (School of Advanced Study, University of London) and the Cassamarca Foundation for supporting the conference and the publication of this volume. Finally, we would like to thank Raphaëlle Burns for her invaluable help during the last stages of the editorial work.

Uncorrected Proof

Contents

78

[AU1]	1 Introduction	1	79
	Guido Giglioni		80
	Part I Middle Ages and Renaissance		81
	2 Averroes Against Avicenna on Human Spontaneous Generation: The Starting-Point of a Lasting Debate	37	82 83
	Amos Bertolacci		84
	3 Revisiting the 1552–1550 and 1562 Aristotle-Averroes Edition	55	85
	Charles Burnett		86
	4 Humanism and the Assessment of Averroes in the Renaissance	65	87 88
	Craig Martin		89
	5 Marsilio Ficino on Saturn, the Plotinian Mind, and the Monster of Averroes	81	90 91
	Michael J.B. Allen		92
	6 The Transmutations of a Young Averroist: Agostino Nifo's Commentary on the <i>Destructio Destructionum</i> of Averroes and the Nature of Celestial Influences	99	93 94 95
	Nicholas Holland		96
	7 Intellectual Beatitude in the Averroist Tradition: The Case of Agostino Nifo	125	97 98
	Leen Spruit		99
	8 Averroistic Themes in Girolamo Cardano's <i>De Immortalitate Animorum</i>	145	100 101
	José Manuel García Valverde		102

103	9 Phantasms of Reason and Shadows of Matter:	
104	Averroes's Notion of the Imagination	
105	and Its Renaissance Interpreters	173
106	Guido Giglioni	
107	Part II The Early Modern Period	
108	10 The Cambridge Platonists and Averroes	197
109	Sarah Hutton	
110	11 Reconsidering the Case of Elijah Delmedigo's	
111	Averroism and Its Impact on Spinoza	213
112	Carlos Fraenkel	
113	12 Averroes and Arabic Philosophy in the Modern <i>Historia</i>	
114	<i>Philosophica</i>: Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries	237
115	Gregorio Piaia	
116	13 Immanuel Kant, Universal Understanding,	
117	and the Meaning of Averroism in the German Enlightenment	255
118	Marco Sgarbi	
119	Part III Averroism and Modernity	
120	14 Ernest Renan and Averroism: The Story	
121	of a Misinterpretation	273
122	John Marenbon	
123	15 Leo Strauss and the Alethiometer	285
124	James E. Montgomery	
125	16 Was Ibn Rushd an Averroist? The Problem,	
126	the Debate, and Its Philosophical Implications	321
127	Anna Akasoy	
128	Contributors	349
129	Bibliography	353
130	Name Index	383
131	Subject Index	000

Author Query

Chapter No.: FM 0001629581

Query	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	As per the Chapter opening page "Chapter title" has been changed in Chaps. 6 and 10. Please confirm.	

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 1 1

Introduction 2

Guido Giglioni 3

Averroan, Averroist and Averroistic 4

Before launching into the discussions and debates at the heart of this volume, a number of disclaimers and caveats are in order. First of all, this is not primarily a book on Ibn Rushd, the renowned judge, physician and commentator of Aristotle who lived in twelfth-century al-Andalus, but on a cultural phenomenon known since the thirteenth century as Averroism. This is no terminological hair-splitting on our part: keeping this difference in mind while reading the book is crucial. That the commentator Ibn Rushd was also a thinker in his own right adds to the difficulties in disentangling the nature of the authorial intention in his work. Some initial terminological qualifications, we hope, will shed light on the linguistic and cultural complexities of the matter: in this volume, the name 'Ibn Rushd' denotes the actual historical figure, whereas his literary incarnation in translations and philosophical treatises of the Latin West will be referred to as 'Averroes'. We have taken special care in distinguishing between 'Averroan', 'Averroist' and 'Averroistic' every time we thought it necessary to alert the reader to the constantly intersecting levels of history and historiography. 5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18

'Averroan' refers to any philosophical view that belongs directly to Ibn Rushd and is synonym with 'Rushdian'.¹ 'Averroist' refers to opinions held by any follower of Ibn Rushd in the Latin West during the late Middle Ages, the Renaissance 19
20
21

¹ See Jean-Baptiste Brenet, *Transferts du sujet: La noétique d'Averroès selon Jean de Jandun* (Paris: Vrin, 2003), p. 16, n. 1: "'Rushdien" désigne ce qui ressortit à Averroès (et non à son interprétation latine), ou à Ibn Rushd (lorsqu'on fait référence à des oeuvres que les Latins n'avaient pas). On the many cultural and linguistic complexities involving Averroes's reception in the Latin West, see Alain de Libera, 'Introduction', in Averroès, *L'intelligence et la pensée. Sur le De anima*, ed. by A. de Libera (Paris: Flammarion, 1998), pp. 7–45.

G. Giglioni (✉)
Warburg Institute, Woburn Square, WC1 0AB London, UK
e-mail: guido.giglioni@sas.ac.uk

22 and – though less and less frequently – during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.
 23 Finally, ‘Averroistic’ refers to the generic cultural label denoting a pronounced
 24 rationalistic attitude, of a vaguely Aristotelian ilk, towards questions of philosophical
 25 psychology (in particular, the nature of the human mind and its survival after the death
 26 of the body), natural determinism and, above all, the relationships between philo-
 27 sophical freedom and dogmatic truths, often of a religious kind.² Averroistic thinkers
 28 looked (and still look) at Averroes as the philosopher who denied the personal iden-
 29 tity of human beings, of course, but also as an incarnation of Machiavellian dissimula-
 30 tion in politics and religion, as one of the heroes of the *libertinage érudit*, as a precursor
 31 of seventeenth-century materialism, as a pantheist and even an atheist.

32 It is the label ‘Averroistic’ that often makes historians of medieval and Renaissance
 33 philosophy uncomfortable.³ And yet the perception of Ibn Rushd’s work as convey-
 34 ing a number of ‘Averroistic’ attitudes towards religion and politics lasted long after
 35 the sixteenth century and in fact reached its prime as late as the eighteenth century.
 36 As such, ‘Averroistic’ free-thinking and ‘erudite’ libertinism can legitimately be seen
 37 as part of early modern European culture, for cultural perceptions may at times be as
 38 significant as the original texts that, more or less obliquely, generated or inspired
 39 such perceptions. As is sometimes revealed by the long-term debate over what one
 40 should mean by ‘Averroism’, anxiety about philological and political correctness
 41 betrays greater concerns about the meaning of philosophy and historical research.

42 Another important qualification regards the terminological diversity that charac-
 43 terises the meanings of ‘intellect’ in Averroan and Averroist works. In this volume,
 44 the reader will encounter all sorts of intellects: material, passive, possible, potential,
 45 dispositional, acquired and agent. The following terse specifications are simply
 46 meant to provide a preliminary sketch, a vademecum in the uneven territories of
 47 Averroan noetics. In Averroes’s cosmos, intellects are many and differentiated
 48 according to their degree of perfection, i.e., ‘actuality’. Their function is to actualise,
 49 that is, bring to completion all sorts of processes that lie in a condition of potential-
 50 ity. In so doing, intellects produce reality and increase the level of moral perfection
 51 (and therefore bliss) in the universe. The ‘material’ intellect is the universal receiver
 52 of all sublunary forms, a state of pure receptivity, and since in order to be a proper
 53 receiver, a receiver cannot have in itself anything of the received items, the material
 54 intellect is in fact immaterial. It is the universal repository of all the intelligibles
 55 shared by human knowing subjects. It is called ‘material’ because of its passive
 56 (*patibilis*) nature.⁴ By contrast, the active or agent intellect is unmixed, impassible

² As pointed out by Massimo Campanini, ‘an aura of militant intellectualism’ has always surrounded the many incarnations of Averroism in European culture. See his *Averroè* (Bologna: il Mulino, 2007), p. 8.

³ See, for instance, P. O. Kristeller, ‘Paduan Averroism and Alexandrism in the Light of Recent Studies’, in Id., *Renaissance Thought and the Arts* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1990 [1964, 1980]), pp. 111–118 (113).

⁴ Jacopo Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, in *De rebus naturalibus libri XXX* (Frankfurt: Lazar Zetzner, 1607; repr. Frankfurt: Minerva, 1966), c. 963CDE. See also Tommaso Campanella, *Del senso delle cose e della magia*, ed. by Germana Ernst (Rome and Bari: Laterza, 2007), p. 84: ‘seguirà che, uno intendendo una cosa, tutti l’intenderiano per l’unità dell’intelletto.’

and separate, defined by Averroes as *forma nobis*, a form *for* us, but not *in* us.⁵ 57
 According to Averroist conventional wisdom, the intellect cannot be the substantial 58
 form of individual human beings. Averroes argued that there is one mind for all 59
 human beings, corresponding to the lowest intellect in the series of emanated intel- 60
 lects. Humankind thinks by being actualised by the lowest of the celestial intelli- 61
 gences. However, although they are not intellects, individual human souls can 62
 connect with the intellect (possible and even active) every time they engage in forms 63
 of abstract knowledge. The reward of this intellectual endeavour is that, together 64
 with cognitive clarity, human souls reach a state of intellectual beatitude. Mental 65
 happiness is the reward of intellectual work (*adeptio*). Further varieties in the mot- 66
 ley crew of Renaissance intellects can be found in the rest of this volume. 67

Finally, a few words on what we may call the hermeneutical predicament at the 68
 heart of Averroes's philosophy and its reception: Aristotle, Ibn Rushd, Averroes and 69
 Averroist Aristotelians are constituent elements, all connected to each other, of what 70
 we might call an exegetical nebula, and yet Ibn Rushd is simultaneously more and 71
 less than Aristotle, Averroes more and less than Ibn Rushd, and medieval and early 72
 modern Averroist Aristotelians more and less than the simple sum of Aristotle and 73
 Ibn Rushd cum Averroes. The surplus of meaning generated in the shift from 74
 Aristotle to Ibn Rushd to Averroes and Averroist Aristotelianism has resulted in 75
 extraordinarily creative appropriations and reuses, while the contours separating the 76
 elements of the nebula remain nevertheless frustratingly blurry. It is certainly not an 77
 accident that 'who is who' has often been the question used by some historians in 78
 their attempts to downplay the issue of Averroism and the Averroists from the later 79
 Middle Ages to the early modern period. 80

Early Modern Averroism: Why Bother? 81

A scholar of Islamic law and theology and Graeco-Arabic philosophy and medicine, 82
 Abū'l-Walīd Muḥammad ibn Rushd, Latinised as Averroes, was born in 1126 in 83
 Cordoba into a renowned family of jurists, and died in Marrakesh in 1198. Court 84
 physician of the dynasty of the Almohads, who ruled over al-Andalus from 1147, he 85
 also worked as a judge and served in a number of important official positions. 86
 Around 1168, he wrote a treatise on law, *Bidāyat al-mujtahid wa-nihāyat al-muqtaṣid* 87
fī'l-fiqh ('The Starting-Point of the Learned Man Engaged in an Effort of Personal 88
 Meditation and the Final Achievement of the Learned Person, Who is Balanced in 89
 Questions of Law'), in which he discussed the difficulties of dealing with the diver- 90
 gent opinions among Muslim jurists. It was in this period that he was introduced at 91
 court by the philosopher Abū Bakr ibn Ṭufayl (c. 1105–1185) and appointed as 92

⁵ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, ed. F. Stuart Crawford (Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1953) p. 485; *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, ed. and trans. Richard C. Taylor (New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2009), p. 387.

93 personal physician to the caliph Abū Ya‘qūb Yūsuf in 1182. Originally interested in
 94 logical and medical subjects, Ibn Rushd became increasingly engaged in other
 95 branches of philosophy. Abū Ya‘qūb Yūsuf, who apparently had a keen interest in
 96 Aristotelian philosophy, asked Ibn Rushd to produce an exhaustive and consistent
 97 corpus of exegetical companions to have a better understanding of Aristotle’s works.
 98 How to communicate elite knowledge to a lay audience was an important concern
 99 of the Almohad movement. Ibn Rushd addressed the problems of sharing allegori-
 100 cal interpretations of religious texts particularly in his legal and theological works
 101 composed between 1179 and 1180 – *Kitāb faṣl al-maqāl wa-taqrīr mā bayna’l-*
 102 *sharī‘a wa’l-ḥikma min al-itṭisāl* (‘Book of the Decisive Treatise Determining the
 103 Connection between the Law and Wisdom’), *Kashf ‘an manāḥij al-adilla fī ‘aqā’id*
 104 *al-milla* (‘Uncovering the Methods of Proofs with Respect to the Beliefs of the
 105 Religious Community’) and *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut* (‘Incoherence of the Incoherence’,
 106 *Destructio destructionis*, in Latin). In Ibn Rushd’s view, conflicts originate in every
 107 field of human learning as a result of the fragmenting of truth into irreconcilable
 108 interpretations. Dominique Urvoy, among others, has highlighted the close relation-
 109 ship between Almohadism and Averroes’s philosophy.⁶ More recently, Massimo
 110 Campanini has suggested that Averroes regarded philosophy as an activity directed
 111 towards different ends, an activity reliant on different approaches depending on the
 112 circumstances of its exercise. It seems safe to say that, as a courtier, a judge and a
 113 physician, Ibn Rushd looked at philosophy as the cornerstone of a larger cultural
 114 and political project.⁷

115 At a certain point during the thirteenth century, some of Ibn Rushd’s ideas began
 116 to trickle into the Latin West. The discovery of his formidable interpretation of
 117 Aristotle went hand in hand with the recovery of Aristotle’s own work, included as
 118 lemmata in Ibn Rushd’s long commentaries. The impact that this material had on
 119 the art masters in the main universities of Europe, especially in Paris, was momen-
 120 tantous. Ibn Rushd became Averroes, i.e., the key to unlock the mysteries of the ‘mas-
 121 ter of those who know’, to quote the poet. Indeed, it must have felt as if in the course
 122 of a few decades the intellect of humankind had actualised an immense amount of
 123 latent knowledge; as a result, mental happiness spread from Paris to Bologna, from
 124 Oxford to Erfurt. Averroes arrived in the Latin West at different times. From Siger
 125 of Brabant to Immanuel Kant, Averroan, Averroist and Averroistic notions appeared
 126 and reappeared in the philosophical culture of early modern Europe. There may
 127 have been some episodes of historiographic hallucination, but a good number of
 128 Averroist sightings correspond to reality.

129 The arrival of Averroist interpretations of Aristotle in the philosophical republic
 130 of letters, however, was not always greeted with enthusiasm. This boldly original
 131 view of the cosmos and human knowledge proved irksome for many philosophers.
 132 The most disputed points included: the risk of reifying the activity of thought (for
 133 such an activity does not belong to individual cogitating human beings); the charge

⁶ Dominique Urvoy, *Ibn Rushd (Averroes)* (London: Routledge, 1991), p. 75.

⁷ Campanini, *Averroè*, p. 42.

of naturalistic determinism; an elitist view of human happiness; a condescending attitude towards the religious experience of ordinary people (for religion is a rhetorical dilution of truth accessible to the masses).

This volume intends to assess the impact that the reception of Averroist ideas had on the philosophical culture of the early modern period. Amos Bertolacci sets the stage by introducing the conflict between Avicenna and Averroes as reflected in the latter's criticism of the former's theories on human generation. This disagreement is symptomatic of different attitudes to the relationship between philosophy and religion. The following are some of the questions examined in subsequent contributions: What was Averroism in the early modern period? Who were the Averroists at the time (provided that any trace of Averroism or Averroists can still be detected in that period)? Or maybe, rephrasing the question in a way that allows us to avoid all trappings of conspiratorial theorizing: What were the perceptions of Averroism from the end of the Middle Ages to the end of the eighteenth century? And, closely related to this point, how were and are these perceptions dealt with historiographically? Our understanding of Averroism rests on an illustrious tradition of philosophical and historical research carried out by generations of eminent scholars, such as Martin Grabmann, Bruno Nardi, Fernand van Steenberghe, Anneliese Maier, Antoine René Gauthier, Zdzisław Kuksewicz, Charles J. Ermatinger, Ruedi Imbach and Alain de Libera. And yet much work remains to be done, not only because medieval and early modern material is certainly still waiting to be unearthed somewhere, in both archives and books, ready to shed more light on the reception of Averroes's work, but also because the repercussions of Averroes's philosophy, and more generally, of Arabic philosophy on European culture, beyond all facile polemics about the persistence of a supposedly original template of Greco-Roman learning, still needs to be evaluated in all its scope. As the final chapters in this volume by John Marenbon, James Montgomery and Anna Akasoy demonstrate, Averroism remains a hot topic in the field of philosophical historiography.⁸

To complicate the story further, the reception of Ibn Rushd's philosophy in the Latin West can be seen as a tale of many creative misunderstandings. It certainly is an extraordinary case of philosophical acculturation, which, as this volume shows, lasted for some centuries after its beginning in the thirteenth century. Brian Copenhaver refers to the kind of Averroism criticised by Marsilio Ficino (1433–1499) in his *Theologia Platonica* as a 'construct' largely assembled out of Aquinas's work.⁹ In this volume, Michael Allen insists on the composite nature of Ficino's Averroes and Averroists, while in his chapter on 'Humanism and the Assessment of Averroes in the Renaissance', Craig Martin argues that during the Renaissance Averroes was perceived as a philosopher who had been acquainted with the Greek commentators and could therefore be considered as a reliable source by a good

⁸ See *infra* in this volume, John Marenbon, 'Ernest Renan and Averroism: The Story of a Misinterpretation'; James E. Montgomery, 'Leo Strauss and the Alethiometer'; Anna Akasoy, 'Was Ibn Rushd an Averroist? The Problem, the Debate, and its Philosophical Implications'.

⁹ Brian Copenhaver, 'Ten Arguments in Search of a Philosopher: Averroes and Aquinas in Ficino's *Platonic Theology*', *Vivarium*, 47 (2009), pp. 444–479.

173 number of Renaissance authors.¹⁰ The idea that Averroes followed Greek authors
 174 and commentators in his interpretation of Aristotle's philosophy was particularly
 175 appealing to Renaissance scholars who were in the process of recovering a more
 176 genuinely historical view of ancient philosophy.¹¹

177 Averroism remained a term of philosophical insult long after the thirteenth cen-
 178 tury. Thus, Johann Gottfried Herder (1744–1803) could dismiss Kant's transcen-
 179 dental idealism as yet another incarnation of Averroism, as Marco Sgarbi shows in
 180 his chapter in this volume.¹² A long list of abuses worthy of Petrarch's rage can be
 181 found in an early Renaissance summa against Averroes written by Ambrogio Leone
 182 (1458/9-1525), a humanist from Nola, near Naples, and a correspondent of Erasmus,
 183 who in his youth had studied medicine and philosophy at Padua between 1477 and
 184 1484 under Nicoletto Vernia (c. 1420–1499) and Agostino Nifo (ca. 1473–1538 or
 185 1545). In 1517 he published his *Castigationes adversus Averroem* ('Emendations
 186 against Averroes') in 30 books (reprinted in 1524 and 1532). The opening epistle to
 187 the 'excellent reader' describes Averroes as a 'thief'.

188 Averroes went wrong in logic, philosophy, mathematics and other disciplines, and this
 189 happened partly because he interpreted Aristotle, Plato, other ancient philosophers and their
 190 interpreters in a wrong way, partly because he stole other people's sayings. These were not
 191 his own, but he introduced and presented them as if they were his own. Therefore, in this
 192 book not only will you have Averroes detected, convicted and reprehended as a thief; you
 193 will also get in the easiest way extensive and deep knowledge of logic and the art of lan-
 194 guage, of natural and divine things, and this in Latin and according to the precepts and
 195 teachings of the Aristotelian school.¹³

196 In his critique of the Averroist encyclopaedia, Leone seems to combine two prin-
 197 cipal anti-Averroist responses: humanist historicism and pristine Aristotelianism.
 198 His agenda is both rhetorical and metaphysical. In the dedicatory letter to Pope Leo
 199 X, Leone presents Averroes as a liar (*falsus homo*), an unreliable interpreter (*mendax*
 200 *interpres*), a corruptor of epistemological and ethical norms (*recti verique corruptor*),
 201 a defiler of the truth (*veritatis depravator*), impious (*impius*), a weak logician (*hebes*

¹⁰ See *infra* in this volume, Michael J. B. Allen, 'Marsilio Ficino on Saturn, the Plotinian Mind, and the Monster of Averroes'; Craig Martin, 'Humanism and the Assessment of Averroes in the Renaissance'.

¹¹ In this sense, Renaissance authors such as Tiberio Bacilieri and Girolamo Cardano did not find the presence of Themistian themes in Averroes particularly surprising. After all, ironic as they seem to us, eclectic accretions are the stuff of the history of human thought; 'it is more than a little ironic', writes Richard C. Taylor, that 'the foundational consideration that motivated this famous Aristotelian commentator is primarily derived from the Neoplatonic analysis of intellect provided by Themistius in his *Paraphrase of the De Anima*'. See Taylor, 'Intelligibles in Act in Averroes', in *Averroès et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, ed. Jean-Baptiste Brenet (Turnhout: Brepols, 2007), pp. 111–140 (140).

¹² See *infra* in this volume Marco Sgarbi, 'Immanuel Kant, Universal Understanding, and the Meaning of Averroism in the German Enlightenment'.

¹³ Ambrogio Leone, 'Lector optime', in *Castigationes adversus Averroem* (Venice: Bernardino and Matteo Vitali, 1517) [no page number]. On Leone, see Leen Spruit, 'Leone, Ambrogio', in *Dizionario Biografico degli Italiani* (Istituto dell'Enciclopedia Italiana: Rome, 1960-), LXIV, pp. 560–562.

logicus), an uncouth thinker (*crassus philosophus*) and a braggart (*audaculus*). But worst of all, according to Leone, was that Averroes hoped to make a name for himself in philosophy by ridiculing all the religions of the world. He who despises God, however, destroys 'the first principle and author of everything' and for this reason, in the end Averroes drowned in an ocean of lies (*in medio falsitatis pelago demersus*). To those who still believe that 'Averroes is the soul of Aristotle', Leone recommends the most recent developments in philosophical textual criticism and the newly restored exegetical expertise of the Greek commentators: 'to the extent that Aristotelian loci might be understood in the clearest possible way and explained by Greek people, he decided to revise Averroes through the newly restored Alexander, Simplicius and Themistius'.¹⁴

History as a humanist discipline is an integral part of the story of Averroes's reception in the early modern period. In this volume, the chequered career of Averroism in the emerging new genre of philosophical history is explored by Gregorio Piaia, in a chapter concerning Averroes's place in late seventeenth- and eighteenth-century histories of philosophy.¹⁵ In Piaia's opinion, among the reasons that led to the demise of the Averroist vision of nature, matter and human thinking, was Averroes's close association with Aristotelianism and his reputation as an atheist in disguise. Piaia examines a wide variety of works – critical, erudite, belletristic and popular. From Georg Horn's *Historiae philosophicae libri septem* (1655) to Johannes Gerhard Voss's *De philosophia et philosophorum libri duo* (1657–1658), from Laurent Bordelon's *Theatre philosophique* (1692) to André-François Boureau Deslandes's *Histoire critique de la philosophie* (1737), the perception of Averroes and Arabic philosophy varied, sometimes even within the same treatise. Piaia concludes his thorough account by indicating two distinctive ways of understanding the genre of history of philosophy, the *historia philosophica*, in a Baylean and Bruckerian sense, as an inquiry that is both critically and philosophically engaged on the one hand, and the *histoire de l'esprit humain*, understood as a form of cultural study, attentive to the historical and religious details in the evolution of human thought on the other. In both cases, Averroism, understood as a comprehensive interpretation of Aristotelian philosophy, permutated, often insensibly, into Averroistic exercises in atheist dissimulation and libertine scepticism. One of the last works analysed by Piaia is the *Anleitung zur Historie der Leibnizisch-Wolffischen Philosophie* (1737), by the German philosopher and physician Georg Volckmar Hartmann. Marco Sgarbi's chapter starts from where Piaia's ends. Sgarbi traces currents of Aristotelianism (more or less inflected in an Averroist or Averroistic sense) in Germany before Kant, and he confirms that at the end of the eighteenth century, being called an 'Averroist' could still be a cause for philosophical embarrassment.¹⁶ Indeed, the issues of dissimulation and double-truth still seem to affect the

¹⁴ Ambrogio Leone to Pope Leo X, in Leone, *Castigationes adversus Averroem* [no page number].

¹⁵ Gregorio Piaia, 'Averroes and Arabic Philosophy in the Modern *Historia Philosophica*: Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries'.

¹⁶ Sgarbi, 'Immanuel Kant, Universal Understanding, and the Meaning of Averroism in the German Enlightenment', in this volume, pp. @@.

241 contemporary debate about Averroism, and more generally Arabic philosophy.
 242 In her chapter on the notoriously complicated character of Ibn Rushd's Averroism,
 243 Anna Akasoy revisits the topic of 'the possible Averroist identity of Ibn Rushd.' She
 244 draws the attention of historians of medieval and early modern Averroism to the
 245 highly controversial nature of the current historiographic situation, in which sharply
 246 divided fronts of inquiry seem unable to come to terms with the results of their
 247 opponents' research: the 'Straussians', on the one hand, advocating a philosophi-
 248 cally committed study of the history of philosophy, and the more philologically-
 249 alerted historians, on the other, who defend a study of Averroes's work centred on
 250 the documentary evidence provided by textual scholarship.¹⁷

251 Finally, with respect to the question of the dissemination of Averroist themes in
 252 the early Renaissance, besides the more evident intellectual reasons, one should
 253 consider three interrelated – technological, economical and institutional – aspects of
 254 the matter: the invention and diffusion of the printing press; the university establish-
 255 ment and its teaching methods; and finally, the rise of two philosophical literary
 256 genres, that of the philosophy textbook and that of the history of philosophy book.
 257 Charles B. Schmitt, in his seminal study on the 1550–1552 edition of Aristotle's
 258 oeuvre with Averroes's commentaries, published by the Giunta brothers in Venice
 259 (1550–1552), presented the work as a magnificent product of the synergy between
 260 book commerce and university-based philosophical research and teaching. In many
 261 respects, Averroes's popularity during the Renaissance greatly relied on his status as
 262 required reading in some Italian universities as well as on the growth of the printing
 263 press trade.¹⁸ In this volume, Charles Burnett expands on the topic and returns to
 264 examine the famous edition by the Giunta brothers. As pointed out by Burnett, this
 265 edition represented the culmination of a particular way of reading and interpreting
 266 Aristotle, based on a systematic approach to knowledge, a particular emphasis on
 267 methodological issues, a predilection for philosophical arguments over questions of
 268 textual criticism, a very technical Latin jargon and little to no interest for the origi-
 269 nal Greek. Burnett looks at the prefatory materials as sources of information which
 270 may shed light on the cultural milieu that produced such a remarkable intellectual
 271 and material enterprise. He highlights the need to know more about the editors who
 272 prepared the texts for publication, such as Giovanni Battista Bagolino (d. 1552),
 273 Marco degli Oddi (1526–1591) and Romolo Fabio (fl. 1550s)¹⁹ and compares the
 274 various editions (1550–1552, 1562, 1574, and another Venice reprint in 1560, but

¹⁷ Anna Akasoy, 'Was Ibn Rushd an Averroist?', in this volume.

¹⁸ Charles B. Schmitt, 'Renaissance Averroism Studied through the Venetian Editions of Aristotle-Averroes (with Particular Reference to the Giunta Edition of 1550–2)', originally in *L'averroismo in Italia* (Rome: Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei, 1979), pp. 121–142; repr. in Charles B. Schmitt, *The Aristotelian Tradition and Renaissance Universities* (London: Variorum Reprints, 1984), pp. 121–142; Copenhagen, *Ten Arguments in Search of a Philosopher*, p. 479.

¹⁹ In 1676, in his *Les réflexions sur l'éloquence, la poétique, l'histoire et la philosophie*, the Jesuit René Rapin (1621–1687) wrote that Bagolino, Mantino and Zimara went to excruciatingly great lengths to fix Averroes's Latin text because he had been unable to understand the original meaning of Aristotle's ideas. See Gregorio Piaia's chapter in this volume.

by a different publisher, Comin da Trino). In particular, Burnett concentrates on the editorial work that Bernardino Tomitano (1517–1576) conducted on the logical books of the *Opera* and on the way in which different Latin translations of Averroes's commentary on Aristotle's *Posterior Analytics* by Abraham de Balmes (ca. 1460–1523), Giovanni Francesco Burana of Verona (ca. 1475/80–after 1503) and Jacob Mantino ben Samuel (d. 1549) were organised and used in the various editions of the *Opera*. If in the first edition Bagolino and Degli Oddi managed to amalgamate the three versions into one Latin text, in the 1562 edition the text was distributed in three columns, an evolution that witnesses a deeper interest in expanding the philological and teaching resources of the text. Burnett concludes by contextualising Tomitano's contribution as a typical product of the philosophical and medical environment of the University of Padua. As a whole, the amount of work that Paduan teachers devoted to Averroes's and Aristotle's works on logic, especially the *Posterior Analytics* and its commentaries, is a clear indication of their interest in questions of method, from both a scientific and pedagogical point of view. What is more, we witness in Tomitano the slow erosion of the past tradition of reading Aristotle entirely in Latin, for he included a detailed philological commentary on *Posterior Analytics* in which the Greek text is cited throughout.²⁰

Given the complex situation concerning the relationships between original texts, translations and editions, at times one has the impression that working on Latin Averroism looks more like an exercise in historical imagination, disciplined though it may be, than history of philosophy. And yet Ibn Rushd's writings and their European reception as Averroes's work are inextricably intertwined with the particular conditions in which they took their characteristic shape and the ways in which they were transferred to other cultural contexts. If we can draw one lesson from the study of the reception of the Averroan legacy and the historiography of Averroism, it is that we need to keep interpreting. Which in the end sounds like a characteristically Averroan precept, coming from a philosopher who deemed hermeneutical exercise to be a fundamental activity to preserve the cohesion of human communities and the growth of knowledge.

Who Were the Early Modern Averroists? 305

The question concerning the identity of Averroists appeared frequently in the annals of medieval and early modern philosophy, from Thomas Aquinas (1225–1274) to Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz (1646–1716). We have already hinted at the fact that Herder called Kant an Averroist an accusation hotly debated at the end of the eighteenth century. The hunt for actual followers of Averroes's philosophy, is, however, a different matter. Identifying real, historical cases of militant and practising Averroism presupposes that there existed among Latin interpreters of Ibn

²⁰ Charles Burnett, 'Revisiting the 1552–1550 and 1562 Aristotle-Averroes Edition'.

313 Rushd a set of doctrines that could be described as unambiguously Averroist. In
 314 the last century, Fernand van Steenberghen described Averroism as an intellectual
 315 phenomenon that mainly belonged to the fourteenth century, for before that date
 316 even radical Aristotelians such as Siger of Brabant (ca. 1240–1280s) did not
 317 possess a sufficiently clear understanding of Averroes's contribution to Aristotle's
 318 work.²¹ Recently, Dag Nikolaus Hasse has argued that 'Averroism became a
 319 movement in the fullest sense in the decades around 1500, when, in addition to all
 320 internal and external evidences, there is testimony of a doctrinal debate about the
 321 correct interpretation of Averroes.'²² From this perspective, in order for a phi-
 322 losopher to be considered a fully-fledged Averroist, he (in the period in question it
 323 was always a 'he') had to be aware of the hermeneutical predicament underlying
 324 the reception of Ibn Rushd's work. Post-Rushdian Averroism and Averroists
 325 presuppose a condition of interpretative reflexivity, without which to be an
 326 'Averroist' falls short of naivety, both in a subjective sense (Siger in Van
 327 Steenberghen's interpretation, for he didn't even know what to be a real Averroist
 328 was supposed to mean at the time) and in an objective sense (as a polemical straw-
 329 man, like in Ficino's use of 'Averroists' as mortalist Aristotelians).

330 For all these reflexive and exegetical intricacies, a set of doctrinal positions that
 331 may qualify the sense of what to be a medieval or early modern Averroist may mean
 332 in those periods can however be identified. We have already mentioned the most
 333 famous (and notorious) of these positions: the unicity of the intellect for all human
 334 beings, the eternity of the world and the theory of the double truth. John Marenbon
 335 has recently provided a useful working definition of the late medieval 'Averroist',
 336 which can be extended to describe his Renaissance counterpart. The Averroist, he
 337 says, are those Latin thinkers who

- 338 (a) accepted Averroes's view that there is only a single possible intellect;
 339 (b) concentrated their efforts on reaching and examining an accurate account of
 340 Aristotle's ideas – usually based on that presented by Averroes – even where
 341 these positions are incompatible with Christian teaching; and usually
 342 (c) adopted some sort of strategy to explain why they, though Christians, did
 343 (a) and (b).²³

344 So who were the Averroists? In some cases, we have names. But more often than
 345 not, 'Averroist' seems to have been used as a generic tag to label a particular attitude
 346 towards Aristotelian doctrines. For some historians there has never been a single

²¹ Fernand van Steenberghen, *Les œuvres et la doctrine de Siger de Brabant* (Brussels: Palais des Académies, 1938); Id., *Introduction à l'étude de la philosophie médiévale* (Louvain and Paris: Publications Universitaires; Béatrice Nauwelaerts, 1974), pp. 531–554; Id., *Maître Siger de Brabant* (Louvain and Paris: Publications Universitaires; Vander Oyez, 1977).

²² Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'Averroica Secta: Notes on the Formation of Averroist Movements in Fourteenth-Century Bologna and Renaissance Italy', in *Averroès et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, pp. 307–331 (308).

²³ John Marenbon, 'Dante's Averroism', in *Poetry and Philosophy in the Middle Ages: A Festschrift for Peter Dronke*, ed. John Marenbon (Leiden, Boston and Cologne: Brill, 2001), pp. 349–374.

actual Averroist. Averroism was used as an Aristotelian bugbear to be agitated as a spectre of irreligiousness and metaphysical aberration. Later, especially after the Enlightenment, Averroes became a beacon of secular free-thinking and its acolytes were characterised as clandestine agents of demythologising rationalism. Given the many permutations that the term 'Averroist' underwent during the early modern period, it is perhaps easier and safer to identify actual Averroists who operated during the Middle Ages. Thanks to the research of Martin Grabmann, Anneliese Maier and Zdzisław Kuksewicz among others, historians have come up with a list of names: Gentile of Cingoli (fl. 1290), Giles of Orleans (fl. 1290), Ferrandus of Spain (fl. 1290), John of Jandun (ca. 1285–1323), Anthony of Parma (fl. 1320), Taddeo of Parma (fl. 1320), Angelo of Arezzo (fl. 1325), Matteo of Gubbio (f. 1330), John of Göttingen (ca. 1295–1340), Giacomo of Piacenza (f. 1340), Peter of Modena (fl. 1340), John Baconthorpe (ca. 1290–1347), Theodoric of Magdeburg (fl. 1350), Henry of Wesalia (fl. 1360), Hermann of Winterswijk (fl. 1360), Hermann of Erfurt (fl. 1360).²⁴ Averro-sceptics, however, will always take advantage of the already mentioned hermeneutical predicament (Ibn Rushd-Aristotle-Averroes-Averroists) to question the real existence of both Averroism and Averroists. Facetiously, P. O. Kristeller once remarked that, '[i]f we call Averroists only those Aristotelians who agree with Averroes on the interpretation of every single passage in Aristotle, there hardly ever was a single Averroist. If we call Averroist any thinker who took any views from Averroes's commentaries, there hardly was a single Aristotelian who could not be thus called an Averroist.' Because of this generalised ambiguity in the use of the term 'Averroism', Kristeller's conclusion was that 'we are forced either to abandon the term Averroism altogether, or to limit it to those few thinkers who accepted the unity of the intellect, or finally to use it arbitrarily for that broad group of thinkers who pursued Aristotelian philosophy apart from theology and whom we might better describe as secular Aristotelians.'²⁵

²⁴ Anneliese Maier, 'Wilhelm von Alnwicks Bologneser Quaestionen gegen den Averroismus', in *Ausgehendes Mittelalter: Gesammelte Aufsätze geistesgeschichte des 14. Jahrhunderts*, 3 vols (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1964–1977), I, pp. 1–40; Ead., 'Ein unbeachteter "Averroist" des 14. Jahrhunderts: Walter Burley', in *Ausgehendes Mittelalter: Gesammelte Aufsätze geistesgeschichte des 14. Jahrhunderts*, 3 vols (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1964–1977), I, pp. 101–121; Ead., 'Die Bologneser Philosophen des 14. Jahrhunderts', *Ausgehendes Mittelalter: Gesammelte Aufsätze geistesgeschichte des 14. Jahrhunderts*, 3 vols (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1964–1977), II, pp. 335–349; Zdzisław Kuksewicz, *Avverroïsme bolonais au XIVe siècle* (Wrocław, Warsaw and Krakow: Ossolineum, 1965); Id., *De Siger de Brabant à Jacques de Plaisance: La théorie de l'intellect chez les Averroïstes latins des XIIIe et XIVe siècles* (Wrocław, Warsaw and Krakow: Ossolineum, 1968); Id., 'La découverte d'une école averroïste inconnue: Erfurt', in *Averroës et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, pp. 299–306; René A. Gauthier, 'Notes sur les débuts (1225–1240) du premier "averroïsme"', *Revue des Sciences Philosophiques et Théologiques*, 66 (1982), pp. 321–374; Luca Bianchi, "'Reducing Aristotle's Doctrine to Simple Truth': Cesare Crivellati and His Struggle against the Averroists", in *Christian Readings of Aristotle from the Middle Ages to the Renaissance*, ed. by Luca Bianchi (Turnhout: Brepols, 2011), pp. 397–424.

²⁵ P. O. Kristeller, 'Paduan Averroism and Alexandrism in the Light of Recent Studies', pp. 114–115.

374 This point leads us to the heart of the difficulty concerning the identity of early
 375 modern Averroists. For some historians, such authors as Paolo Nicoletti of Udine,
 376 known as Paul of Venice (ca. 1369–1429), Niccolò Tignosi (1402–1474), the young
 377 Nicoletto Vernia, Alessandro Achillini (1463–1512), the young Agostino Nifo,
 378 Luca Prassicio (d. 1533), Antonio Bernardi (1502–1565) and Francesco Vimercato
 379 (1512–1571) can be viewed as loyal followers of the Averroist reading of Aristotle's
 380 philosophy. Other authors are Averroists in a much looser sense. In general, however,
 381 the picture seems to be far more uneven than labels such as 'Renaissance Averroism'
 382 may suggest. A variety of Averroist currents existed in the period: Sigerian trends
 383 (Alessandro Achillini, the young Nifo and Tiberio Bacilieri, who taught in Padua
 384 and Pavia in the early years of the sixteenth century); the intriguingly eclectic
 385 Averroism of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola (1463–1494), mediated through a
 386 number of different sources; a form of Averroism we might call 'pragmatic', where
 387 Averroes's commentaries continued to be used as an indispensable teaching tool, as
 388 is often the case with Marcantonio Zimara (1475–1535) or even Pietro Pomponazzi
 389 (1462–1525); currents of mystical Averroism; Simplician readings of Averroes, full
 390 of references to Theophrastus and Themistius, as in Marcantonio Genua (1491–
 391 1563), Francesco Piccolomini (1523–1607) and Girolamo Cardano (1501–1576).

392 In all probability, the most popular version of Renaissance Averroism was the
 393 interpretation defined by Bruno Nardi as 'Sigerian', to which the Italian scholar
 394 devoted a series of important studies between the 1910s and the 1950s. According
 395 to Nardi, the solution that Siger had outlined in his *De anima intellectiva* around
 396 1270 became the standard position among fourteenth-century Averroist masters of
 397 arts in Paris and Bologna.²⁶ In Siger's interpretation, the intellect was a separate
 398 substance, one for the whole human species, and was joined to single individuals
 399 through a substantial union, which constituted the form and final actualisation of the
 400 human being. Along similar lines, in the first half of the fifteenth century, Paul of
 401 Venice argued that the existence of individual intellective souls conflicted with the
 402 principle of natural economy (*natura nihil facit frustra*): the human species being
 403 one, there was no need to multiply countless intellects for each single human being.²⁷
 404 However, the Sigerian explanation of the substantial union between the intellect and
 405 the human soul questioned the very unity of the human compound, understood as a
 406 vital and cognitive subject. In his *In libros de anima explanatio* (1415–1420), Paul
 407 of Venice summed up the problem by introducing the idea of a double soul: 'The
 408 human being, apart from the partial souls [vegetative and sensitive], has two total
 409 souls, i.e., the sensitive cogitative, which is generable and corruptible, that performs
 410 functions of inherence and information, and the intellective one, perpetual and

²⁶ Bruno Nardi, *Sigieri di Brabante nel pensiero del Rinascimento italiano* (Rome: Edizioni Italiane, 1945); Id., *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI* (Florence: Sansoni, 1958); Zdzisław Kuksewicz, 'The Latin Averroism of the Late Thirteenth Century', in *Averroism in Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, ed. Friedrich Niewöhner and Loris Sturlese (Zürich: Spur, 1994), pp. 101–113.

²⁷ Paul of Venice, *Summa philosophiae naturalis* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1503), f. 88, quoted in Nardi, *Sigieri di Brabante nel pensiero del Rinascimento italiano*, p. 125.

eternal, that informs but does not inhere.' This meant that a human being is not human in an absolute sense (*praecise*) because of the cogitative soul, nor is he such because of the intellective soul, but as a result of both souls at the same time (*per amabas simul*).²⁸ Writing in 1518, after his 'Averroist phase', Agostino Nifo was still referring to the Sigerian interpretation when he described the Averroists as those philosophers who 'say that the intellective soul is a whole (*totum quoddam*) constituted by the intellect and the sensitive and vegetative principle.' Nifo introduced the term and notion of *semianima* to denote this particular view:

The intellect is indeed a part of the intellective soul. They imagine that the intellect is as it were a semi-soul (*semianima*), which is one half of the intellective soul; the whole thing that is transmitted by the seed is the other half of the intellective soul. The intellective soul as a whole results from these semi-souls, as it were, and it is individualised (*numeratur*) in human beings, although the intellect, which is a semi-soul of the intellective soul, is one in number in everyone (*unus numero sit in omnibus*).²⁹

In keeping with Siger of Brabant and Paul of Venice, Agostino Nifo considered the cogitative soul and the intellective soul as two distinct forms, but joined together so closely and intimately that they completed each other and constituted one single living and thinking individual.³⁰

The greatest difficulty with the post-Sigerian model of the dual soul was how to explain both human selfhood and its vital union with the body. Are we all, perhaps, one single human being? Among the philosophers who in the Renaissance were more sympathetic to Averroes's solution, Achillini thought that he could circumvent the difficulty by claiming that, while reason is one in number for all human beings and acts as a *forma assistens* (i.e., acting from the outside, in a completely immaterial fashion, without informing the ensouled compound), this same reason constitutes as many different individuals as are the cogitative powers to which it is connected. In this view, the universal mind belonging to the whole human species was deemed to be instantiated by each individual's history of images and memories. Like Siger, Paul of Venice and the young Nifo, Achillini maintained that a human being had two forms, i.e., the cogitative faculty and the intellect, and that the cogitative form had sufficient cognitive capacity to be actualised by the intellect. In *De elementis* (1505), he acknowledged the dual status of human nature and that there were two 'principles of knowledge' (*principia cognoscendi*) in human beings:

the one has a universal scope and it is the intellect, incorporeal, inorganic [i.e., with no corresponding anatomical seat] and incorruptible; the other is of a particular nature and it is the sentient power (*sensus*), a faculty in the body, with an anatomical basis, and it is the cogitative soul.³¹

²⁸ Paul of Venice, *In libros de anima explanatio* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1504), fol. 46, quoted in Nardi, *Sigieri di Brabante nel pensiero del Rinascimento italiano*, p. 118.

²⁹ Agostino Nifo, *De immortalitate anime libellus* (Venice: Ottaviano Scoto, 1518), c. 4, quoted in Nardi, *Sigieri di Brabante nel pensiero del Rinascimento italiano*, p. 13.

³⁰ Nardi, *Sigieri di Brabante nel pensiero del Rinascimento italiano*, pp. 13–20, 125.

³¹ Alessandro Achillini, *De elementis* (Venice: Giovanni Antonio de Benedetti, 1505), f. 127^b, quoted in Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano*, p. 245.

448 Averroist philosophical anthropology, despite all its difficulties in preserving
 449 the identity of the mental-bodily compound (or perhaps precisely for this
 450 reason), vindicated human diversity. In keeping with Averroes, Achillini looked
 451 at the intellect as the culmination of the process of actualisation occurring in
 452 the human soul. However, he also insisted that a human being was not to be
 453 seen 'as the result of a simple form,' but as a 'very composite form' (*forma*
 454 *compositissima*). His conclusion was that humans had two natures: 'one is
 455 material and derives from the cogitative faculty, the other is divine and derives
 456 from the possible intellect.'³² This dual model, quite common among Averroist
 457 Aristotelians of the period, and later appropriated and transformed by philoso-
 458 phers who were interested in providing the human soul with a naturalistic foun-
 459 dation, such as Bernardino Telesio (1509–1588), Francis Bacon (1561–1626)
 460 and Pierre Gassendi (1592–1655), was precisely the kind of solution that failed
 461 to convince those who advocated the human soul as both an individual self and
 462 a vital principle. Among the latter, Ficino maintained that the radical way in
 463 which Averroes had interpreted the notion of imagination had irredeemably
 464 disrupted the unity of the intellect's form. In his opinion, the idea of a form
 465 characterised by a dual nature – a *compositum* made up of intelligible species
 466 and *phantasmata* – remained an ontological monstrosity. What is more, because
 467 of its representative suppleness, the imagination had been made too relevant by
 468 the Averroists.³³

469 Against the post-Sigerian model of the dual soul, with the imagination playing
 470 the role of a key faculty, Jacopo Zabarella (1533–1589), a later Aristotelian of the
 471 Paduan school, argued the opposite case:

472 it is the last form [i.e., the intellect] that contracts and determines the previous ones [*imagi-*
 473 *nativa* and *cogitativa*], rather than being contracted and determined by one of these.
 474 Therefore, one should say that the rational soul determines and circumscribes the imagina-
 475 tive faculty rather than being circumscribed by it.³⁴

476 It should be said that Averroes had clearly acknowledged that the cognitive
 477 scope of the imagination was not sufficient to grasp the content of the intellect.
 478 For Zabarella, however, Averroes and his followers had tried to solve the problem
 479 of how to explain the transition from the senses to the intellect by ambiguously
 480 (and illegitimately) expanding the powers of the imagination. In referring to the
 481 traditional distinction between *forma informans* and *forma assistens*, i.e., the dis-
 482 tinction between the form that establishes a substantial union with the informed
 483 matter and the form that governs the subjected matter without being involved with
 484 the task of producing a material union out of the two entities, Zabarella argued
 485 that Averroes's model of cogitative power could not explain both the 'informing'

³² Ibid., pp. 245–246.

³³ Marsilio Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, eds and trans. Michael J. B. Allen and James Hankins, with W. Bowen, 6 vols (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2001–2006), V, p. 86.

³⁴ Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, c. 965A.

and the 'assisting' operations of the soul. Averroes, he wrote, argued that the cogitative faculty (*cogitativa*) is a human being's specific *forma informans*, which defines the genus 'animal' as a human species (*quae dat homini esse specificum sub genere animali*), so that a human being is human 'because of this faculty, and not because of the intellect.' In Zabarella's history of the Averroist reception of Aristotelianism, medieval and Renaissance Averroists had contributed to transform Averroes's *cogitativa* into the highest form of imagination (*phantasia*), i.e., rational human imagination. In doing so, they could claim that 'this cogitative faculty of Averroes was in fact the imagination referred to by Aristotle.' Through the cogitative power, Zabarella pointed out, the Averroists had been successful in differentiating human from nonhuman animals. Being 'the highest degree of the imaginative faculty, indeed, the peak of the whole sentient part of the soul', the cogitative power constituted 'the very species of man within the animal genus and distinguishes him from the rest of the animals.' On the other hand, Averroes's attempt to save the specific nature of human rationality when compared with the intellect was for Zabarella much less successful. He reminded the reader that on that critical passage in Aristotle's *De anima* (III, text 20), Averroes had unambiguously embraced Themistius, who had characterised the 'passive intellect' as 'one in number for the whole human species', had 'placed in man another soul, subject to multiplication', and 'by this soul' had meant 'the imaginative faculty of man', which, in his opinion 'had the power to receive the intellect' and this was the highest perfection for man.³⁵

Among the difficulties traditionally associated with the Averroist notion of the imagination, Ficino questioned the necessity to postulate that the intellect needed to borrow images from the cogitative soul of human beings, especially if it was true that the intellect 'always perceives bodies in their causes.' Indeed, if one looks at the matter from an Avicennian point of view, it would be more appropriate for the one mind to lend knowledge to us rather than for it to borrow knowledge from us. What is the point for the intellect to look for knowledge within our cogitative faculty? Will it become more perfect by lowering itself to the level of our imaginations? This cognitive lowering is certainly not an option for the intellect, for its descent in the hustle and bustle of sublunary life would be at variance with its lofty nature.³⁶ In the end, the whole process of clinging to human imaginations would represent for the intellect a degrading experience, or a ludicrously capricious activity, in which an allegedly eternal 'contemplator of things' chases and is chased by false images.³⁷ Provocatively, Ficino concluded his critique by asking why 'such a divine mind, like a lackey, will everywhere accompany this bumbling little man who hardly ever uses his own mind.'³⁸

³⁵ Ibid., cc. 919–920.

³⁶ Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, V, pp. 113, 115.

³⁷ Ibid., p. 117.

³⁸ Ibid., p. 121.

524 **It Is In Fact All About the Intellect (but with Important**
 525 **Qualifications)**

526 It cannot be denied that Averroes is mostly remembered in the history of Western
 527 philosophy for his theory of the unicity of the possible intellect – and rightly so,
 528 we may add, for two fundamental reasons: firstly, because the solution given by
 529 Averroes to the problem of human knowledge is indeed exceptionally sophisticated
 530 and original; secondly, for the very simple reason that, for an Aristotelian
 531 like Averroes, reality *qua* reality is in fact intellect. Aristotle's and Averroes's
 532 philosophies share the ontological view that intellect is the highest level of reality.
 533 And in both cases the identification of the intellect with the ultimate reality
 534 of things has important consequences in the domains of moral philosophy, logic
 535 and natural philosophy. Historians have privileged the field of philosophical
 536 psychology, but, as this volume will show, Averroes's ideas in terms of matter
 537 theory, cosmology, hermeneutics, religion and politics continued to resonate for
 538 some time during the early modern period. It is important to keep in mind that,
 539 both as a philosopher and as an interpreter, Averroes believed in epistemologi-
 540 cal realism and physical naturalism, and as a result thought – both in the sublun-
 541 ary human variety and in the supralunary nonhuman one – was supposed to
 542 mirror and reproduce the actual structures of reality. The intellect describes
 543 nature as it is in its real nature because there is demonstrative knowledge only
 544 of that which really exists.³⁹

545 Averroes's corpus of exegetical and speculative works is marked by a distinctive
 546 level of logical stringency and systematic comprehensiveness. As we have already
 547 noted, these aspects contributed to the irresistible appeal of Averroism to the minds
 548 of many philosophers, from the Middle Ages to the modern period. This unique
 549 combination of rigour and abstraction, however, also led to a series of counterintui-
 550 tive albeit cogent philosophical theses. It must be said that Averroes's demonstra-
 551 tions concerning the intellect in particular have something of an uncanny clarity, to
 552 the point that some of the conclusions read like excerpts from a bizarre book of
 553 metaphysical science-fiction. Here are some of the most unsettling tenets, in the
 554 form of a list: The material intellect is described as a 'fourth kind of reality' (*quar-*
 555 *tum genus*), being neither a form, nor matter, nor finally a compound of form and

³⁹ On Averroes's noetics, see Miguel Cruz Hernández, *Historia del pensamiento en el Andalus*, 2 vols (Sevilla: Editoriales Andaluzas Unidas, 1985), II, pp. 71ff; Alan de Libera, 'Existe-il une noétique "averroïste"? Note sur la réception latine d'Averroès au XIII^e et XIV^e siècle', in *Averroismus in Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, eds Friedrich Niewöhner and Loris Sturlese (Zurich: Spur, 1994), pp. 51–80; Luca Bianchi, 'Filosofi, uomini e bruti: Note per la storia di un'antropologia averroista', in Id., *Studi sull'aristotelismo del Rinascimento* (Padua: Il Poligrafo, 2003), pp. 41–61; Antonio Petagine, *Aristotelismo difficile: L'intelletto umano nella prospettiva di Alberto Magno, Tommaso d'Aquino e Sigieri di Brabante* (Milan: Vita e Pensiero, 2004); Richard C. Taylor, 'The Agent Intellect as "Form for Us" and Averroes's Critique of al-Fârâbî', *Proceedings of the Society for Medieval Logic and Metaphysics*, 5 (2005), pp.18–32. Campanini, *Averroè*, pp. 47–57.

matter, but a unique ontological hybrid, partly actualiser, partly receptor, capable, that is, of activity and receptivity at once.⁴⁰ This paradoxical activity of actualising while receiving, which can be extended to all immaterial forms, also known as intelligibles in actuality, can be seen as a coincidence of 'intellecting' and 'intellected' activity. If the intellect is the object of the very activity of understanding (for an intellect is a form in which the understood thing and the activity of understanding coincide), why does the intellect need an object that is different from the very act of understanding? From this point of view, Avicenna's way with the intellect seems more plausible than Averroes's. Moreover, what is the point of an external world? Even more puzzling, what is the point of an individual self? If the cogitative power is simply an evolution of the internal senses, are human beings really different from nonhuman animals? Why should the soul be united to the body? How can the human mind join the intelligences and even God's intellect? Would it be correct to say that ecstasy is the highest form of knowledge? These are all indeed quite extraordinary philosophical statements, and it is not surprising that they caused a certain stir among medieval and early modern philosophers.

Philosophers reacted to the paradoxical nature of some of Averroes's tenets by accentuating their radical aspect. Ever since Thomas Aquinas decided to counter the principles of Averroes's theory of the intellect by resorting to powerful images in addition to logical arguments, these images of a strikingly counterintuitive force grew into an established repertoire of *loci communes* in medieval and early modern philosophical literature: the intellect acts as a ghost ship, a mechanical contraption, a demon who possesses the mind of individual human beings, a wall capable of perceiving the colours that are reflected on it.⁴¹ Ficino expanded on the anti-Averroistic imagery. He compared the Averroist intellect to a monstrous octopus with a giant head and countless tentacles which fall and grow incessantly in accordance to the individual imaginations on which it feeds. These images had the rhetorical function of highlighting the absurd claim that human thinking is the act of being thought by another intellect. Human beings do not 'intellect', they are 'intellected', and what is more, they do not even know that they undergo this unremitting process of 'being intellected'. Indeed, they are led to believe that they are in control of their own thinking activity. The absolute objectification and reification of human thinking – man is an object and not a subject of thought – was the aspect of Averroes's philosophy that was perceived almost from the very beginning in the Latin West as the most distasteful. In the first decades of seventeenth century, the Italian philosopher Tommaso Campanella (1568–1639) could reiterate this point while defending the view that sense knowledge is more original than any intellectual abstraction: 'if the intellect understands, then we don't understand. And yet the intellect needs the species that derive from our senses in order for it to understand them by itself. Thus

⁴⁰ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, p. 409; *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, p. 326.

⁴¹ See Thomas Aquinas, *De unitate intellectus contra Averroistas*, in *Aquinas against the Averroists: On There Being Only One Intellect*, ed. Ralph McInerny (West Lafayette, IN: Purdue University Press, 1993), p. 87; Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, c. 928B.

595 we will be the object and not the subject of understanding.⁴² In a way, the Averroist [AU2]
 596 intellect, precisely because of its lofty and impassible nature promoted forms of
 597 radical sentience in the sublunary world and confined impersonal objectivity to the
 598 level of supralunary knowledge.

599 This argument, it should be pointed out, has had a striking force of persistence in
 600 the history of philosophy and is closely connected to the recurrent charge of being
 601 anti-historical which has been levelled at the Averroist reason. Still in 1926, in the
 602 famous essay that Ernst Cassirer wrote for Aby Warburg's sixtieth birthday,
 603 *Individuum und Kosmos in der Philosophie der Renaissance* ('The Individual and
 604 the Cosmos in Renaissance Philosophy'), he interpreted Renaissance Averroism as
 605 the final outcome of hazily defined medieval tendencies towards 'objectification'
 606 (*Prozeß der Objektivierung*). While for Cassirer the Neokantian, Petrarch (1304–
 607 1374) and Nicholas of Cusa (1401–1464) belonged to the side of the 'individual',
 608 Averroes was definitely a representative of philosophical views oriented towards the
 609 'cosmos'.⁴³ Since Petrarch's times, humanists and moral philosophers have viewed
 610 the Averroist interpretation of Aristotle as a form of externalist drift towards the
 611 universal life of the cosmos, away from the soul and its introspective focus.
 612 Objectification, though, does not mean objectivity. In keeping with Themistius, one
 613 of Averroes's powerful arguments in favour of the existence of one material intellect
 614 for all human beings was the assumption that, without presupposing the existence
 615 of this intellect, there would be no possibility of sharing the universal import of
 616 individual thoughts, there would be no correspondence between knowledge and
 617 reality and no possibility of communication among different minds. In the Arabic
 618 translation of Themistius's paraphrase of Aristotle's *De anima*, Averroes had found
 619 the key statement that 'if we do not have one intellect in which we all share, then we
 620 also do not have understanding of one another.'⁴⁴ At the end of the sixteenth century,
 621 Zabarella summed up the point in the following way:

622 If the passive (*patibilis*) intellect is multiplied, then the various acts of understanding (*intel-*
 623 *lectiones*), too, are multiplied, that is to say, my and your understanding of the same thing
 624 will be entirely different in number. If this is the case, it also follows that an intelligible
 625 presupposes an intelligible and that, too, implies another intelligible, in an infinite
 626 regress.⁴⁵

⁴² Campanella, *Del senso delle cose e della magia*, p. 84: 's'egli intende, non intendemo noi; ma le spezie del nostro senso servono a lui per intenderle da sé, e noi saremo oggetto, non soggetto d'intendimento.'

⁴³ Ernst Cassirer, *Individuum und Kosmos in der Philosophie der Renaissance* (Leipzig and Berlin: Teubner, 1927), pp. 133–149; Id. *The Individual and the Cosmos in Renaissance Philosophy*, trans. M. Domandi (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1963), pp. 126–141.

⁴⁴ *An Arabic Translation of Themistius' Commentary on Aristotle's De Anima*, ed. M. C. Lyons (Oxford: Cassirer, 1973), pp. 188–189; quoted by Richard C. Taylor, in his 'Intelligibles in Act in Averroes', p. 128.

⁴⁵ Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, c. 963CDE. See also Alessandro Achillini, *Quolibeta de intelligentiis* (Bologna: Benedetto Faelli, 1494), fol. 10, quoted in Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano*, p. 204; Campanella, *Del senso delle cose e della magia*, p. 84: 'seguirà che, uno intendendo una cosa, tutti l'intenderiano per l'unità dell'intelletto.'

The result indicated by Zabarella amounted to a dramatic crisis of intelligibility at the very heart of the theory of knowledge. To quote Zabarella again: 'my act of understanding is not yours, and when I understand, other men do not necessarily understand the same thing.' Averroes thought he could solve this difficulty by maintaining the diversity and multiplicity of human imaginations on the one hand, and by resorting to the unity of the intellect to unify their scattered *intentiones*, on the other. As aptly recapitulated by Zabarella, 'the intellect in many human beings is one ... their imaginations are different.'⁴⁶ However, for all cognitive acrobatics imposed on the imagination, in Averroes's cosmos at the end of the day individual human beings seemed to be left without a real thinking faculty. They acquired knowledge of the world through the *cogitativa*, but 'cogitating' for Averroes was not the same as 'thinking'. In the sublunary world the cogitative faculty is the culmination of the representative activity of the senses, both external and internal. Within the sphere of animal sentience, the *cogitativa* is what makes the human being a living creature that is different from both nonhuman earthly animals and nonhuman celestial animals. On this point, the difference with Pomponazzi is subtle but clear: for Pomponazzi, although human beings cannot think without relying on their imaginations, nevertheless, their thinking remains a form of intellectual activity; for Averroes, the imagination is still an indispensable provider of objects, but it remains a surrogate of thought, the most refined form of animal knowledge in the sublunary world.

It then becomes clear why Ficino criticized Averroes so harshly for reducing 'the images of things shining in the cogitative power' to mere 'occasions' for the mind to understand.⁴⁷ In doing so, Averroes had transformed human knowledge into an unstable, provisional and episodic flow of images conveyed by the cogitative faculty. If one accepted the premises of Averroes's explanation, Ficino went on, then human beings were constantly feeding the one mind with their imaginary worlds, unaware of their role as indefatigable suppliers of images.⁴⁸ As if manipulated by the intellect, human imaginations were part of a grand cosmological plan meant to bring the material intellect of the sublunary world to full actualisation. The cunning of supralunary reason proceeded through the absorption of sublunary imaginations. This intellect, portrayed by Ficino as an insatiable mind that scanned and scoured men's cogitative recesses in search of all sorts of information concerning the world of nature and human beings, went so far as to pry into the mind of the wisest of men in order to increase the level of intelligibility in the sublunary world. In the great scheme of things, the sages of humankind turned therefore into accomplices in a process of universal enlightenment rather than conscious and responsible thinking subjects.⁴⁹

⁴⁶Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, c. 965D: 'unus sit intellectus in pluribus hominum ... phantasmata in iis diversa sunt.'

⁴⁷Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, V, pp. 19–21.

⁴⁸Ibid., p. 22.

⁴⁹Ibid., p. 25.

665 **The End of the Intellect**

666 As already pointed out, it cannot be denied that, as a form of Aristotelianism,
667 Averroes's philosophy is centred on the intellect and that the intellect is in the end
668 the highest reality. And yet we should always resist the temptation to reduce
669 Averroes's philosophy and Averroism as a philosophical current to a mere
670 epistemological account of the intellect. Indeed, one of the reasons why tracing the
671 evolution of Averroist ideas during the early modern period matters from both a
672 historical and a philosophical point of view is that this development signals the end
673 of a certain way of understanding the intellect and its role in both human knowledge
674 and the universe. As Luca Bianchi and Eugenio Randi remind us, 'Aristotelianism
675 came with a physics and a cosmology, and this was precisely one of the principal
676 reasons for its success'.⁵⁰ The end of the intellect, understood as the principle of
677 intelligibility of both the sublunary and supralunary worlds, meant therefore the end
678 of a cosmological link between *knowledge* and *reality*. Galileian, Cartesian and
679 Lockean standards of intelligibility (to mention only a few) contributed to releasing
680 the intellect from its cosmological duties, transforming metaphysics into a set of
681 epistemological problems. In this, the evolution of the Averroist intellect in early
682 modern thought is part of a larger story concerning the gradual dissociation of reality
683 from the very conditions of its intelligibility. As aptly put by F. Edward Cranz,
684 'the experience of what was called the intellect changed so fundamentally between
685 the late ancient period and the Renaissance that the discussions took place between
686 within two almost completely different contexts of experience', on the one hand a
687 universe of things, on the other, a universe of meanings (*intentiones*): 'the single
688 realm of Greek thought and experience is split into the two medieval-modern uni-
689 verses of meanings and things.'⁵¹

690 It must be said that the strong emphasis placed by the Renaissance Averroists on
691 the nonhuman character of the intellect contributed to extending the gap between
692 the human soul and the universal conditions of intelligibility. By inserting the cogi-
693 tative faculty among the internal senses of the human soul, Averroes's followers
694 confirmed the rift between the theory of the intellect and the theory of the soul: the
695 intellect does not belong to human beings, whose cognitive expertise consists in a
696 cogitative elaboration of sense perceptions. Again, early modern Averroism could
697 foster empiricism in the field of human and natural knowledge, while relegating the
698 intellect to the rarefied regions of supralunary metaphysics. Ficino was convinced
699 that one of the most abhorrent consequences resulting from the Averroist model of
700 the mind was a general flattening of the intellectual life of the universe, such that
701 'the higher forms are in a manner remitted and driven down towards the lower
702 forms', while 'the lower forms are intensified and lifted up towards the higher.'⁵² In
703 other words, Averroes's *copulatio* (i.e., the connection between the human soul and

⁵⁰ Luca Bianchi and Eugenio Randi, *Le verità dissonanti* (Rome and Bari: Laterza, 1990), p. 5.

⁵¹ Cranz, 'Two Debates about the Intellect', pp. 1, 12.

⁵² Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, V, p. 121.

the intellect) came with a (not so hidden) agenda concerning a thorough naturalization of the intellect. 704
705

An even more dramatic consequence concerned the sense of reality resulting from Averroes's metaphysics of the intellect. If a condition of fully unfolded intelligibility is the end towards which the whole universe strives, and if true intelligibility is intelligibility without an object (for, as already noticed, the highest level of actualisation is the coincidence of the thinking subject with both its thinking activity and the object of such activity), what is the role played by objects, imaginations and matter in this ontological setting? Can we still say that in Averroes's theory of knowledge there is an actual sense of reality, in its physical presence? This question may be answered in the affirmative after all. This is particularly evident every time Averroes criticises Plato's and Avicenna's positions. Intelligibles for Averroes are always abstracted from sensible experience, not emanated from a transcendent intellect. In this view, human beings can reach and share stable forms of understanding by assuming that they are able to apprehend and abstract imaginations of things. No wonder, then, that religious exegesis, poetics and rhetoric play such a fundamental role in Averroes's philosophy. The simplistic assumptions that are usually associated with the doctrine of the double truth (dissimulation, hypocrisy, and reading between the lines) hide in fact a much more sophisticated understanding of the complex exchanges that occur between forms of divine, natural and human communication. While medieval and Renaissance thinkers were perfectly aware of this complexity, the interpretative quandary became increasingly less subtle during the seventeenth and eighteenth century, when the question of atheism gradually replaced that of exegesis.⁵³ 706
707
708
709
710
711
712
713
714
715
716
717
718
719
720
721
722
723
724
725
726
727

In addition to causing the severing of the natural link connecting natural appearances to their intelligible counterparts, the end of the era of the intellect – an era that spans from Greco-Roman philosophy to the Renaissance – also marked the end of ascending and descending streams of intelligible energy holding divine, cosmological and human meanings together. This became particularly evident in the fields of moral philosophy, cosmology and matter theory. In all these cases, the intellect represented the common denominator between the natural and moral activities of the universe, and Averroes's original contribution as a thinker was that of providing a systematic and cogent explanation of such a connection. It does not come as too much of a surprise, therefore, that early modern philosophers could still be fascinated by the Averroist notion of mental happiness. Averroes's philosophy provided a model of rationality based on the notion of moral fulfilment as intellectual consummation, the view of the universe as a self-sufficient system of hierarchically layered degrees of intelligible clarity and, finally, the concept of matter as an inherently and seamlessly extended matter. 728
729
730
731
732
733
734
735
736
737
738
739
740
741
742
743

⁵³In this volume, James Montgomery provides an intriguing discussion of contemporary Straussian varieties of Averroistic inquiry. See *infra* 'Leo Strauss and the Alethiometer'.

744 **Averroist Happiness**

745 Averroes's theory of intellectual beatitude as the ultimate foundation of moral life
 746 became particularly influential during the Renaissance. For Averroes, as Cardano
 747 acknowledged among others in his work on moral philosophy, *De utilitate ex*
 748 *adversis capienda* ('How to Gain Profit from Adversities', published in 1561), the
 749 supreme good coincided with *sapientia summa*, the highest level of contemplation
 750 accessible to human reason.⁵⁴ As tersely stated in the Long Commentary on
 751 Aristotle's *De anima*, human happiness consisted for Averroes in a state of
 752 intellectual clarity achieved through accumulation of knowledge and growth in
 753 awareness: 'it is necessary that a human being understand all the intelligibles
 754 through the intellect proper to him.'⁵⁵ When the possible intellect belonging to the
 755 human species as a whole fulfils its capacity by becoming *adeptus*, it joins the
 756 active intellect, i.e., God. At this stage, said Paul of Venice, the intellect, 'being
 757 actualised of all the material species, understands the active intellect through its
 758 own essence.'⁵⁶ This point was a central tenet in Averroes's philosophy, recurring
 759 in various parts of his system, from medicine to politics. In the *Kitāb al-Kulliyāt*,
 760 Latinised into *Colliget*, Averroes's principal work of medicine, he confirmed that
 761 'the perfection of the rational power lies in the apprehension of universals.'⁵⁷ In his
 762 *Commentary on the Republic of Plato*, 'man's ultimate perfection and ultimate
 763 happiness' was defined as ascension to 'intelligible existence'.⁵⁸ The Latin inter-
 764 preters of Averroes came up with a number of words to indicate the final stage in
 765 the acquisition of universal: *copulatio*, *continuatio*, *coniunctio*, *connexio*. The kind
 766 of immortality that Averroes envisaged for the human soul depended on the extent
 767 to which the cogitative power was able to join both the possible and the active
 768 intellect, but this view of the intellect clearly left no room for the survival of the
 769 individual self in any form at all.⁵⁹

⁵⁴ Girolamo Cardano, *De utilitate ex adversis capienda*, in *Opera omnia*, ed. Charles Spon, 10 vols (Lyon: Jean-Antoine Huguetau and Marc-Antoine Ravaut, 1663; repr.: Stuttgart and Bad Cannstatt: Frommann, 1966), II, 24b.

⁵⁵ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, p. 500; *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, p. 399.

⁵⁶ Paul of Venice, *Summa philosophie naturalis*, f. 91, quoted in Nardi, *Sigieri di Brabante nel pensiero del Rinascimento italiano*, p. 130.

⁵⁷ Averroes, *Colliget*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562; repr. Frankfurt: Minerva, 1962), X, f. 17^vG: 'perfectio virtutis rationalis est apprehensio rerum universalium.'

⁵⁸ Averroes, *Commentary on Plato's Republic*, ed. Ralph Lerner (Ithaca and London: Cornell University Press, 1974), pp. 86–89.

⁵⁹ Marc Geoffroy, 'Averroès sur l'intellect comme cause agente et cause formelle, et la question de la "jonction" – I', in *Averroès et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, pp. 77–110; Maria Corti, *La felicità mentale: Nuove prospettive per Cavalcanti e Dante* (Turin: Einaudi, 1983); Orlando Todisco, *Averroè nel dibattito medievale: Verità o bontà?* (Milan: Angeli, 1999).

There is no doubt that a large number of Renaissance philosophers were intrigued by the particular way in which Averroes had explained the process of intellectual conjunction in his Long Commentary on Aristotle's *De anima*, a solution that for many represented one of the boldest views in his metaphysics. As made clear by Nardi, the 'conjunctions' were in fact three: one involved the union of the material intellect with the human body, of which the material intellect was the form; another *copulatio* was the one between the material and the active intellect; the third, and the most problematic of all, led man to join the active intellect.⁶⁰ According to Nardi, Siger's, Achillini's and Bacilieri's Averroism – the already mentioned Sigerian interpretation – assumed that the material intellect acted as a substantial form of the human body.⁶¹ In this volume, Leen Spruit explores the Renaissance reception of the Averroist notion of mental happiness through an analysis of Agostino Nifo's *De intellectu*, in which intellectual happiness is contextualised in its cosmological and astrological framework.⁶²

As in many other parts of Averroes's exegetical and speculative work, in this case, too, the imagination played a problematic and yet decisive role. As noted by Zabarella, the task of the imagination in the process of conjunction between human cogitation and the supralunary intellect(s) was particularly delicate. He referred without naming them to some Averroists who had distinguished between two types of human beings: 'the one is the man who is the soul constituted by referring to human imagination, imagination that Averroes called *cogitativa*;' 'the other is the divine man, who is constituted through the intellect and results from that man who is the animal species and the intellect that supervenes like some sort of divine form.'⁶³ At this particular juncture, Zabarella wondered whether, 'when the active intellect joins the *phantasmata* as a form, it joins them in the imagination (*phantasia*), or after they have been received in the passive intellect.' While some interpreters stated that the conjunction could not take place in the imagination – for otherwise the faculty of sensible representations would have been able to know 'quiddities' and universals – Zabarella saw the ambiguous wavering between the imagination and the intellect in human life as yet another instance of the problematic character of Averroes's theory of the intellect.⁶⁴

From a strictly ethical point, the most problematic aspect lay in the remorselessly impractical and elitist character of mental happiness. In his *Quod reminiscetur* ('All the Ends of the Earth Shall Remember'), a grand project of missionary evangelisation conceived around 1616, Campanella rejected the thesis that the abstract

⁶⁰ Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano*, p. 218.

⁶¹ *Ibid.*, p. 275.

⁶² See *infra* in this volume Leen Spruit, 'Intellectual Beatitude in the Averroist Tradition: The Case of Agostino Nifo'.

⁶³ Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, c. 940BD. On the presence of strains of Averroistic mysticism in various examples of Renaissance thought, see: B. Nardi, 'La mistica averroistica e Pico della Mirandola', in *id.*, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI*, Florence, Sansoni, 1958, pp. 127–146. See *ibid.*, pp. 213, 217.

⁶⁴ J. Zabarella, *Liber de mente agente*, in *De rebus naturalibus*, c. 1013.

805 intellect was being incarnated in individual human beings every time they were
 806 'cogitating' and described this position as a characteristically Muslim view.⁶⁵ By
 807 contrast, unlike many of his contemporaries, Cardano did not question the plausibil-
 808 ity of Averroes's lofty notion of mental beatitude. He stressed instead the heroic
 809 commitment at stake in this view of happiness as a form of intellectual contempla-
 810 tion to be reached in the course of one's life:

811 Averroes, that wise man, in the proem to the [commentary] on the *Physics*, relying on the
 812 authority of Alexander of Aphrodisias, shows that man becomes strong by looking at
 813 human life as a point when compared to eternity. In this way he is not deprived of that
 814 happiness which consists in contemplation, and he is not unhappy because of the brevity
 815 of life. Otherwise he who is deprived of the hope of achieving this happiness will rather
 816 die than live.⁶⁶

817 For Cardano, it was precisely the lofty nature of the target that made the human
 818 effort not only possible and open to every mind, but also sublime in its synthesis of
 819 relentless striving and intellectual perfection.

820 Matter, Intellect and Cosmos

821 The principle of mental *continuatio*, which, as we have just noted, is the cornerstone
 822 of Averroes's moral philosophy, presupposes a continuity among the intellects of
 823 the universe and occurs through streams of succeeding abstractions of *phantasmata*
 824 and *intentiones*. The material intellect is the intellect of humankind, the intellect of
 825 'man' considered as the species 'human being'. Above this intellect, the series of
 826 celestial intelligences culminates with God's intellect, the unmoveable mover and
 827 fully actualised reality. Averroes's Aristotelian cosmos is populated with earthly
 828 and celestial animals. Earthly animals are further divided into sentient (nonhuman)
 829 and cogitative (human) animals. Unlike earthly animals, celestial animals are think-
 830 ing and self-moving entities. Considered as self-movers, they are intentional. In the
 831 Aristotelian cosmos, final causality prevails over the efficient one. This means that
 832 celestial self-movers are souls. As explained in the Long Commentary on the
 833 *Physics*, 'the principle of motion relative to all moving things is like the soul in
 834 living things.'⁶⁷ To avoid infinite regress in the chain of moved and moving animals,
 835 there has to be an ultimate, self-initiating source of motion and knowledge in the
 836 cosmos. While the *primum mobile* rotates on its axis every day, the first mover is the
 837 soul of the outermost celestial sphere and cannot be self-moved, but remains

⁶⁵ Tommaso Campanella, *Legazioni ai Maomettani* (Quod reminiscuntur, libro IV), ed. Romano Amerio (Florence: Olschki, 1960) p. 99: 'tres Arabes machomettani, videlicet Averroes, Avicenna et Alfarabius putant intellectum copulari homini composito ex animali et cogitativa in unitatem personalem et toties incarnari intellectum abstractum, quoties concipitur homo.'

⁶⁶ Girolamo, Cardano, *De utilitate ex adversis capienda*, in *Opera omnia*, II, p. 24a.

⁶⁷ Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, IV, f. 338^oHI: 'Principium enim motus de omnibus mobilibus est sicut anima de rebus vivis.'

completely unmoved. In this volume, the reader will find a discussion of the cosmological implications of Averroes's metaphysics in Nicholas Holland's chapter on Nifo's interpretation of *Destructio destructionum*, where the nature of celestial influence on the sublunary world is extensively discussed.⁶⁸

It does not come as too much of a surprise, therefore, to discover that in a cosmological context (and as late as the seventeenth and eighteenth century, as Hutton's and Sgarbi's contributions, too, show in this volume), the one mind of the Averroists could be seen as the vivifying soul of the whole universe, whereby every soul has an external principle of celestial nature. The echoes of this variety of Averroistic monopsychism would later resonate in the works of Henry More (1614–1687) and Leibniz among others. In the *Commentarium magnum* to Aristotle's *De anima*, Averroes had argued that the first perfection of the sense faculty derives from the active intellect.⁶⁹ Still in 1737, André-François Boureau-Deslandes (1689–1757), one of the authors discussed in Gregorio Piaia's chapter in this volume, reiterated the cosmological and pantheistic features of Averroes's notion of the universal mind. Averroes, wrote Boureau-Deslandes in his *Histoire critique de la philosophie* (1741), considered God to be a 'universal intelligence', an 'ocean of spirits shared by each man.'⁷⁰

From a cosmological point of view, the most perplexing aspect of Averroes's philosophy is the link between the intellect and matter. As is well known, the Aristotelian notion of prime matter refers to the potential and undifferentiated substratum that is postulated as necessary to explain substantial change. In *De substantia orbis* ('The substance of the celestial sphere'), Averroes defined prime matter as a substratum that is numerically the same for all things, but somehow already extended by virtue of an accidental form – quantity – which persists despite the countless transformations which matter undergoes at every moment. This view contributed to the late medieval and early modern transition from the prevailing scholastic view of prime matter as bare potentiality and pure non-extension to the idea of a material substratum that is constitutively quantified and indeterminately dimensioned. The consequences were momentous, not only for the development of scholastic physics, but also for its later implications relative to the early modern theory of matter. Averroes considered extension to be an attribute deriving from quantity, but he viewed quantity not as a mere accident of matter, but as one of its constitutive characteristics. Since no view of matter as one universal indefinite substratum with quantity as but an accidental form could explain the innumerable differences visible in the material world, Averroes thought that quantitative

⁶⁸ Nicholas Holland, 'The Transmutations of a Young Averroist: The Account of Celestial Influences in Agostino Nifo's Commentary on Averroes's *Destructio Destructionum*'.

⁶⁹ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis de anima libros*, p. 219: 'Opinatur enim quod prima perfectio sensus fit ab intelligentia agentis, ut declaratur in libro Animalium; secunda autem perfectio fit a sensibilibus.'

⁷⁰ André-François Boureau Deslandes, *Histoire critique de la philosophie, où l'on traite de son origine, de ses progrès, et des diverses révolutions qui lui sont arrivées jusqu'à notre tems, par Mr D **** (Amsterdam: Changuion, 1737), III, p. 258.

874 determinations should belong to matter. Only a consideration of matter as an
 875 extended substratum could explain the variety and diversity of material forms in
 876 nature. In *De substantia orbis*, 'one of the most important philosophical influences
 877 on fourteenth-century conceptions of matter', Averroes theorised a view of mate-
 878 rial reality as dimensional indeterminacy.⁷¹ To avoid the contradiction of making
 879 an accident (quantity) ontologically prior to substantial forms, he assumed that
 880 indeterminate dimensions (understood as a sort of original accidental form) were
 881 'coeternal' to prime matter. According to Robert Pasnau, the 'enduring substratum
 882 of change, for the Averroist, is something rather like the Cartesian *res extensa*.'⁷²
 883 Pasnau argues that it is by virtue of Averroes's notion of matter as 'accidentally
 884 quantified' that Zabarella could shift the discussion from Aristotle's *materia prima*
 885 to 'indeterminate body'. There is therefore some foundation in the thesis that
 886 seventeenth-century categories, such as body, extension and material corpuscles
 887 are indebted to Averroes's notion of matter, which in the late medieval debate on
 888 matter introduced the almost contradictory category of indeterminate extension. In
 889 their views of nature and material change, Pomponazzi, Zabarella and Benito
 890 Pereira (1535–1610) are for Pasnau examples of sixteenth-century philosophers
 891 who followed Averroes's original solutions on matter. Pereira, for instance, in his
 892 *De communibus principiis* (V, 18) defined '[t]he form itself of the quantity which
 893 the matter possesses by its power' to be 'fixed, stable and immutable.'⁷³

894 Averroes's point was that matter must have a form of primordial extension in
 895 order to account for the innumerable transformations occurring in the universe. As
 896 Campanella explained in his *Metaphysica*, matter can be seen as the principle of
 897 all natural bodies because it is essentially endowed with dimensions, mutable as
 898 they may be.

899 In *De substantia orbis* and in [the Long Commentary on] *Physics*, book 1, having been
 900 convinced by the foregoing arguments [i.e., the ones adduced by Aristotle and Alexander of
 901 Aphrodisias], Averroes maintains that matter is not a body (*materiam non esse corpus*), and
 902 this in order not to contradict Aristotle, who says that matter is not an essence (*quid*), a
 903 quality (*quale*) or a quantity (*quantum*). However, he claims that matter has indeterminate
 904 dimensions that are original with and coeval to itself (*congenitae et coevae dimensiones*
 905 *interminatae*), so that it can be divided and it is able to receive more forms in more parts of
 906 itself, and the reason is that without dimensions it would not be divisible. In this way, forms
 907 can be extended in it, actions, generations and corruptions may happen, and bodies can
 908 derive from bodies.⁷⁴

⁷¹ See Robert Pasnau, *Metaphysical Themes: 1274–1671* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2011), pp. 60–66 (62).

⁷² *Ibid.*, p. 64.

⁷³ Benito Pereira, *De communibus omnium rerum principiis libri quindecim* (Paris: Thomas Brumen, 1585), pp. 322–326, quoted in Pasnau, *Metaphysical Themes*, p. 69. For a recent assessment of Averroes's view on matter, see Matteo Di Giovanni, 'Substantial Form in Averroes's Long Commentary on the *Metaphysics*', in *In the Age of Averroes: Arabic Philosophy in the Sixth/Twelfth Century* (London and Turin: The Warburg Institute, 2011), pp. 175–194.

⁷⁴ Tommaso Campanella, *Universalis philosophiae, seu metaphysicarum rerum, iuxta propria dogmata, partes tres, libri 18*, 3 vols (Paris: Denis Langlois, 1638; repr. Turin: Bottega d'Erasmus, 1961), I, p. 178a.

In Campanella's interpretation, the Averroist notion of material corporeity (*corporeitas*) was more than a simple accident; indeed, it represented a most original attribute, the very 'matterness' (*materieitas*) of matter.⁷⁵

As demonstrated in the cases of mental happiness, cosmology and matter theory, Renaissance thinkers could look at Averroes's philosophy (in his work as both a commentator and an author) as an attempt to provide a comprehensive and unified view of human rationality, natural teleology and divine intelligibility. In all the fields of human learning in which he had left his characteristic mark, Averroes appeared to have been looking for ways of connecting the sphere of celestial and intelligible knowledge with the world of nature and matter. But there is a broader sense to *copulatio* in Averroes's philosophy, one that goes beyond the technical meaning of a union between the cogitative power, the material and the active intellect. In Averroes's cosmos, imaginations (phantasms) and concepts, the particular and the universal, reason and the intellect meet halfway, so to speak, for mere imagination would not be up to the task of seeing the universal, and the light of the intellect would be too intense to be received by the cogitative faculty of human beings. The view that material and immaterial reality intersect through a flow of representations exchanged between the intellect and the imagination is no doubt a very precarious notion, but it is a distinctive feature of Averroes's philosophy. What is more, for all the tensions that characterise the relationships between the intellect and the imagination, and despite the fact that these tensions confirm the remorselessly dual nature of human experience, the notion of *copulatio* and the way it was supposed to occur is a constant reminder that Averroes's metaphysics should not be seen as dualistic. Rather than assuming an unbridgeable gap between matter and the intellect, Averroes's cosmology of earthly and celestial animals presupposes an ongoing process of abstraction and dematerialisation through which countless intentions of reality are being unremittingly actualised in the form of intelligibles in act.

The Emergence of the Theologico-Political Question in the Early Modern Period

It is thus safe to say that Averroist rationality rests on solid foundations provided by an overarching concept of cosmological intelligibility. These foundations can be located in an array of intellects governing all the different spheres of reality, in a material substratum that is supposed to be continuous and extended throughout the sublunary world and, finally, in an unending process of never ending intellectual actualisation. This is indeed a celebration of reason. And yet the most resourceful and appealing aspect of Averroes's view of reason resides in its ability to link even the most refractory element of materiality and contingency to a universal paradigm of intelligible continuity and fulfilment. In a sense, the distinguishing feature of

⁷⁵Ibid.: 'nisi dicat Averroes corporeitatem idem esse, quod materietas, ergo substantia non accidens, ipsa nimirum materia.'

947 Averroes's reason is communication. As Massimo Campanini argues in his recently
 948 published *Averroè*, the 'hermeneutical question' is central in Averroes's work.⁷⁶
 949 This point became especially clear during the Renaissance, when religious divisions,
 950 conflicts divorcing theology from philosophy, and frictions between political control
 951 and intellectual expression intensified quite markedly throughout Europe. One of
 952 the most debated questions in philosophy was how to find ways of harmonising the
 953 universe of reason with that of faith. It is certainly no accident that during the
 954 Renaissance *Destructio destructionum*, the work in which the theologico-political
 955 import of Averroes's philosophy comes particularly to the fore, rose to prominence
 956 among philosophers and Aristotelian interpreters.

957 A few years ago, in his book on the philosophical poetics of Alfarabi, Avicenna
 958 and Averroes, Salim Kemal pointed out that, although in Averroes's view imagina-
 959 tions and representations do not have the same ontological and cognitive status as
 960 demonstrations, they nevertheless share with these the same syllogistic structure.⁷⁷
 961 They are, after all, 'rhetorical' syllogisms. Averroes had clearly distinguished
 962 between the sphere of reality (the object of demonstrative knowledge) and that of
 963 interpretation (the domain of allegories, metaphors and images). In a descending
 964 order of both epistemological and ontological reality, human knowledge spans a
 965 wide range of degrees: demonstrative, dialectical, rhetorical and interpretative. In
 966 their own specific domains, the different degrees of knowledge produce different
 967 levels of certainty. Averroes was of the opinion that there were various forms of
 968 reasoning and that they could all be reconciled since, in the final analysis, they were
 969 consistent with the one truth. On the basis of this original kinship, the different
 970 kinds of reasoning could therefore relate to each other. Every time we are in the
 971 situation of judging and deciding about the validity of particular statements – this
 972 was Averroes's argument – we have a number of criteria to which we can appeal:
 973 agreement with reality, with a systematic account of things and with the linguistic
 974 uses of a notion (allegorical interpretation). In the absence of demonstrative certainty,
 975 when we assess the truth of a statement through dialectical or rhetorical means, we
 976 produce images and likenesses of things. The result is that, in the domain of sublun-
 977 ary reality (in terms of both being and knowledge), one cannot avoid dealing with
 978 the representative interface of the imagination. It is therefore necessary always to
 979 distinguish between good and bad uses of the imagination. For instance, to resort to
 980 the imagination rather than reason when we speculate about the origin of forms
 981 (*imaginatio super creationes formarum*) is inappropriate and leads men to believe
 982 that 'there are forms' (i.e., Platonic ideas) and that 'there is the giver of forms' (i.e.,
 983 Avicenna's 'Colcodea'). It also leads the representatives of the principal revealed

⁷⁶ Massimo Campanini, *Averroé*, pp. 59–82. See also Ovey N. Mohammed, *Averroes' Doctrine of Immortality: A Matter of Controversy* (Waterloo: Wilfred Laurier University Press, 1984); Richard C. Taylor, 'Averroes: Religious Dialectic and Aristotelian Philosophical Thought', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic Philosophy*, ed. Peter Adamson and R. C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), pp. 181–200.

⁷⁷ Salim Kemal, *The Philosophical Poetics of Alfarabi, Avicenna and Averroës: The Aristotelian Reception* (Richmond: Curzon, 2003).

religions (*loquentes trium legum*) to hold views such as that of the creation of things out of nothingness.⁷⁸

In Averroes's universe, the imagination mediates between matter, human cogitation and the intellect. The imagination, however, also plays a fundamental hermeneutical role every time philosophical reason needs to mediate with knowledge coming from the political and religious spheres. A case in point, in which philosophy meets cosmology and theology through the offices of the imagination is Averroes's explanation of prophetic dreams and visions.⁷⁹ According to Averroes, the active intellect can pour intelligible forms directly into the imaginations of men through veridical dreams. Inevitably, the representational interface provided by the imagination particularises the universals descending into the soul. The process cannot be seen as a complete distortion, but it certainly limits the focus of the understanding, narrowing knowledge from the common to the individual, from the eternal to the historical, from the spatially unlimited to the local, from the necessary to the contingent, from the uncontrovertibly logical to the questionably cultural. In the *Epitome of Parva naturalia*, Averroes explained that 'man comprehends of such particular things only that which is peculiar to his own time, his own place, his own body and his own people and not those other particular things that are common to them through their universal nature.' The reason, he argued there, is that in this kind of *comprehensio* human beings can only rely on a 'preliminary' form of knowledge (*cognitio preparans*), i.e., a condition leading to *fides* – that is, assent and belief – in which the imagination produces representations of reality (*cognitio ymaginationis ymaginem informans*). This special kind of knowledge, Averroes continued, can only be about individual realities, and about individual realities of which imagining subjects have a previous knowledge and, most of all, in which they have a particular interest.⁸⁰

Averroes was well aware that in interpreting human dreams it was crucial to emphasise the particularities of time, place, body and nation, for, like all other products of the imaginative faculty, dreams were communicated in a story, following the rules of a narrative frame. As Aristotle had already indicated in his

⁷⁸ Averroes, Long Commentary on *Metaphysica*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, ff. 305F-305^v GH. See Harry A. Wolfson, 'The Twice-Revealed Averroes', *Speculum*, 36 (1961), pp. 373–392.

⁷⁹ See infra in this volume Guido Giglioni, 'Phantasms of Reason and Shadows of Matter: Averroes's Notion of the Imagination and Its Renaissance Interpreters'.

⁸⁰ Averroes, *Compendia librorum Aristotelis qui parva naturalia vocantur*, ed. by E. Ledyard Shileds and H. Blumberg (Cambridge, MA: The Mediaeval Academy of America, 1949), p. 111: 'Quare vero homo non comprehendit ex istis particularibus nisi illud quod est proprium suo tempore et suo loco et corpori et suis hominibus absque aliis particularibus communicantibus eis in illa natura universali; quare hoc est, quia necesse est ut homo habeat in hac comprehensione alterum duorum generum cognitionis que antecedit fidem, scilicet cognitio preparans, id est cognitio ymaginationis ymaginem informans, et debet antecedere fidem; et homo non potest acquirere istam cognitionem, nisi in individuis que iam prescivit, et maxime illa individua circa que habuit magnam sollicitudinem.' Averroes, *Epitome of Parva Naturalia*, translated from the original Arabic and the Hebrew and Latin versions by Harry Blumberg (Cambridge, MA: The Mediaeval Academy of America, 1961), p. 47.

1014 *Metaphysics*, a true philosopher approves of stories, and, famously, the subject of
 1015 the inevitable limitations that characterise the imagination in its narrative functions
 1016 is one of the central themes in Spinoza's *Tractatus theologico-politicus* (1670). An
 1017 Averroist thread connects Aristotle to Spinoza, and, as Carlos Fraenkel shows in
 1018 his chapter in this volume, Elijah Delmedigo's contribution to this discussion
 1019 during the Renaissance was momentous.⁸¹ Another author who followed Averroes's
 1020 position on the question of religious truth is Cardano, who defended Aristotle,
 1021 Alexander of Aphrodisias and Averroes from the accusation of dissembling their
 1022 contempt for religious and popular views. In Cardano's opinion, they had all
 1023 recognised the role of miracles and myths in establishing religious beliefs and had
 1024 not tried to reduce their cultural and symbolical meaning to natural causes. In dis-
 1025 cussing this delicate question, Cardano referred to an important passage in the
 1026 second book of Aristotle's *Metaphysics*: 'the philosopher, too, loves fables'
 1027 (982b).⁸² While Pietro d'Abano (c. 1257–1316) and Pomponazzi had not refrained
 1028 from presenting the most implausible phenomena of nature (Cardano called them
 1029 *imaginiones* in a derogatory sense) as events demanding a rational explanation so
 1030 that they could further extol the explanatory powers of human reason, Averroes, in
 1031 Cardano's view, had followed a very different path, attempting not to deny the
 1032 existence of miracles, but to find ways – both demonstrative and hermeneutical –
 1033 to integrate them in the system of universal intelligibility. Most of all, he had not
 1034 downplayed the role of human *fabulae* in establishing and consolidating social and
 1035 political institutions. In this respect, Aristotle, Alexander and Averroes, Cardano
 1036 concluded, were in fact 'much more pious than Pietro d'Abano and Pomponazzi.'⁸³
 1037 Seen as a surrogate for demonstrative knowledge and satisfying the narrative needs
 1038 of human minds, the imagination could thus provide a much needed link between
 1039 the otherwise incommunicable domains of nature and culture, intellect and matter.
 1040 What is more, the flow of meaning that incessantly connected the supralunary and
 1041 sublunary worlds was supposed to go both ways, for by definition the imagination
 1042 is an amphibian faculty: it seizes the universal, while remembering the particular.
 1043 Averroes conceded that the human power of cogitation could reach episodic but
 1044 overwhelmingly clear perceptions of intelligible patterns every time the imagina-
 1045 tion was flooded by streams of intellective knowledge descending from above and
 1046 accommodating themselves to the particular and historical conditions of the receiv-
 1047 ing imagination. In this respect, the work of the imagination, especially during
 1048 special episodes of dream activity, is further evidence that the unremitting activity
 1049 of processing intelligible meaning from sense perceptions remains one of the cen-
 1050 tral features in Averroes's metaphysics.

1051 As shown in the cases of prophetic dreams and intellective *copulationes*, the
 1052 ability to see veridical images coming from celestial intelligences was for Averroes

⁸¹ See *infra* in this volume Carlos Fraenkel, 'Reconsidering the Case of Elijah Delmedigo's Averroism and Its Impact on Spinoza'.

⁸² Aristotle, *Metaphysica*, in *Opera cum Averrois commentariis* (Venice: Giunta, 1562), VIII, f. 34^v: 'Et tu potes scire quantum facit consuetudo in hoc consyderando in legibus. inuenies nam apologos et fabulas propter consuetudinem plus applicabiles quam scientiae veritates.'

⁸³ Cardano, *Contradicentia medica*, in *Opera omnia*, VI, p. 412b.

one of the apprehensive functions of the cogitative power that distinguished human imagination from purely animal imagination. This demonstrated once again that, by introducing the notion of 'cogitative' imagination, Averroes and the Averroists had expanded the range of cognitive functions that could be attributed to the imagination. This dilation of the imagination – lamented, as we have previously seen, by Ficino and Zabarella – was particularly evident in all those cases where the imagination could be taken as a surrogate for belief. In his commentary to the second book of *De anima*, Averroes had confirmed Aristotle's view that the imagination was different from belief, for what we imagine is not necessarily the same as what we believe.⁸⁴ In commenting upon the difference (*alietas*) between the three virtues of *sentire*, *imaginari* and *consiliari*, Averroes explained that the act of *estimare* is not voluntary (we cannot believe as we like: 'impossibile est enim qui existimat non credit quod existimat'), adding that in this case a believer finds him or herself in a condition of cognitive self sufficiency (*omne credens sibi sufficit*).⁸⁵ When we 'estimate' (think, believe, opine), we think that something is or is not the case. Put otherwise, notions of truth and falsehood are involved in the act through which we form an opinion. This is not the case with the imagination (*non est sic ymaginatio*), said Averroes, and 'that is one of the arguments from which it is apparent that imagining is different from understanding.'⁸⁶ Another reason why the imagination is different from the act of believing, Averroes continued, is that 'when we form an opinion that something is very fearful, we are in some way affected by some affection, but not by the [same] affection as if that fearful object were present. Similarly, when we form the opinion that something inspiring courage is going to occur, immediately we are affected, but not with the sort of affection as there would be if that source of inspiration were actually existing.' This means that the faculty of the imagination, unlike the faculty of belief, is capable of suspending the act of disbelief.⁸⁷ Averroes acknowledged the limits of the imagination: 'belief always follows upon opinion, so, if imagination were opinion, it would happen that everything which imagines (*omne ymaginans*) would have belief', i.e., it would be convinced of the reality of what it is experiencing. However, many living subjects imagine, but 'nevertheless do not have belief.' For instance, 'none of the beasts have belief (*habet fidem*), although several of them imagine;' and 'everything which holds opinions is something which believes, and everything which believes is self-sufficient (*sufficit sibi*).'⁸⁸ Belief provides a level of cognitive self-reliance (*omne credens sibi sufficit*)

⁸⁴ Michael Blaustein, *Averroes on the Imagination and the Intellect* (PhD thesis, Harvard University, 1984), p. 114; H. A. Wolfson, 'The Terms *Tasawwur* and *Tasdiq* in Arabic Philosophy and their Greek, Latin and Hebrew Equivalents', in Id., *Studies in the History of Philosophy and Religion*, ed. by I. Twersky and G. H. Williams, 2 vols (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1973–1977), I, pp. 478–492.

⁸⁵ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis de anima libros*, p. 368.

⁸⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 363; *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, p. 278.

⁸⁷ *Ibid.*

⁸⁸ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis de anima libros*, pp. 368–369; *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, p. 282.

1087 by virtue of which human animals surpass the natural and vital assurance of
1088 nonhuman imagination.

1089 Following the principles of Aristotle's theory of the imagination, Averroes main-
1090 tained that the line separating the sphere of the imagination from that of belief col-
1091 lapses only in two specific situations, either during dreams or in cases of delusion
1092 due to mental illnesses. In his *Colliget*, Averroes argued that someone can have
1093 distorted representations of reality when he has 'disordered thoughts (*corruptae*
1094 *cogitationes*) due to internal or external causes', so that 'he perceives through a state
1095 of altered perception (*malus sensus*).'⁸⁹ People affected by this condition will see
1096 things as if they were outside their mind, right before their eyes. While prophetic
1097 dreams represent sudden injections of intelligible clarity into the sensible life of the
1098 sublunary world, ordinary dreams follow the same physiological route as hallucina-
1099 tions and depend on the work of the imagination. When one is asleep, one's senses
1100 are at rest and are only activated by representations released by the imagination and
1101 its allied internal senses. Averroes the physician, legal expert and religious exegete
1102 was well aware that conflicts and uncertainties in human relationships depend on
1103 the ability to control and judge the work of the imagination:

1104 [The] motion starts from the imaginative virtue as a result of the form that is being received
1105 all the time from the outside when we are awake, and that form comes from afar. The imagi-
1106 nation first moves the common sense, the common sense moves the particular senses, and
1107 then the thing is perceived as if it were outside. This process that happens during sleep may
1108 also happen when one is awake, due to particularly intense cares we have about something.
1109 And as a result of this, the faculties of the soul become stronger, either because of some
1110 disease in the body, or because of fear or sadness, for then some vapour is released and it
1111 ascends to the brain and impresses there a form of the thing that has been processed by the
1112 thinking activity (*forma rei excogitatae*); and, by ascending higher and higher, it moves the
1113 animal spirit, and this motion arrives to the imaginative virtue, and this moves the common
1114 sense through the spirit, and the thing is perceived as if it were outside. And people believe
1115 that this is done by angels or demons.⁸⁹

1116 One could, of course, interpret this text as a characteristic example of demy-
1117 thologising material in an Averroistic sense, for demonic possession or angelic
1118 visions are explained through the physiology of the imagination. And yet, Averroes
1119 is more interested in the limits of the imagination than in its powers. It is significant
1120 to note that, regarding the ever recurring question concerning the extent to which
1121 one's imagination can alter one's body, Cardano is one of the rare Renaissance phy-
1122 sicians who preferred to follow Averroes rather than Avicenna. In one of his medical
1123 *Contradictiones*, written at different times and published first in 1545, and then
1124 expanded in 1548 and (posthumously) in 1663, Cardano explained that by itself the
1125 imagination cannot alter the body (*pura imaginatio non immutat corpus*):

1126 It is necessary to clarify this matter and not to be deceived by the dicta of Avicenna. This
1127 is demonstrated by experience, for if someone imagines that he is healthy or that his son is
1128 dead, he does not recover from an illness, nor does his health deteriorate. But if he believes

⁸⁹ Averroes, *Colliget*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, X, f. 55^vAC. On the reversal of the ordinary path of perception in cases of dreams and illusions, see Blaustein, *Averroes on the Imagination and the Intellect*, p. 33.

(*existimet*) that he is healthy, he is greatly helped, especially in the case of lethal wounds and pestilential fever, for, if hope by itself is extremely beneficial, the feeling of being freed from anxiety (*securitas*) is much more effective, and so, to believe that one's own son is dead makes that man's health deteriorate to the point that sometimes he dies from believing that.⁹⁰

Belief, rather than imagination, is what makes the apprehensive power of human beings capable of producing material changes in one's own body. What the imagination can certainly do, however, is give the illusion of reality. As we have seen, in the *Colliget* Averroes explained this process from a physiological point of view and clarified that these illusions could involve all five senses.⁹¹ Cardano adopted the same explanation in *De subtilitate*, while examining episodes of intense day-dreaming.⁹² In this case too, Cardano's response to Averroes was particularly interesting. Because of the double nature of his interests, both as a philosopher and as a physician, he seemed to be among the few authors who during the Renaissance made use of both the metaphysical and the medical Averroes. Above all, every time he needed to account for the countless effects of the imagination over one's body, rather than taking the Avicennian shortcut – quite common at the time, especially among physicians – he preferred to adopt the Averroistic model of the internal senses, where the imagination – in a truly Aristotelian fashion – is mediated with belief and cogitation.

In Averroes's philosophy, intellect, cogitation, belief and imagination are the faculties involved in preserving the social and political cohesion of human communities through acts of interpretation and cultural mediation at different levels of intelligible clarity. Within the context of Averroist political theology, the place of religion is extremely complex, for the imagination – understood as the common currency of exegetical exchanges between such diverse domains as philosophy, politics and theology – is constantly being transcended by the critical intervention of reason. The truth of the matter is that Averroist *copulationes* are not the business of the imagination. It is precisely when it loses all the vestiges of its individual life (i.e., memories and imaginations) that the human soul connects with the active intellect, i.e., the highest level of rational transparency. This is the characteristic tension that pervades Averroes's philosophy and its later appropriations, a tension created by the polarity of faculties involved in the hermeneutical exercise of reason: the demythologising use of the imagination, on the one hand, and the divinising use of the mind, on the other. In one of his essays, Bruno Nardi once reported two jokes by Pomponazzi, one in favour, the other against the Averroists of his time. In his commentary to Aristotle's *Physics*, Pomponazzi criticised a certain compromising attitude in philosophy pursued by the friars, by resorting to macaronic Latin: *fratizzare (idest miscere diversa brodia, 'to friarise, namely, to mix*

[AU3]

⁹⁰Cardano, *Contradicentia medica*, in *Opera omnia*, VI, p. 478b.

⁹¹Averroes, *Colliget*, in *Aristotelis opera cum Averrois commentariis*, X, f. 55^oBC.

⁹²Cardano, *De subtilitate*, in *Opera omnia*, III, p. 652ab.

1168 different kinds of broth', i.e., beliefs (*credita*) with natural truths (*physica*).⁹³ The
1169 meaning is clear: it is not appropriate to mix philosophy with theology, and
1170 Averroism, against the directions of Dominicans and Franciscans, participated in
1171 defining the question of the relationship between rationally demonstrated truths
1172 and beliefs in a more unambiguous way. Pomponazzi's quip on *fratrizzare* is a
1173 plain anticlerical jibe, in his typical style. His second witticism is instead an anti-
1174 Averroistic joke. In a passage from his commentary on the first book of the *Meteors*,
1175 Pomponazzi addressed the Averroists as 'these friends of mine' (*isti mei socii*)
1176 who, having reached the stage of the *intellectus adeptus* (i.e., the 'acquired' intel-
1177 lect achieved through a thorough study of the theoretical disciplines), 'have dinner
1178 with God and know everything' (*qui cenant cum deo et omnia sciunt*).⁹⁴ In a way,
1179 mixing broths and having dinner with God are the two sides of the same coin, i.e.,
1180 the need to define what the boundaries of human reason are and whether human
1181 reason can reach a higher level of understanding, close to God's mind, if not God's
1182 mind itself. For Pomponazzi, 'friar-philosophy' had been led astray by an incorrect
1183 use of the imagination (the mixing of cognitive 'broths'), most of all, by misinter-
1184 preting what the ultimate principle of reality (God) is. However, he thought that the
1185 Averroist response to this question had been equally misleading, for it claimed that
1186 direct, unmediated, imagination-free relationships between the human mind and
1187 God (i.e., dinners with God) were in fact possible. The idea of such dinners, it
1188 should be remembered, didn't disappear from philosophical debates with the early
1189 disappearance of Renaissance Averroists, for knowledge *sub specie aeternitatis*
1190 continued to be discussed until late in the eighteenth century.

⁹³ Pietro Pomponazzi, Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris, MS lat. 6533, f. 568^r; quoted in Nardi, *Saggi sull' aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI*, pp. 96, n. 4; 276.

⁹⁴ Pietro Pomponazzi, Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris, MS lat. 6535, f. 120^r; quoted in Nardi, *Saggi sull' aristotelismo padovano*, p. 257.

Author Queries

Chapter No.: 1 0001629562

Queries	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Please confirm the opening and closing quote for the sentence "Reducing Aristotle's Doctrine to Simple..."	
AU2	Please provide the opening single quote in foot note of the sentence "oggetto, non soggetto d'intendimento.'..."	
AU3	Please provide the closing parenthesis of the sentence "(<i>idest miscere diversa brodia, 'to friarise,...</i> "	

Uncorrected Proof

Part I 1
Middle Ages and Renaissance 2

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 2

Averroes Against Avicenna on Human Spontaneous Generation: The Starting-Point of a Lasting Debate

Amos Bertolacci

Introduction

Among the legends on Averroes's life reported in Ernest Renan's *Averroes et l'averroïsme* (1852), allegedly 'the most absurd' is the one that he draws from *De philosophia et philosophorum sectis* by Gerardus Joannes Vossius (1577–1649) (published posthumously in 1658) and from the *Historia critica philosophiae* (1767) by Johann Jakob Brucker (1696–1770). The story goes that Avicenna went to Cordoba during Averroes's lifetime, and Averroes, out of hate, tortured and killed him.¹ The tale of Avicenna's presence in Cordoba and his killing by Averroes has a long history that goes back to the thirteenth century.² On a historical level, the legend in question is obviously wrong, since Avicenna lived more than a century before Averroes and never moved to Andalusia. The persistence of the account of

¹ Ernest Renan, *Averroes et l'averroïsme* (Paris: Durand, 1852; repr. Paris: Maisonneuve & Larose, 1997), pp. 47–48.

² See Marie-Thérèse d'Alverny, 'Survivance et renaissance d'Avicenne à Venise et à Padoue', in *Venezia e l'Oriente fra tardo Medioevo e Rinascimento*, ed. Agostino Pertusi (Florence: Sansoni, 1966; repr. in Ead., *Avicenne en Occident*, Paris: Vrin, 1993, article XV), pp. 75–102 (pp. 80–83). At p. 83 of this study, d'Alverny reports a version of the legend, contained in a decree of Pietro Barozzi, bishop of Padua, of May 1489, according to which Avicenna would have succeeded in killing Averroes before being brought to death himself by this latter's poison. Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'Averroes in the Renaissance', in *Averroes Latinus: A New Edition* (Leuven: Peeters, 2002), pp. xv–xviii (xvii), identifies the immediate source of Barozzi's report in the world chronicle by Giacomo Filippo Foresta (o: Foresti) da Bergamo (1434–1520). See also Akasoy in this volume.

A. Bertolacci, Ph.D. (✉)

Scuola Normale Superiore di Pisa, Piazza dei Cavalieri,
7, Palazzo della Carovana Stanza 112, 56126 Pisa, Italy
e-mail: a.bertolacci@sns.it

17 Averroes's enmity against Avicenna, however, even after the chronological and
 18 geographical details of the latter's life had become clear to Western scholars, is
 19 significant at a philosophical level, since it represents the reflex – in which doctrinal
 20 confrontation is amplified to physical aggression – of an indisputable fact, namely,
 21 Averroes's actual 'affectation à contredire Avicenne,' as Renan says. The immense
 22 impact of Avicenna's philosophy on subsequent authors includes, besides countless
 23 instances of positive reception, also some noteworthy examples of critical attitude.
 24 Among the opponents of Avicenna, Averroes was certainly one of the most strenuous
 25 and radical.

26 Criticisms of Avicenna are frequent and widespread in Averroes's philosophical
 27 and theological works.³ The piecemeal investigation of these criticisms accom-
 28 plished in previous scholarship has not fully evidenced, and sometimes even
 29 obscured, the paramount importance that Avicenna's philosophy had for Averroes.⁴
 30 When, on the contrary, these critical references are considered more closely and
 31 studied cumulatively, they reveal Averroes's keen interest in Avicenna's thought,
 32 and his desire to formulate a systematic and definitive rejection of his philosophy.⁵
 33 This is attested by several facts. First of all, some of Averroes's treatises are openly
 34 devoted to the rebuttal of Avicenna's positions, expressing this intention in their
 35 titles.⁶ Secondly, even in works whose anti-Avicennian aim is not explicit from
 36 the outset, criticisms are numerous, often repeated, and frequently accompanied

³The case of the medical works might be different. Averroes's commentary on Avicenna's *Urjūzat al-ibb*, for example, allegedly shows a positive attitude towards Avicenna (see Renan, *Averroes et l'averroïsme*, p. 48).

⁴Although some of them, singularly taken, have attracted the attention of scholars, a comprehensive list and an overall study of these polemical references is still a *desideratum*. The lacunae of the pioneering list in Marcantonio Zimara, *Tabula dilucidationum in dictis Aristotelis et Averrois*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562; repr. Frankfurt am Main: Minerva, 1962), supplementum III, fols 42–43, are only partially filled by 'Abd al-Rahmān Badawī, 'Avicenne en Espagne musulmane: pénétration et polémique', in *Milenario de Avicenna* (Madrid: Instituto Hispano-Arabe de Cultura, 1981), pp. 9–25 (pp. 15–24), and Miguel Cruz Hernández, *Abū-l-Walīd Muḍammad Ibn Ruṣd, Averroes: Vida, obra, pensamiento, influencia* (Córdoba: Publicaciones de la Obra Social y Cultural Cajasur, 1997 [1986]), pp. 371–375.

⁵Gerhard Endress, 'The Cycle of Knowledge: Intellectual Traditions and Encyclopaedias of the Rational Sciences in Arabic Islamic Hellenism', in *Organizing Knowledge: Encyclopaedic Activities in the Pre-Eighteenth Century Islamic World*, ed. Gerhard Endress (Leiden: Brill, 2006), pp. 103–133 (125), portrays Averroes's multi-levelled commentaries on Aristotle as an expression of 'the project to found an alternative encyclopaedia', to replace the one contained in Avicenna's works.

⁶See, for example, the logical treatises *Qawl fī 'l-maḥmūlāt al-mufrada wa 'l-murakkaba wa-naqd mawqif Ibn Sīnā* ('Discourse on single and composite predicates and critique of Avicenna's position'), in Ibn Rushd, *Maqālāt fī 'l-mantiq wa 'l-'ilm al-ṭabī'ī*, ed. Jamāl al-Dīn al-'Alawī (Casablanca: Dār al-nashr al-maghribiyya, 1983), pp. 87–94, and *Naqd madhhab Ibn Sīnā fī in'ikās al-qaḍāyā* ('Critique of Avicenna's doctrine on the conversion of propositions', *ibid.*, pp. 100–105); cf. Tony Street, 'Arabic and Islamic Philosophy of Language and Logic' (<http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/arabic-islamic-language/>), §1.4.2.

by long and detailed argumentations.⁷ This means that Averroes's attacks against Avicenna's positions are not occasional and incidental diversions, but represent a *leitmotiv* and an important target of these works. Thirdly, criticisms touch on all the main areas of Avicenna's philosophy, from logic to the different sections of natural philosophy, to metaphysics. Finally, Averroes often accuses Avicenna of fundamental flaws – such as linguistic misunderstandings, semantic confusions, methodological faults and recourse to unreliable sources – detrimental for the reputation of a thinker in general and a philosopher in particular.⁸ This being the case, it is not far-fetched to say that Averroes's philosophy has two main poles: a positive one, represented by Aristotle, and a negative one, constituted by Avicenna. Albeit negatively, Avicenna is one of the most important sources of Averroes's system, probably the most extensively quoted, after Aristotle, together with al-Fārābī.

Elsewhere, I have provided an overview of all Averroes's criticisms of Avicenna in his Aristotelian commentaries, and a more specific account of those contained in Averroes's Long Commentary on *Metaphysica*.⁹ In the present contribution, I wish to focus on the first criticism contained in this commentary, in the context of Averroes's exegesis of book 2 of *Metaphysica* (II, 993a30-995a20). At stake is Avicenna's doctrine of the asexual (so-called 'spontaneous') generation of human beings. In the general context of the confrontation between advocates and opponents of spontaneous generation, this more specific debate between Averroes and Avicenna deeply influenced Jewish thought and had a long-lasting impact on Latin philosophy until the Renaissance. In late medieval scholasticism and early modern

⁷ See Dimitri Gutas, 'Ibn Ṭufayl on Ibn Sīnā's Eastern Philosophy', *Oriens*, 34 (1994), pp. 222–241 (240). The attention that Averroes devotes to the rebuttal of Avicenna's positions is reflected in the care with which he discusses and refutes the doctrines of philosophers whom he associates with Avicenna. Charles Genequand, 'Introduction', in Ibn Rushd, *Metaphysics: A Translation with Introduction of Ibn Rushd's Commentary on Aristotle's Metaphysics, Book Lām*, ed. C. Genequand (Leiden: Brill, 1984; repr. 1986), pp. 1–58, contends, for instance: 'The care with which Ibn Rushd explains and refutes these objections of Themistius probably owes something to the use which Ibn Sīnā made of them' (p. 29).

⁸ That Averroes's rebuttal of Avicenna's philosophy is wide-ranging and radical has been colourfully expressed by saying that Averroes is insistent, assiduous, even 'obsessed' in criticizing 'his own arch-enemy' Avicenna: the two expressions occur, respectively, in Herbert A. Davidson, *Proofs for Eternity, Creation and the Existence of God in Medieval Islamic and Jewish Philosophy* (New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1987), p. 311, and Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'Spontaneous Generation and the Ontology of Forms in Greek, Arabic and Medieval Latin Sources', in *Classical Arabic Philosophy: Sources and Reception*, ed. Peter Adamson (London and Turin: The Warburg Institute and Aragno, 2007), pp. 150–175 (159).

⁹ Amos Bertolacci, 'From Athens to Iṣfahān, to Cordoba, to Cologne: On the Vicissitudes of Aristotle's *Metaphysics* in the Arab and Latin Worlds during the Middle Ages', in *Sciences et philosophie: Circulation des savoirs autour de la Méditerranée (IXe-XVIIe siècles)*, Colloque International SIHSPAI, Florence, Italy, 16–18 February 2006; Id., 'The "Andalusian Revolt Against Avicenna's *Metaphysics*": Averroes' Criticism of Avicenna in the Long Commentary on the *Metaphysics*', in *Averroès, l'averroïsme, l'antiaverroïsme - XIV^e symposium annuel de la SIEPM*, Genève, Switzerland, 4–6 October 2006. The texts of these two communications are in print in the proceedings of the aforementioned conferences (eds Graziella Federici Vescovini and Ahmed Hasnaoui; ed. Alain de Libera).

59 philosophy thinkers assumed three main positions towards this debate: some upheld
 60 Avicenna's position, defending him against Averroes's attack (see, for instance,
 61 Pietro Pomponazzi [d. 1525], and Pomponazzi's students Paolo Ricci and Tiberio
 62 Russiliano); others, on the contrary, basically adopted Averroes's standpoint,
 63 although superimposing on it a distinction between Peripatetic philosophy and
 64 Christian doctrine foreign to Averroes and taken from John Duns Scotus (Agostino
 65 Nifo [d. ca.1540]); a third group of thinkers, finally, followed the so-called *via*
 66 *media*, already traced by Thomas Aquinas, pointing at the possibility of a middle
 67 course between the extreme positions of Avicenna and Averroes (Antonio Trombetta
 68 [d. 1517] in Padua, and Pedro de Fonseca [d. 1599] in Lisbon).¹⁰ This variety of
 69 opinions shows not only the vivacity of the discussion triggered by Avicenna's and
 70 Averroes's confrontation, but also the importance of the philosophical options at
 71 stake behind the standpoints of the two Arab masters.

72 Elsewhere in the Long Commentary on *Metaphysica* Averroes attacks Avicenna's
 73 doctrine of spontaneous generation in general for implying the intervention of the
 74 Giver of Forms and for its Platonizing character.¹¹ In the criticism considered here,
 75 the disagreement on human spontaneous generation is dictated by a more markedly
 76 ontological point of view, since Averroes detects in Avicenna's position a violation
 77 of the principle of the necessary inherence of complex forms, like the form of man,
 78 in specific and structured matters, to the exclusion of more generic and basic
 79 material. Averroes's objections against Avicenna are mainly two: the first, implicit,
 80 is that human spontaneous generation is impossible; the second, explicit, is that the
 81 form of man cannot inhere in a matter, like elemental earth, that is much simpler

¹⁰ For a historical overview, see Gad Freudenthal, '(Al-)Chemical Foundations for Cosmological Ideas: Ibn Sīnā's on the Geology of an Eternal World', in *Physics, Cosmology and Astronomy, 1300–1700: Tension and Accommodation*, ed. Sabetai Unguru (Dordrecht, Boston and London: Kluwer 1991); repr. in Id., *Science in the Medieval Hebrew and Arabic Traditions* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2005), XII, pp. 47–73 (pp. 64–65); Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'Arabic Philosophy and Averroism', in *Cambridge Companion to Renaissance Philosophy*, ed. James Hankins (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007), pp. 113–136 (esp. pp. 125–129); Hasse, 'Spontaneous Generation', pp. 155 ff. (on pp. 158–159, 161–162, Hasse touches upon Averroes's criticism of Avicenna in Text 1); Gad Freudenthal, 'Samuel Ibn Tibbon's Avicennian Theory of an Eternal World', *Aleph*, 8 (2008), pp. 41–129 (pp. 64–68).

¹¹ *d al-ṭabī'a*, ed. Maurice Bouyges (Beirut: Imprimerie Catholique, 1938–1948; henceforth: *Tafsīr*), Z.31, p. 882, l. 17–19 (Lat. transl. in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, fol. 181^B); Z.31, p. 885, l. 18 – p. 886, l. 3 (fol. 181^I); A.18, p. 1498, l. 12–15 (fol. 304^G). In the quotations of Averroes's commentaries, the Greek letter indicates the treatise of Aristotle's work commented upon, whereas the following cardinal number refers to the section of Averroes's exegesis (thus, Z.31 means: treatise Z [i.e., VII] of the *Metaphysica*, section 31 of Averroes's exegesis). On these criticisms, see Genequand, 'Introduction', pp. 24–32; Gad Freudenthal, 'The Medieval Astrologization of Aristotle's Biology: Averroes on the Role of the Celestial Bodies in the Generation of Animate Beings', *Arabic Science and Philosophy*, 12 (2002), pp. 111–137; repr. in Id., *Science in the Medieval Hebrew and Arabic Traditions*, XV; Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'Plato Arabico-Latinus: Philosophy – Wisdom Literature – Occult Sciences', in *The Platonic Tradition in the Middle Ages: A Doxographic Approach*, eds Stephen Gersh, Maarten J. F. M. Hoenen and Pieter T. van Wingerden (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 2002), pp. 31–64 (pp. 42–45); Id., 'Spontaneous Generation', pp. 158–162.

than its usual material is. The criticism in question, besides offering an insightful vantage-point on Averroes's ontology, is interesting in another respect: it can be taken as representative of Averroes's overall anti-Avicennian polemic, since it displays some important recurrent features of Averroes's critical remarks concerning Avicenna.

Text 1: *Tafsīr* α.15, p. 46, l. 18 – p. 47, l. 4 (Lat. transl. *In Aristotelis librum II [α.] Metaphysicorum Commentarius*, ed. Gion Dams [Freiburg: Paulusverlag, 1966], p. 77, l. 25–30)

[a] Likewise, there are those who deny that specific forms are necessarily proper to their matters. Thus, we find that Avicenna, despite his famous rank in wisdom, says to be possible for a man to be generated from earth (*turāb*), as a mouse is generated [from it].

[b] This [view] – if he [indeed] held it and did not disparage it – is an [instance of] consensus with the people of his time.

[c] For this [mistake] – and many other similar things, whose enumeration would be too long – happened to him because of his familiarity with the science of the Ash'ariyya.

The three sections in which this text can be divided present three *leitmotifs* of Averroes's criticisms of Avicenna. The first is the harsh tone and the *ad personam* character of the attack, witnessed by section [a], where Averroes expresses his amazement at an error that he regards as unworthy of Avicenna's alleged fame in philosophy. The second *topos* is Averroes's insistence in section [b] on Avicenna's agreement and consonance with contemporary thinkers, a fact that in Averroes's eyes evidences the profound gap separating Avicenna from the ancient masters, depositaries of authentic philosophy. Section [c], finally, is one of the many cases in which Averroes scolds Avicenna for being too conversant with, and receptive of, Islamic theology in general, and its Ash'arite version in particular, thus disregarding the requirements of true philosophy.¹²

In what follows, I will take all of these sections into account, showing how in each of them Averroes presents Avicenna's position in a peculiar and deforming way. In fact, ([a]) Avicenna does not uphold the specific version of human spontaneous generation that Averroes ascribes to him; ([b]) Avicenna's doctrine of human spontaneous generation is deeply rooted in ancient philosophy; and ([c]) his account of this doctrine evidences clear non-religious (and therefore non-theological) traits.

¹² Ash'arism was one of the major currents of Islamic theology, deriving its name from the tenth-century theologian Abū 'l-Ḍasan al-Ash'arī (d. 935). In reaction to the theological rationalism that characterised the first great Islamic theological movement (Mu'tazilism), the numerous exponents of this school underscored dogmatic aspects of Islam that were at odds with a strictly philosophical world-view (such as God's absolute omnipotence and free will, and His constant agency in the order of natural events), thus determining an occasionalist perspective in natural philosophy and a strict observance of divine commands in ethics. On Ash'arism, see Daniel Gimaret, *La doctrine d'al-Ash'arī* (Paris: Éditions du Cerf, 1990). Averroes's choice of connecting Avicenna with Ash'arism in particular, among the various schools of Muslim theology, seems an intentional move in his strategy of stressing the non-philosophical character of Avicenna's thought.

115 **The Matter of Human Spontaneous Generation**
 116 **According to Avicenna**

117 According to Averroes's report in section [a], Avicenna upholds that, in the case of
 118 human spontaneous generation, the specific form of man (the form of humanity pres-
 119 ent in the sperm of the male parent) does not inhere in its usual proper matter (sup-
 120 posedly the menstruum of the female parent), but supervenes on a different, more
 121 elementary, substrate (earth). Section [a] deals apparently with a precise passage of
 122 Avicenna's works ('we find that Avicenna ... says ...'). The *locus* in question is in all
 123 likelihood a pericope of the *Kitāb al-Shifā'* (*Book of the Cure*), Avicenna's most
 124 important philosophical *summa*; more precisely, it can be identified with chapter II,
 125 6 of *Ma'ādīn wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya* (*Minerals and Upper Signs*), at the end of the fifth
 126 section of the *Shifā'* dealing with natural philosophy, in which Avicenna reworks a
 127 part of Aristotle's *Meteorologica* and endorses the doctrine of human spontaneous
 128 generation while explaining mankind's rebirth after a catastrophic event like a uni-
 129 versal flood. In this chapter, Avicenna admits the possibility that animal species
 130 (including the human species) may undergo a process of asexual generation: in this
 131 process, the embryonic matter is provided by a mixture of elements determined by
 132 specific astral configurations, the protection that is usually guaranteed by the female
 133 uterus is superfluous due to the absence of environmental dangers, and the formative
 134 action of male sperm is replaced by a direct inflow of the form by the Active Intellect.
 135 This kind of spontaneous generation is for Avicenna an unusual, extraordinary
 136 phenomenon that prevents the total extinction of animal life on earth after the recurrent
 137 floods by which world history is allegedly marked.¹³ This doctrine is absent in
 138 Aristotle and, although it may have been cryptically alluded to also by al-Fārābī
 139 before Avicenna,¹⁴ it receives an extensive and coherent account only by the latter.
 140 Therefore, Averroes is substantially right in ascribing the doctrine of the spontaneous
 141 generation of human beings to Avicenna and in criticizing it as non-Aristotelian.

¹³The precise way in which Avicenna conceives the spontaneous generation of man in this chapter deserves a precise analysis, in the footsteps of Remke Kruk's numerous studies on the accounts of the phenomenon of animal spontaneous generation in Avicenna's thought: see Remke Kruk, 'A Frothy Bubble: Spontaneous Generation in the Medieval Islamic Tradition', *Journal of Semitic Studies*, 35 (1990), pp. 265–282; Ead., 'Ibn Ṭufayl: A Medieval Scholar's Views on Nature', in *The World of Ibn Ṭufayl: Interdisciplinary Perspectives on Ḥayy Ibn Yaqzān*, ed. Lawrence I. Conrad (Leiden: Brill, 1996), pp. 69–89 (pp. 80–87); Ead., 'Ibn Sīnā on Animals: Between the First Teacher and the Physician', in *Avicenna and His Heritage*, ed. Jules Janssens and Daniel De Smet (Leuven: Leuven University Press, 2002), pp. 325–341 (pp. 334–338).

¹⁴See *Al-Farabi on the Perfect State: Abū Naṣr al-Fārābī's Mabādi' Ārā' Ahl al-Madīna al-Fāḍila*, A revised Text with Introduction, Translation and Commentary by Richard Walzer (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1985; repr. 1988), ch. 16, §7, p. 270, l. 16 – p. 272, l. 3. In the commentary to this text (pp. 466–467), Walzer sees this brief passage as an expression of al-Fārābī's endorsement of the doctrine of spontaneous generation, although he remarks that such a doctrine is not fully compatible with al-Fārābī's usual description of human generation and his belief in the eternity of the human species. Walzer assumes that this doctrine, rejected as such by Aristotle (see p. 467, n. 836), entered in the Aristotelian tradition on account of the inner tensions between Aristotle's theory of becoming, on the one hand, and his views on biological generation, on the other.

As to the specific doctrine of the spontaneous generation of human beings from earth, however, the evidence in Avicenna's works is more scarce. Indeed, if compared with the place of the *Shifā'* from which it is taken, Averroes's report of Avicenna's doctrine in section [a] is simplified in several respects. First, whereas in *Ma'ādin wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya* II, 6 Avicenna maintains that mice can be generated from earth, he does not uphold the view that men are generated from earth in the same way as mice are. Nowhere in this chapter does he draw a parallel between the spontaneous generations of mice and human beings; he rather equates the spontaneous generation of mice with that of other non-human animals, like snakes, scorpions and frogs.¹⁵ Second, in this chapter Avicenna points to the necessity of a particular predisposition (*isti'dād*) of matter, given by a certain composition (*ijtimā'*), mixture (*mizāj*), and blend (*imtizāj*) of all the elements ('anāšir, *arkān*), as one of the conditions of spontaneous generation in general, without connecting directly and explicitly the spontaneous generation of human beings only with one particular element (earth).¹⁶ Third, he does not portray the spontaneous generation of animals as a direct and immediate effect of the mixture of elements, but contends explicitly that at least one or two further mixtures are necessary in order for the process to be completed.¹⁷ Thus, earth and the other elements are only the *remote* material cause of the

¹⁵ Ibn Sīnā, *Al-Shifā'*, *al-Ṭabī 'iyyāt, al-Ma'ādin wa'l-Āthār al-'ulwiyya*, ed. 'Abd al-'alīm Muntaṣir, Sa'īd Zāyid, 'Abd Allāh Ismā'īl (Cairo: al-Hay'a al-'amma li-shu'ūn al-maṭābi' al-amīriyya, 1965; henceforth: *Ma'ādin wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya*) treatise II, chapter 6, p. 76, l. 18 – p. 77, l. 4 (Lat. trans. *De diluviis*, in Manuel Alonso Alonso, 'Homenaje a Avicena en su milenario. Las traducciones de Juan González de Burgos y Salomón', *Al-Andalus*, 14 [1949], pp. 291–319 [p. 307, l. 3–9]): 'It is not objectionable that the animals and the plants, or some of their genera, passed away and then took place [again] through [spontaneous] generation rather than reproduction. For no demonstration whatsoever prevents things from existing and taking place, after their extinction, by way of [spontaneous] generation rather than reproduction. Many animals take place through both [spontaneous] generation and reproduction, and likewise [many] plants. Snakes (*ḥayyāt*) can result from hairs, scorpions (*'aqārib*) from clay (*tīn*) and lemon balm (*bādharij, melissa officinalis*), mice (*fa'r*) can be [spontaneously] generated from mud (*madar*), frogs (*ḍafādi*) from rain. But of all these things there is also reproduction.'

¹⁶ *Ma'ādin wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya* II, 6, p. 77, l. 4–10 (cf. *De diluviis*, p. 307, l. 9–14): 'When this generation stops and is not attested for many years, it is not prevented from occurring seldom, when a rare heavenly configuration takes place without having been repeated until the present, as well as [when] a predisposition of the elements ('anāšir) [takes place] that comes about only at every edge of a long time. On the contrary, we say that everything that is generated from the elements in virtue of a certain mixture (*mizāj*) is brought to exist as a species by the occurrence of that mixture because of the composition (*ijtimā'*) of the elements according to fixed measures. As long as the elements continue to exist, and their division and composition according to these measures is possible, the mixture resulting from them is [also] possible.'

¹⁷ *Ma'ādin wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya* II, 6, p. 77, l. 10–12 (cf. *De diluviis*, p. 307, l. 14–18): 'If the first blend (*imtizāj*) is not sufficient, but [the thing in question] is generated only by a second or third blend, as the animal is generated from the blend of the humours after that of the elements, then it is not objectionable that the second composition and the second blend takes place after the occurrence of the first blend without semen and sperm.' A second and a third mixture (*mizāj*) are mentioned also at p. 78, l. 3–4 (a passage omitted in *De diluviis*).

160 spontaneous generation of animals, and in no way its only material factor; this gen-
 161 eral point applies *a fortiori* also to the case of the spontaneous generation of human
 162 beings.

163 Nowhere else in the *Shifā'* can an open endorsement of the doctrine that Averroes
 164 attributed to Avicenna in section [a] be found. The treatment of spontaneous genera-
 165 tion in chapter XV, 1 of the zoological section (Ḥayawān) of the *Shifā'* contains only
 166 a generic allusion to the possibility that the human species becomes extinct (this
 167 time on account of atmospheric events) and that it comes back to existence by means
 168 of spontaneous generation.¹⁸ The only case I am aware of in which Avicenna deals
 169 with the doctrine of human spontaneous generation from earth is the end of treatise
 170 17 of the Ḥayawān of the *Shifā'*.¹⁹ This passage, however, does not corroborate
 171 Averroes's formulation of Avicenna's doctrine in Text 1 [a].

172 Text 2: Avicenna, Ḥayawān XVII, p. 419, l. 9–10:

173 He [*sc.* Aristotle] said: 'And indeed, even if²⁰ the generation of the forefather of human
 174 beings and the four[-legged] beasts occurred in earth (*fī arḍ*), they were generated²¹ in this
 175 way [i.e. either by larvae or from eggs].'²²

176 First and foremost, in this text Avicenna is speaking of the spontaneous genera-
 177 tion of human beings 'in earth' (*fī arḍ*) rather than 'from earth' (*min arḍ*), that it to
 178 say, he is apparently taking earth as the place where human spontaneous generation
 179 occurs, rather than as the matter from which human beings were spontaneously
 180 generated, if the wording of the edition is to be maintained.²³ Moreover, in Text 2
 181 Avicenna simply paraphrases Aristotle's hypothetical statement in *De generatione*

¹⁸ Ibn Sīnā, *Al-Shifā', al-Ṭabī'iyāt, al-Ḥayawān*, eds 'Abd al-Ḥalīm Muntaṣir, Sa'īd Zāyid, 'Abd Allāh Ismā'īl (Cairo: al-Ḥay'a al-miṣriyya al-'amma li'l-ta'līf wa'l-nashr, 1970; henceforth: Ḥayawān), XV, 1, p. 385, l. 17 – p. 386, l. 5; Lat. transl. in *Opera in lucem redacta* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1508; repr. Frankfurt am Main: Minerva, 1961), fol. 59^{va}. See Kruk, 'Ibn Sīnā on Animals', p. 336; Hasse, 'Spontaneous Generation', p. 155, n. 24.

¹⁹ See Lutz Richter-Bernburg, '*Medicina Ancilla Philosophiae: Ibn Ṭufayl's Ḥayy Ibn Yazān*', in *The World of Ibn Ṭufayl*, pp. 90–113 (98 and n. 21).

²⁰ Mss B and D of the edition report the variant *in* ('if'). The edited reading *wa-in* ('even if') is supported also by the manuscripts Leiden, University Library, ms. Or. 4, fol. 297^r and Leiden, University Library, ms. Or. 84, fol. 542^r.

²¹ Reading *fa-takawwana* = 'he was generated', as in manuscript Leiden, University Library, ms. Or. 4, fol. 297^r, instead of *fa-sa-yakūnu* = 'it will be', as in the edition (cf. *fa-yatakawwanu* = 'he is generated' in manuscript Leiden, University Library, ms. Or. 84, fol. 542^r).

²² Cf. Ibn Sīnā, *Opera in lucem redacta*, fol. 62^{vb}: 'Et dixit etiam si fuerit pater primus hominum et quadrupedalium generatus in terra, erit etiam sicut diximus.' The sentence that follows Text 2 (Ḥayawān, p. 419, l. 10; Lat. transl. fol. 62^{vb}: 'sed affirmationem huius determinabimus alibi') seems to correspond to the reference to *Historia animalium* occurring at the end of *De generatione animalium*, III, 11, 763b15–16 (cf. Aristotle, *Generation of Animals: The Arabic Translation commonly ascribed to Yahyā ibn al-Bīṭrīq*, eds J. Brugmann and H. J. Drossaard Lulofs [Leiden: Brill, 1971], p. 133, l. 8–10).

²³ The edited reading *fī arḍ* is attested also in manuscripts Leiden, University Library, ms. Or. 4, fol. 297^r and Leiden, University Library, ms. Or. 84, fol. 542^r. The confusion between *fī* ('in') and *min* ('from') is, however, not unusual in Arabic manuscripts.

animalium, III, 11, 762b27-32, according to which, *if* human beings and quadrupeds were generated from earth once upon a time, as some say (a reference to such *loci* as Plato's *Politicus* 269b, 271a), *then* one might assume that their generation occurred either by larvae or from eggs.²⁴ Averroes was in all likelihood familiar with this Aristotelian passage, since he is credited with a commentary on Aristotle's zoological works.²⁵ Therefore, Averroes could not take Text 2 as evidence that Avicenna was endorsing the doctrine of the spontaneous generation of man from earth, without ascribing *ipso facto* the same doctrine to Aristotle as well (an ascription that Averroes would certainly reject).

Avicenna's Sources in Ancient Philosophy

Studies on the medieval doctrine of human spontaneous generation have cumulatively shown its profound underpinnings in ancient philosophy. In Avicenna's case in particular, the overall setting of *Ma'ādīn wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya*, II, 6 is dependent upon Greek sources: the doctrine of floods is reminiscent of the reports of catastrophic events that one finds in Plato's dialogues (see *Timaeus*, 22c-23b; *Laws*, III 677a-b)²⁶; the spontaneous generation of lower animal species is taken from Aristotle's zoology (for mice, see *Historia animalium*, VI, 37, 580b30, cf. Pliny, *Naturalis historia*, X, 85; for scorpions, see Aristotle, fr. 367 Rose)²⁷; Avicenna was also in all likelihood familiar with the tales regarding human beings generated from earth, which are recurrent in Plato's works (*Protagoras*, 320d-e, *Politicus* 269b, 271a), as well as in other ancient historians (cf. the reference to Erechtheus 'born from earth' in Herodotus, *Historiae*, VIII, 55), if not in their original formulations, at least in the reports that one finds in Aristotle's zoological works, where such tales are discussed and substantially dismissed (*De generatione animalium*, III, 11, 762b27-32).

²⁴ Cf. Aristotle, *Generation of Animals: The Arabic Translation*, p. 131, l. 4-6: 'One might similarly believe about the generation of men and of the four-legged animals, if their generation was originally from earth, as some suppose, that its beginning occurred in one of two ways.'

²⁵ Prof. Gerrit Bos is preparing the critical edition of the Hebrew translation of this commentary, several passages of which are discussed in Freudenthal, 'The Medieval Astrologization of Aristotle's Biology'.

²⁶ The dependence on Plato's *Timaeus* has not escaped the Latin translator, who entitles *De diluviis in Thimaeum Platonis* the Latin version of *Ma'ādīn wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya* II, 6.

²⁷ Snakes and frogs are not taken into account by Aristotle in the context of spontaneous generation; about the former he explicitly says, on the contrary, that they are oviparous (*Historia animalium*, VI, 1, 558b1). On Aristotle's theory of spontaneous generation, see James G. Lennox, 'Teleology, Chance, and Aristotle's Theory of Spontaneous Generation', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 20 (1982), pp. 219-238; Lindsay Judson, 'Chance and "Always or For most Part" in Aristotle', in *Aristotle's Physics: A Collection of Essays*, ed. L. Judson (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1991), pp. 73-74 and n. 2.

207 Moreover, Averroes is well aware that Avicenna was deeply involved in the fiery
 208 debate prompted among Peripatetics by Themistius's interpretation of spontaneous
 209 generation, which Averroes regards as anti-Aristotelian because of the recourse to
 210 Platonic forms²⁸: in commenting on a passage of *Metaphysica*, VII, 9 (1034b4-7), in
 211 which Aristotle explains this phenomenon only in terms of certain peculiarities of
 212 matter, Averroes criticises Avicenna twice for his agreement with Themistius
 213 and opposition to Aristotle and Alexander of Aphrodisias; Averroes reiterates this
 214 criticism of Avicenna in a similar vein in his commentary on *Metaphysica*, book
 215 12.²⁹ In other words, Averroes did not ignore that chapter II, 6 of *Ma'ādīn*
 216 *wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya* is constitutively dependent upon, and dialectically related to,
 217 Greek sources.

218 In light of all this, stating – as Averroes does in section [b] of Text 1 – that
 219 Avicenna's endorsement of the doctrine of human spontaneous generation (with the
 220 further qualification 'from earth' added by Averroes) is evidence of his agreement
 221 with his contemporaries seems excessive. Quite on the contrary, Avicenna's stand
 222 derives primarily from his philosophical lineage and, in particular, from his
 223 harmonising attitude towards the two main exponents of Greek thought, Aristotle
 224 and Plato, and the two major interpreters of Aristotle within the Greek Peripatetic
 225 tradition, Alexander of Aphrodisias and Themistius; more specifically, Avicenna's
 226 position can be seen as a sort of synthesis between the Aristotelian tenet of the
 227 eternity of natural species, on the one hand, and the Platonic theory of the periodic
 228 extinctions of mankind due to natural catastrophes (which Avicenna takes as effec-
 229 tively universal), on the other; between the active role of the celestial realm in the
 230 worldly processes of generation and corruption, acknowledged by Alexander of
 231 Aphrodisias, and the theory of the emanation of forms from above in the sublunary
 232 world, suggested by Themistius. The consensus with the philosophers of his time
 233 that Averroes notices in Avicenna, if it really took place, is to be considered as a
 234 consequence of this wider and more fundamental theoretical option.

235 Thus, lacking any effective basis, Averroes's remark sounds like an ideological
 236 charge against Avicenna: in light of Averroes's project to restore the original thought
 237 of Aristotle in the commentaries on the latter's works, Avicenna's agreement with
 238 contemporaries is, for Averroes, tantamount to his distance from true philosophy.
 239 This accusation is complementary to another reproach that Averroes often raises
 240 against Avicenna, that of consciously distancing himself from, and therefore
 241 contaminating and corrupting, true Aristotelian doctrine.³⁰

²⁸ The reliability of Averroes's interpretation of Themistius's position is not unanimously accepted: see the doubts raised by Genequand, 'Introduction', pp. 27–29, in comparison with the more sympathetic attitude of Hasse, 'Spontaneous Generation', p. 154.

²⁹ See the passages quoted above, n. 11.

³⁰ See, for example, the criticisms in the Long Commentary on the *De anima* Γ.30 (Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De Anima libros*, ed. F. Stuart Crawford [Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1953], p. 470, l. 41–48), and in the *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut (Tahafot at-tahafot)*, ed. Maurice Bouyges [Beirut: Imprimerie Catholique, 1930], p. 500, l. 12–13; Engl. trans. in *Averroes' Tahafut al-Tahafut [The Incoherence of the Incoherence]*, trans. Simon van den Bergh [Oxford: Oxford University Press; London: Luzac, 1954], p. 305).

Al-Ghazālī's Point of View

242

Previous research on Avicenna's doctrine of human spontaneous generation has 243
 rightly noticed its anti-religious vein.³¹ In Avicenna's account, the extinction of 244
 human life caused by disruptive floods is really universal and, differently from the 245
 Biblical story of Noah and his family (as well as the Greek myth of Deucalion and 246
 Pyrra), spares no member of mankind. In this way, Avicenna seems to exclude 247
 both the notion of a providential God who preserves his dearest creatures from total 248
 disappearance and the idea of a divine justice that punishes evil persons on account 249
 of their deeds, so that sinful behaviour is extinguished in the world, while good 250
 persons are preserved to become the subject of a righteous covenant. If therefore 251
 Averroes affirms in section [c] that Avicenna's doctrine is a proof of his familiarity 252
 with Islamic theology, thus ascribing to Avicenna intentions that are totally alien to 253
 the latter's point of view, it is because he sees in the Avicennian doctrine expounded 254
 in section [a] an intimate link with religious and theological thought. No doubt, 255
 Averroes is alluding to the cursory references to God's creating mankind from 256
 earth in the Quran, whose scriptural model is the Biblical tale of the creation of 257
 Adam. But even this third contention, as we are going to see, is more problematic 258
 than it can appear. 259

In a passage of the *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut* ('Incoherence of the Incoherence'), 260
 Averroes states explicitly that the theologians hold the view of the creation of man 261
 from earth in which he comments on a specific pericope of the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* 262
 ('The Incoherence of the Philosophers') of al-Ghazālī, a theologian whom Averroes 263
 frequently classifies as Ash'arite.³² In the first section ('discussion') of the second 264
 part of this work (the part devoted to natural philosophy, following the first part 265
 dealing with metaphysics), al-Ghazālī confronts the philosophers' dismissal of 266
 those occasional 'ruptures' of the regular connection of causes and effects that 267
 constitute the divine miracles.³³ In order to guarantee the possibility of miracles, in 268
 the second half of this first section he shows that certain miracles denied by the 269
 philosophers, such as the transformation of a staff into a serpent (with reference 270
 to Moses, Quran XX:17–21; cf. VII:107, XXVI:45) or the resurrection of dead 271
 persons (in the Day of Judgement), can be justified even on philosophical grounds, 272
 i.e., assuming the philosophical setting of causality. Two passages of this section are 273
 relevant to the present discussion. In them, al-Ghazālī resumes certain aspects of 274

³¹ See Freudenthal, 'Samuel Ibn Tibbon's Avicennian Theory of an Eternal World', pp. 66–67.

³² Michael E. Marmura, 'Al-Ghazālī's Second Causal Theory in the 17th Discussion of his *Tahāfut*', *Islamic Philosophy and Mysticism*, ed. Parviz Morewedge (Delmar [New York]: Caravan Books, 1981), pp. 85–112 (99), aptly notices 'Averroes' repeated references in his own *Tahāfut* to al-Ghazālī's arguments as Ash'arite.

³³ This section is often referred to as the seventeenth discussion of the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* (see the article by Marmura mentioned in the previous footnote). On its overall doctrine, see Frank Griffel, *Al-Ghazali's Philosophical Theology*, Oxford University Press, Oxford 2009, pp. 147–179, and the further bibliography quoted therein.

275 Avicenna's doctrine of human generation and of animal spontaneous generation.
 276 However, he seems to exclude the possibility that human generation takes place
 277 directly from earth, neither does he appear to subscribe to Avicenna's doctrine of the
 278 spontaneous generation of human beings.

279 Text 3: Al-Ghazālī, *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* (*The Incoherence of the Philosophers*, A Parallel
 280 English-Arabic text translated, introduced, and annotated by Michael E. Marmura [Provo:
 281 Brigham Young University Press, 2000], p. 172, l. 4–10; p. 173, l. 11–14)

282 [a] Similarly, the raising of the dead and the changing of the staff into a snake are
 283 possible in this way – namely that matter is receptive of all things. Thus, earth (*turāb*) and
 284 the rest of the elements (*sā'ir al-'anāšir*) change into plants, plants – when eaten by animals
 285 – into blood, blood then changes into sperm. Sperm is then poured into the womb and
 286 develops in stages as an animal; this, in accordance with habit, takes places in a lengthy
 287 period of time. Why, then, should the opponent deem it impossible that it lies within God's
 288 power to cycle matter through these stages in a time shorter than has been known? And if
 289 this is possible within a shorter time, there is no restriction to its being [yet] shorter ...

290 [b] Moreover, we have seen genera of animals that are [spontaneously] generated from
 291 earth (*turāb*) and are never procreated – as, for example, worms – and others like the mouse
 292 (*fa'r*), the snake (*ḥayya*) and the scorpion (*'aqrab*) that are both [spontaneously] gener-
 293 ated and procreated, their generation being from the earth (*turāb*). Their dispositions to
 294 receive forms differ due to things unknown to us, it being beyond human power to know
 295 them.

296 Without entering into details, al-Ghazālī's main point in this text is that a possible
 297 explanation of the miracle of resurrection is congruent with the philosophical
 298 account of human generation, according to which elemental matter becomes,
 299 successively, vegetal life, nourishment, blood, sperm and – finally – a living being: the
 300 same sequence of distinct stages posited by the philosophers in human generation
 301 can be maintained also in the case of resurrection, with the only proviso of restricting
 302 the chronological span of their succession, i.e., positing the overall process as
 303 being – by God's power – much faster than usual and, in the last instance, instantaneous
 304 (section [a]).³⁴ The fact that some animals (like mice, snakes and scorpions),
 305 for reasons unknown to us, are generated in two different ways, both through
 306 procreation and spontaneously (section [b]), confirms that two types of human
 307 generation, differing in their temporal durations, are possible: the first, the one
 308 which we are accustomed to and which philosophers explain, takes place in a
 309 certain time; the second, performed by God on the day of resurrection, on the
 310 contrary, occurs instantaneously. In section [a], al-Ghazālī resumes some points of
 311 the standard philosophical theory of sexual human generation, shared by Avicenna
 312 and surfacing *mutatis mutandis* also in chapter II, 6 of Avicenna's *Ma'ādīn wa-Āthār*
 313 *'ulwiyya*. Like Avicenna, al-Ghazālī maintains that all the elements, not only earth, are
 314 involved in the process of human generation, and that this latter occurs through
 315 different successive stages. The overall view expounded in section [b], the examples
 316 chosen (three of the four animal species mentioned by Avicenna), and the terminology

³⁴ Although in section [a] al-Ghazālī does not mention explicitly human generation and refers simply to the 'animal', the reference to the 'raising of the dead' at the very beginning indicates that man in particular is envisaged when animal generation in general is discussed.

employed, leave no doubt that al-Ghazālī is rephrasing here Avicenna's doctrine of animal spontaneous generation as presented in *Ma'ādīn wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya* II, 6.³⁵

The extent to which al-Ghazālī personally endorses the philosophical doctrines that he expounds in Text 3 – and, more in general, in the section of the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* in which this text occurs – is debatable.³⁶ The following sections of the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* attest that al-Ghazālī accepts the philosophical account of sexual human generation provided in section [a], which he qualifies as necessary.³⁷ Apparently, he does not reject the Avicennian doctrine of animal spontaneous generation at stake in section [b]: the *incipit* of this section ('we have seen') might even suggest a personal involvement in the thesis expounded. As to the Avicennian doctrine of the asexual spontaneous generation of human beings, by contrast, the remainder of the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* certifies quite clearly that al-Ghazālī deems it contrary to religious law and, therefore, not acceptable, since, by positing several occurrences of this same event in the course of world history, it rules out the uniqueness of human resurrection expected for the Day of Judgement.³⁸ Significantly, the kind of human generation involved in resurrection in section [a] is not envisaged by al-Ghazālī as spontaneous, i.e. asexual, but as sexual.³⁹

Significantly, while commenting on the pericope of al-Ghazālī's *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* corresponding to Text 3 in his own *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, Averroes brings to the fore the ontological issue that characterises Text 1, namely, the question of whether a form can inhere in a matter that is simpler than its usual one. He contends that on this topic an unbridgeable divide separates theologians and philosophers: the theologians allegedly hold that a man can be generated from earth without intermediaries, whereas the philosophers deny this possibility. What Averroes says has important consequences for the problem of human spontaneous generation:

³⁵ See the passage of *Ma'ādīn wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya*, p. 76, l. 18 – p. 77, l. 4 (cf. *De diluviis*, p. 307, l. 3–9), referred to above, n. 15. Text 2 is only incidentally taken into account by Marmura, 'Al-Ghazālī's Second Causal Theory', p. 95.

³⁶ See, for the specific points, the thorough discussion in Marmura, 'Al-Ghazālī's Second Causal Theory'. More in general, the caveat about the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* expressed by Richard Frank, *Creation and the Cosmic System: Al-Ghazālī and Avicenna* (Heidelberg: Winter, 1992), p. 11, n. 3 ('the work is craftily composed and one has to be careful in making any appeal to it as witness for what he [= al-Ghazālī] denies or for what he asserts') should always be kept in mind.

³⁷ Al-Ghazālī, *The Incoherence of the Philosophers*, ed. Michael E. Marmura (Provo, UT: Brigham Young University Press, 2000), p. 222, l. 1–2: 'We admit that ascending through these stages is necessary for [the earth] to become a human body.'

³⁸ Al-Ghazālī, *The Incoherence of the Philosophers*, p. 224, l. 5–9: 'If you allow the continuous generation and procreation in the manner now observed or the return of this pattern, even after a long time, by way of repetition and cyclical change, you have removed the resurrection, the end of the world, and what the apparent [meanings] of the religious law indicate, since it would follow that our existence would have been preceded by this resurrection several times and will return several times and so on, according to this order.'

³⁹ For al-Ghazālī's mention of factors akin to sexuality in final resurrection, see *The Incoherence of the Philosophers*, p. 223, l. 8–14.

342 Text 4: Averroes, *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut (Tahafot at-tahafot*, p. 540, l. 4 – p. 541, l. 3; *Averroes'*
 343 *Tahafut al-Tahafut*, p. 332 [slightly modified])

344 [a] Only in regard to the things which have no common matter or which have different
 345 matters do they [i.e., theologians and philosophers] disagree whether some of them can
 346 accept the forms of others – for instance, whether something which is not known by experience
 347 to accept a certain form except through many intermediaries can also accept this ultimate
 348 form without intermediaries.

349 [b] For instance, the plant comes into existence through composition out of the elements
 350 (*al-usḌuqussāt*); it becomes blood and sperm through being eaten by an animal and from
 351 sperm and blood comes the animal, as is said in the Divine Words: 'We created man from
 352 an extract of clay (*tīn*), then We made him a clot in a sure depository' and so on till His
 353 words 'and blessed be God, the best of creators' (*Qurān* XXIII:12–14).

354 [c] The theologians affirm that the soul of man can inhere in earth (*turāb*) without the
 355 intermediaries known by experience, whereas the philosophers deny this and say that, if this
 356 were possible, wisdom would consist in the creation of man without such intermediaries,
 357 and the creator who created man in such a way would be 'the best of creators' (*Qurān*
 358 XXIII:14) and the most powerful.

359 [d] Both parties claim that what they say is self-evident, and neither has any proof (*dalīl*)
 360 for its theory. And you, reader, consult your heart; it is your duty to believe what it
 361 announces, and this is what God... has ordained for you.

362 This text is puzzling in many respects.⁴⁰ For the present discussion, its main
 363 problematic aspects are three. First of all, the sharp contrast between theologians
 364 and philosophers in sections [a] and [c] does not seem to grasp the peculiarity of
 365 Avicenna's position on human spontaneous generation, as Averroes sees it. The
 366 thesis that 'the soul of man can inhere in earth without the intermediaries known by
 367 experience' in section [c] is substantially equivalent to the doctrine that Averroes
 368 ascribes to Avicenna in Text 1 [a] ('to be possible for a man to be generated from
 369 earth, as a mouse is generated [from it]', i.e., without intermediate transformations
 370 of earth into more complex matter). Here, however, this thesis is attributed to the
 371 theologians, in distinction from the philosophers. Does Averroes silently equate
 372 Avicenna to a theologian on this issue, and transfer him consequently into the
 373 theologians' camp? This would be contrary to Averroes's habit in the *Tahāfut*
 374 *al-Tahāfut*, where the 'philosophers' often include, and sometimes designate
 375 exclusively, Avicenna.⁴¹ But if Avicenna is one of the philosophers mentioned in
 376 Text 4, then Averroes, by stressing the philosophers' rejection of the theological
 377 doctrine of the generation of man directly from earth, contradicts his own report
 378 of Avicenna's position in Text 1 [a], where he ascribes to Avicenna exactly this
 379 doctrine. The philosophers' position in Text 4 is incompatible with Avicenna's posi-
 380 tion in Text 1 since these two formulations come from different sources: the former

⁴⁰ It is surprising, for example, that in sections [b] and [c] the philosophers are eager to quote Quranic verses in support of their view, and that the theologians' arguments are regarded by Averroes as equally unconvincing as those of the philosophers, since Averroes writes the *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut* in order to defend philosophy against its theological dismissal (section [d]).

⁴¹ See, for example, the explicit inclusion of Avicenna among the Muslim philosophers in the ninth discussion of the *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut (Tahafot at-tahafot*, p. 407, l. 10–11; *Averroes' Tahafut al-Tahafut*, p. 245), and the reference to the 'philosophers' advocating the Giver of Forms in the seventeenth discussion (*Tahafot at-tahafot*, p. 524, l. 9–11; *Averroes' Tahafut al-Tahafut*, p. 320).

is al-Ghazālī's substantially faithful account of Avicenna's doctrine of human generation in Text 3,⁴² whereas the latter is Averroes's deforming report of Avicenna's doctrine of human spontaneous generation.

Conversely, the dichotomy between theologians and philosophers in Text 4 involves a strongly interpretative account of al-Ghazālī's position by Averroes. If, as it seems obvious, Averroes includes al-Ghazālī among the theologians,⁴³ the thesis that 'the soul of man can inhere in earth without the intermediaries known by experience' does not reflect the text of the passage of the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* on which Averroes is commenting: although the various stages of the generation process are taken by al-Ghazālī to be simultaneous in the miracle of resurrection, as we have seen, the human re-generation implied in resurrection remains for him a multi-levelled process (Text 3 [a]). The reason of the incongruence is that Averroes does not take the section of the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* in which Text 3 occurs as an expression of al-Ghazālī's genuine thought, but as a dialectical 'concession' on his part to the philosophers' perspective⁴⁴: thus, by stating that the theologians admit the possibility of humans being generated from earth without intermediaries, Averroes is formulating what he regards as al-Ghazālī's authentic position, i.e. the position that this latter would sustain if he were expressing his own point of view. However, this thesis remains Averroes's speculative reconstruction of al-Ghazālī's unexpressed thought: nowhere in the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* does the latter assert the thesis that Averroes ascribes to him and the other theologians in Text 4 [c].⁴⁵

Finally, by quoting a passage of the Quran (XXIII:12–14) that allegedly supports the philosophers' position, rather than the theologians', Averroes indicates that the Islamic canonical text, and by extension Muslim religion, does not constantly sanction the doctrine of the creation of man directly from earth, but also provides an account of human creation that is at variance with the position that Averroes ascribes to the theologians in Text 4 and to Avicenna and the theologians in Text 1.

In other words, the contrast between theologians and philosophers on the issue of human generation in Text 4 results in a view too rigid in several respects: on the one hand, it cannot capture the essence of Avicenna's position, as Averroes sees it in Text 1, namely the 'middle' position of a philosopher influenced by theological motives, who thus escapes univocal classification; on the other hand, it rests on a subjective interpretation of what true Ash'arite doctrine on human generation is likely to be, rather than on an objective pronouncement by al-Ghazālī in the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa*; finally, it is shaken and blurred by Quranic textual evidence that, instead

⁴² The Ghazalian background helps to explain why the philosophers in Text 4 are so eager to rely on the Quran.

⁴³ The fact that Averroes's use the term *turāb*, so often employed by al-Ghazālī (see above, Text 3), rather than *tīn*, as in the quoted passage of Quran XXII:12, to signify the 'earth' in the description of the theologians' position, is an indication of al-Ghazālī's inclusion among these latter.

⁴⁴ See *Tahāfut at-tahāfut*, p. 537, l. 9–16; *Averroes' Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, p. 326; Marmura, 'Al-Ghazālī's Second Causal Theory', pp. 86 and 92.

⁴⁵ Al-Ghazālī's contention in Text 3 [a] that 'matter is receptive of all things' cannot be extrapolated from its context: the rest of the text clarifies its meaning.

416 of corroborating the doctrine that Averroes ascribes to the theologians, is invoked by
417 the philosophers in their anti-theological opposition.

418 In sum: the theological tendency that Averroes detects in Avicenna's doctrine of
419 human spontaneous generation finds no support in Avicenna's original texts,⁴⁶ no *a*
420 *posteriori* validation by al-Ghazālī, no firm basis in the sacred text and no constant
421 and coherent acknowledgement by Averroes himself. We can therefore suppose
422 that Averroes himself might have added the remark concerning the agreement
423 between Avicenna and the theologians in Text 1 [c] in order to charge Avicenna
424 with a further accusation: to have mixed demonstrative philosophy with dialectical
425 theology – the latter being, in Averroes's eyes, a discipline of a lower level on
426 methodological grounds – according to a recurrent motive of his criticisms of
427 Avicenna.⁴⁷ A confirmation of this hypothesis can be found in the terminology of
428 Text 1, more precisely in Averroes's use of the term *turāb* to designate the earth
429 in section [a]. This term does not appear in the relevant texts of Avicenna.⁴⁸ It comes
430 rather from the Quran, where it occasionally appears in the account of human
431 generation, bearing the meaning of 'dust' or 'soil' rather than 'earth' (see Quran
432 XXX:20). Significantly, *turāb* is the term that al-Ghazālī uses to refer to the earth
433 in both sections of Text 3, and that Averroes adopts to describe the theologians'
434 position in Text 4 [c]. In using this term to characterise Avicenna's doctrine in Text 1,
435 Averroes thus transfers on Avicenna – either consciously or inadvertently – Quranic
436 terminology and theological jargon, thus 'theologizing', not only in content, but also
437 in vocabulary, Avicenna's original formulation.

438 Conclusion

439 Averroes's attempt to colour with theological traits Avicenna's doctrine of the
440 spontaneous generation of man produces paradoxical effects: he ascribes to both
441 Avicenna and to al-Ghazālī among the Ash'arite theologians a doctrine of human
442 generation *directly and exclusively from earth* that neither formally and explicitly
443 endorses. On the one hand, the asserted resemblance between Avicenna's position
444 and the occasionalism of the Ash'arites is obtained by means of a substantial

⁴⁶ Richter-Bernburg, '*Medicina ancilla philosophiae*', p. 98, n. 21, sees an allusion to Adam's creation in Avicenna's expression 'the men's forefather' (*al-ab al-awwal li'l-nās*) in Text 2, which replaces the more vague reference to the primordial men (in the plural) in the corresponding passage of Aristotle's *De generatione animalium* (see above, n. 24). Adam's implication is, however, quite vague, and Text 2, on account of its hypothetical tenor, cannot be invoked to justify Averroes's approach.

⁴⁷ See, for example, *Tafsīr* Γ.3, p. 313, l. 7–12 (Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, fol. 67B-C); Z.31, p. 886, l. 2–4 (f. 181I-K); Λ.18, p. 1503, l. 9–12 (fol. 305 F).

⁴⁸ Avicenna's terminology resembles Quranic language in the occurrence of the term 'clay' (*tīn*) in the text of Avicenna quoted above, n. 15 (cf. Quran XXIII:12). But the use of this term in the context of the spontaneous generation of scorpions suggests that the resemblance is fortuitous.

simplification of Avicenna's position, and hides the clearly anti-providential tone of Avicenna's account of human spontaneous generation (in fact rejected by al-Ghazālī himself). On the other hand, the alleged admission by the Islamic theologians of a simplified type of human generation effaces al-Ghazālī's positive evaluation and personal endorsement of a more articulated and properly philosophical view on the issue, which surfaces as he explains the way in which human generation will take place in the final resurrection. In other words, both on the philosophers' and the theologians' side, the situation is less clear-cut than Averroes's account might lead to suppose: the straightforwardness of his report is more the result of intentional ideological simplification than of objective interpretative reordering.

Elsewhere I have documented that Averroes's intent to reject Avicenna's philosophy by stressing its distance from Aristotle conveys oscillations in Averroes's own standpoint on certain fundamental issues, since, while criticizing Avicenna, Averroes tends to portray his own positions as more different from Avicenna's than they actually are.⁴⁹ The present contribution shows, in a complementary way, that the same polemical intent – performed this time by shortening the distance between Avicenna and the Islamic theologians, rather than widening the gap between Avicenna and Aristotle – involves serious distortions in Averroes's description of Avicenna's stance, accompanied by a very interpretative account of the theologians' position. In light of all this, the parenthetical remark 'if he [indeed] held it and did not disparage it' that occurs in the middle of Text 1 (section [b]) might be revealing. Does Averroes with this statement want simply to show surprise in front of the enormity of Avicenna's error? Or does he rather manifest a certain perplexity in ascribing the doctrine in question to Avicenna? Answering this question is difficult, and not much help comes from the parallel place in Averroes's Long Commentary on *Physica* (chronologically anterior and preserved only in Latin translation), where, in the context of a similar criticism of Avicenna, no remark of this kind can be found.⁵⁰ The former alternative seems to be supported, besides the *locus parallelus* in the Long Commentary on *Physica*, by the general tone of the text, which remains

⁴⁹ Amos Bertolacci, 'Avicenna and Averroes on the Proof of God's Existence and the Subject-Matter of Metaphysics', *Medioevo*, 32 (2007), pp. 61–97.

⁵⁰ Averroes, Long Commentary on *Physica* ④.46 (in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, IV, fol. 387^vH): 'Sed diximus ista contra negantes hoc esse manifestum per se [sc. quod illa quae inveniuntur casu sunt monstruosa, non naturalia]: sicut Avicenna qui dicit possibile esse hominem generari a terra, sed convenientius in matrice. Et iste sermo ab homine qui dat se scientiae est valde fatuus.' The Avicennian doctrine quoted here by Averroes comes again from *Ma'ādin wa-Āthār 'ulwiyya*, II, 6, p. 78, l. 5–6 (= *De diluviis*, p. 307, l. 25–26): 'Certainly, if an uterus, for example, is [involved], this [process] is more continuous and effective; but if no [uterus] is [involved], it is not impossible for the intellect [to conceive this process] as occurring in virtue of other movements and causes.' Also in this passage of the Long Commentary on *Physica*, Averroes modifies Avicenna's original text, adding the mention of the 'earth' (*terra*) as the elemental matter of man's spontaneous generation. Since the Arabic original text of Averroes's Long Commentary on *Physica* is lost, we cannot exclude that the original version of this passage contained a remark analogous to the one in the Long Commentary on *Metaphysica*. For the doctrinal issues underlying this passage of the Long Commentary on *Physica*, see Catarina Belo, *Chance and Determinism in Avicenna and Averroes* (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 154–156.

474 highly critical throughout.⁵¹ The latter alternative, on the other hand, would help to
 475 explain the very presence of the remark, which might otherwise appear
 476 superfluous: thus, by saying 'if he [indeed] held it and did not disparage it',
 477 Averroes would raise the doubt that the textual evidence of Avicenna's works
 478 may not fully support the doctrine ascribed to him in section [a], as we have
 479 ascertained.⁵² Unfortunately, at the present stage of research this hypothesis
 480 cannot be corroborated and remains a matter of speculation. What is certain is
 481 that Averroes's deforming report of Avicenna's position – all possible provisos
 482 apart – seems to have been influential on subsequent authors,⁵³ until at least Pietro
 483 Pomponazzi in the sixteenth century.⁵⁴

⁵¹ Elsewhere Averroes does not hesitate to reject the attribution to Avicenna of doctrines that he regards as spurious (see *Tafsīr* a.15, p. 47, l. 10–12; *In Aristotelis librum II [a] Metaphysicorum Commentarius*, p. 78, l. 37–38).

⁵² In this case, Averroes would add some caveats on an account of Avicenna's doctrine of human spontaneous generation that he regards as too simplistic and incorrect, as it happens in the passage of *Tafsīr* a.15 quoted in the previous footnote. The doctrine of the generation of human beings from earth is present in a wide array of Arab thinkers, including the Ikhwān al-ṣafā' and Isma'īli circles – where it is associated with God's generation of Adam – Ibn Ṭufayl and Ibn al-Nafīs. See Kruk, 'Ibn Ṭufayl: A Medieval Scholar's Views on Nature', pp. 83–84; Daniel De Smet, 'Scarabées, Scorpions, Cloportes et Corps Camphrés: Métamorphose, Réincarnation et Génération Spontanée dans l'Hétérodoxie Chiite', in *O ye Gentlemen: Arabic Studies on Science and Literary Culture in Honour of Remke Kruk*, eds Arnold Vrolijk and Jan P. Hogendijk (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 39–54 (pp. 53–54); for the doctrine of spontaneous generation in the writings ascribed to Jābir ibn Ḍayyān, see Kruk, 'Ibn Ṭufayl: A Medieval Scholar's Views on Nature', p. 84 and n. 80. Noteworthy among them is Ibn Ṭufayl in Andalusia, since he might be regarded as the initiator of what I have called elsewhere 'Andalusian Avicennism', i.e., a vulgate version of Avicenna's philosophy in which some traits of the Master's thought are distorted and heterogeneous doctrines are added (see Bertolacci, 'The "Andalusian Revolt Against Avicennian Metaphysics"').

⁵³ Samuel Ibn Tibbon (c. 1165–1232), for example, in the philosophical-exegetical treatise *Ma'amar Yiqqawu ha-mayim* ('Treatise on [the Verse]: Let the waters be gathered [= Gen. 1, 9]'), ended in 1231, reports Avicenna's doctrine as if it implied the spontaneous generation of human beings from earth ('the generation of man from earth is possible, according to his [sc. Avicenna's] opinion'; 'according to him [sc. Avicenna], it is not impossible that, say, the species of man be annihilated and that subsequently, during the eternal time ... a mixis will come to be in the earth, which is suitable to receive the human form', Engl. trans. in Freudenthal, '(AI-)Chemical Foundations for Cosmological Ideas', p. 65, emphasis added). Significantly, in the second quoted passage the phrase 'in the earth' is added to an otherwise substantially faithful report of Avicenna's standpoint. In this regard, Samuel Ibn Tibbon might have been influenced by Averroes, whom he quotes on the same subject in the same text.

⁵⁴ On Pomponazzi's ascription to Avicenna of the doctrine of the spontaneous generation of man 'from putrescent matter' (*ex putredine*), see Hasse, 'Spontaneous Generation', pp. 171–172.

Chapter 3

Revisiting the 1552–1550 and 1562 Aristotle-Averroes Edition

Charles Burnett

In the middle of the sixteenth century in Venice a remarkable publication saw the light of day: the most complete edition up to that time of the works of Aristotle accompanied by the commentaries of Averroes, with some supercommentaries by Levi ben Gherson (1288–1344), and related works. On the title page of the prefatory fascicle the name Averroes is printed in red, and is almost the same size as that of Aristotle, and the paragraph devoted to the works of Averroes is twice as long as that devoted to Aristotle (see Figure 1). I quote in full:

All the commentaries of Averroes of Cordova on these works that have come down to us, and other books of his on logic, philosophy and medicine, of which some too, having escaped the notice of the Latins, have recently been translated by Jacob Mantino; others have been translated by the same scholar in a clearer and more faithful way than ever before, and the rest have been most diligently corrected in almost innumerable places from the manuscripts and the best printed books of the most celebrated philosophers of this time of ours, each having been adorned with a large number of marginal notes.

The edition is entirely in Latin, and represents the culmination of the tradition of understanding and interpreting Aristotle solely in the Latin language – a tradition which had began to be challenged in the late fifteenth century when the first publications of Aristotle in the original Greek started to leave the Aldine press (1495–1498).

There are two significant features about this publication that I would like to highlight:

1. The publication consists of 11 volumes and a prefatory fascicle. The title pages of each of the 11 volumes draws attention to the authors of the main texts included: Aristotle and Averroes, but are entirely silent about the editors who have corrected the texts and prepared them for publication. Moreover, if one

I am grateful for the help of Dag Nikolaus Hasse.

C Burnett (✉)

Warburg Institute, University of London, Woburn Square, WC1 0AB London, UK
e-mail: charles.burnett@sas.ac.uk

ARISTOTELIS

STAGIRITAE

OMNIA QVAE EXTANT OPERA

Nunc primum selectis translationibus, collatisque cum graecis emendatissimis exemplaribus, Margineis scholijs illustrata, & in nouum ordinem digesta: Additis etiam nonnullis libris nunquam antea latinitate donatis:

AVERROIS CORDVBENSIS

IN EA OPERA OMNES QUI AD NOS PERVENERE

COMMENTARII,

Aliique ipsius in logica, philosophia, & medicina libri:

Quorum aliqui non amplius à Latinis visi, nuper à IACOB MANTINO sunt conuersi:

Alij ab eodem clarius ac fidelius, quam unquam antea ab alijs, translati:

Ceteri ex manuscriptis, optimisq; codicibus Philosophorum hac nostra aetate celeberrimorum, innumeris penè locis diligentissime castigati:

Singuli compluribus margineis scholijs exornati.

LEVI GERSONIDIS Annotationes in Auer. expositionem super logices libros, Latinis hucusq; incognitè, eodem Iacob Mantino interprete.

Græcorum, Arabum, & Latinorum monumenta quaedam, ad hoc opus spectantia.

M. Antonij Zimare in Aristotelis & Auerrois dicta Contradictionum Solutiones.

IO. BAPTISTAE BAGOLINI VERONENSIS LABORE, AC DILIGENTIA.

Hæc autem omnia tum ex Præfatione, tum ex Indice Librorum clarius innotescunt.

BERNARDO SALVIATO EPISC. S. PAPVLI
ROMAE PRIORI DICATA



Cum summi Pontificis, Gallorum Regis, Senatusq; Veneti decretis.

VENETIIS APVD IVNTAS M D LIII.

can trust the information on their title pages, volumes 2 to 11 were published in 1550 (hence the rather strange way that we refer to the date of the volumes: Venice: 1552–1550). So, anyone using these volumes would have no idea who had edited the texts in the volumes. This, I believe, is rather unusual. The sixth volume, for example, simply says that it contains '[a]ll the books of Aristotle the Stagirite pertaining to the knowledge of animals, with the various commentaries of Averroes the Cordovan on the same books, whose titles, number and order the verso page lists' (+ the printer, and place and date of printing).¹ Even the first volume, which has the date 1552 on its title page and gives more information on the editors, simply refers, in addition to Aristotle and Averroes, to the *annotationes* of Levi ben Gherson, some questions, and letters of certain Arabs. This lack of mention of the editors, however, is made up for by the other significant feature, namely:

2. The prefatory fascicle of 20 folios which gives in much more detail than is usual for the time, the whole rationale for publishing such a series of volumes and the history of their composition. Following one after the other we have
 1. Tommaso Giunta's dedication to Bernardo Salviati (1508–1568), the bishop of St Papoul (fols 2^r-4^v).
 2. Marco degli Oddi's preface, which consists of a general introduction to the transmission of Peripatetic philosophy, and then introductions to each volume (5^r-11^v).
 3. A poem by Luigi Luisini of Udine, the author of *Aphrodisiacus sive de Lue Venerea* (Venice, 1566) celebrating the work of Bagolino, the editor (beginning 'Tantum et Aristoteles Bagolino et Corduba debent / Quantum humus agricolae debet operta rubis ...': 'Aristotle and Cordova owe so much to Bagolino as soil covered with thorns owes to a tiller ...') (11^v).
 4. A letter of Romolo Fabi of Florence to the *Studiosi philosophiae* (12^{rv}).
 5. The permission of Pope Julius III (February 1550-February 1555) (13^r).
 6. *La Privilege du Treschrestien Roy de France HENRY .II. de ce Nom* (1547–1559) (13^v).
 7. The licence to print of Francesco Donato the doge of Venice (1545–1553) (14^r).
 8. Errata for all 11 vols (14^v).
 9. *Index librorum omnium* (with asterisks indicating the translations which have never been published before) (15^r-17^v).
 10. The life of Aristotle taken from Diogenes Laertius, *De vita philosophorum* (18^r-19^v).
 11. The life of Aristotle taken from Philoponus, which includes references to the *Conciliator* of Pietro d' Abano and Gilles de Rome (20^{rv}).
 12. The life of Averroes *ex libris Chronicorum a mundi origine excerpta* (20^v).

¹ Aristotle, *Omnia quae extant opera* (Venice: Giunta, 1552–1550), VI: 'Aristotelis Stagiritae Libri omnes ad animalium cognitionem attinentes cum Averrois Cordubensis variis in eosdem commentariis, quorum titulos, numerum, ac ordinem versa pagina narrat.'

69 13. And a note 'ad lectorem' which looks as if it has been fitted in at the last moment
 70 before going to press, referring to other works by Averroes among the Jews and
 71 Arabs in Constantinople discovered there by Cardinal Bernardo Navagero: the
 72 Paraphrase of the *Physics*, the Middle Commentary on the *Physics* (of which the
 73 first three books are included in the volume), the Middle Commentary on the *De*
 74 *caelo* and the *De anima*, the Paraphrase of the *De anima*, the Middle Commentary
 75 on the last nine books of *De natura animalium*, the Long Commentary on the two
 76 books *De plantis*, the Middle Commentary on the *Metaphysics*, the Paraphrase
 77 of the *Metaphysics*, and the Paraphrase of the *Almagest* of Ptolemy (20^v).

78 Tommaso Giunta's preface includes the well-known encomium of Averroes:

79 When Aristotle dealt with principles, methods, and general things in such a way that he left
 80 many things to be inspected and investigated more carefully by others, the Greeks made
 81 little (or rather no) effort in doing this. But the Arabs, not content with mere translations,
 82 thought that the whole subject matter – i.e. the things themselves which had to be dealt with –
 83 should be investigated by them more carefully and fully. In this Averroes especially can
 84 be praised. His most solid teaching is not so much drawn from, as squeezed out of, the
 85 water-springs of the Greeks. He shone out so much that he alone rightly has claimed
 86 the name of 'Commentator' for himself. And now it should be clear amongst everybody
 87 who has practised philosophy in recent centuries that those parts of philosophy which had
 88 been omitted by Aristotle, have been investigated more carefully by no other person, and no
 89 one has established them on more solid foundations.²

90 Marco degli Oddi in turn described the editorial process in detail. The project
 91 was inaugurated by Giovanni Battista Bagolino, but he died (according to Degli
 92 Oddi) from spending too much time burning the midnight oil (fol. 5^v). Degli Oddi
 93 and Romolo Fabi, therefore, took over the editorial process. Nevertheless, perhaps
 94 out of respect for the inaugurator and main mover of the project, it is the name
 95 of Bagolino only that appears on the title page of this prefatory fascicle: '[the trans-
 96 lations have been selected, compared, and corrected etc.] by the labour and hard
 97 work of Giovanni Battista Bagolino of Verona.' The process of choosing between
 98 extant translations, or commissioning new ones, or correcting the medieval transla-
 99 tions is described volume by volume by Degli Oddi.

100 Thus we can see that the prefatory fascicle complements the 11 volumes: While
 101 the latter contain no indication of editors, editorial method, and the rationale for
 102 the choice of translations and interpretative works, the prefatory fascicle provides
 103 us with all this information, and to an extent which is quite unusual for the period.
 104 The question remains as to whether this prefatory fascicle was published separately
 105 from the other volumes. The dates on the title pages would certainly suggest that it

² *Ibid.*, I, fol. 2^v: 'Sed cum Aristoteles principia, modos et quae generalia sunt ita tractasset ut alii multa diligentius inspicienda ac contemplanda relinqueret, in eo Graeci parum admodum, ne dicam nihil, laboris sibi sumpserunt. At Arabes, non contenti nudis interpretationibus, materiam totam, hoc est res ipsas de quibus tractandum fuerat, multo diligentius ac fusius sibi inspiciendas putaverunt, idque vel praecipuum in Averroae laudatur, cuius solidissima doctrina de Graecorum fontibus non magis hausta quam expressa usque eo enituit ut solus 'commentatoris' nomen sibi iure vendicavit, ac iam constet inter omnes qui proximis saeculis sunt philosophati, eas philosophiae partes quae ab Aristotele sunt omissae, ab alio hactenus nemine vel diligentius inspectas vel fundamentis solidioribus fuisse constitutas.'

was published 2 years later than volumes 2–11, and the fact that volume one has a title page of its own may suggest that the fascicle was originally a separate brochure which could be consulted in conjunction with any of the volumes. The inclusion of errata for all the volumes also clearly indicates that the prefatory fascicle postdates the rest of the series. We cannot be sure, however, that this fascicle was published separately. What we can do is to see what happens when this series of Aristotle-Averroes editions is reissued later in the sixteenth century.

The first of these is a reissue in 1560 in Venice by a different printer, Comin da Trino, who published several other Aristotelian texts in the mid-sixteenth century. As is made clear in the title some new texts have been added: ‘Nonnulla super addita ... Averrois media in libros metaphys. Commentatio, eiusdem de spermate libellus’ (‘Some works have been added ... Averroes’s Middle Commentary on the *Metaphysics*, and his little work *On the Sperm*’). But the title page also leaves something out: namely the name of Bagolino as editor, and all the prefaces except the life of Aristotle from Diogenes Laertius are omitted.

But if we turn to the next reprinting – by the Giunta brothers again, 2 years later, in 1562, we find a curious situation. In some copies (including the one reproduced in facsimile by Minerva Verlag) a truncated version of the prefatory fascicle has been included: all the prefaces, by Tomaso Giunta, Marco degli Oddi and Romolo Fabi have been omitted, and again, all mention of Bagolino has disappeared from the title page. In other copies (e.g. the one in the British Library: classmark 520.c.1-11) the whole of the prefatory fascicle is missing.

In Bagolino’s place on the title page we have the mention of another scholar who does not feature at all in the 1552–1550 edition: namely Bernardino Tomitano. Unlike Bagolino, Tomitano is not named as the editor, but rather as an author, and is therefore parallel to Levi ben Gherson and Marcantonio Zimara (d. 1532) who are also named on the title page of the preface (indeed, the title *contradictionum solutiones* is the same as that of Zimara’s work).³ On the title page of the second part of the first volume Tomitano is described more fulsomely, as ‘the outstanding logician and philosopher of our age.’⁴

Bernardino Tomitano was probably born in Padua in ca. 1517 and, having studied philosophy and become a doctor in Arts and in Medicine there, he became professor of logic at the university, being the teacher of Jacopo Zabarella (among others). He also practised medicine, and wrote two works on the Tuscan language (*Ragionamenti della lingua toscana* and *Quattro libri della lingua toscana*). He died in 1576. Charles Lohr lists 13 philosophical works, most of which are manuscripts of his lectures.⁵ The title page of the 1562 Aristotle-Averroes edition refers to three works

³ Aristotle, *Omnia quae extant opera* (1552 ed.): ‘M. Antonii Zimarae in Aristotelis et Averrois dicta contradictionum solutiones’; Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562; repr. Frankfurt: Minerva, 1962), I, 1: ‘Bernardini Tomitani Patavini in Aristotelis et Averrois dicta, Animadversiones quaedam, et Contradictionum solutiones.’

⁴ Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, I, II, title page of second part of first volume in Venice San Marco (= the first part of the third book in the British Library and Minerva reprint): ‘Bernardini Tomitani Patavini logici atque philosophi nostrae aetatis eximii ...’

⁵ Charles Lohr, ‘Renaissance Latin Aristotle Commentaries: Authors So-Z’, *Renaissance Quarterly*, 35 (1982), pp. 164–256 (201–204).

143 which are printed as the third book of the first volume – the volume on logic. They
 144 cover 136 folios, with a preface by Iacobus Breznicius of Poland, and include a
 145 word by word commentary on the text of Aristotle's *Posterior Analytics*, in which
 146 the Latin lemma is followed by the original Greek word or phrase, and often by the
 147 alternative Latin rendering of Argyropoulos; a long text in which problems in the
 148 *Posterior Analytics* and Averroes's Long Commentary on the *Posterior Analytics*
 149 are resolved; and a commentary on the *Quaesita* of Averroes pertaining to the
 150 *Posterior Analytics*. Within the text of the *Posterior Analytics*, Averroes's Long
 151 Commentary, and his *Quaesita*, which is found in the second of the three books in
 152 the logic volume, summaries of, or cross-references to the second work and third
 153 work of Tomitano are interspersed. (Numbers are placed against passages which
 154 will be the subject of his *contradictionum solutiones*.)

155 We are dealing with a substantial amount of material here. When Tomitano's
 156 texts were introduced into the Aristotle-Averroes edition they necessitated a
 157 division of the single first volume (devoted to all the logical works except the
 158 *Rhetoric* and *Poetics*) into three parts, as is stated rather quaintly by the note 'ad
 159 lectorem' in the 1562 edition:

160 Dearest readers, we have divided this *Organon* of Aristotle (i.e., the first of these volumes) into
 161 three parts, not to cut up what it makes no sense to cut up, but lest it will be a burden to you
 162 because of its thickness and for the ease of you who want to handle it or take it to school.⁶

163 That a change in editorial policy in regard to the *Posterior Analytics* occurred with
 164 the 1562 Aristotle-Averroes edition is clear not only from the inclusion of Tomitano's
 165 notes and solutions, but also from the way Averroes's text itself is set out.

166 Marco degli Oddi, in the prefatory fascicle gives a detailed account of the method
 167 that he had followed:

168 Then comes the *Posterior Analytics*, ordered according to the opinion of Averroes (although
 169 there is considerable debate about this order). When (Bagolino) began to purge this of
 170 various errors he was snatched away by premature death, to such an extent that I myself,
 171 following in his footsteps, had to compare (*accommodare*) <it> to a Greek copy, and had to
 172 bring to completion another much more difficult task, which he had left unfinished. For the
 173 Long Commentary on this book by Averroes had been translated (*conversa*) by Abram de
 174 Balmes, Burana of Verona and Jacob Mantino, but the translation of Abram was full of
 175 mistakes and obscure, that of Burana was lacking and *deprava* – which he himself testifies
 176 in his own manuscript, which we inherited after the death of Bagolino – and the translation
 177 of Mantino runs only from the first *textus* (*contextus*) to the 150th *textus* of the first book.
 178 Consequently Bagolino chose one version only – i.e. the one that was better than the others,
 179 putting it into shape by the collation and help of the others, but making no addition of his
 180 own. But he was forced to abandon this task when he had only just started. I, then, took up
 181 this charge, and, following the order of this man, whilst he was still alive, I brought it to
 182 completion. For I compared these three translations (*conversiones*) word for word, and in
 183 Bagolino's manner added to that of Burana, which Bagolino had made, as it were, the basis,

⁶ Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, I, I, sig...: 'Hoc Aristotelis Organum, humanissimi lectores, sive horum voluminum primum, in tres divisimus partes, non ut securemus quod minime secari consentaneum est, sed in vestri gratiam id fecimus, ne vobis oneri esset ob eius crassitudinem sive attractare, sive ad gymnasia vestra deferre volentibus.'

what seemed necessary to add, and corrected what had to be corrected, indicating in the margin the differences of meaning and terminology (*sensus, vocabula*) that I found.⁷

When we turn to the 1562 edition we find a completely different editorial method has been followed. The three translations of De Balmes, Burana and Mantino have been placed side by side in three columns. That this was something of a novelty (compared with two parallel translations which we find elsewhere in the Aristotle-Averroes editions), is indicated by the marginal note on the second page: ‘Nothing is missing here. We have left these spaces so that the translations match each other.’⁸ But how do we explain this change of method?

Did the later editor think that the combination of three translations was a failure? It is more likely that the translations have been kept separate because they were being discussed separately at the time. In 1552 Giovanni Giacomo Pavese published the lectures he had given at Padua on Averroes’s preface to his Long Commentary on the *Posterior Analytics*.⁹ He had divided this preface into *textus* (as Averroes had divided Aristotle’s text) and for each *textus* he presented two translations – that of Abram de Balmes and that of Burana (apparently in the modified version in the 1552–1550 Aristotle-Averroes). De Balmes’s translation had already been published in 1523. Evidently it was thought helpful to compare the readings of two translations, especially when the original Arabic (in the case of Averroes’s preface) was not available. For the 1562 Aristotle-Averroes edition Mantino’s translation was also brought into consideration. It was, as we know, available to the editors of the 1552–1550 printing of Aristotle-Averroes, and may well have remained in the Giunta printing house together with that of Burana until it was used in 1562.

If we compare the three-column version of the Long Commentary on the *Posterior Analytics* in the 1562 Aristotle-Averroes edition with the single amalgamated version of the 1552–1550 printing we can see how Bagolino and Degli Oddi put their method into practice: Burana’s readings have been retained more than those of either De Balmes or Mantino. However, many phrases from Burana’s translation have been replaced by phrases from De Balmes. This has been made possible

⁷ Aristotle, *Omnia quae extant opera* (1552 ed.), I, fols 7^v-8^r: ‘Deinceps liber Posteriorum subit, ex Averrois sententia ita collocatus (quamvis de huius ordine non parva lis existat) quem cum expurgare a varijs erroribus coepisset, immatura morte subreptus fuit, adeo, ut ego coactus sim eius insequeus vestigia ad graecum exemplar accommodare, atque unum aliud, quod longe difficilius reliquerat imperfectum, persolvere. Nam cum Averrois super hunc librum magna commentaria ab Abramo de Balmes, a Burana Veronensi, Iacoboque Mantino conversa essent, eumque Abrami translatio mendosa esset, atque obscura, manca vero ac depravata Buranae versio foret, quod et ipse in codice suo manuscripto, qui ad nos post obitum Bagolini pervenit, testatur, Mantini autem traductio solum a primo contextu ad centesimumquingagesimum usque primi libri appareret, Bagolinus unam duntaxat alijs scilicet meliorem elegerat caeterarum collatione, atque ope conformata, nulla facta additione ex seipso. quod quidem onus initio ferme cursus destituere coactus est. Ego itaque hanc rem aggressus sum, eamque ad finem usque viventis illius ordinem secutus perduxi: has enim tres conversiones ad verbum comparavi, et illam Buranae, quam, velut basim, Bagolinus fecerat, quae adijcienda videbantur, illius more adieci, corrigenda correxi, conversionum diversitates, sensuum, vocabulorumque repertas in margine signavi.’

⁸ Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, I, II, fol. 1^v: ‘Hic nihil deest. Hec vero spatia relinquimus ut translatio translationi aequae respondeat.’

⁹ Pavese, incidentally, dedicated his work to the same Bishop Bernardo Salviati as received the 1552–1550 Aristotle-Averroes.

213 because these two translations are rather literal, and it is often a case of simply
 214 substituting one term for another. Mantino writes in a more expansive style and it is
 215 more difficult to identify the exact equivalent in his text. Usually the substitutions
 216 have been made tacitly, but occasionally variations between the translations are
 217 signalled by asterisks in the text and the words 'Jacob legit' or 'Abram legit'
 218 (usually in abbreviation) prefix the alternative translation in the margin. More
 219 frequently one finds merely 'a.l.' preceding the alternative reading ('alia lectio').
 220 A rather long example of such a gloss is:

221 Commentary on the *Posterior Analytics* in the 1552–1550 edition, fol. 127^r

222 Text: Numerum et dispositiones * specierum ipsarum... secundum quod deducunt homi-
 223 nem ad verificationem perfectam et formationem perfectam

224 Marginalia: *a.l. attributa et sic saepius legitur.

225 Apud Ave. formatio et conceptio, incomplexorum motionem significant, verificatio autem,
 226 assertio, fides, certitudo, certificatio, complexorum, prout varie interpretes transferunt.

227 Compare the individual translations (1562 ed., fol. 2^r):

t1.1	Abram de Balmes	Burana	Jacob Mantino
t1.2	secundum numerum	numerum ac dispositiones	pro consyderatione igitur harum
t1.3	suarum specierum	specierum ipsarum	propositionum
t1.4	et attributorum		
t1.5	in quantum conducunt	secundum quod inducunt	quatenus ad complexorum perfectam
t1.6	hominem ad	hominem ad veritatem	cognitionem (quam certificationem
t1.7	perfectam	perfectam et forma-	seu fidem Arabes vocant) et ad
t1.8	assertionem	tionem perfectam	simplicium ac incomplexorum
t1.9	perfectamque		integrum conceptum (quem
t1.10	conceptionem		formationem iidem appellant ¹⁰)
t1.11			hominem ducunt.

229 On fol. 170^r of the 1552–1550 edition, written in capitals across the whole
 230 page (the edition is in two columns) we find the name Ioannes Baptista Bagolinus
 231 Veronensis emblazoned, followed by the words: 'This man most excellent in phi-
 232 losophy, medicine, and the other sciences, completed the volume up to this point,
 233 omitting the rest. What he was not able to complete, forestalled by death, Marco
 234 degli Oddi of Padua, the philosopher and doctor, and son of the most renowned
 235 Oddo, and a student of Bagolino, joined to him most closely, rendered complete
 236 in that order which he had been taught by Bagolino himself, whilst he lived.'¹¹

237 Instead of referring to the editor, in the 1562 edition the death of Mantino is
 238 mentioned: 'Hucusque doctissimi Mantini, candide lector, aurea super hoc primo
 239 Poster. pervenit translatio: caetera vero, morte praeventus, perficere haud potuit'

¹⁰ The two words are probably taḌḏīq and taḌawwūr respectively.

¹¹ Aristotle, *Omnia quae extant opera*, I, f. 170^r: 'Ioannes Baptista Bagolinus Veronensis Philosophiae, Medicinae, caeterarumque scientiarum vir excellentissimus, volumen hoc, reliquis tam absolutis, hucusque perfectit: Residuum vero, quod ipse immatura morte praeventus explere non valuit, MARCUS Odus Patavus, Philosophus ac Medicus Clarissimi ODI filius, viri illius discipulus, maximaque familiaritate coniunctus, eo ordine, quo ab ipso, dum viveret, hoc in negotio fuerat edoctus, reddidit absolutum.'

(‘Thus far, dear reader, the golden translation of the most learned Mantinus extended. 240
Prevented by death, he was not able to complete the rest’; Fol. 319’). 241

For Aristotle’s text (which is, of course, cut up into *textus* or *contextus* in 242
Averroes’s commentary), the 1552–1550 edition gives two translations, one, a 243
revision of the medieval vulgate, the second Burana’s own translation from the 244
Hebrew. Occasionally, Degli Oddi also gives the original Greek reading in Greek 245
letters in the margin,¹² showing that he had collated a Greek text, as he claimed in 246
the prefatory fascicle, and there are isolated references to Argyropoulos’s rendering 247
of the Greek.¹³ 248

The three column layout of the 1562 Aristotle-Averroes edition includes the 249
lemmata of Aristotle’s *Posterior Analytics* in the translations of all three scholars, 250
Abram de Balmes, Burana and Mantino. But the addition of Tomitano’s commentary 251
on Aristotle’s text gives the reader a much greater insight into the relationship of 252
these translations to the original Greek. For, as I have already indicated, Tomitano, 253
for each Latin lemma gives the original Greek and discusses the correspondence 254
between the Latin and the Greek text. A good third of the Greek text can be recon- 255
structed simply by stringing these lemmata together. So, in the 1562 Aristotle- 256
Averroes edition we may see the erosion of the scholastic idea that Aristotle could 257
be understood solely through Latin translations.¹⁴ With Tomitano’s commentary one 258
might as well have a bilingual Greek and Latin text, which is a format that becomes 259
increasingly common (from 1530 s onwards).¹⁵ 260

But why was such a fuss made of the *Posterior Analytics*, and what was the 261
attraction of Averroes’s interpretation of it? It is well known that Padua was a lively 262
centre of Aristotelianism from the late fifteenth century onwards. Particularly strong 263
was a concern for logic and scientific method.¹⁶ Aristotle’s *Posterior Analytics* 264
provided the starting point for any discussion of scientific method and investigation. 265

¹² E.g., on fol. 128r (beginning of text) and 156v. Note also fol. 132v: ‘Aliqui codices antiqui addunt haec verba.’

¹³ *Ibid.*, fol. 17r.

¹⁴ On the gradual introduction of the Greek Aristotle and the Greek commentators, at first alongside Averroes’s commentaries, and then as a substitute for them, see Edward P. Mahoney, ‘Philosophy and Science in Nicoletto Vernia and Agostino Nifo’, in *Id.*, *Two Aristotelians of the Italian Renaissance: Nicoletto Vernia and Agostino Nifo* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2000), I, and Dag N. Hasse, ‘Aufstieg und Niedergang des Averroismus in der Renaissance: Niccolò Tignosi, Agostino Nifo, Francesco Vimercato’, in *“Herbst des Mittelalters”? Fragen zur Bewertung des 14. und 15. Jahrhunderts*, eds Jan A. Aertsen and Martin Pickavé (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 2004), pp. 447–473.

¹⁵ Cf. F. Edward Cranz, ‘Editions of the Latin Aristotle Accompanied by the Commentaries of Averroes’ in *Philosophy and Humanism: Renaissance Essays in Honor of Paul Oskar Kristeller*, ed. Edward P. Mahoney (Leiden: Brill, 1976), pp. 116–128 (128): ‘But for the first time in the editions whose history we have been following, the primary point of reference is the Greek original. In a curious way, such gifts from the Greeks threaten the very existence of the Latin Averroistic Aristotle. The Latin Aristotle, and even more the Latin Averroes, lose their status as separate and autonomous worlds of thought; they must more and more become ancillary to the *Graeca veritas* and to philology as queen of the sciences.’

¹⁶ The classic text on this subject is John H. Randall, Jr., *The School of Padua and the Emergence of Modern Science* (Padua: Antenore, 1961), in which Tomitano’s concern with method is mentioned on pp. 48–49.

266 Gilrolamo Bagolino, the father of Giovanni Battista Bagolino, and a professor at
 267 Padua from 1517 to 1525, had written a commentary on the work. The *Posterior*
 268 *Analytiks* was very important for Averroes too. It is the only logical text on which
 269 he wrote a Long Commentary as well as a Middle Commentary. The majority of
 270 questions in his 'Logical Questions' concern this text. Averroes's Middle
 271 Commentaries on the *Organon*, *Rhetoric* and *Poetics* had been translated into Latin
 272 in the thirteenth century by William of Luna in Italy and Hermann the German in
 273 Spain. The Long Commentary constituted a new discovery for Latin scholars (as
 274 I mentioned, it was first published in De Balmes's translation, in 1523) as was the
 275 Epitome of the whole *Organon*, and the logical *Quaesita*, both also translated by De
 276 Balmes (though Degli Oddi regarded the translations as poor). Bartholomäus
 277 Keckermann (1571–1609), the German logician and promotor of 'analytics' at the
 278 turn of the seventeenth century, probably reflects the opinion of the Paduan
 279 Aristotelians in stating that 'In the *Posterior Analytiks* it appears Averroes has
 280 performed an excellent work and such as deserves to be immortal.'¹⁷ Tomitano, also
 281 a professor at Padua, was interested as much in Averroes's Long Commentary as in
 282 the Greek text of the *Posterior Analytiks*. It is significant that he singled out for
 283 comment the logical questions on the *Posterior Analytiks*, leaving aside the other
 284 questions in Averroes's works. Pavese, as 'professor of *philosophia extraordinaria*'
 285 in Padua in 1552, devoted 67 folios of a quarto-sized book to explaining the meaning
 286 of Averroes's introduction to his Long Commentary. At the end of this book he
 287 summaries the main questions addressed, which include:

- 288 Why is the syllogism called the *form* of a demonstration?
 289 Why are the premises called the *matter* of a demonstration?
 290 Does one know in advance concerning a subject what it is and whether it is?
 291 Can the principles of a subject be demonstrated?
 292 Is the analysis (resolution) which speculative sciences use the same as that which the arts
 293 use?
 294 Is the little book of Porphyry a necessary part of logic?
 295 Are Rhetoric and Topics different faculties?

296 The debates among the professors in Padua had immediate effects on what
 297 was printed off shore by the publishers in Venice. For example, it was noticed
 298 that the order of the text of the *Posterior Analytiks* in Averroes differed from that
 299 of the Greek-Latin tradition. Degli Oddi avowedly retains Averroes's order,¹⁸ but
 300 Tomitano explicitly says that he has changed the order, both in his solutions of
 301 the contradictions in the Long Commentary and in his discussion of Averroes's
 302 questions on logic, so that it conforms to the 'old order.' The changes from edition
 303 to edition of the Aristotle-Averroes volumes reflect, as I hope to have shown, the
 304 developments in the academic circles in Padua and can hint at not only the academic
 305 discussions going on there, but also at the tensions, loyalties, and passions of the
 306 personalities involved.

¹⁷ Bartholomäus Keckermann, *Systema systematum*, ed. Johann Heinrich Alsted (Hanau: Heirs of Wilhelm Antonius, 1613), p. 17b. Quoted in Harry Austryn Wolfson, *Studies in the History of Philosophy and Religion*, eds Isadore Twersky and George H. Williams, 2 vols (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1973), I, p. 385.

¹⁸ Aristotle, *Omnia quae extant opera*, I, fol.7^v. For the Latin text, see supra, n. 8.

Chapter 4 1

Humanism and the Assessment 2

of Averroes in the Renaissance 3

Craig Martin 4

Introduction 5

Disdain for Averroes, or for Averroism, as a symbol of the mistaken ways of university professors and other academics is as old as humanism if not older. Petrarch despised scholasticism for what he saw as its linguistic barbarism and irreligious slant. His rants against physicians who had replaced true Christianity with scholastic philosophy defined the apparent rift between the schools and humanists. Attacks similar in spirit to Petrarch's continued for centuries among Renaissance humanists. Charles B. Schmitt wrote that: 6

One can search in vain through humanistic writings on Aristotle for mentions of Averroes in anything but pejorative terms... From the beginning the humanists were generally closed to Averroism and restrictive, while the scholastics were open and receptive to new currents.¹ 7

8

9

10

11

12

Even if Schmitt slightly overstated his case, he accurately described the general currents of Renaissance Aristotelianism. Nevertheless, Averroes's writings were immense in size and contain numerous positions. The multiplicity of his views might suggest that there were multiple Averroisms just as there were, as Schmitt argued, multiple Aristotelianisms.² 13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

¹ Charles B. Schmitt, *Aristotle and the Renaissance* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1983), p. 25.

² On the multiplicity of Aristotelianisms, see Schmitt, *Aristotle and the Renaissance*, pp. 10–34.

C. Martin (✉)

History Department, Oakland University, 416, Varner Hall, 48309 Rochester, MI, USA
e-mail: martin@oakland.edu

22 The richness of Averroes's writings and the variety of his positions, even if we
 23 only take into account what was available in Latin during the Renaissance and Middle
 24 Ages, on occasion appealed to humanists and even more so to sixteenth-century
 25 university professors, who, while perhaps not being humanists *stricto sensu*,
 26 embraced some of the ideals of humanism, such as an interest in an historical under-
 27 standing of ancient Greek sources and the desire to understand the literal meaning
 28 of Aristotle's writings, even if this true meaning did not correspond to philosophical
 29 truth. The connections between the reception of Averroes's works and humanism
 30 demonstrate overlapping interests and the breadth of Renaissance thought, rather
 31 than being a means to define more strictly either humanism or Aristotelianism.³

32 Coluccio Salutati's *De nobilitate legum et medicinae* (1399) gives a sense of how
 33 some of Averroes's positions might have appealed to humanists. In this work, he put
 34 forth the argument that medicine is inferior to the field of law, by relying on the
 35 claim that medicine is not a proper *scientia*. Rather than providing the causes of
 36 unchanging subjects, medicine is merely a practical art that deals with contingents.
 37 Salutati enlisted the authorities of Averroes and Galen to support this view, main-
 38 taining this argument against Avicenna who defined medicine as the '*scientia* by
 39 which we learn the various states of the human body, when in health and when not
 40 in health, whereby health is conserved and whereby it is restored, after being lost.'⁴
 41 According to Salutati, Averroes and Galen correctly held that the 'art of medicine is
 42 an operative art,' or in other terms a 'mechanical art.'⁵ Galen's view on this matter
 43 is difficult to pin down. But Salutati saw that an accurate interpretation of his view
 44 on medicine is that the field 'regards practice not the [abstract] speculation' about
 45 causes that distinguished proper knowledge from *technē*. Unlike the ambiguous
 46 Galen, Averroes explicitly defined medicine as being concerned with the operative
 47 aspects of an art in I,1 of his *Colliget*.⁶

48 The adoption of the Averroistic position demanded that Salutati reject Avicenna's
 49 division of medicine into *theorica* and *practica*. For Salutati, all medicine is in fact
 50 based on empiricism. Even the appropriation of concepts from philosophy or natu-
 51 ral philosophy, such as the four elements, which Hippocrates and Galen developed,
 52 was based on their experience. According to Salutati, medicine, necessarily, must be
 53 based on empiricism because of the nature of what it studies. It treats contingents
 54 about which there can be no certainty.⁷ Moreover, bodily changes and illness are not

³ For an overview of the correspondences between Averroism and humanism see Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'Arabic Philosophy and Averroism', in *The Cambridge Companion to Renaissance Philosophy*, ed. James Hankins (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2007), pp. 113–133 (pp. 129–130).

⁴ Avicenna, *Liber canonis* (Venice: Giunta, 1562), fol. 3r; translation from Edward Grant, *A Sourcebook in Medieval Science* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1974), p. 715.

⁵ Coluccio Salutati, *De nobilitate legum et medicina*, ed. Eugenio Garin (Florence: Vallecchi, [1947]), pp. 22–24.

⁶ Averroes, *Colliget libri vii* (Venice: Giunta, 1564), fol. 4r; in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562; repr. Frankfurt: Minerva, 1962), Supplementum I, fol. 3rE.

⁷ Salutati, *De nobilitate legum et medicina*, p. 112.

static and change according to location.⁸ If there is no constancy to the diseases and cures that medicine studies, knowledge about these subjects can only be provisional and can only be developed through experience.

Salutati's use of Averroes is evidence of an interest in several trends that have often been considered central to humanism. His characterization of Averroes's view of medicine as mechanical undermines the authority of university physicians just as Petrarch had attempted to reduce their prominence.⁹ Secondly, the main point of Salutati's discourse is to demonstrate that the field of law is nobler than medicine; thus, Averroes's writings became a tool in Salutati's larger goal of establishing the rule of law as a basis for government; they were tools for the advancement of 'civic humanism.' Finally, Salutati did not use Averroes's authority alone. Rather he linked it to Galen and Hippocrates, the ancient and therefore privileged sources of medicine. Averroes's positions retained authority because of their perceived correspondence to the ancients. Linking Averroes to ancient writers was common to many Renaissance thinkers who relied on his authority.

Averroes and Antiquity

In order to understand why Renaissance scholars were willing to associate Averroes with ancient thinkers it is necessary to examine Averroes's goals as well as his vision of antiquity, Aristotle, and Greek thought. Averroes's view of Aristotle was unequivocal. In his eyes, Aristotle was:

A rule and exemplar which nature devised to show the final perfection of man ... the teaching of Aristotle is the supreme truth, because his mind was the final expression of the human mind. Wherefore it has been well said that he was created and given to us by divine providence that we might know all that is to be known.¹⁰

As a result his commentaries attempted to systematise, paraphrase, and reorder Aristotle's writings in order to make his thought more easily understood.¹¹ While many medieval thinkers, both Muslim and Christian, might have thought that

⁸ Ibid., p. 260.

⁹ Andrea Carlino, 'Petrarch and the Early Modern Critics of Medicine', *Journal of Medieval and Early Modern Studies*, 35 (2005), pp. 559–582.

¹⁰ Averroes, com. 14, bk 3 (*De anima*), in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, Supplementum II, fol. 159^v (trans. from David Knowles, *Evolution of Medieval Thought* [Baltimore: Helicon, 1962], p. 200); Id., *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, ed. F. Stuart Crawford (Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1953), p. 433. See also: Averroes, 'Proemium in libros physicorum Aristotelis', in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, IV, fol. 5^r.

¹¹ Josep Puig Montada, 'El Proyecto vital de Averroes: Explicar e interpretar a Aristóteles', *al-Qanṭara*, 32 (2002), pp. 11–52; Steven Harvey, 'Averroes' Use of Examples in his *Middle Commentary on the Prior Analytics*, and Some Remarks on his Role as Commentator', *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, 7 (1997), pp. 91–113.

82 Aristotle agreed or would have agreed with their philosophical views, Averroes's
 83 view of Aristotle was not just an attempt to employ authority. Rather his view is
 84 reflective of his project as a whole: an attack on the philosophies of al-Ghazālī and
 85 Avicenna because they refrained from imitating Aristotle and mixed Aristotelian
 86 thought with the theology of *kalām* and the metaphysics of Plato. In the words of
 87 Tzvi Langerman, Averroes was a participant in 'a program ... of the Andalusians to
 88 construct an alternative to the syntheses which were produced in the East[ern]' parts
 89 of the Islamic world.¹² Averroes wrote that Avicenna's philosophy occupied 'almost
 90 a midpoint between the Peripatetics and the *mutakallimūn*,' the theologically-
 91 minded dialecticians.¹³ In his commentary on *De anima*, Averroes chastised his
 92 contemporaries who erred because they put 'down the books of Aristotle ... believing
 93 that this book is impossible to understand.' He continued, 'Avicenna does not
 94 imitate Aristotle,' thereby revealing his belief that philosophy is partly the imitation
 95 or the recreation of Aristotle's positions and arguments.¹⁴ Moreover, Averroes's
 96 condemnations of the fusion of Platonic and Aristotelian frameworks explain why
 97 he thought Plato's works were inferior to those of his former student. Plato's love of
 98 geometry and devotion to Socrates prevented him from examining nature. Similarly,
 99 Avicenna's errors were the result of his 'lack of investigations in natural things and
 100 his confidence in his own genius.'¹⁵ That is not to say that Plato's works were of no
 101 use to Averroes, just of limited use. For example, he apparently justified writing
 102 his commentary on Plato's *Republic* by explaining that Aristotle's *Politics* were
 103 unavailable to the Arabic-reading world.¹⁶

104 Averroes's attempt to recover Aristotle did not go unaided. His aids were the
 105 Greek commentators on Aristotle, such as Themistius, Olympiodorus, and Alexander.
 106 Contemporary historians of philosophy, such as Robert Wisnovsky, have emphasised
 107 the continuity between the late antique Neoplatonizing commentators on Aristotle
 108 and Avicenna.¹⁷ Averroes, however, assumed that these Greek works, which had
 109 been translated into Arabic and often transformed into handbooks, were valuable
 110 because of their chronological and linguistic proximity to Aristotle. For Averroes,
 111 they represented a purer form of Aristotelianism free from Platonism and *kalām*.¹⁸
 112 Averroes even modelled his works on the Greek commentators. The organization of

¹² Y. Tzvi Langermann, 'Another Andalusian Revolt? Ibn Rushd's Critique of Al-Kindi's *Pharmacological Computus*', in *The Enterprise of Science: New Perspectives*, ed. Jan P. Hogendijk and Abdelhamid I. Sabra (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 2003), pp. 351–372 (366).

¹³ Averroes, com. 22, bk 2 (*Physica*), in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, IV, fol. 57^r.

¹⁴ Averroes, com. 30, bk 3 (*De anima*), in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, Supplementum II, fol. 171^r; Id., *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, p. 470.

¹⁵ Averroes, com. 67, bk 3 (*De coelo*), in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, V, fol. 227^r.

¹⁶ Averroes, *Commentary on Plato's Republic*, trans. by Erwin I. J. Rosenthal (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1956), p. 112.

¹⁷ Robert Wisnovsky, 'Avicenna and the Avicennian Tradition', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic Philosophy*, ed. Peter Adamson and Richard C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), pp. 92–136 (pp. 96–105).

¹⁸ For his attacks on *kalām*, see Averroes, com. 18, bk 12; com. 14, bk 2; com. 15, bk 2; com. 32, bk 7, (*Metaphysica*), in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, fols 305^r; 34^v; 35^r; 181^v; 34^v; 35^r; 181^v.

his short commentaries is reminiscent of Themistius's works, for example. In the prooemium to his Long Commentary on *Physica*, Averroes explained the rationale of this project. He noted that because Alexander of Aphrodisias's commentary on *Physica* stopped at the eighth book, there was no complete account of this work.¹⁹ Averroes thus aimed to finish Alexander's job.

Authors of Aristotelian commentaries in the decades around 1500 were continuing a tradition that dated back to the founding of universities or even before. They were also well aware of more recent intellectual movements. Humanist emphases on discovering ancient texts, reading Greek and using ancient sources led to an interest in the works of the Greek commentators. Some of these works, such as many of Alexander's treatises, had been translated in the thirteenth century.²⁰ Many, however, were unknown until Renaissance philologists translated the works of Themistius, Olympiodorus, Philoponus, Simplicius and others. For Renaissance scholars, these works were considered valuable because they were storehouses of arguments. Moreover, their authors were native speakers of Aristotle's mother tongue and so a guide to reading Aristotle in Greek, which sixteenth-century scholars such as Agostino Nifo and Jacopo Zabarella did. Others saw the Greek commentators as models. Jacques Lefèvre's paraphrases of Aristotle are directly related to his approving familiarity with Ermolao Barbaro's translations of Themistius as well as a means to transform Aristotelian discussions so they would not refer to what Lefèvre saw as the linguistic and conceptual barbarisms of the Middle Ages.²¹

The growing interest in ancient commentaries during the Renaissance is not surprising, considering the broad and intense desire to understand ancient texts, the deep interest in Greek writings and the trust in older philosophical sources. There was a simultaneous growth, or at least no dip, in interest in Averroes's writings. Charles Burnett and Harry Wolfson have shown how Averroes's writings were scrutinised, translated and retranslated in the years around 1500.²² Additionally, scholars and university professors wrote far more commentaries on Averroes's works during these years than at any time earlier or later, both on works that were

¹⁹ Averroes, 'Prooemium in libros physicorum Aristotelis', in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, IV, fol. 1'. For the fourteenth-century Hebrew translation and an English translation of this work see Steven Harvey, 'The Hebrew Translation of Averroes' Prooemium to his Long Commentary on Aristotle's *Physics*', *Proceedings of the American Academy for Jewish Research*, 52 (1985), pp. 55–84.

²⁰ F. Edward Cranz, 'Alexander Aphrodisensis', in *Catalogus translationum et commentariorum: Medieval and Renaissance Latin Translations and Commentaries*, ed. Paul Oskar Kristeller, 8 vols (Washington, D.C.: Catholic University of America Press, 1960), I, pp. 77–135.

²¹ Eugene F. Rice, Jr., 'Humanist Aristotelianism in France: Jacques Lefèvre and his Circle', in *Humanism in France at the End of the Middle Ages and in the Early Renaissance*, ed. Anthony H. T. Levi (Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1970), pp. 132–149. For Barbaro and his role in the growth of interest in the Greek commentators see: Jill Kraye, 'Philologists and Philosophers', in *The Cambridge Companion to Renaissance Humanism*, ed. Jill Kraye (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1996), pp. 142–160 (pp. 144–147).

²² Charles Burnett, 'The Second Revelation of Arabic Philosophy and Science: 1492–1562', in *Islam and the Italian Renaissance*, ed. Charles Burnett and Anna Contadini (London: The Warburg Institute, 1999), pp. 185–198; Harry A. Wolfson, 'The Twice-revealed Averroes', *Speculum*, 36 (1961), pp. 373–392.

142 closely related to traditional curricula, such as *De substantia orbis* and *Colliget*, and
 143 on works that were more extraneous, such as *Destructio destructionum*, a defence
 144 of Aristotelian metaphysics from al-Ghazālī's attacks on Peripatetic causality.

145 The growing desire to write commentaries on Averroes was spurred by the realiza-
 146 tion that Averroes knew the Greek commentators well. For some, it seemed that
 147 Averroes's knowledge of Greek commentators was one of his prominent traits.
 148 Marcantonio Genua (1491–1563), a professor at Padua attempted to reconcile
 149 Averroes's psychology with Simplicius's.²³ Girolamo Balduini, a professor at Padua
 150 during the middle of the sixteenth century, who was knowledgeable enough about the
 151 Greek commentators to write on Porphyry's logic, noted in his commentary on
 152 Aristotle's *Physica* that 'when following Averroes we follow also the Greeks,'²⁴ who
 153 in turn conform to Aristotle. Konrad Gesner's brief biography of Averroes, after men-
 154 tioning that he was a bitter rival of Avicenna, contended that 'in his commentaries on
 155 Aristotle he most greatly imitated the Greeks, such as Alexander and Themistius.'
 156 Averroes's adherence to Alexander was contrary to his departure from Greek
 157 medicine, in Gesner's eyes. Averroes was a stimulus to many later medical authors
 158 because of his frequent disagreements with Galen's positions.²⁵ The view that Averroes
 159 faithfully followed Alexander and other ancient commentators is even found in a pre-
 160 face to a 1495 printing of a Latin translation of Alexander's commentary on *De anima*.²⁶
 161 The belief in the correspondence between Averroes and the Greek commentators led
 162 to increased scrutiny of Averroes during the Renaissance, which is seen in the increased
 163 number of writings specifically dedicated to interpreting Averroes's works.

164 Renaissance Commentaries on Averroes

165 The 1405 statutes of the University of Bologna specify that lectures should be given
 166 on two of Averroes's writings in the faculty of arts: *De substantia orbis*, and the
 167 prologue, and parts of the first, second and fifth books of *Colliget*.²⁷ While not the

²³ Bruno Nardi, 'Il commento di Simplicio al *De anima* nelle controversie della fine del secolo XV e del secolo XVI', in *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI* (Florence: Sansoni, 1958), pp. 365–442 (pp. 383–394); Paul J. J. M. Bakker, 'Natural Philosophy, Metaphysics, or Something in Between? Agostino Nifo, Pietro Pomponazzi, and Marcantonio Genua on the Nature and Place of Science of the Soul' in *Mind, Cognition and Representation: The Tradition of Commentaries on Aristotle's De anima*, ed. Paul J. J. M. Bakker and Johannes M. M. H. Thijssen (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2007), pp. 151–177 (pp. 169–175).

²⁴ Girolamo Balduini, *Expositio aurea in libros aliquot Physicorum Aristotelis, et Averrois super eiusdem commentationem; et in prologum Physicorum eiusdem Averrois* (Venice: [s.n.], 1573), p. 4.

²⁵ Konrad Gesner, *Bibliotheca universalis: sive Catalogus omnium scriptorum locupletissimus* (Zurich: Froschauer, 1545), fols. 100^r–102^r.

²⁶ F. Edward Cranz, 'The Prefaces to the Greek Editions and Latin Translations of Alexander of Aphrodisias, 1450–1575', *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society*, 102 (1958), pp. 510–556 (pp. 517–520).

²⁷ *Statuti delle università e dei collegi dello studio bolognese*, ed. Carlo Malagola (Bologna: Zanichelli, 1888), pp. 274–275.

most famed or notorious portions of Averroes's writings, they clearly fit with the needs of the university curriculum; *De substantia orbis* bridges the works on terrestrial physics with astronomy, and *Colliget* added another voice to medical teachings, especially about the relation between composite and simple medicines. As so often happens, however, the demands of statutes, laws and rules do not conform to the extant evidence. There are indeed commentaries on these two works, but the number and wealth of commentaries on other books of Averroes suggests that these statutes were neither entirely normative nor descriptive of actual practices within and beyond this university.

It is difficult to find extant commentaries on *Colliget*, despite it being clear that the work was well-read and influential in numerous medical works. I have been able to find just two authors' works: Pietro Mainardi, a professor at Ferrara, who, in 1500, gave explanations for the fifth, sixth, and seventh books, where he extrapolated on the differences between food and medicine; and Matteo Corti, whose 1527 *Recollectae in septimum colliget Averrois* examined cures for fevers, among other issues, in a unique manuscript.²⁸ Corti's work appears to have been relatively a minor affair for this famed physician and professor, often linked to Renaissance Hellenism, who published numerous works on anatomy, dietetics, phlebotomy, and remedies.

There is a similar dearth of late medieval commentaries on *De substantia orbis*. While at least one of the late medieval scholars famous or notorious for his association with Averroes wrote commentaries on this work, it was not a standard work. John Jandun (d. 1328) directed himself to *De substantia orbis*; but other medieval scholars who were identified with Averroes during the sixteenth century looked beyond. Urbanus of Bologna, a relatively unknown fourteenth-century Servite wrote a commentary on Averroes's Long Commentary on *Physica*.²⁹ John Baconthorpe (1290–1328), who was routinely referred to as an 'Averroista' during the sixteenth century, put forth his views primarily in Sentence commentaries and quodlibetal disputes.³⁰ In any case, when Agostino Nifo (1469/70–1538) wrote his commentary on *De substantia orbis*, which was printed in 1508, he contended that he had found just one exposition on this work, that of John Jandun's, suggesting that the Bolognese statutes had had little influence.³¹

²⁸ Pietro Mainardi, *Colliget Averrois cum explanationes super V, VI, VII libri*, Ferrara, Biblioteca Ariosteana, ms. II 84, fols 2^v–287^v; Matteo Corti, *Recollectae in septimum colliget Averrois*, Venice, Biblioteca Marciana, ms. Lat. VII, 50 (=3570), fols 1^r–65^r.

²⁹ Horst Schmiejka, 'Urbanus Averroista und die mittelalterlichen Handschriften des Physikkomentars von Averroes', *Bulletin de philosophie médiévale*, 42 (2000), pp. 133–153; Charles J. Ermatinger, 'Urbanus Averroista and Some Early Fourteenth Century Philosophers', *Manuscripta*, 11 (1967), pp. 3–38.

³⁰ J. P. Etzwiler, 'John Baconthorpe, "Prince of the Averroists"', *Franciscan Studies*, 36 (1977 for 1976), pp. 148–176.

³¹ Agostino Nifo, *Commentationes in librum de substantia orbis* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1508), fol. 2^r.

200 A number of Nifo's contemporaries and successors took interest in *De substantia*
 201 *orbis*. Pietro Pomponazzi had written a question-commentary the year before
 202 Nifo's was printed; and throughout the sixteenth century a steady trickle of treatises
 203 analysed this work, which was part of the famed Giuntine editions. Giovanni Battista
 204 Confalonieri wrote a commentary printed in 1525, Giovanni Francesco Beati, who
 205 taught metaphysics at Padua, wrote a single *quaestio*, which was printed in 1542.
 206 Mainetto Mainetti, a professor at Pisa, wrote a commentary published in 1570; and
 207 the Ragusan Nicolò Vito di Gozze composed a commentary that was published in
 208 Bologna in 1580.³² The publication of commentaries on *De substantia orbis* should
 209 not be taken as evidence that the Bolognese statutes were now influential, but rather
 210 as evidence that the composition of these works was the result of rising interest in
 211 Averroes. By this beginning of the sixteenth century, treatises, commentaries, and
 212 *quaestiones* that specifically addressed Averroes became more common, both in print
 213 and in manuscripts. The rise of these commentaries was seemingly paradoxically
 214 caused by humanism and Hellenism.

215 The idea that Averroes was following the Greeks and had preserved their texts
 216 was a rationale for writing commentaries on his works. Nifo in the first pages of
 217 his commentary on *De substantia orbis* wrote that 'when we Latins did not have
 218 the Greeks, we relied on this man [Averroes], because of the fragments of the
 219 Greeks, which he compiled.' Averroes's greatness thus depended on his reliance
 220 on Greek fragments. Expanding on his own goals, Nifo aligned himself with
 221 the Greek commentators, Alexander, Simplicius, and Themistius, all of whom he
 222 believed attempted to give literal expositions (*pro expositione litterae*) on Aristotle.
 223 Then, Nifo compared Averroes favourably with Themistius, 'whom Averroes
 224 followed *in toto*.' While Themistius unfolded Aristotle's words paraphrastically;
 225 Averroes did so 'by commenting and expanding.' Nifo thereby reasoned that
 226 commenting on a book written by a Muslim was warranted because of his literal
 227 expositions of Aristotle's words.³³

228 Pietro Pomponazzi (1462–1525), although less concerned with philology and
 229 Greek texts than Nifo, also puzzled over the nature of *De substantia orbis* and why
 230 it merited further comment. According to Averroes, Aristotle wrote a treatise on the
 231 substance of the orbs, which did not survive antiquity. Therefore, his treatise was an
 232 attempt to replace this missing title. Pomponazzi admired Averroes's purpose as
 233 well as his method. He believed that the Commentator collected 'all of the roots and
 234 foundations' for this book from statements sprinkled throughout the extant
 235 Aristotelian corpus; as a result, *De substantia orbis* is a necessary and worthy part

³² Giovanni Battista Confalonieri, *Averrois libellus de substantia orbis nuper castigatus et duobus capitulis auctus diligentique studio expositus* (Venice: Benali, Bindoni & Pasini, 1525); Giovanni Francesco Beati, *Quaestium in quo Averrois ostendit quomodo verificatur corpora coelestia cum finita sint, et possibilia ex se acquirant aeternitatem ab alio* ([Padua; s.n. 1542]); Mainetto Mainetti, *Commentarii in librum I. Aristotelis de coelo. Necnon librum Averrois de substantia orbis* (Bologna: Rossi, 1570); Nicolò Vito di Gozze, *In sermonem Averrois de substantia orbis, et in propositiones de causis* (Bologna: Giunta, 1580).

³³ Nifo, *In librum de substantia orbis*, fol. 2^r.

of natural philosophy.³⁴ Pomponazzi's and Nifo's views were echoed in the works of later commentators on this work. Confalonieri wrote that 'our Averroes was so steady that whoever should use his guide ... will perceive the strength of Aristotelian doctrine ... just as he [Averroes] had drawn out the truth of Aristotle's mind, even while often having a corrupt text.' Confalonieri, thus, was content to put forth the 'true mind of Averroes's' and then solve any difficulties and problems that the text displayed.³⁵

Interest in writing commentaries on Averroes's works was not confined to his treatises, but included his commentaries as well. Publishers made efforts to connect John Jandun's works to those of Averroes. An edition of Jandun's questions on *Parva naturalia* printed in 1589 added Marcantonio Zimara's question on motion and the mover, which was explained according to the 'intentions of Averroes and Aristotle.' Jandun's questions on *De caelo* were accompanied by *De substantia orbis* in 1552 and 1564 printings; and his questions on *Physica* were printed with annotations and further questions written by Elijah Delmedigo, well known for his Latin translations of Averroes from Hebrew.³⁶

Nifo was perhaps the most prominent and frequent commentator on Averroes, using the *Destructio destructionum* to discuss metaphysics and Averroes's commentaries to discuss Aristotle. Nifo explained the aim of his super-commentaries using similar arguments to those employed to justify his commentary on *De substantia orbis*. He partially justified his commentary on Averroes's Long Commentary on *Physica* by noting its similarities to the works of Alexander and Themistius. Furthermore, he maintained that Averroes's adoption of short, middle and long commentaries came from the Greek commentators.³⁷ Nifo's commentaries seem to conform in style and purpose to the long commentaries and thereby imitate Averroes's imitation of the ancients. His commentary on Averroes's Long Commentary on the twelfth book of the *Metaphysica* repeated the idea that Averroes, while *barbarus*, was an admirable collector of relevant ancient passages, having scoured the works of Alexander, Themistius and others. Averroes, according to Nifo, had 'sufficiently

³⁴ Pietro Pomponazzi, 'Super libello de substantia orbis expositio et questiones quattuor', in *Corsi inediti dell'insegnamento padovano*, ed. Antonino Poppi, 2 vols (Padua: Antenore, 1966), I, pp. 3–5. For Averroes's view that Aristotle wrote a book *De substantia orbis*, see p. 96.

³⁵ Confalonieri, *De substantia*, fols. 2^r; 64^v.

³⁶ John Jandun, *Quaestiones super Parvis naturalibus, cum Marci Antonii Zimarae de movente et moto, ad Aristotelis et Averrois intentionem, absolutissima quaestione* (Venice: Scoto, 1589); Id., *In libros Aristotelis de coelo et mundo quae extant quaestiones subtilissimae: quibus nuper consulto adiecimus Averrois sermonem De substantia orbis cum eiusdem Ioannis commentario ac quaestionibus* (Venice: Giunta, 1552); Id., *Subtilissime quaestiones in octo libros Aristotelis de physico auditu nunc recens post omnes omnium excusiones accuratissime recognite cum triplici tabula his annectuntur quaestiones Helie Hebrei Cretensis* (Venice: Giunta, 1544).

³⁷ Agostino Nifo, *Expositio super octo Aristotelis Stagiritae libros de physico auditu... Averrois etiam Cordubensis in eosdem libros prooemium, ac commentaria* (Venice: Giunta, 1552), sigs.

ii^v—iii^r.

265 brought [these passages] if not to the words, at least to the ears of Aristotle.' As a
 266 result of Averroes's talent, Nifo claimed that he 'was so famous, that no one seemed
 267 to be Peripatetic unless he was an Averroist.'³⁸

268 Nifo's identification of Peripatetic philosophy with Averroes's writings is a clue
 269 to better understanding what the purpose of a super-commentary was. In many ways
 270 a commentary on one of Averroes's long commentaries was no different than one
 271 specifically on Aristotle. Analysis of the Aristotelian text was followed by a discus-
 272 sion of authoritative views, one of which was that of Averroes. The fact that the
 273 treatise is a super-commentary in no way meant that Nifo agreed with all of
 274 Averroes's positions. While his 1505 treatise on the nature of mixtures is a defence
 275 of Averroes's positions, in the super-commentaries he frequently pointed out that
 276 certain views were erroneous or false. In fact, in the preface to his discussion of
 277 *Metaphysica*, he proclaimed that 'he followed the exposition of Alexander,' more
 278 than Averroes's.³⁹ Later in his career, when his skills in Greek language were
 279 evidently improved, Nifo changed his approach. In his commentary on Aristotle's
 280 *Meteorologica*, a work for which only Averroes's short and middle commentaries
 281 are extant, Nifo's analysis of the text is as much an inquiry into the words and intent
 282 of Alexander as it is of Aristotle.⁴⁰ Nevertheless, there is a limit to the degree of
 283 difference between a commentary on Aristotle and one on a long commentary of
 284 Averroes. This was particularly true in Italy of the sixteenth century. Even before
 285 the Giuntine editions made access to Averroes nearly equivalent to access to the
 286 Latin *opera omnia* of the Stagirite, a multitude of university professors read their
 287 Aristotle accompanied and mediated by Averroes.

288 Nifo's super-commentaries that puzzle over the text of entire works were not the
 289 only type of Renaissance writing devoted to an analysis of Averroes. Smaller tracts,
 290 typically a single *quaestio*, also analysed the work of the Commentator. Nifo
 291 himself did so in his *De mixtione*. Others addressed a range of topics. Giovanni
 292 Francesco Beati, a professor of metaphysics at Padova from 1543 to 1546, used the
 293 seventh chapter of *De substantia orbis* to frame a *quaestio* on the eternity of the
 294 world. Vittore Trincavelli wrote a *quaestio* on reactions according to the doctrines
 295 of Aristotle and Averroes as an addendum to a 1520 edition of Swineshead's
 296 *Calculations* that he had edited.⁴¹ Others concentrated on Averroes's opening
 297 chapters as material for discussing the purpose of various philosophical subjects.
 298 Simone Porzio (1496–1554), in a brief treatise on Averroes's prooemium to the

³⁸ Agostino Nifo, *In duodecimum Metaphysices Aristotelis [et] Auerrois volumen... Commentarij in lucem castigatissimi nuperrime prodeuntes* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1518), fols. 1^v–2^r.

³⁹ Agostino Nifo, *Averrois de mixtione defensio* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto 1505); Nifo, *In duodecimum metaphysices volumen*, fol. 1^v.

⁴⁰ Agostino Nifo, *In libris Aristotelis Meteorologicis commentaria* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1547). Averroes, *Meteorologica*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, V, fols. 400^r–487^r.

⁴¹ Nifo, *Averrois de mixtione defensio*; Vittore Trincavelli, *Quaestio de reactione iuxta Aristotelis sententiam et commentatoris* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1520).

Long Commentary on *Physica* gave familiar rationales for reading the Commentator: 299
 Averroes 'wished to imitate the Greeks,' thus he put introductions before moving 300
 on to interpretations of particular sentences and words, just as in fact the later 301
 Alexandrian commentators did.⁴² Similarly, one of Porzio's students, Girolamo Balduini, 302
 used a lengthy discussion of Averroes's prooemium to the Long Commentary 303
 on *Physica* as his own introduction to a commentary on that work, where he linked 304
 Averroes's positions to both the Greek commentators and Aristotle.⁴³ Giovanni 305
 Bernardino Longo, in his 1551 exposition on the prologue to *Analytica posteriora*, recy- 306
 cled the commonplace 'nemo Aristotelicus nisi Averroista,' attributing inspiration 307
 to Averroes's comments on *De caelo* where he wrote 'nemo peripateticus nisi alesan- 308
 dreus.'⁴⁴ Interest in Averroes's logical positions was not unique to Longo, Annibale 309
 Balsamo, for example, wrote a brief treatise in which he attempted to solve obscure 310
 points in *Analytica posteriora* 'ad mentem Averrois.' Thus, understanding what 311
 Averroes truly believed became a goal of sixteenth-century scholars.⁴⁵ 312

Critiques and Clarifications of Averroes as Guide to Antiquity 313

While for Nifo and others, Averroes's concordance and reliance on the Greek com- 314
 mentators recommended at least some of his works, some emphasised the negative 315
 aspects of their agreement. In a 1485 letter describing his reliance on a variety of Greek, 316
 Latin and Arab commentators for his Aristotelian paraphrases, Ermolao Barbaro 317
 (1453–1493) asserted with shock that Averroes's inferiority stems from the fact that 318
 all of his words were stolen from Alexander, Themistius and Simplicius.⁴⁶ Barbaro 319
 had by this time apparently softened his view. In 1483, in a letter to Nicoletto Vernia, 320
 a professor of philosophy at Padua from 1465 to 1499, Barbaro worked to persuade 321
 Vernia to 'condemn, hate and avoid this most wicked genre of philosophizing.'⁴⁷ 322
 Some 20 years later, Symphorien Champier (1472–1539) used Averroes's similari- 323
 ties to the Greek commentators as a means to denigrate him for lack of originality. 324
 'Averroes took pleasure in following them... and did not so much draw from them 325
 but expressed them. Which is only what he was: the name commentator suited him.'⁴⁸ 326

⁴² Simone Porzio, *Prologus Averrois super primum phisicorum Aristotelis*, Milan, Biblioteca Ambrosiana, ms. A 153 inf., fol. 2^r.

⁴³ Balduini, *In libros Physicorum*, pp. 1–4.

⁴⁴ Giovanni Bernardino Longo, *Dilucida expositio in prologum Averrois in Posteriora Aristotelis* (Naples: Cancer, 1551), sig. A1^r.

⁴⁵ Annibale Balsamo, *Dubia aliquot in Posteriora circa mentem Averrois*, Milan, BA, ms. D 129 inf., fols 7^r–16^r.

⁴⁶ Ermolao Barbaro, *Epistolae, orationes et carmina*, ed. Vittore Branca, 2 vols (Florence: Bibliopolis, 1943), I, p. 92.

⁴⁷ Barbaro, *Epistolae*, I, p. 45.

⁴⁸ Symphorien Champier, *Cribratio, lima et annotamenta in Galeni, Avicennae et Consiliatoris opera*, ([Paris]: Officina Ascensiana), fol. 3^r.

327 The Bolognese professor Ludovico Boccadiferro (1482–1545) used Averroes's
 328 supposed lack of originality as a way to categorise the good and bad doctrines found
 329 in his work. 'Whatever is good that he has, Averroes took from the Greeks; nothing
 330 that he got from himself is good and everything he said on his own or took from his
 331 fellow Arabs, and, I mean everything, is fatuous and confused.'⁴⁹ Boccadiferro, thus,
 332 justified his reliance on Averroes, while still being capable of distancing himself
 333 from any controversial, erroneous or condemned doctrines. When he agreed with
 334 Averroes, he was innocently agreeing with the ancients.

335 Not all scholars, however, saw such a tight connection between Averroes and
 336 the Greek commentators. Girolamo Borro (1512–1592), a contentious and at times
 337 controversial professor at the University of Pisa during the years 1553–1559 and
 338 1575–1586, rejected the idea that the Greek commentators were the greatest tool to
 339 understanding Aristotle. Borro attacked some aspects of humanism. He derided
 340 those who concentrated on texts, claiming that emending errors in manuscripts was
 341 both simple and of little value. Averroes was, for Borro, a tool in fighting those who
 342 tried to combine Platonism and Aristotelianism; Averroes's attacks on Avicenna
 343 and Avempace became a model for Borro's own disputes with Francesco de' Vieri
 344 (II) (1524–1591), his colleague at Pisa. In his short treatise *Multae sunt nostrarum*
 345 *ignorationum causae*, Borro named the mixing of doctrines as one of the causes,
 346 using Avicenna and the Greek commentators as his prime examples. He wrote:

347 All of the Greek expositors stick in this same mud of those, who mixed Aristotle's doctrine
 348 with Plato, and who wanted them to be in agreement, but who while they lived wanted there
 349 to be disputes [among each other]... Out of these works no doctrine is born but some
 350 mixture of doctrines, which is neither Academic nor Peripatetic.⁵⁰

351 This passage suggests that Borro had a dim view of the Greek commentators,
 352 but higher esteem for the unadulterated positions of Aristotle and Plato. Nevertheless,
 353 Borro, citing Averroes's criticism of Avicenna's lack of interest in the natural
 354 world, extended the critique to Plato himself, thereby denying the applicability of
 355 mathematics to discussions of nature while promoting an experiential approach, at
 356 least in theory.

357 The prologue of Borro's *De motu gravium, et levium* includes wildly lavish praise
 358 for Averroes, 'who when he digresses, brings Aristotle with him.' His method and
 359 writing style is of extreme merit according to Borro: 'nothing is richer, graver, more
 360 vigorous, more distinguished, and more splendid,' than Averroes's expositions.⁵¹
 361 Thus a number of the sections of this book are explanations of how Averroes
 362 had diligently elucidated the true and germane opinion of Aristotle while fighting

⁴⁹ Ludovico Boccadiferro, *Explanatio libri I physicorum Aristotelis* (Venice: Academia Veneta, 1558), fol. 53^v.

⁵⁰ Charles B. Schmitt, 'Girolamo Borro's *Multae sunt nostrarum ignorantium causae* (Ms. Vat. Ross. 1009)', in *Studies in Renaissance Philosophy and Science* (London: Variorum, 1981), article XI, p. 475.

⁵¹ Girolamo Borro, *De motu gravium, et levium* (Florence: Marescotti, 1575), p. 5.

against the Platonizing views of Themistius and Avempace. Borro's appropriation of Averroes, and his opposition to those who combined Plato and Aristotle, gave him authoritative support for his polemics against mathematical approaches to explaining heaviness and lightness. Borro accepted the ideal of literal exposition and keeping doctrines pure, even as he rejected humanists' concerns with language and texts.

Borro's hostility toward philology stands apart from other sixteenth-century readers of Averroes. The goal of uncovering Averroes's intent must be understood in the context of Renaissance translation movements. Averroes's positions were not taken to be necessarily the truth, just as Aristotelians disagreed with the 'true opinion of Aristotle' at times. Rather trying to understand what Averroes really thought accompanied the process of making new translations. During the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, Jacobo Mantini, Elijah Delmedigo, Abraham de Balmes and Calonymos ben David all made Latin translations of Averroes, based on Hebrew manuscripts, with new standards of Latin prose.⁵² Establishing a text often requires determining the author's intent. Francesco Storella, a professor at Naples from 1561 to 1575, wrote two brief treatises dedicated to analysing the new translations of Averroes's logical and natural philosophical works. Storella's observations and annotations are filled with small detailed examinations of manuscripts, alternative translations and comparisons of the *antiqua traslatio* with the new translation of Mantini. He used observations of Ambrogio Leone (1459–1525), Gersonides (1288–1344) and Tiberio Baccilieri (1461–1511) as evidence for proposed emendations and as the basis for dispute.⁵³ Thus Storella integrated the Latin and Hebrew Averroistic commentary traditions; the latter dated to the early fourteenth century, when Gersonides wrote super-commentaries on Averroes.⁵⁴ The sum result of this integration was that Averroes became the subject of philological commentary concerned with translation and linguistics, rather than doctrinal issues per se. His commentaries reveal a transformed Averroes, an author whose works were the subject of linguistic analysis not just as a source for philosophical arguments and fragments of the Greeks' doctrine.

⁵² Charles Burnett, 'Arabic into Latin: The Reception of Arabic Philosophy into Western Europe', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic Philosophy*, ed. Peter Adamson and Richard C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), pp. 370–404 (pp. 397–400).

⁵³ Francesco Storella, *Animadversionum in Averroem, pars prima logicales locos comprehendens*, Milan, BA, ms. I 166 inf., fols 123^r–156^r; Francesco Storella, *Observationum in Averroem liber secundus locos ad naturalem, medicinam, atque super naturalem philosophiam attinensque amplectens*, Milan, BA, ms. 166 inf., fols 158^r–214^r.

⁵⁴ Ruth Glasner, 'Levi ben Gershom and the Study of Ibn Rushd in the Fourteenth Century', *Jewish Quarterly Review*, 86 (1995), pp. 51–90; Steven Harvey, 'Arabic into Hebrew: The Hebrew Translation Movement and the Influence of Averroes upon Medieval Jewish Thought', in *The Cambridge Companion to Medieval Jewish Philosophy*, eds Daniel H. Frank and Oliver Leaman (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003), pp. 258–280.

393 **Conclusion**

394 The view that Averroes followed the letter of Aristotle's intent and avoided
 395 mixing it with Platonism was widespread among both supporters and opponents
 396 of Aristotelianism. Francesco Patrizi (1529–1597), who was a harsh critic of
 397 Aristotelianism and leaned strongly in the direction of Platonism, contended
 398 that Averroes had gained currency in the sixteenth century because he was
 399 *Aristotelicissimus* as opposed to Avicenna who had synthesised Plato with Aristotle.
 400 Averroes had 'judged all of Aristotle's words to be divine oracles.'⁵⁵ Patrizi's
 401 judgment of his contemporaries was accurate. As natural philosophy became
 402 increasingly eclectic and syncretic during the sixteenth century, objectors to
 403 that trend could turn to Averroes to find an historical example of a proponent of
 404 literalism struggling against the tendency to make philosophical syntheses. For
 405 example, Jacopo Zabarella (1532–1589), a leading professor of philosophy at
 406 Padua, thought that, despite being an 'Arab' and being unable to read accurate texts
 407 of Aristotle, Averroes had in fact understood Aristotle as well as anyone and
 408 explained Aristotle's intent beautifully.⁵⁶

409 Zabarella's emphasis on Averroes's ability to transcend the philological limitations
 410 of his circumstances was reflected in the works of a number of late sixteenth-
 411 century scholars, who appreciated the humanist ideal of faithfully interpreting the
 412 intent of ancient authors, but who thought that excessive attention to philological
 413 detail did not improve philosophy. Perhaps, the most extreme formulation of the
 414 dictum, 'Grammar should be left to the grammarians,' and should not pertain to
 415 philosophy is found in the works of Giordano Bruno (1548–1600). Bruno, who
 416 linked Averroes's position on the indeterminacy of matter to Plotinus's world soul,
 417 thought that Averroes's lack of knowledge of the Greek language was advantageous.
 418 According to Bruno, Averroes was able to penetrate further into metaphysics
 419 because he did not read Greek and therefore was able to find the true Peripatetic
 420 foundation, while others just looked at grammar and were mere pedants.⁵⁷ Thus
 421 while the positive assessments of Averroes found in Bruno and Zabarella were
 422 not based on the humanist ideal of careful philological analysis, they embraced the
 423 desire to find a more accurate understanding of Aristotle's intent.

424 Although there were far fewer commentaries on Averroes than on Avicenna,
 425 Galen and others, the emergence of these commentaries during the first decades of

⁵⁵ Francesco Patrizi, *Discussiones peripateticæ* (Basel: Perna, 1581; repr. Cologne: Böhlau, 1999), p. 66; p. 162.

⁵⁶ Jacopo Zabarella, *De propositionis necessariis*, II, 2, in *Opera logica*, (Cologne: Zetzner, 1597; repr. Hildesheim: Olms, 1966), p. 380.

⁵⁷ Loris Sturlese, "'Averroè quantumque arabo et ignorante di lingua greca . . .'" Note sull'averroismo di Giordano Bruno', in *Averroismus im Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, ed. Loris Sturlese and Friedrich Niewöhner (Zürich: Spur Verlag, 1994), pp. 319–348; Eugenio Canone, 'Giordano Bruno lettore di Averroè', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Heritage*, ed. Carmela Baffioni (Naples: Guida, 2004), pp. 211–247.

the sixteenth century helps explain why scholars read Averroes in these years and 426
how their readings fit with larger intellectual movements. While some scholars were 427
attracted by particular philosophical arguments, the broader value found in Averroes 428
stemmed from his perceived proximity to antiquity, Aristotle and the late antique 429
commentators.⁵⁸ That he was ignorant of Greek and a Muslim was pushed aside, 430
while his access to ancient works unavailable to Renaissance authors recommended 431
his works. As philology and humanism became applied not just to ancient authors 432
but to medieval ones as well, Averroes became a subject for historical and philo- 433
logical inquiry. Determining his true intent became a quest in and of itself, separated 434
at times from philosophy and at times from philology. 435

⁵⁸ For the attraction of specific philosophical arguments see Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'Aufstieg und Niedergang des Averroismus in der Renaissance: Niccolò Tignosi, Agostino Nifo, Francesco Vimercato', in *Herbst des Mittelalters?: Fragen zur Bewertung des 14. und 15. Jahrhunderts*, ed. Jan A. Aertsen and Martin Pickavé (Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 2004), pp. 447–473; Id., 'The Attraction of Averroism in the Renaissance: Vernia, Achillini, Prassicio', in *Philosophy, Science and Exegesis in Greek, Arabic and Latin Commentaries*, ed. Peter Adamson, Han Baltussen and M. W. F. Stone, 2 vols (London: Institute of Classical Studies, 2004), II, pp. 131–147.

Chapter 5

Marsilio Ficino on Saturn, the Plotinian Mind, and the Monster of Averroes

Michael J.B. Allen

English speakers have always associated saturnian melancholy with that incomparable compilation by the hypochondriacal Robert Burton in the seventeenth century, *The Anatomy of Melancholy*,¹ though the problem of the black humour goes back to antiquity and to the Pseudo-Aristotelian *Problemata*.² Academic study of melancholy's complex history in the Renaissance, however, is the work of a number of distinguished twentieth-century scholars, beginning effectively with Fritz Saxl and Erwin Panofsky's penetrating investigation of Dürer's great woodcut, *Melencolia*

I am especially indebted in this essay to conversations with Brian Copenhaver, Stephen Clucas, Peter Forshaw, Guido Giglioni, Dilwyn Knox, Jill Krayer, and Valery Rees. This article was first published in *Bruniana et Campanelliana*, 16 (2010), pp. 11–29. I would like to thank the publisher for allowing the article to be included in the present volume.

¹ Now edited and annotated by Thomas C. Faulkner, Nicolas K. Kiessling and Rhonda L. Blair, with introduction and commentary by J. B. Bamforth and Martin Dodsworth, 6 vols (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1989–2000). See Angus Gowland, *The Worlds of Renaissance Melancholy: Robert Burton in Context* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2006); and James Hankins, 'Monstrous Melancholy: Ficino and the Physiological Causes of Atheism', in *Laus Platonici Philosophi: Marsilio Ficino and His Influence*, eds Stephen Clucas, Peter J. Forshaw and Valery Rees (Leiden: Brill, 2011), pp. 25–43 (published in Italian as 'Malinconia mostruosa: Ficino e le cause fisiologiche dell'ateismo', *Rinascimento*, 47 (2007), pp. 3–23), which deals inter alia with some of Burton's Ficinian sources.

² *Problemata*, XXX.1.953a10-955a39. See Hellmut Flashar, *Melancholie und Melancholiker in den medizinischen Theorien der Antike* (Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1966); Jackie Pigeaud, *La maladie de l'âme: Étude sur la relation de l'âme et du corps dans la tradition médico-philosophique antique* (Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 1981); and John Monfasani, 'George of Trebizond's Critique of Theodore of Gaza's Translation of the Aristotelian *Problemata*', in *Aristotle's Problemata in Different Times and Tongues*, eds Pieter De Leemans and Michèle Goyons (Leuven: Leuven University Press, 2006), pp. 273–292.

M.J.B. Allen (✉)
UCLA, 633, 18th Street, 90402, Santa Monica, CA, USA
e-mail: mjballen@humnet.ucla.edu

12 *I* (1514), and of Dürer generally.³ This was followed by the pioneering studies of
 13 Don Quixote by Harald Weinrich⁴ and Otis Green,⁵ and of Elizabethan drama by
 14 Lawrence Babb in *The Elizabethan Malady*.⁶ Then in 1963 appeared Rudolf and
 15 Margot Wittkower's remarkable *Born under Saturn*⁷; and barely a year later appeared
 16 what would turn out to be the commanding work in the field, Klibansky, Panofsky
 17 and Saxl's *Saturn and Melancholy: Studies in the History of Natural Philosophy,*
 18 *Religion, and Art*,⁸ which linked *melancholia generosa* (with its roots in the
 19 medieval vice of *acedia*) to the emergence of our modern notion of genius. These
 20 foundational books were followed by Bridget Gellert Lyons's arresting *Voices of*
 21 *Melancholy: Studies in Literary Treatments of Melancholy in Renaissance England*,⁹
 22 Winfried Schleiner's wide-ranging *Melancholy, Genius and Utopia in the*
 23 *Renaissance*,¹⁰ and indeed a number of other studies by historians of art, literature,
 24 music, medicine, the melancholic Dane,¹¹ mad Timon,¹² and Don Quixote, which
 25 have enhanced our understanding of the history and iconography of this complex
 26 cultural and medico-psychological phenomenon.

27 There is a Ficinian chapter to this history, however, that still remains to be written,
 28 and this despite the central role Ficino already plays in Klibansky, Panofsky, and
 29 Saxl's study as the theorist who linked melancholy and frenzy and confronted the
 30 pathos they constituted¹³; and despite too the signal role he also plays in the work of
 31 two other eminent art historians, André Chastel¹⁴ and Edgar Wind.¹⁵ In this chapter

³ Erwin Panofsky and Fritz Saxl, 'Dürers 'Melencolia I': Eine quellen – und typengeschichtliche Untersuchung (Leipzig and Berlin: Teubner, 1923). This was followed by Erwin Panofsky's magisterial *Albrecht Dürer* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1943) – subsequent editions in 1955 and 1971 were entitled *The Life and Art of Albrecht Dürer*.

⁴ Harald Weinrich, *Das Ingenium Don Quijotes* (Münster: Aschendorf, 1956).

⁵ Otis Green, 'El Ingenioso Hidalgo', *Hispanic Review*, 25 (1957), pp. 175–193.

⁶ Lawrence Babb, *The Elizabethan Malady: A Study of Melancholia in English Literature from 1580 to 1642* (East Lansing, MI: Michigan State College Press, 1951).

⁷ Rudolf and Margot Wittkower, *Born under Saturn: The Character and Conduct of Artists: A Documented History from Antiquity to the French Revolution* (London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1963).

⁸ Raymond Klibansky, Erwin Panofsky and Fritz Saxl, *Saturn and Melancholy: Studies in the History of Natural Philosophy, Religion, and Art* (London: Nelson, 1964). On pp. 18–41 the authors provide the Greek text, a translation and a commentary on Aristotle's *Problemata* XXX.1.

⁹ Bridget Gellert Lyons, *Voices of Melancholy: Studies in Literary Treatments of Melancholy in Renaissance England* (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1971).

¹⁰ Winfried Schleiner, *Melancholy, Genius and Utopia in the Renaissance* (Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1991).

¹¹ See esp. Gellert Lyons, *Voices of Melancholy*, chapter 4.

¹² Rolf Soellner, *Timon of Athens: Shakespeare's Pessimistic Tragedy* (Columbia, OH: Ohio State University Press, 1979).

¹³ Klibansky, Panofsky and Saxl argue that Ficino was the figure 'who really gave shape to the idea of the melancholy man of genius' (p. 255).

¹⁴ André Chastel, 'Le mythe de Saturne dans la Renaissance italienne', *Phoebus*, 1/3-4 (1946), pp. 125–144; Id., *Marsile Ficino et l'art* (Geneva: Droz; Lille: Giard, 1954); Id., *Art et humanisme à Florence au temps de Laurent le Magnifique: Études sur la Renaissance et l'humanisme platonicien* (Paris: Presses universitaires de France, 1959).

¹⁵ Edgar Wind, *Pagan Mysteries in the Renaissance* (London: Faber & Faber, 1958; revised edition, New York: Norton, 1968).

I shall attempt in part to contribute to the history of the Renaissance Saturn, a history for which a lively collection of essays edited by Massimo Ciavolella and Amilcare A. Iannucci, *Saturn from Antiquity to the Renaissance*,¹⁶ has established some of the main parameters.

Astrologically speaking, Saturn, as furthest, slowest, and by implication the most aged, driest, and coldest of the seven planets, has traditionally been linked with the seventh and last decade of the biblical span of human life, and thus on the one hand with slippered pantaloons, sans eyes, sans teeth, sans everything, and on the other with otherworldly contemplation. More actively, as the 'highest' of the planets, it has also been seen as causing 'mutations in human life every 7th year,' unlike the Moon, say, which causes mutations every 7th day.¹⁷ But in addition to his astrological, pharmacological and medical roles – the three are of course intermingled – Saturn as a deity has a special status in the Platonic tradition; and chiefly on the following four counts.

First, he figures prominently in the Platonic vision of the zodiac – in this regard most familiar to Ficino via Macrobius's commentary on the dream of Scipio. Macrobius envisages human souls descending to earth from the fixed stars at birth by way of Cancer, the domicile of the Moon, and then at bodily death re-ascending by way of Capricorn, the 'night abode' of Saturn (Aquarius being his 'day abode'). In his 1482 *Platonic Theology* Ficino argues at XVIII.1.12 that the Egyptians had supposed that the light of the world's first day dawned when Aries was in mid-heaven and Cancer was rising. At that primal hour the Moon was in Cancer, the Sun in Leo, Mercury in Virgo, Venus in Libra, Mars in Scorpio, Jupiter in Sagittarius, and Saturn in Capricorn. Furthermore, the Egyptians had supposed that the individual planets were lords of these signs because they were situated in them when the world was born.¹⁸ The Chaldeans, on the other hand, had believed that the world's nativity occurred when the Sun was in Aries not in Leo. The Chaldeans and the Egyptians had both assumed, Ficino maintains, that the world was created at some point in time; and both had called Aries, either because the Sun was in it or because it was itself coursing through mid-heaven (*quod ipse medium percurreret caelum*), the head of the zodiacal signs. Hence astronomers had come to judge the fortune of the whole year principally from the entrance of the Sun into Aries, as if everything virtually depended on it. Moreover, the Egyptians had assigned Leo alone to the Sun and Cancer alone to the Moon,¹⁹ while assigning to the other planets, in addition to the signs in which they were then dwelling, the five extra

¹⁶ *Saturn from Antiquity to the Renaissance*, eds Massimo Ciavolella and Amilcare A. Iannucci (Ottawa: Dovehouse Editions, 1992).

¹⁷ Marsilio Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, XVII.2.12, eds and trans. Michael J. B. Allen and James Hankins, 6 vols (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2001–2006), VI, p. 23.

¹⁸ Macrobius, *In somnium Scipionis commentarios*, I.21.23–25, ed. James Willis, 2 vols (Leipzig: Teubner, 1970), II, pp. 88–89.

¹⁹ *Ibid.*, I.21.25.

67 signs in reverse planetary order. Hence they had allotted the sign of Aquarius (which
 68 immediately succeeds Capricorn) to Saturn as the last and furthest of the planets,
 69 but Pisces to Jupiter, Aries to Mars, Taurus to Venus, and Gemini to Mercury.²⁰
 70 In short, they had bestowed on five of the planets two zodiacal signs each, while
 71 giving the Sun and Moon just one each.

72 In the *Platonic Theology* XVIII.5.2 Ficino observes that since souls descend
 73 principally (though not apparently exclusively) from Cancer according to the
 74 Platonists, and ascend in turn through Capricorn, the sign opposite to Cancer,
 75 Cancer had been denominated by the ancients (meaning the ancient theologians)
 76 'the gateway of men', and Capricorn, 'the gateway of the gods'.²¹ Yet nobody
 77 should be deceived, Ficino warns us, to the point of accepting the descent and ascent
 78 in this Platonic tradition as referring to an actual place or celestial region. Because
 79 the Moon, the mistress of Cancer, is closest to generation, but Saturn, the lord of
 80 Capricorn, the furthest away, the souls are thought to descend 'through the instinct
 81 that is lunar and vegetative,' but to ascend through 'the instinct that is saturnian and
 82 intellectual.' For the ancients call Saturn 'the mind by which alone we seek higher
 83 things.' The 'dry power' that is common to both Capricorn and Saturn, 'since it
 84 internally contracts and collects the spirits,' will incite us ceaselessly to contempla-
 85 tion if we succumb to its dominance, whereas the wetness of the Moon will, to the
 86 contrary, disperse and dilate our spirits and drag our rational soul down towards
 87 sensibles. However, in the soul's descent from Cancer it has received from the divinity
 88 of Saturn directly, and from Saturn's light as well, certain 'aids or incitements' to
 89 the more concentrated or focused pursuit of contemplation. And the soul has
 90 received them by way of its *idolum*, which is the 'foot' of the soul or rather reason's
 91 image, containing the phantasy, sense, and vital force and serving as 'the ruling
 92 power of the body' in that it inheres in the ethereal body or vehicle as its life.²²
 93 Likewise, the soul receives a stimulus to the governing of civic affairs from Jupiter's
 94 divinity and light; while from Mars's it is roused to the magnanimity that battles
 95 against injustices, from the Sun's, to the clarity of the phantasy and the senses, from
 96 Venus's, to charity (i.e. to the gifts of the Graces),²³ from Mercury's, to interpretation
 97 and eloquence, and from the Moon's, to generation.²⁴ Nonetheless, though the
 98 individual planetary gifts are bestowed in this beneficent way, they may degenerate
 99 in the earthly mixture and become evil for us.

²⁰ *Ibid.*, I.21.26.

²¹ *Ibid.*, I.12.1-2, II, p. 48.

²² Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, XIII.2.15-20. See Paul Oskar Kristeller, *The Philosophy of Marsilio Ficino* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1943), pp. 371-375; also, interestingly, Stéphane Toussaint, 'Sensus naturae, Jean Pic, le véhicule de l'âme et l'équivoque de la magie naturelle', in *La Magia nell'Europa moderna: Tra antica sapienza e filosofia naturale*, eds Fabrizio Meroi and Elisabetta Scapparone, 2 vols (Florence: Olschki, 2007 [2008]), I, pp. 107-145; and Brian Ogren, 'Circularity, the Soul-Vehicle and the Renaissance Rebirth of Reincarnation: Marsilio Ficino and Isaac Abarbanel on the Possibility of Transmigration', *Accademia*, 6 (2004), pp. 63-94 (64-79).

²³ With a play on *Charites* – the three Graces, Aglaia, Euphrosyne, and Thalia.

²⁴ Macrobius, *In somnium Scipionis*, I.12.14-15, II, p. 50.

Given Ficino's own horoscope – he was born on 19 October 1433, with Aquarius on the Ascendant and Saturn and Mars in Aquarius²⁵ – this all points, as Klíbanky, Panofsky, and Saxl's book so richly demonstrates, to the special impact of 'the seal of melancholia' in the life of the philosopher. He regarded it as a 'divine gift', as he says at the conclusion of a letter to his beloved Giovanni Cavalcanti,²⁶ recalling the famous passage in the [Pseudo-] Aristotelian *Problemata* XXX.1. However, a close look at Ficino's *Platonic Theology* XIII.2 is in order here, since it casts considerable light on the unique role for him of Saturn. He argues, following medieval astrological lore,²⁷ that since the melancholic humour is associated with earth which is not 'widely diffused' like the other three elements 'but contracted tightly into itself,' it both 'invites and helps the soul to gather itself into itself.' The earthy melancholic humour has in other words a contractive or concentrating power. He continues obscurely: 'If the soul frequently gathers the very spirits into itself, then because of the continual agitation in the liberated and subtle parts of the [other] humours,' it takes the body's complexion, compounded as it is from the four humours in various proportions, and 'renders it much more earthy than when it had first received it.' This is especially because, by gathering itself in or concentrating itself, the soul 'makes the body's habitual condition more compressed.'²⁸ Ficino then identifies such a compression with the nature both of Mercury and of Saturn. For these two planets especially use their nature to 'gather our spirits round a centre,' and thus in a way to summon 'the mind's attention from alien matters back to its own concerns, and to bring it to rest in contemplation, and to enable it to penetrate to the centres of things.'²⁹ For the soul to accomplish this contemplative goal, the planets do not act as efficient causes but simply provide the occasion: they are hosts, but the soul is a guest who can come and go as she pleases. We have crossed over here from psychological or humoural concentration to mental concentration. And the underlying imagery involves not so much compression per se as contraction to a point, the geometrical point being closest, indeed immediately proximate, to the intelligible world of non-extension, since it is at the summit of the scale that descends through the line and the plane down to the three-dimensionality of the sensible world.³⁰

²⁵ See his letters to Giovanni Cavalcanti in the third book of *Letters*, and to Martin Prenninger in the ninth; also his *De vita*, III.2 in *Opera omnia*, 2 vols (Basel: Heinrich Petri, 1576; repr. Turin: Bottega d'Erasmus, 1962), pp. 533, 732.3-733, 901.2 respectively.

²⁶ See n. 25 above.

²⁷ See *Saturn and Melancholy*, p. 252, for instance, on Jacopo della Lana.

²⁸ Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, XIII.2.2.

²⁹ *Ibid.*, XIII.2.3.

³⁰ On the Pythagorean notion of the progression of the point to line to plane to solid, see Aristotle, *Topics*, VI.4.141b5-22; *De caelo*, I.1.268a7-a28; *De anima*, I.2.404b16-b24; *Metaphysics*, I.9.992a10-b18, III.5.1001b26-1002b11, XIII.9.1085a7-b3. In general see John Dillon, *The Middle Platonists: 80 B.C. to A.D. 220* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press: 1977), pp. 5–6, 27–28; and, for Ficino, see my *The Platonism of Marsilio Ficino* (Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1984), p. 105 and n. 34; and *Nuptial Arithmetic: Marsilio Ficino's Commentary on the Fatal Number in Book VIII of Plato's Republic* (Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1994), p. 93 and n. 39.

130 Second, Saturn figures prominently in the famous mythical passage in the
 131 *Statesman* 269C-274D, which Ficino takes up on a number of occasions. Let us
 132 consider the convolutions of the argument in the *Platonic Theology*, XVIII.8.7:

133 Here is unfolded that old mystery most celebrated by Plato in the *Statesman*: that the present
 134 circuit of the world from East to West is the fatal jovian circuit, but that at some time in the
 135 future there will be another circuit opposed to this under Saturn that will go from the West
 136 back again to the East. In it men will be born of their own accord and proceed from old age
 137 to youth, and in an eternal spring abundant foods will answer their prayer unasked. He calls
 138 Jupiter, I think, the World-Soul by whose fatal law the manifest order here of the manifest
 139 world is disposed. Moreover, he wants the life of souls in elemental bodies to be the jovian
 140 life, one devoted to the senses and to action, but Saturn to be the supreme intellect among
 141 the angels, by whose rays, over and beyond the angels, souls are set alight and on fire and
 142 are lifted continually as far as possible to the intellectual life. As often as souls are turned
 143 back towards this life, and to the extent they live by understanding, they are said correspond-
 144 ingly to live under the rule of Saturn. Consequently, they are said to be regenerated in this
 145 life of their own accord, because they are reformed for the better by their own choice. And
 146 they are daily renewed, daily, that is, if days can be numbered there, they blossom more and
 147 more. Hence that saying of the apostle Paul: 'The inner man is renewed day by day.'³¹ Finally
 148 foods arise spontaneously and in good measure, and in a perpetual spring are supplied them
 149 in abundance. This is because the souls enjoy the wonderful spectacles of the truth itself,
 150 not through the senses and through laborious training, but through an inner light and with
 151 life's highest tranquillity and pleasure. The fragrance of such a life is perceived by the mind
 152 that has been separated as far as it can be separated; but its taste is tasted by a mind that has
 153 been absolutely separated.

154 In this suggestive passage Saturn is invoked as the ruler and guardian, not only of the
 155 golden age when mankind was in harmony with a beneficent and plenteous nature, but
 156 of an age to come when we will become young again even as we become wise and enjoy
 157 what the *Phaedrus* 247a, 4–5 calls 'the spectacles' of truth.³² Wisdom is now being
 158 conferred on youth not on old age, given that saturnian philosophy is being linked, how-
 159 ever paradoxically, with the powers, not of the Titans, but of the youngest gods, those of
 160 the third Olympian generation. This gives us a special perspective on Socratic and
 161 Platonic philosophy's love affair with adolescents and their education, their *paideia*; and
 162 with the more mysterious but no less central idea of a returning time, of a reversal in the
 163 jovian ordering of things. There are further complications that need not concern us here
 164 but include the Ficinian notions that the saturnian return itself is governed mysteriously
 165 by Jupiter³³; and that the *Statesman*'s myth concerns, *inter alia*, our ability to recover in
 166 the future, under the saturnian rule of providence, the pure immortal bodies that were
 167 corrupted at the Fall, when, under the rule of Jupiter, we succumbed to fate.³⁴

168

³¹ 2 Corinthians 4:16.

³² See summa 19 of Ficino's *In Phaedrum*. I have just reedited this as *Marsilio Ficino: Commentaries on Plato: Volume I: Phaedrus and Ion* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2008), pp. 122–125.

³³ See my *Nuptial Arithmetic*, pp. 128–129, 134–135, 138.

³⁴ Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, XVIII.9.4. See my *Nuptial Arithmetic*, pp. 125–136; and 'Quisque in sphaera sua: Plato's *Statesman*, Marsilio Ficino's *Platonic Theology*, and the Resurrection of the Body', *Rinascimento*, second series, 47 (2007), pp. 25–48.

The third aspect of Saturn's special status in the Platonic tradition involves his middle position in the generational triad of Jupiter, Saturn (Cronus) and Uranus, a position that is open, from Ficino's viewpoint, to four interconnected methods of Platonic allegorizing. He addresses these in the tenth chapter of his *Phaedrus* Commentary.³⁵ Methods one and three are of special significance.

The first method of arranging or 'compounding' the gods is via substances: and here Saturn is the son of the Good and the One and identified therefore with the First Intellect which is pure and full (with a double pun: on *satur* meaning 'full' and on *sacer nus* meaning 'sacred intellect').³⁶ He presides over the hosts of the intellectual gods and the supermundane gods led by the 12 leading gods in Proclan theology,³⁷ and also over the World-Soul (identified with Jupiter) and all subordinate souls. As such he is the first to emanate from the One and he is to be identified both with absolute unitary Being and with the dyad of thinking and of thought. Thus for Plotinus and all subsequent Neoplatonists in antiquity he became identified with the second metaphysical hypostasis in Plotinus's system, namely with Mind. Insofar as Mind then became identifiable in Christian metaphysics, or at least in its Arian version, with the Son – the Logos who was in the beginning with God and was God in the famous opening formulations of St. John's Gospel – we might have predicted that Saturn would be used, at least in contexts where classical deities were a legitimate rhetorical recourse, to signify the Son. But the Latin West's constant cooptation of Jupiter to signify the Deity in such contexts, combined with the many negative or problematic associations of Saturn, obviously militated against this, even as Christian philosophers co-opted aspects of the Plotinian Mind to account for aspects of God on the one hand and aspects of the angel, God's first creature, on the other.³⁸

The second and fourth methods, which Ficino only passingly mentions, identify the gods first with various Platonic Ideas – and he makes no specific equations, though Saturn is presumably the Idea of Being as Uranus is the Idea of the Good – and then with the gods' attendant daemons. In this latter case one has to make room for many Saturns, since the daemons traditionally take the names of their presiding deities.³⁹ Such flexibility, indeed, enables a Neoplatonic interpreter to take any and every reference to a deity in classical mythology, and especially if it is introduced

³⁵ For a detailed exposition of these four methods, see my *Platonism of Ficino*, chapter 5.

³⁶ Cicero's *De natura deorum*, II.25.64 derives Saturn's name from his being 'saturated with years' (*quod saturaretur*) in the sense that 'he was in the habit of devouring his sons as Time devours the ages and gorges himself insatiably with the years that are past.' That the name was derived from *sacer nus* comes from Fulgentius, while Varro's *De lingua latina*, V.64 derives it from *satum*, the past participle of *sero*, meaning 'what has been sown'. All three etymologies were entertained for centuries. Additionally, Romans identified Saturn's Greek name *Kronos* with the like-sounding *Chronos* (as in Cicero's work cited above).

³⁷ See esp. Proclus's own *Platonic Theology*, IV.1.16; and my *Platonism of Ficino*, pp. 115–121, 249–251.

³⁸ For these transferences, see Kristeller, *Philosophy of Ficino*, pp. 168–169.

³⁹ Ficino, *In Phaedrum* X.5,12-13 (ed. Allen, pp. 84–85, 90–93).

201 by one of the *prisci theologi*, the ancient theologians, and to interpret it monotheistically,
 202 provided it serves his argument. But it also enables him to acknowledge the
 203 multiple roles of Saturn himself and of subordinate Saturns in what he calls, because
 204 polytheistically constructed, the poetic theology and daemonology of the ancients.
 205 We should bear in mind, moreover, that Ficino personally exorcised two saturnian
 206 daemons, presumably poltergeists, in October 1493 and December 1494 as we learn
 207 from two late inserts in his *Timaeus* Commentary.⁴⁰ In fact, Saturnian daemons
 208 would probably be the most troublesome of all daemons to exorcise given
 209 their complex nature, their recalcitrance and their malevolence. And one senses the
 210 especial relevance here of the astrological and occult lore associated with Saturn as
 211 an inimical planet, rather than the story of the god's castration of his father Uranus,
 212 which Ficino read allegorically as a mythical description of the radical nature of
 213 Mind's descent from, or procession from, the One.⁴¹

214 This takes us to the most important method for elaborating the gods, the third
 215 method via properties or powers.⁴² Saturn is now interpreted as the turning of the
 216 prime understanding towards its own essence. Here Ficino relies in particular on
 217 the famous enigma in Plato's *Sixth Letter* 'To Hermias' 323D, which postulates the
 218 intellect, i.e., Saturn, as the 'cause' of Jupiter, and postulates the Good as 'the lord
 219 and father' of both Saturn and Jupiter.⁴³ In the intelligible world Saturn's wife, Ops/
 220 Rhea, is the 'vital power' with whom Saturn begets Jupiter, the All Soul. As the
 221 self-regarding one, Saturn himself is effectively the self-regarding or self-reflecting
 222 principle at any ontological level, though the first and exemplary instance of this is
 223 the self-regarding of the First Intellect, that is, of the pure separated Intellect.⁴⁴
 224 As such it represents the 'turn' in the fundamental Neoplatonic triad of procession-
 225 turn-return, where the jovian glance downwards is the procession, and the uranian
 226 gaze upwards is the return. In this third method Saturn is the father who swallows
 227 his intellectual offspring in eternal contemplation of the intelligible realm – an act
 228 that symbolises for Ficino the identity of thinker, thinking, and of thought.

229 This 'turning', noetic Saturn obviously is not the same as the old, slow, melancholic,
 230 contemplative Saturn of the astrological model, who reigns over every 17th year, or
 231 over the seventh age of the philosopher still tied to the world, still providing for his
 232 body, and still exercising jovian governing powers as well as saturnian reflective and
 233 speculative powers. Nor is he the same exactly as the 'supreme intellect' who presides
 234 over the cyclical return of the golden age in the great *Statesman* myth, when all things
 235 spin back towards their youth, towards the East, towards indeed the Resurrection.

⁴⁰ Ficino, *In Timaeum*, summa 24 (*Opera omnia*, pp. 1469–1470).

⁴¹ Wind, *Pagan Mysteries*, pp. 133–138, has an interesting section on violent myths and their interpretation. Pseudo-Dionysius the Areopagite, *On the Celestial Hierarchy* II.3, suggests that the more rebarbative the myth, the profounder its core.

⁴² Ficino, *In Phaedrum* X.6-12 (ed. Allen, pp. 84–91).

⁴³ See Ficino's epitome, *Opera omnia*, p. 1533.4. For the theology of this enigma, see my 'Marsilio Ficino on Plato, the Neoplatonists and the Christian Doctrine of the Trinity', *Renaissance Quarterly*, 37 (1984), pp. 555–584 (at pp. 568–571).

⁴⁴ Ficino, *In Phaedrum*, summa 28; cf. X.6 (ed. Allen, pp. 154–155; cf. 86–87).

But Plato arrives at a complementary elaboration nonetheless. For Saturn is now identified with the first metaphysical and, concomitantly, dialectical principle to issue from and to return to the One: that is, with Mind and with the self-regarding of Mind; and thus with the dyadic principle that is the very corner stone of Neoplatonism and of Ficino's Christian-Neoplatonic metaphysics. Even so, Saturn remained a troubling figure for Ficino, not, I think, because of his associations with parricidal and infanticidal violence as such, and not because of his baleful astrological and melancholic associations (which Klibansky, Panofsky and Saxl successfully explained and qualified in 1964). Why then? For an answer let us turn to a fourth aspect.

It is my contention here that the figure of Saturn was inextricably entangled for Ficino in the problems generated by Averroes's Long Commentary on Aristotle's *De anima*, which he knew only in the thirteenth-century Latin version by Michael Scot,⁴⁵ and indirectly by way of Aquinas's refutations of its arguments.⁴⁶ More specifically Saturn was entangled in the controversial doctrine, one that Averroes and the Scholastics traced back to Aristotle himself, of the unity of both the agent and the possible intellects in all men.⁴⁷ The whole of the formidable 15th book of Ficino's 18 book summa, the *Platonic Theology* – the longest book by far – is devoted to a thorough refutation of Averroes's positions; and not always on the basis of Ficino's own Neoplatonic convictions as we might have anticipated. The book is so extensive indeed, so packed with argument and detail, so combative in its refutation that it leaves us in no doubt that refuting the great Arab's arguments, and particularly what he saw as Averroes's denial of the soul being the substantial form of the body, was still an abiding concern for Ficino and presumably for his sophisticated Florentine readers.⁴⁸ But why such a concern, given their familiarity

⁴⁵ For the dating, see R. A. Gauthier, 'Note sur les débuts (1225–1240) du premier averroïsme', *Revue des sciences philosophiques et théologiques*, 66 (1982), pp. 321–374.

⁴⁶ In his *Summa contra gentiles* and *De unitate intellectus contra averroistas*. See Deborah L. Black, 'Consciousness and Self-Knowledge in Aquinas' Critique of Averroes' Psychology', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 31/3 (1993), pp. 349–385.

⁴⁷ John Monfasani, 'The Averroism of John Argyropoulos', in *I Tatti Studies: Essays in the Renaissance*, V (Florence: Villa I Tatti, 1993), pp. 157–208, calls this doctrine 'the distinguishing mark of Averroism' (p. 165).

⁴⁸ Ficino's summary refutation continued to be influential: it was the basis for Pierre Bayle's entry on Averroes in the *Dictionnaire historique et critique* (Rotterdam: Michel Bohm, ³1720), p. 383, which in turn shaped Leibniz's account of the history of monopsychism in his *Theodicée* as well as Johann Franz Budde's view of Averroes in his *Traité de l'athéisme et de la superstition*, trans. L. Philon (Amsterdam: Pierre Mortier, 1740), VII.2, p. 271. Even more tellingly the first 'modern' history of philosophy, Johann Jacob Brucker's *Historia critica philosophiae*, 6 vols (Leipzig: Weidemann & Reich, 1766), has a long passage in vol. III, pp. 109–110 on Averroes. But Brucker took this from Ludovico Celio Rodigino's *Lectionum antiquarum libri XVI* (Basel: Ambrose and Aurelius Froben, 1566), III.2, p. 73, which in turn reproduced Ficino's summary in XV.1 (see below)! See Emanuele Coccia, *La trasparenza delle immagini: Averroè e l'averroismo* (Milan: Bruno Mondadori, 2005), pp. 22–27.

261 with the Thomist and post-Thomist refutations that had authoritatively established
 262 the Christian position; and given that there seems to have been no well-defined
 263 group or school of doctrinaire Averroists, Paduan, Bolognese or otherwise, as we
 264 were once led to believe?⁴⁹ Indeed, most of the leading Italian Aristotelians under-
 265 stood but certainly rejected Averroes's signature doctrine – at least it was signature
 266 for them – of the unity of the intellect.⁵⁰

267 This is not the occasion to explore the entire topic of Ficino's own engagement
 268 with Scot's Latin version of Averroes's *De anima* commentary, which itself awaits
 269 detailed study. But a preliminary survey of Ficino's understanding of Averroes's
 270 views, however incorrect, and of his rejection of them is in order.

271 Having dealt with many questions and doubts concerning the soul in the preceding
 272 books, Ficino turns in Book 15 to five objections still needing clarification. The first
 273 of these I shall return to shortly but the next four are recurrent and familiar
 274 questions: 2) Why are souls, if they are divine, joined to such lowly bodies? 3) Why
 275 are they subsequently so troubled in these bodies? 4) Why then do they abandon
 276 them so reluctantly? And 5) What is the status of the soul before entering the body,
 277 and what after it departs from it? Ficino's answers to questions 2, 3, and 4 constitute
 278 Book 16 and his answer to question 5 commences with the first chapter of Book 17.
 279 But his answer to the first and seminal question raised by Averroes – Is there one
 280 intellect for all men? – constitutes the whole of Book 15.

281 The architecture of the Book is set out in Chap. 1. It begins with an account of
 282 Averroes's view that intellect is not body (with or without the definite or indefinite
 283 article), is not something composed, that is, of matter and form. Nor is it a quality
 284 divisible in or dependent on body; nor a form 'such that it can perfect, give life to,
 285 and govern body, and adhere to body so that a single composite results from matter
 286 and from the intellect's substance.' And here he sees Averroes denying that intellect
 287 is 'the life-giving act' perfecting body.⁵¹ Averroes's (in)famous conclusion is rather

⁴⁹ See Ernest Renan, *Averroès e l'averroïsme* (Paris, 1852; third revised edition, Paris, 1866); Paul Oskar Kristeller's two masterful essays: 'Paduan Averroism and Alexandrism in the Light of Recent Studies', in his *Renaissance Thought and the Arts* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1990; originally New York: Harper & Row, 1965), pp. 111–118; and 'Renaissance Aristotelianism', now in his *Studies in Renaissance Thought and Letters*, 4 vols (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1984–1996), III, pp. 341–357; and Charles B. Schmitt, *Aristotle and the Renaissance* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1983). See also Maurice-Ruben Hayoun and Alain de Libera, *Averroès et l'averroïsme* (Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1991); Dominick A. Iorio, *The Aristotelians of Renaissance Italy: A Philosophical Exposition* (Lewiston, ME: Edwin Mellen, 1991); Valeria Sorge, 'L'Aristotelismo averroista negli studi recenti', *Paradigmi*, 50 (1999), pp. 243–264; Ead., *Profili dell'averroismo bolognese: Metafisica e scienza in Taddeo da Parma [fl. 1318/25]* (Naples: Luciano, 2001); Coccia, *La trasparenza delle immagini*; and Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'Arabic Philosophy and Averroism', in *The Cambridge Companion to Renaissance Philosophy*, ed. James Hankins (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007), pp. 113–133.

⁵⁰ See Monfasani, 'The Averroism of John Argyropoulos', p. 165, with further references. See also Brian P. Copenhaver, 'Ten Arguments in Search of a Philosopher: Averroes and Aquinas in Ficino's *Platonic Theology*', in *The Rebirth of Platonic Theology*, eds James Hankins and Fabrizio Meroi (Florence: Olschki), forthcoming.

⁵¹ Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, XV.1.3–4.

that a/the human mind (or perhaps one should drop the article and simply say human 288
 mind), has no link with matter at all and is unitary (i.e., not peculiar to each 289
 individual). Thus it has always existed, and will always exist. Nevertheless, it is the 290
 lowest of all minds and it is confined to this subcelestial sphere, whereas higher 291
 single minds are assigned to each higher celestial sphere. Furthermore, since it is a 292
 single intellect, it is properly called the intellect not of this or that man's mind 293
 but of the whole human species; it is thus 'wholly and everywhere present in this 294
 lower sphere'.⁵² So man as we encounter him here on earth consists of a body and a 295
 sensitive soul, but not of an intellective soul, although his sensitive soul is the most 296
 perfect of its kind and different from that of the beasts. Finally, according to Ficino, 297
 Averroes maintains that as many such sensitive souls exist as there are bodies of 298
 men, and that they are born and die with these bodies.⁵³ Hence there are many 299
 human sensitive souls, each of us being individually such, but there is only one 300
 generically human intellective soul. 301

The highest power of the sensitive soul Averroes calls the cogitative power (while 302
 the Greeks, Ficino is well aware, had placed such a power in the phantasy, broadly 303
 defined as preserving the images collected by the common sense from the five 304
 particular senses). This power is a particular reason in that it is not guided by nature 305
 still, and it seeks to weigh issues and after deliberating to choose. But it can perceive 306
 nothing universal: instead it is thinking discursively about particulars. Nonetheless, 307
 as queen in Averroist psychology of the brain's middle part between the phantasy 308
 (more narrowly defined now) and the memory, the cogitative power is of all 309
 the faculties 'closest to' the unitary mind in that this mind is everywhere present to 310
 it. With the help of this cogitative power and of the images ablaze in it – and this 311
 is the key Averroistic innovation – the unitary mind above it 'perfects its own 312
 understanding'.⁵⁴ This is the only 'communion' any human being has with mind or 313
 with the mind. For mind is not a part of man or a life-giving form for his body; and 314
 it is completely separate in both essence and existence – in Aristotelian terms 315
 in both potentiality and actuality. Yet mind is everywhere present in a way to all 316
 human cogitation, for it derives from the images of any man's particular cogitation 317
 the universal species that are its own. As such, any man's cogitation provides the 318
 universal mind with an 'occasion' for contemplating, just as coloured light, Ficino 319
 says, offers an occasion for seeing to the eye.⁵⁵ Given the cogitative occasion, 'a 320
 single operation occurs', namely one act of pure understanding that is not in us at 321
 all, but in mind alone, prompted as it were by an individual's discursive thinking. 322
 Nothing passes over from this Averroistic mind to a man; the entire act is accomplished 323
 in mind. Consequently, in himself a man does not understand anything, but the 324
 Averroistic mind in a way understands in and through the man. While the cogitative 325

⁵² Ibid., XV.1.12.

⁵³ Ibid.

⁵⁴ Ibid., XV.1.13.

⁵⁵ Occasionalism plays a key role in medieval philosophy and is especially linked to Avicenna's epistemology.

326 power or the cogitative soul is joined to us at birth, the unitary mind only becomes
 327 'present' to us when we are older, when our sensitive soul's images, simulacra or
 328 phantasms are 'pure enough' to move the mind, or more accurately to provide the
 329 occasion for moving it.⁵⁶

330 To complicate matters still further, Ficino argues in XV.1.14, that the Averroists –
 331 and notice that he has switched here from Averroes to his followers⁵⁷ – affirm that
 332 mind is compounded not only from two powers but from two substances: the agent
 333 power is one substance, the receptive power another. The first, in accordance
 334 with its own nature, is 'bright and formative', while the second is 'wholly dark and
 335 formable'; and from the eternal bonding of these two substances comes, 'with
 336 respect to its being', a unitary soul. For 'in nature a single thing is similarly
 337 compounded, with respect to its being, from matter and form.' The Averroists
 338 call the first substance the agent intellect, the second, the formable or receptive or
 339 possible intellect; and they suppose that the agent intellect, 'since it is self-existing
 340 act, always understands itself through itself in such a way that in regarding its own
 341 essence it sees itself, and through itself the celestial minds too.' Such understanding,
 342 so runs the argument of Averroes and his disciples, is its very essence. But since
 343 its essence is always united to the receptive intellect, they suppose 'it is through
 344 this same intellectual essence that the receptive intellect always understands the
 345 agent intellect,' whose essence is alike both essence and the act of understanding.
 346 It understands too 'the higher minds'. Hence this understanding is 'a single, stable,
 347 and eternal act in the universal intellect or soul'; and the soul/intellect distinction is
 348 blurred here, indeed is unimportant, since the soul is intellectual soul.

349 In this one intellect's formable part, however, there exists another understanding
 350 also, 'everlasting indeed but changing, temporal, and manifold, which is borrowed
 351 from us (*mutuatur a nobis*).' Because it adheres more closely to the agent intellect
 352 than it does to our phantasy but is allotted 'a temporal cognition' on account of its
 353 union with our temporal phantasy, the Averroists regard it as obvious, Ficino says,
 354 that, 'on account of its union with that eternal intellect,' this changing and manifold
 355 understanding of the receptive intellect is also eternal. It sees more clearly than our
 356 merely temporal cognition to the extent that it is more akin to the impersonal agent
 357 intellect than to our personal phantasy.⁵⁸

358 In us, however, the Averroists suppose that 'only a doubtful and changeable
 359 knowledge is being individually pursued.'⁵⁹ Ficino gives an example. When Pythagoras
 360 was alive, the single intellect 'would have garnered the assemblage of Pythagorean
 361 knowledge by way of the images of things ablaze in Pythagoras's cogitation.'
 362 But when he died and the images had faded away, that intellect 'would have lost

⁵⁶ Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, XV.1.13.

⁵⁷ It is difficult to determine who these Averroists might be, particularly given the later reference in 15.17.9 to 'Averroists of more recent times'. Among the possibilities are John of Jandun, Paul of Venice, Niccolò Tignosi, and Nicoletto Vernia; but there must be other, more plausible candidates. See Copenhaver, 'Ten Arguments', p. 14.

⁵⁸ Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, XV.1.14.

⁵⁹ *Ibid.*, XV.1.15.

both the species culled from the images' and the Pythagorean knowledge itself, for 363
 'the species were created and sustained by these images.' Even when Pythagoras 364
 was alive, in fact, 'as often as his own cogitation ceased its activity, that intellect 365
 would have ceased acting in, or in the presence of, Pythagoras (*apud Pythagoram*).'⁶⁰ 366
 It would – absurdly in Ficino's view – 'have received, forgotten, and received again.' 367
 And it would have done the same in the case of Plato and similarly with other 368
 individuals day after day. 'Everywhere and at every time,' the Averroistic argument 369
 goes, this unitary mind 'is replenished in various ways through the various souls 370
 of men,' and thus it is variously nourished. 'It receives as many species as there are 371
 images in us' – just as a mirror, in the idola-based optics familiar to Ficino, receives 372
 images from bodies – and moreover 'it produces as many acts of understanding.' 373
 It also produces in itself, apparently, the diverse habits, that is, the potentiality 374
 we have for exercising the disciplines which deal with, and correspond to, the diver- 375
 sity of human studies. And since men in their numberless multitudes 'daily apply 376
 themselves to the understanding of all things,' that unitary intellect 'daily learns 377
 all things from this multitude.' Thus, through the species it culls from our images, 378
 the receptive intellect comes to know inferior things; and 'eventually, in all men 379
 and in the wisest of men, it comes to know itself.'⁶⁰ 380

This emphasis on self-knowledge is remarkable given the centrality of the notion 381
 in classical ethics; and it suggests that the Averroistic mind is in some haunting 382
 respects a great man, at least on occasions, seeking to know himself, even as, from 383
 the opposite perspective, it is also the lowest of the planetary intellects that already 384
 know themselves. But why should such a mind be dependent on us at all, however 385
 fleetingly, given the insufficiency and transience of our knowledge? And does its 386
 duality as an agent and a passive intellect mirror a complimentary duality in the 387
 higher, celestial intellects? And how and why does this mind continually forget 388
 what it has learned? These and other such questions point to Ficino's realization that 389
 the Averroistic mind was vulnerable to many of the problems and contradictions 390
 confronting us in treating of the human mind. Hypostasizing the human mind, that 391
 is, only transfers familiar epistemological and ethical problems from the individual 392
 or particular to the general, but without, from Ficino's viewpoint, resolving them. 393

The Averroists argue finally, writes Ficino in XV.1.16, that 'the marvellous con- 394
 nection of things' is founded on this complex interactive process between mind and 395
 ourselves as essentially sensitive souls with cogitative powers. For forms exist that are 396
 wholly free of matter, and these incorporeal forms are the angels, the pure intellects 397
 themselves, amongst whom we find, Ficino adduces on Thomist grounds, not many 398
 angels existing in one angelic species, but rather as many species of angels existing as 399
 there are individual angels. Completely corporeal forms also exist, 'hosts of them in 400
 the same species,' as in the case of the irrational souls of animals, for instance, and of 401
 the forms inferior even to them. But interposed, so the Averroists falsely maintain, is 402
 'a compound made from man and from mind – from the many human souls and from 403
 one mind – like an enormous monster consisting of many limbs and one head, where 404

⁶⁰Ibid.

405 the absolute form joins with things corporeal and things corporeal in turn with it.
 406 Whereas what is absolutely one remains in itself, as is right and proper, 'what is cor-
 407 poreal becomes manifold, while one mind suffices for numberless souls.' The Averroists
 408 designate that compound made from mind and from each one of us 'the intellectual
 409 man'. But they call each of us, when we are separated from mind, just a 'cogitative
 410 man', affirming that 'the first, the intellectual man, temporarily understands some-
 411 thing, because a part of him, his mind, understands'; but that the subordinate kind of
 412 man, the cogitative man, understands absolutely nothing.⁶¹

413 This is Ficino's own preliminary one-chapter summary of the complex set of
 414 Averroistic propositions he is setting out to refute in the course of Book 15,⁶² though
 415 in the end he will be prepared to offer the following eclectic compromise: to accept
 416 from Averroes the notion that the receptive or possible intellect is immortal; and to
 417 accept from Alexander of Aphrodisias the notions that such an intellect is a power
 418 naturally implanted in the soul and that there are as many receptive intellects as
 419 there are souls. Platonic, Christian and Arab theologians can agree at least, and this
 420 is Ficino's conclusion for the whole book, that human souls are immortal, just as
 421 the original Aristotelians (i.e., not the later Averroists) had also argued.⁶³ Even so,
 422 the length of this book, twice that of any other, and the fact that it is dense with
 423 *quaestiones disputatae* as Ficino attacks one after another of Averroes's major
 424 propositions and pursues their consequences, speaks to two intensely held convic-
 425 tions: on the one hand that our soul is both immortal and essentially intellectual
 426 and that our highest mode of existence is therefore ultimately as serene intellects
 427 in the act of contemplation; and on the other, that the notion of a unitary soul or a
 428 unitary intellect of the kind that Ficino interpreted Averroes as postulating is anathema
 429 ethically and psychologically, as well as being intellectually unacceptable.

430 ***

431 However, this labyrinthine rebuttal, perhaps like other labyrinthine rebuttals, speaks,
 432 if not to a fascination with, then surely to an inability or reluctance to let go of, the
 433 problems and challenges presented by the great commentator on Aristotle. Yet it is
 434 neither in my view the occasionalism, nor the peculiarly critical role of images or
 435 phantasms in occasionalism, *pace* Couliano,⁶⁴ nor some of the other intricacies of

⁶¹ Ibid.

⁶² For this nexus of arguments, see Oliver Leaman, *Averroes and His Philosophy* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1988), pp. 82–103; and more generally Herbert A. Davidson, *Alfarabi, Avicenna, and Averroes on Intellect: Their Cosmologies, Theories of the Active Intellect, and Theories of Human Intellect* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1992). Ficino of course is presenting his own account.

⁶³ Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, XV.19.11.

⁶⁴ Ioan Petru Couliano, *Eros and Magic in the Renaissance*, trans. Margaret Cook (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1987); this was originally published in French as *Eros et magie à la Renaissance, 1484* (Paris: Flammarion, 1984). Though provocative, Couliano's claims with regard to Ficino are often over-stated and should be approached with considerable caution. On phantasms in Ficino, see my *Icastes: Marsilio Ficino's Interpretation of Plato's Sophist* (Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1989), chapter 5.

the Averroistic system that continued to attract and to repel Ficino. Rather, I suspect, it was the core theory of the one separate intellect for all human beings, even if this is categorised as the 'lowest' of all intellects. For the theory of a unitary intellect per se has far-reaching implications, since mono-nousism (or mono-noeticism) or mono-psychism⁶⁵ is not just the hallmark of Averroism: it is also fundamental to the metaphysical notion of the hypostasised *nous* in Middle Platonism, and above all in Neoplatonism, as the influential studies of Philip Merlan,⁶⁶ John Dillon,⁶⁷ and others have amply demonstrated.⁶⁸

For Ficino, I suggest, Averroes became in several unsettling ways not so much the perverter of the central propositions in Aristotle's *De anima* 3.5.340a10-25 as a subtle advocate – though perforce indirectly and inadvertently, since he would not have acknowledged or recognised this himself in the twelfth century – of some of the central propositions that Ficino had continually encountered and enthusiastically embraced in Plotinus's analysis of *nous*. And this is even as Plotinus was, like the Middle Platonists before him and the Neoplatonists he inspired after him, a thinker who had systematically subordinated Aristotle to Plato.⁶⁹ Consequently – and this is perhaps a psychological, or even a mono-psychological hypothesis – it was critically important for Ficino to discredit Averroes. This was in part at least because of the baleful, or at least misleading, implications of his doctrines for a study of the central Plotinian hypostasis that Ficino had so long and so carefully sought to accommodate to Christian thought – and specifically to accommodate to the notion of ourselves, not as individualised aspects of a single impersonal intellect, the *nous*, but as many created intellectual beings, *noes* indeed like the angels, who yearn to contemplate our Creator. In this regard Averroes, *malgré soi*, must have posed an insidious threat. For he was the spokesman for an austere, impersonal, Idea-oriented intellectualism that closely resembled – perhaps too closely resembled – the austere intellectualism of Plotinus's own ethics and metaphysics, keyed as they were, not to a Logos theology of the incarnate Word, but to a unitary intellect as the prime intelligible being.⁷⁰ Indeed, Averroes's unitary intellect as Ficino understood it, though quite distinct metaphysically and epistemologically from Plotinus's *nous* (being at the opposite end of the scale of intellects), must have appeared to Ficino,

⁶⁵ Again, one could distinguish between mono-psychism and mono-nousism, but not surely when the highest soul is intellective as is the case in Platonism and Aristotelianism alike.

⁶⁶ Philip Merlan, *Monopsychism, Mysticism, Metaconsciousness: Problems of the Soul in the Neo-Aristotelian and Neoplatonic Tradition* (The Hague: Nijhoff, [1963] 1969); also his *From Platonism to Neoplatonism* (The Hague: Nijhoff, [1953] 1960).

⁶⁷ Dillon, *Middle Platonists*, passim.

⁶⁸ The term monopsychism has a history that goes back at least to Leibniz; see n. 48 above.

⁶⁹ We must leave aside the intricate story of Averroes's own development and his prior encounter with various Neoplatonic texts and propositions in the work of his predecessors, notably al-Ghazālī and Avicenna.

⁷⁰ A cognate problem is the extent to which Averroes is in effect a Plotinian commentator, or one influenced by the Plotinian formulations of his Arabic predecessors, when it comes to interpreting the famous Aristotelian passage on *nous*.

467 at least during the early 1470s when he was composing his *Platonic Theology*, as a
 468 kind of dangerous Plotinian look-alike, or noetic similar, or revenant that had to be
 469 exorcised as one exorcises saturnian poltergeists.

470 Nonetheless, the situation was fraught with contradictions. Ficino thought of
 471 Plotinus himself, for all his noeticism, as the 'beloved son' in whom Plato was well
 472 pleased – to use his own quasi-sacrilegious biblical phrasing. He revered him, more-
 473 over, as one of the first and greatest of the Church Fathers in all but name, supposing
 474 him acquainted not only with Johannine and Pauline theology, but, confusingly,
 475 with the apophatic theology of Proclus's great sixth century disciple, Pseudo-
 476 Dionysius (whose works Ficino and his contemporaries mistakenly attributed to
 477 St. Paul's Athenian convert, the first century Areopagite, the 'crown' indeed of a first
 478 century Platonic-Christian theology).⁷¹ Most importantly, Ficino's whole lifetime
 479 endeavour was focused on elaborating a Plotinian-Christian metaphysics centred
 480 upon *nous*, *nous* in God, in the angels, and in souls.

481

482 By way of conclusion let me hazard two tardy saturnian speculations.

483 The first is to wonder whether the antagonistic encounter with Averroes in Book
 484 15 of the *Platonic Theology* was not another chapter in Ficino's many-sided and
 485 evolving response to Saturn; and whether in the war against Averroes's doctrine of
 486 the unicity of the intellect he was not also waging war, albeit undeclared, against a
 487 manifestation or species of Saturnianism, a Saturnianism, that is, with something
 488 of its cold, remote, contemplatively slow astrological history; and one too with
 489 something of its ancient infanticidal if not parricidal mythological associations,
 490 given that self-reflective thinking in abstractions is traditionally deemed to be
 491 hostile – since it feeds upon its own succession of offspring – to the consideration
 492 of mundane particulars. We recall that Saturn was on the Ascendant in its 'day abode'
 493 of watery Aquarius in Ficino's own horoscope; and that as a planet it fascinated and
 494 attracted and repelled him, as we learn from a letter to his 'unique' friend Cavalcanti,⁷²
 495 though it never totally eclipsed his lifetime's companionship as a scholar-interpreter
 496 with Mercury.

497 The second speculation, conversely, is to suggest that Saturn, as the unitary
 498 hypostasis *nous*, the self-regarding intellect as we have seen from Ficino's *Phaedrus*
 499 Commentary, mythologises and at the same time planetises (if I may coin the term)
 500 one of the more troubling dimensions for a devout Christian of ancient Neoplatonic
 501 metaphysics. This is its universal, impersonal, aloofly abstract conception of
 502 Mind and of the *vita contemplativa*. Undoubtedly, Saturn continued to haunt Ficino

⁷¹ See my *Synoptic Art: Marsilio Ficino on the History of Platonic Interpretation* (Florence: Olschki, 1998), pp. 90–92, and in general chapter 2. The appropriation of God's words, 'This is my beloved son', to describe Plotinus is Ficino's own choice in the closing lines of his preface for the Plotinus commentary (*Opera omnia*, p. 1548.1); see Wind, *Pagan Mysteries*, pp. 23–24.

⁷² Ficino, *Opera omnia*, p. 732.3: 'Omnes omnium laudes referantur in Deum.'

intellectually long after his body and his temperamental complexion, and thus his corporeal and emotional life, had achieved a balancing – an obviously successful balancing given his immensely productive career – of the humours and their dependent moods. For a self-regarding Plotinian (or Averroistic) Saturn remained, I would suggest, the ‘familiar compound ghost’ of Ficino’s own philosophical journey to Emmaus in search of salvation; and in search too of the ancient union of theology and philosophy that was for him the hallmark of the golden age of the seventh, most aged, and most distant planet of the poets and their theogonies and cosmogonies, as well as of traditional astrology. For Saturn had devoured his own offspring just as Ficino imagines Averroes’s single intellect, if it were ever to exist, would be continuously devouring the thoughts of all men and denying them the right to come into their own, both as rational souls and as independent, immortal, contemplative intellects, and not merely as phantasy-anchored cogitators of the divine.

Does Ficino’s work culminate, however, in ‘a glorification of Saturn’ at the very time when he hypothetically became, in the claim of Klibansky, Panofsky, and Saxl’s triumphal conclusion to their second chapter of *Saturn and Melancholy*, ‘the chief patron of the Platonic Academy at Florence’?⁷³ Prescinding from the issue of whether there was anything even remotely resembling a Florentine Platonic Academy – a Medicean propaganda construct which James Hankins in a series of five essays has brilliantly called into question from a variety of perspectives⁷⁴ – the answer is probably in the negative, given the kaleidoscopic permutations of Ficino’s poetic theologising throughout his career. But is there one saturnian intellect, one *insensibilis intellectus* with its ‘dry light’, as the Heraclitus maxim denominates it,⁷⁵ for all men? For Ficino at least, the most ardent of the fifteenth century’s anti-Averroist epistemologists and metaphysicians, the answer is a resounding No!

⁷³ *Saturn and Melancholy*, p. 273.

⁷⁴ Now collected in James Hankins, *Humanism and Platonism in the Italian Renaissance*, 2 vols (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 2004), II, pp. 187–395. Another version of one of these essays, ‘The Invention of the Platonic Academy at Florence’, has appeared as ‘The Platonic Academy of Florence and Renaissance Historiography’, in *Forme del Neoplatonismo: Dall’eredità ficiniana ai platonici di Cambridge*, ed. Luisa Simonutti (Florence: Olschki, 2007), pp. 75–96. For a contrary view, see Arthur Field, *The Origins of the Platonic Academy of Florence* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1988); Id., ‘The Platonic Academy of Florence’, in *Marsilio Ficino: His Theology, His Philosophy, His Legacy*, eds Michael J. B. Allen and Valery Rees, with Martin Davies (Leiden: Brill, 2002), pp. 359–376.

⁷⁵ Fragment 118 in *Die Fragmente der Vorsokratiker. Griechisch und Deutsch*, ed. by Hermann Diels, 3 vols (Berlin: Weidmannsche Buchhandlung, 1903; 41922), I, p. 100, much quoted by Ficino: see, for example, *Platonic Theology*, VI.2.20.

Chapter 6

[AU1] **The Transmutations of a Young Averroist:
Agostino Nifo's Commentary on the *Destructio
Destructionum* of Averroes and the Nature
of Celestial Influences**

[AU2] **Nicholas Holland**

Agostino Nifo and the Destructio Destructionum of Averroes

Commentator, philosopher, teacher, polemicist, astrologer, doctor, inquirer into the occult... Because of the work of many scholars over the last century we are now familiar with the idea that Agostino Nifo (1470–1538) was a man of wide interests and, perhaps, many public or authorial masks.¹ That Nifo was greatly interested in and influenced by the works of Averroes and philosophers within the Averroist tradition is well-known. Modern accounts of Nifo's Averroism have tended to focus in particular on Nifo's treatment of Averroes's conception of the unitary intellect for all men and on the processes of intellection, although some consideration has been given to other aspects of Nifo's interest in the thought of Averroes.² Nifo's first

[AU3] I would like to thank Guido Giglioni for his advice and encouragement while preparing this study.

¹ Essential starting-points for the study of Nifo are the entries by Edward P. Mahoney in the *Dictionary of Scientific Biography*, 16 vols (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1970–1980), X, pp. 122–124, and by Stefano Perfetti in the *New Dictionary of Scientific Biography*, 8 vols (Detroit: Charles Scribner's Sons and Gale/Cengage Learning 2008), V, pp. 280–281; and also the *Bibliografia di Agostino Nifo* by Ennio De Bellis (Florence: Olschki, 2005).

² Seminal discussions which capture something of the range of Nifo's interests include, with regard to the soul and intellection, Bruno Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo dal secolo XIV al XVI* (Florence: Sansoni, 1958), esp. pp. 142, 376–383; Eckhard Kessler, 'The Intellective Soul', in *The Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy*, eds Charles B. Schmitt, Quentin Skinner, Eckhard Kessler and Jill Kraye (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988), pp. 485–534, 496–500 and 504–507; Leen Spruit, 'Agostino Nifo's *De intellectu*: Sources and Ideas', *Bruniana et Campanelliana*, 8 (2007), pp. 625–639; with regard to astrology and demonology, Paola Zambelli, 'I problemi metodologici del necromante Agostino Nifo', *Medioevo*, 1 (1975), pp. 129–171; Ead., 'Fine del mondo o inizio della propaganda?

N. Holland (✉)

Spring Park Avenue, CR0 5EG, Shirley, Croydon, UK
e-mail: ndh01@hotmail.com

17 published works are his commentary on a partial translation into Latin of a major work
 18 of Averroes, the *Destructio destructionum*, and another short work with important
 19 connections to the work of Averroes, the *De sensu agente*.³ Both of these works
 20 were first published as a companion to the edition of the Latin works of Aristotle
 21 and Averroes which Nifo had edited and which had been published by Hieronymous
 22 Scotus in 1495 and 1496.⁴ These are the only works known to have been published
 23 by Nifo before his departure from Padua in 1499.⁵

24 The edition of the *Destructio destructionum* with Nifo's commentary is also the
 25 first appearance in print of a Latin translation of Averroes's *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*
 26 (*The Incoherence of the Incoherence*). The *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut* is Averroes's response
 27 to the *Tahāfut al-falāsifa* (*The Refutation of the Philosophers*) of al-Ghazālī.
 28 The text is Averroes's attempt to establish an Aristotelian philosophy which is
 29 distinct not only from that of al-Ghazālī, but also from that of Ibn Sīnā (Avicenna).
 30 In its complete Arabic form it covers a significant number of questions in metaphysics
 31 and natural sciences. It develops important arguments concerning, among other
 32 matters, the creation of the universe, the nature of celestial influence and the philo-
 33 sophical understanding of God.⁶

Astrologia, filosofia della storia e propaganda politico-religiosa nel dibattito sulla congiunzione del 1524', in *Scienze, credenze occulte, livelli di cultura: Convegno internazionale di studi* (Florence: Olschki, 1982), pp. 291–368 (352–356); Ead., *L'ambigua natura della magia: Filosofi, streghe, riti nel Rinascimento* (Milan: Il Saggiatore, 1991), pp. 240–241; Brian P. Copenhaver, 'Astrology and Magic', in *Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy*, pp. 264–300 (272); with regard to scientific argument, William A. Wallace, *Causality and Scientific Explanation*, 2 vols (Ann Arbor: The University of Michigan Press, 1972–1974), I, pp. 139–144. Studies of Nifo's interest in Averroes with particular relevance to this study are, Edward P. Mahoney, 'Philosophy and Science in Nicoletto Vernia and Agostino Nifo', in *Scienza e filosofia all'Università di Padova nel Quattrocento*, ed. Antonino Poppi (Padua and Trieste: Edizioni Lint, 1983), pp. 135–202, esp. pp. 192–200; Id., 'Agostino Nifo's Early Views on Immortality', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 8 (1970), pp. 451–460; Id., 'Plato and Aristotle in the Thought of Agostino Nifo (ca. 1470–1538)', in *Two Aristotelians of the Italian Renaissance* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2000), V, pp. 81–101.

³ Agostino Nifo, *Destructiones destructionum Averrois cum Augustini Niphi de Suessa expositione. Eiusdem Augustini questio de sensu agente* (Venice: Ottaviano Scoto, 1497). For this study the more familiar title *Destructio destructionum* is adopted to refer to this work.

⁴ See also De Bellis, *Bibliografia*, p. 21.

⁵ On the obscurity of the reasons for Nifo's departure from Padua in 1499, see Zambelli, 'Problemi metodologici', pp. 135–136 (144–146). On the question of the origins of Nifo's *De intellectu* and his first *De anima* commentary (both first published 1503) prior to 1499, see *ibid.*, p. 136.

⁶ For an overview of the arguments in the *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, see Oliver Leaman, *Averroes and his Philosophy* (Richmond: Curzon, 1998), esp. pp. 14, 179–196 and the introduction in Averroes, *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut (The Incoherence of the Incoherence)*, ed. Simon van den Bergh, 2 vols (Oxford: Oxford University Press; London: Luzac, 1954), I, pp. ix–xxxvi. (References to, and quotations from, the English translation of *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut* are from this edition).

Nifo's edition of the *Destructio* uses the Latin translation prepared in the fourteenth century by a Calonymos ben Calonymos of Arles.⁷ This work of Averroes was hardly known in any form in the Latin West during the Middle Ages and Pierre Duhem has noted that, among Latin scholastics, knowledge of the ideas it contains seems to have been acquired through Maimonides's *Guide for the Perplexed* and passages in the commentaries of Averroes where similar views appear.⁸

Interest in the *Destructio* becomes evident in Italy during the late fifteenth and early sixteenth centuries. In addition to the evidence presented by Nifo's first printed edition, Edward P. Mahoney notes that the *Destructio* is cited by Elijah Delmedigo, a contemporary and associate of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola who also had connections with the Veneto.⁹ It seems that Pico himself owned one

⁷ Moritz Steinschneider notes that the manuscript copy of the translation in the Biblioteca Apostolica Vaticana (Lat. 2434) dates its execution to 1328. Following Renan, Steinschneider identifies another probable manuscript in the Marciana, Venice (Lat. 251), a work listed by Kristeller as 'Averroes, de aeternitate mundi contra Algazel'. I consulted both the Vatican copy and a third manuscript in the Riccardiana, Florence (Lat. 117) which are substantially similar in content (see below, footnotes 14 and 22). The extant manuscripts of this translation and Nifo's preparation of the medieval translation for his edition are subjects which merit further consideration, in particular since Nifo states (*Expositio*, fol. 103^b) he had access to another translation of the *Destructio destructionum* by a 'Nicolaus Hispanus' ('Nicholas the Spaniard'). See Moritz Steinschneider, *Die hebräischen Übersetzungen des Mittelalters und die Juden als Dolmetscher: Ein Beitrag zur Literaturgeschichte des Mittelalters, meist nach handschriftlichen Quellen* (Berlin: Kommissionsverlag des Bibliographischen Bureaus, 1893), pp. 330–332; Ernest Renan, *Averroès et l'averroïsme: essai historique* (1852, repr. Paris: Michel Lévy Frères, 1861), p. 66; Beatrice H. Zedler, 'Introduction' to Averroes, *Destructio destructionum philosophiae Algazelis in the Latin Version of Calo Calonymos*, ed. B. H. Zedler (Milwaukee: The Marquette University Press 1961), pp. 24–29; Mahoney, 'Philosophy and Science', pp. 173–174, 179–181; P. O. Kristeller, *Iter Italicum: A Finding List of Uncatalogued or Incompletely Catalogued Humanistic Manuscripts of the Renaissance in Italian and Other Libraries*, 6 vols and Index (London and Leiden: The Warburg Institute and Brill, 1963–1997), I, p. 185 and II, p. 212. On Renan and Averroes, see also the chapters by Marenbon and Akasoy in this volume.

⁸ A notable exception to this generalisation, reported by Zedler, is the thirteenth-century Spanish Dominican Raymond Martin, who made use of an Arabic or Hebrew version in the preparation of his *Pugio fidei adversus Mauros et Judaeos* (completed 1278). See Zedler, 'Introduction', pp. 21–23; Pierre Duhem, *Système du monde: Histoire des doctrines cosmologiques de Platon à Copernic*, 10 vols (Paris: Hermann, 1913–1959), IV, p. 514, cited by Zedler, *ibid.*, p. 21.

⁹ Edward P. Mahoney, 'Giovanni Pico della Mirandola and Elia Delmedigo, Nicoletto Vernia and Agostino Nifo', in *Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: Convegno internazionale di studi nel cinquecentesimo anniversario della morte (1494–1994)*, ed. Gian Carlo Garfagnini, 2 vols (Florence: Olschki 1997), II, pp. 127–156 (128–130); Mahoney, 'Philosophy and Science', p. 160, n. 118, suggests that Nifo's commentary on Averroes's *Destructio* may include some criticisms of Delmedigo. See Carlos Fraenkel's chapter in this volume.

46 or more copies of the *Destructio*.¹⁰ Nifo indicates that the copy used for his edition
 47 was provided by the noble Hieronymus Bernardus of Venice.¹¹ A second Latin ver-
 48 sion, this time translated from a Hebrew version, was subsequently published in
 49 Venice in 1527 by another translator named Calonymos, a Neapolitan physician
 50 who lived for a time in Venice.¹² This later Calonymos notes in the dedication to
 51 his edition that his aim was to address the deficiencies of the 'shortened and
 52 indeed obscure fragment of the *Destructio* of Algazel and the *Destructio destruc-*
 53 *tionum*' of the earlier Latin translation. His translation was republished three times
 54 during the sixteenth century.¹³

55 Nifo's edition, indeed, omits significant parts of the full Arabic text of the *Tahāfut*
 56 *al-Tahāfut*, including two of Averroes's metaphysical discussions and all of the dis-
 57 cussions on the natural sciences. Nifo indicates in the closing address of his com-
 58 mentary that he was not in possession of a copy of the discussions on the natural
 59 sciences when he started work on the commentary and that he received a copy from
 60 a student named Andreas de Minutis too late for their inclusion in the edition. It is
 61 not known whether he subsequently produced the exposition of these which he
 62 promises to undertake.¹⁴ In his introduction to the edition, Nifo himself explains that
 63 the book is 'difficult' due to the 'bad translation' and the 'hard words and meanings'
 64 which it contains. His aim is to make a valuable work available with his exposition,
 65 even if it contains 'many questions against we Christians.' Averroes's authorship of
 66 the work is confirmed, Nifo explains, by the reference he makes in his Long
 67 Commentary on the *Physica* to his discussion in another work of the views of
 68 al-Ghazālī.¹⁵

¹⁰ Pearl Kibre, *The Library of Pico della Mirandola* (New York: Morningside Heights, 1936), p. 259, notes a manuscript work (inventory item 1052) variously listed as 'Auerois contra Algazelem' and 'Liber impugnacionum Auerois' in the early inventories of Pico's library. Given that Pico died in 1494, Kibre's apparent identification (p. 131), in addition, of a printed edition of a work listed as *Destructio destructioni* [sic.] (inventory number 96) presents obvious chronological difficulties if Nifo's is the first printed edition. On the inventories and the acquisition in 1498 of Pico's library by Domenico Grimani, the dedicatee of Nifo's commentary on Averroes's *Destructio*, see *ibid.*, pp. 1–10, 17–18.

¹¹ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 2^a. Hieronymus Bernardus is also mentioned in Nifo's closing address, fol. 123^a, as the son of 'master (*dominus*) Petrus.' Unless otherwise indicated translations from Latin works are by the author.

¹² Zedler, 'Introduction', pp. 26–29.

¹³ Translation *ibid.*, pp. 26–27 (the Latin text of the dedication is presented *ibid.*, pp. 57–58).

¹⁴ Nifo, *Expositio*, fols 123^b–^a. See also Mahoney, 'Philosophy and Science', pp. 179–180. The metaphysical discussions not included in Nifo's edition are the tenth and sixteenth in the Van den Bergh edition. Nifo's edition ends at the second line of p. 299 of Van den Bergh's edition. MSS Vat. Lat. 2434 and Ricc. Lat. 117 (see above, footnote 7) also lack the same metaphysical discussions, but include two disputes on the natural sciences omitted in Nifo's edition.

¹⁵ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 2^a. See Averroes, Long Commentary on *Physica*, VIII, t. c. 3, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562; repr. Frankfurt: Minerva, 1962), IV, fol. 340^F.

Nifo's Averroist Accounts of Celestial Influences and Intentions

69

Averroes's interpretation of the views of Aristotle, as set out in *Metaphysica*, *Physica* 70 and *De coelo et mundo*, raised a number of important questions concerning God, 71 the heavens and their influence on the sublunary world for its Latin reader.¹⁶ In his 72 Long Commentary on *Metaphysica*, Averroes confirms God's place as first and final 73 cause, as 'that which moves everything' (*illud quod movet omne*) and as the 'perfection 74 of the being who understands' (*perfectio intelligentis*).¹⁷ However, in the Long 75 Commentaries on *Physica* and *De coelo et mundo*, he explores the causes of motion 76 in the universe in terms of a physics of motion distinct from that of *Metaphysica*.¹⁸ 77 In his Long Commentary on *De coelo et mundo*, Averroes identifies the 'first cause' 78 of all movement as the unchangeable mover (*motor... non transmutabilis*) which moves 79 Aristotle's 'first thing moved.' To cause perpetual motion this 'mover of the heavens' 80 is necessarily 'simple' (*simplex* – that is not subject to generation or corruption), and 81

¹⁶ Averroes's views on these matters continue to be a subject for scholarly discussion and a full restatement of medieval, early modern or modern debates in the context of Nifo's Averroism lies beyond the scope of this study. Major modern contributions to the discussion of Averroes's theories of cosmology and causation are Barry S. Kogan, *Averroes and the Metaphysics of Causation* (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1985); Herbert A. Davidson, *Alfarabi, Avicenna, and Averroes on Intellect* (New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1992), esp. pp. 220–257; David Twetten, 'Averroes' Prime Mover Argument', in *Averroes et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, ed. Jean-Baptiste Brenet (Turnhout: Brepols, 2007), pp. 9–75. On the account in the *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, in particular, see also Leaman, *Averroes*, pp. 63–71. On the conflict of Aristotelian and Neoplatonic ideas in Averroes, see Leaman, *Averroes*, pp. 63–71. On the vexed question of the influence of emanational theories of causality on Averroes's thought, see, in particular, Davidson, *Alfarabi, Avicenna, and Averroes on Intellect*, pp. 228, 230–231 and 254–257 and Kogan, *Averroes and the Metaphysics of Causation*, pp. 248–255. On the reception of the Arabic tradition of physics in the Latin philosophy of the later Middle Ages, see James A. Weisheipl, 'The Interpretation of Aristotle's Physics and the Science of Motion', in *The Cambridge History of Later Medieval Philosophy*, eds Norman Kretzmann, Anthony Kenny and Jan Pinborg (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1982), pp. 521–536 (521–529); with reference to fifteenth-century Padua, see Antonino Poppi, *Causalità e infinità nella scuola padovana dal 1480 al 1513* (Padua: Antenore, 1966); with particular reference to Nifo's debt to Averroes in his commentary on *Destructio destructionum*, see Mahoney, 'Philosophy and Science', esp. pp. 177–179, 189–200.

¹⁷ Averroes, Long Commentary on *Metaphysica*, XII, t. c. 39, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, fol. 323^D (relating to *Metaphysica*, 1072b); *ibid.*, t. c. 51 (relating to 1074b15ff), in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, fol. 335^F. On the final cause in Averroes, see Kogan, *Averroes and the Metaphysics of Causation*, pp. 230–231, 242–248.

¹⁸ See Averroes's comments on the distinction between sciences of metaphysics and physics in Long Commentary on *Metaphysica*, XII, t. c. 44 (relating to 1073a25ff), in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, fol. 328^E. For insights into the issues raised, see Twetten's comments, 'Averroes' Prime Mover Argument', p. 39, that Averroes's argument in the *Physica* leaves God no more 'separate' than any other 'celestial soul' and yet 'it would seem that the first cause or God is not a celestial soul,' and Kogan, *Averroes and the Metaphysics of Causation*, pp. 264–265, who notes that Averroes's 'account of efficient causes ... ceases to be viable beyond the realm of what Averroes would have called sublunary physics.'

82 also 'spiritual' (*spiritualis*), as opposed to 'corporeal' (*corporeus*).¹⁹ Between the
83 first mover and the sublunary world are the spiritual 'movers of the celestial bodies'
84 (often described as the celestial (separate) intelligences), which Averroes believes
85 cannot be subject to 'alteration'.²⁰

86 A further level of complexity is added to the question of universal causality
87 by Averroes's account of the action of the heavens on the sublunary world. In
88 the *Destructio destructionum*, Averroes states that the order of the sublunary
89 world is, for a philosopher, without doubt only evidence of a final cause in the
90 heavens, not of an efficient cause. Kogan explains Averroes's view here as the
91 assertion of a final cause 'in second order concepts, or concepts about concepts
92 rather than concepts about things themselves,' which is 'a necessary condition
93 for the existence of sublunary particulars,' but which is associated with a limited
94 human understanding of God and the heavens.²¹ Averroes's circumspection
95 concerning the intelligibility of celestial influences is also reflected in the dis-
96 cussions on the natural sciences which follow the metaphysical discussions in
97 his *Destructio destructionum*. There he states that 'judicial astrology' cannot be
98 considered a natural science, but only 'a prognostication of future events' which
99 'is of the same type as augury and vaticination.' As such, it is to be classified,
100 alongside the interpretation of dreams, as a 'prognosticating science'. In the
101 same passage, Averroes also applies caution in denying the powers of the 'telesmatical

¹⁹ Averroes, Long Commentary on *De coelo et mundo*, II, t. c. 36, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, V, fol. 120F-'G. On Aristotle's account of the movers of the celestial spheres, see *De coelo et mundo*, II, 285a and 292a and *Metaphysica*, XII, 1074a. See also the discussion in Richard Sorabji, *Matter, Space and Motion: Theories in Antiquity and their Sequel* (London: Duckworth, 1988), pp. 219–226.

²⁰ Averroes, Long Commentary on *De coelo et mundo*, II, t.c. 36, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, V, fol. 120'C. The question of whether celestial souls of some kind exist in addition to celestial intelligences in Averroes is the subject of some discussion among modern scholars. See, Twetten, 'Averroes' Prime Mover Argument', pp. 59–60, and Davidson, *Alfarabi, Avicenna, and Averroes on Intellect*, p. 226, n. 33. In his commentary on the *Destructio destructionum*, Nifo seems to be clear that, in questions of physics, the movers must be intelligences (*intelligentia*): *Expositio*, fol. 119'A; cf. Averroes, Long Commentary on *De coelo et mundo*, II, t.c. 37, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, V, fol. 120'G-H. In this study, I use the term 'sublunary world', sometimes referred to in the *Destructio* as the 'world of lower beings' (*mundus inferiorum*), to describe that part of the Aristotelian universe which is lower than the moon and subject to generation and corruption. I use the term 'heavens' to describe the world of the moving and fixed stars and their movers. I use the term 'universe' to describe the totality of the heavens and the sublunary world.

²¹ Averroes, *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, Discussion 15, I, 299: 'none of the philosophers doubts that there is here a final cause in second intention'; Kogan, *Averroes and the Metaphysics of Causation*, pp. 196–197. Leaman notes that Averroes's approach to the way in which the heavens affect the sublunary bodies 'replicates the Aristotelian vagueness' (*Averroes*, p. 71). On the complex question of necessity and determinism in Aristotle and the classical tradition, see Richard Sorabji, *Necessity, Cause and Blame: Perspectives on Aristotle's Theory* (London: Duckworth, 1980). On the notions of final, formal and efficient cause in Aristotle, see *Physica*, 194b–195a, and *Metaphysica*, 1013–1014a.

art... for if we assume the positions of the spheres to exert a power on artificial products, this power will remain inside the product and not pass on to things outside it'.²²

The works of Averroes, therefore, gave the Latin West a series of conceptually separate, yet overlapping, ideas concerning the causal relationship between God and his universe and the operation of the heavens on the sublunary world, many of which could not be readily shown to be congruent with Christian or Jewish thought. In the Latin tradition, the status of God as the 'first mover' of Aristotle's *Metaphysica*, and as an efficient as well as final cause of movement in the universe, was a notable source of controversy through to the debates of the Paduan Averroists in the later fifteenth century.²³ Averroes's assertion, as presented in the *Destructio destructionum*, that the causal relationship between the actions of heavenly bodies and their effects in the sublunary world are not of a kind which is susceptible to simple explanation by man adds a further level of complexity to any understanding of divine and heavenly causality.

Nifo's interpretations of the views of Averroes in the *Destructio* commentary and *De sensu agente* merit careful consideration, since they show both Nifo's interest in particular aspects of Averroes's thought concerning celestial influence and also the impact on his understanding of Averroes of cognate ideas in the work of other philosophers. Nifo's interpretation of God's agency as a formal cause is, for example, in the third dispute of the *Destructio* commentary, reliant on the ideas of Albertus Magnus. In the Latin text of the *Destructio destructionum*, Averroes introduces the notion that the 'first principle' (*primum principium*) is the unifying 'efficient cause, form and final cause' of 'living beings.'²⁴ In the eleventh dispute, Nifo discusses God's role as a formal cause in more detail. He points out, correctly, how Averroes rejects the Avicennan notion of the *dator* or *creator formarum* or *colcodea*, i.e., the lowest of a series of emanated intelligences which causes existence in the sublunary world.²⁵ However, as Mahoney has shown, Nifo's account of Averroism here, and in

²² Averroes, *Tahāfut al-tahāfut*, 'About the Natural Sciences', p. 312. As already noted, these discussions on the natural sciences are not included by Nifo in his edition. However, a version of the passage cited (most notably lacking a phrase equivalent to the 'prognosticating science' phrase) does appear in the earlier of the extant Latin translations of the *Destructio*, to which Nifo may have had access. See MSS Vat. Lat. 2434, f. 51^vb and Ricc. Lat. 117, f. 113^va. See also above, footnotes 7 and 14.

²³ See Nardi, *Saggi sull' aristotelismo dal secolo XIV al XVI*, p. 184, and Poppi, *Causalità e infinità nella scuola padovana*, pp. 143–150, 222–236.

²⁴ Translation from the *textus* of the *Expositio*, third dispute, dub. xviii, fol. 46^{ra}. See also Nifo's attribution of a similar statement concerning the 'first mover' to Aristotle, in *Expositio*, ninth dispute, dub. ii, fol. 98^{rb}. Nifo also attributes an expanded notion of this idea to Averroes in his *De primis motoris infinitate*, appended to his commentary on the *De generatione et corruptione* (Venice: Heir of Girolamo Scoto, 1577), fols 109^{va}-114^{rb}, 110^{vab}. De Bellis, *Bibliografia di Agostino Nifo*, p. 149 notes a subscript to the first edition of 1526, which dates the completion of this work to 1504.

²⁵ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 107^{vb}. On Nifo's introduction of the term *colcodea* in this context see H. A. Wolfson, 'Colcodea', *The Jewish Quarterly Review*, 36 (1945), pp. 179–182; repr. in Id. *Studies in the History of Philosophy and Religion*, eds Isadore Twersky and George H. Williams, 2 vols (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1973–1977), II, pp. 573–576.

129 other places, seems to be indebted to the way that Albertus Magnus appropriated
 130 the axiom 'the work of nature is the work of intelligence'. Among the crucial
 131 consequences deriving from Albertus's interpretation was the idea of nature as, in
 132 the words of James A. Weisheipl, 'not truly *blind*,' in the sense of 'acting without
 133 direction,' but 'innately ordered to an end it does not see, yet is seen for it by
 134 someone with intelligence who is called the *conditor* (creator), *artifex* (artist), or
 135 *opifex naturae* (workman of nature)'.²⁶ Furthermore, as will become apparent
 136 below, Nifo's scientific method also has affinities with Albertus's understanding of
 137 the 'suppositional necessity' of nature: that is, a kind of knowledge 'based on the
 138 supposition of a particular end being achieved', so that 'when one understands this
 139 procedure he sees why all four causes – final and efficient as well as formal and
 140 material – function in physical demonstrations'.²⁷ By contrast to Averroes's circum-
 141 spection regarding the subject, Nifo shares with Albertus a disposition towards the
 142 position that causes in nature can be intelligible.

143 In the context of the question of natural intelligibility, Nifo's treatment of
 144 Averroes's concept of 'secondary intention' in the fourteenth dispute also deserves
 145 further consideration. 'Intention' (*intentio*), in the sense of that which conveys the
 146 abstraction or 'quiddity' of something, encompasses a set of ideas which run deeply
 147 into Averroes's theories of psychology and the relationship between man and the
 148 objects which he both encounters and considers.²⁸ Averroes's Long Commentary on
 149 Aristotle's *De anima* deduces that the material intellect, during the act of intellection,
 150 'must receive forms by a mode of reception other than that by which those matters
 151 receive the forms.'²⁹ Opinions differed within the Averroist tradition regarding the

²⁶ On the influence of Albertus on this passage in the *Expositio*, see Mahoney, 'Philosophy and Science', pp. 190–191 and 199–200; see also *Expositio*, fols 74^a and 75^b, where Nifo variously associates the axiom with Themistius (as reported by Averroes) and Aristotle; James A. Weisheipl, 'The Axiom *Opus Naturae Est Opus Intelligentiae* and Its Origins', in *Albertus Magnus: Doctor Universalis 1280/1980*, eds Gerbert Meyer and Albert Zimmermann (Mainz: Matthias Grünewald Verlag, 1980), pp. 441–463 (455), with my translations of the Latin. On the subtlety of Averroes's own arguments in this regard, see Leaman, *Averroes*, pp. 67–69.

²⁷ William A. Wallace, 'The Scientific Methodology of Albert the Great', in *Albertus Magnus: Doctor Universalis 1280/1980*, pp. 385–407 (391–393); cf. the discussion by the same author of Nifo's account of the *sylogismus conjecturalis* in *Causality and Scientific Explanation*, I, pp. 142–143.

²⁸ On intention, see Deborah L. Black, 'Psychology: Soul and Intellect', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic Philosophy*, eds Peter Adamson and Richard C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), pp. 308–326; Ead., 'Imagination and Estimation: Arabic Paradigms and Western Transformations', *Topoi*, 19 (2000), pp. 59–75. See also the discussion of Averroes's account, in the *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, of 'the existence outside the soul' of the 'universal' in Leaman, *Averroes*, pp. 36–41.

²⁹ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, ed. F. Stuart Crawford (Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1953), p. 388; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, ed. and trans. Richard C. Taylor (New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2009), p. 305. All translations will be from this edition. In his introduction, pp. xlv–xlvi, Taylor explores the connections between Averroes's treatment of intellect and soul as they relate to both the heavens and to man.

interpretation of intention. In the *Destructio* commentary and other works, Nifo rejects the position of John of Jandun and others that intention is 'received' subjectively during intellection. Rather, Nifo considers that an intention has to be, in some way, a 'perfect and objective' account of the 'form and quiddity' of an object.³⁰

It has been argued by Kwame Gyekye, in the context of the Latin translation of the *Destructio*, that the rendering of 'primary' and 'secondary intention' (*prima* and *secunda intentio*) rests on an unhelpful translation from the Arabic of terms better translated in this context in a more general sense as 'primarily' (and by extension, 'secondarily'). However, as Gyekye notes, the choice of *intentio* in the Latin translation served to identify this idea directly with that strand of Arabic philosophy concerned with intention and the processes of intellection.³¹ Averroes's statement (in the Latin translation of Nifo's edition) that the 'creator' operates by 'secondary intention' because 'if the primary intention (*prima intentio*) of this movement were for the advantage of the lower world, then the more noble would exist for the advantage of the more base, which is false,' later receives the following gloss from Nifo:

the gods do not pay attention (*deos curam non habere*) to things in the same way that they fall under their control: and for that reason it follows that the soul of a heaven (*anima celi*) may only ever move for our sake by secondary, not primary, intention.³²

Whereas Averroes typically conceived the causal relationship between the heavens and the sublunary world to be elusive to human understanding, Nifo's gloss introduces a discussion about whether, or to what extent, the heavens compel human actions, which will be discussed further below. The effect of textual transmission and later interpretation is, therefore, to revise the notions of intentional causality which underpin Averroes's own statement into an argument which ultimately allows for the intermittent but intelligible effect of the heavens on the sublunary world by 'secondary intention'.³³

Nifo's understanding of the relationship between intention and celestial influence in Averroes is not simply a result of the choice of Latin words and incompleteness of the available translation. The way Nifo discusses Averroes's views on sensation

³⁰ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 47^b. On the intelligible species and intention in Averroes and Nifo, see Leen Spruit, *Species Intelligibilis: From Perception to Knowledge*, 2 vols (Leiden: Brill, 1995), I, pp. 89–95 and II, pp. 71–89.

³¹ Kwame Gyekye, 'The Terms "Prima Intentio" and "Secunda Intentio" in Arabic Logic', *Speculum*, 46 (1971), pp. 32–38 (33–34). On Raymond Lull's account of *prima* and *secunda intentio*, also considered to derive from Arab philosophy but distinctively different to that of Nifo, see Gyekye, *ibid.*, pp. 37–38 and Anthony Bonner, *The Art and Logic of Ramon Llull: A User's Guide* (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 72–73.

³² Nifo, *Expositio*, fols 118^a, 119^a; cf. Averroes, *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, Discussion 15, I, p. 295. I have partially adapted Van den Bergh's translation to achieve a more literal rendering of the Latin of Nifo's edition.

³³ There may be a further connection here with the philosophy of Albertus Magnus. On Albertus's reception of the Arabic tradition of intention, see Black, 'Imagination and Estimation', pp. 63–66, and Spruit, *Species Intelligibilis*, I, pp. 139–148. Spruit (*ibid.*, p. 139) describes Albertus's position as 'midway between the spiritualistic psychology of the previous authors and the sense-dependent cognitive psychology of Thomas.'

181 in *De sensu agente* suggests that he associated Averroes with a complex series of
 182 ideas concerning spiritual and corporeal influence in the fourteenth dispute of his
 183 *Destructio* commentary.³⁴ Rejecting John of Jandun's notion of an internal agent
 184 sense, in *De sensu agente* Nifo proposes that sensation entails both a 'physical action
 185 and change' (*actio et transmutatio physica*) and a 'spiritual change' (*transmutatio*
 186 *spiritualis*). 'Physical action as much as intentional action (*actio intentionalis*)
 187 exists by virtue of the first agent, namely a celestial body.' All sensible things
 188 are 'drawn back to the first mover which is the soul of a celestial body.' Nifo goes on
 189 to ask how God can be called the 'first changer' (*primus alterans*) or the 'first mover'
 190 (*primus movens*) 'when such titles are more conditioned to matter than sense.'
 191 His solution is that 'action' (*actio*) is of two kinds: one kind results in an effect
 192 which is the same for material and immaterial things, 'at least according to analogy'
 193 (*saltem secundum analogiam*). The other is concerned with physical changes. In the
 194 former kind, 'the agent can be designated separate from the action' and in this way,
 195 God is called, among other things, 'first mover' and 'first loving creator' (*primus*
 196 *amator creator*). He assigns the key principle that 'sensation does not have spiritual
 197 being from its subject, but from an external mover' to Averroes.³⁵ Nifo's argument
 198 concerning sensation, therefore, associates two kinds of change (physical and
 199 spiritual-intentional) with the action of celestial bodies and then seems to associate
 200 the non-physical kind of change with God as the 'first mover'.

201 Nifo evidently has in mind a famous but controversial passage in Averroes's
 202 Long Commentary on the *De anima*, in which Averroes proposes with reference to
 203 the act of sensation that 'the external mover in the case of the senses is different
 204 from the sensibles.'³⁶ The manner in which Nifo develops his explanation of the
 205 views of Averroes on this subject, however, is evidently influenced both by other
 206 works of Averroes and later Latin philosophers. With regard to Nifo's *De sensu*
 207 *agente*, Mahoney has noted the connections between the views which Nifo associates
 208 with Averroes in this passage and the *Quodlibeta* of Giles of Rome and, in particular,
 209 the *Questio de sensu agente* of Gaetanus of Thiene.³⁷ With reference to the question

³⁴ According to Nifo, *De sensu agente* was finished in 1495, before the completion of the *Destructio* commentary in 1497, but elsewhere Nifo states that he had worked on at least one of the issues in the fourteenth dispute for 4 years (i.e., since approximately 1494), giving overlapping timeframes for the two works. See Nifo, *Expositio*, fols 121^{ra} and 123^{rb} and Agostino Nifo, *De sensu agente*, in Averroes, *Destructiones destructionum*, fol. 129^b.

³⁵ Nifo, *De sensu agente*, fol. 128^{ra-vb}.

³⁶ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, ed. Crawford, p. 221; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, ed. Taylor, p. 172.

³⁷ Giles of Rome, *Quodlibeta* (Bologna: Johann Schreiber, 1481), III, q. 13, sigs g6ra-h2va; Gaetanus of Thiene, *Quaestio de sensu agente* (Vicenza: Enrico di Sant'Orso, 1486), sigs n6ra-n8rb. See Edward P. Mahoney, 'Albert the Great and the Studio Patavino in the Late Fifteenth and Early Sixteenth Centuries', in *Albertus Magnus and the Sciences: Commemorative Essays*, ed. James A. Weisheipl (Toronto: Pontifical Institutes of Medieval Studies, 1980), pp. 537–563 (545–546); Id., 'Agostino Nifo's *De Sensu Agente*', *Archiv für Geschichte der Philosophie*, 53 (1971), pp. 119–142; Id., 'Philosophy and Science', pp. 176–179.

of the influence of celestial bodies, the association of the agent or mover of the spiritual action with an external intelligence is certainly an important point of similarity between the accounts of Nifo and Gaetano. It is Gaetano, not Albertus or Giles, who states clearly that it is an 'intelligence which multiplies its spiritual light not only (*nedum*) to the intellect but indeed also (*immo etiam*) to the interior sense.'³⁸

The dualist model of physical and spiritual change, which Nifo associates with Averroes in *De sensu agente* and which deeply informs Nifo's own understanding of celestial influences in the fourteenth dispute of his *Destructio* commentary, is also part of a more general series of such dualisms in the works of Averroes, which recur in the natural philosophy of Albertus Magnus. Beyond the source in Averroes's Long Commentary on the *De anima*, already discussed, the notion recurs in a variety of contexts in the works of Averroes, and in their elaboration by Albertus. For example, in his long commentary on *Physica*, with a cross-reference to his long commentary on the *De anima*, Averroes identifies 'alteration' as able to be both 'corporeal' and 'spiritual'. Albertus, in his *Physica*, repeats this argument, differentiating between 'corporeal' alteration, 'which happens to matter,' and 'spiritual,' which occurs 'when it works through the intention of its form rather than through (its) form.'³⁹ In his long commentary on the *De coelo*, Averroes explains that it is the movement of celestial bodies which effects the sublunary world and also how, although 'supercelestial bodies' are 'neutral' (*neutra*), 'in as much as they are bodies, they communicate with the elements in their transparency (*diaphaneitas*), illumination (*illuminatio*) and darkness (*obscuritas*).' In the chapter of his *De caelo et mundo* on 'the natural cause of the effects of the stars,' Albertus acknowledges, following Averroes, that the influence of the stars can only be through their movement, and later explains that 'it is said that (the stars) work these forms in two ways, namely through material and corporeal essence (*essentiam*) and through spiritual and intellectual essence.'⁴⁰ By explicitly bringing together the question of

³⁸ Gaetanus of Thiene, *Questio de sensu agente*, fol. n7^b. See also Mahoney, 'Nifo's *De sensu agente*', p. 134. Giles's more equivocal views on the identity of this agent are discussed by Carey J. Leonard, 'A Thirteenth Century Notion of the Agent Intellect: Giles of Rome', *The New Scholasticism*, 37 (1963), pp. 327–358 (341). Albertus declares that 'every form multiplies its intention,' but stops short of the suggestion that this is the work of an intelligence. See Albertus, *De anima*, l. 2 tr. 3 c. 6, in *Opera omnia*, 40 vols, ed. Bernhard Geyer et al. (Münster: Aschendorff, 1951-), VII, i, p. 107b.

³⁹ Averroes, Long Commentary on *Physica*, VII, t.c. 12, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, IV, fol. 317^b-c; Albertus, *Physica*, l. 7, tr. 1, c. 4, in *Opera omnia*, ed. Münster, IV, ii, pp. 525b–526a.

⁴⁰ Averroes, Long Commentary on *De coelo et mundo*, II, t.c. 42, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, V, fols 126^m-127^a; Albertus, *De caelo et mundo*, l. 2, tr. 3, c. 5, in *Opera omnia*, ed. Münster, V, i, pp. 151a and 152b. See also Albertus's account of divination in dreams, where 'heavenly forms, projected towards us, touching our bodies move (them) very forcibly, and impress their virtues', in *De somno et vigilia*, l. 3, tr. 1, c. 9, in *Opera omnia*, ed. Auguste Borgnet, 38 vols (Paris: Vives, 1890–1899), IX, p. 190a. While Thomas Aquinas's views on several subjects discussed in this section differ from those of Albertus and Averroes, Thomas also accepted the principle that the influence of a celestial body could reflect both its corporeality as a body and the spiritual power of its mover in the production of substantial forms. See Thomas Litt, *Les corps célestes dans l'univers de Saint Thomas d'Aquin* (Louvain: Publications Universitaires de Louvain; Paris: Béatrice-Nauwelaerts, 1963), p. 180.

237 celestial influence with the principles of Averroes's physics of movement – a
 238 philosophical sleight of hand which brings intentional or spiritual influences into
 239 a context of efficient causality – Albertus establishes a further premise necessary for
 240 Nifo's treatment of celestial influences in the fourteenth dispute.

241 We can therefore say that Nifo's accounts of divine and celestial causality, and of
 242 sensation, in the *Destructio* commentary and *De sensu agente* show an approach to
 243 the interpretation of Averroes which is crucially mediated by Albertus and other
 244 Latin philosophers. Some of the key views concerning celestial influences which
 245 Nifo assigns to Averroes in these works are significantly influenced by the writings
 246 of these mediators. Rather than emphasising the inscrutability of the heavens to
 247 investigation through natural philosophy, the model of the causal relationships
 248 between the first mover, the heavens and the sublunary world which Nifo associates
 249 with Averroes allows more fully for the possibility of human scrutiny of those
 250 relationships. Nifo's Averroist universe is intelligible in ways not envisaged by
 251 Averroes himself. Also in the name of Averroes, Nifo builds on Gaetanus of Thiene's
 252 account of the agent sense to bring together the notion of divine or celestial intentional
 253 influence on the sublunary world with the process of human intellection, thereby
 254 further cementing the relationship between celestial causality and intelligibility.
 255 As will be explored in the next section, in his dualist model of physical-corporeal
 256 and spiritual-intentional transformation derived from ideas of Averroes and Albertus,
 257 Nifo found the basis for an attempt to reconcile the thought of Averroes and Aristotle
 258 with Neoplatonic, Hermetic and astrological accounts of celestial influence.⁴¹

259 ***The Pars Spiritualis of Man and the Motus Intentionalis*** 260 ***of the Heavenly Bodies***

261 Nifo's second commentary of the first *dubitatio* of the fourteenth dispute occupies
 262 nearly nine pages of folio size (fols 118^{ra}-122^{va}). The associated text is Averroes's
 263 refutation of the statement of al-Ghazālī that 'the philosophers have affirmed that the
 264 heavens are some kind of *animal* which obeys glorious God himself in its movement;
 265 for every voluntary movement arises without doubt due to a certain intended thing
 266 (*propter quoddam intentum*).⁴² Having considered various points in Averroes's text,
 267 Nifo's commentary begins to introduce ideas from a range of other sources (fol. 119^{ra}
 268 onwards). In the writings of Aristotle and Averroes, he notes positions which suggest

⁴¹ See Troilo's characterisation of Averroism as 'dualist, transcendent (and) not without deep veins of mysticism and theosophy.' (Erminio Troilo, *Averroismo e aristotelismo padovano* [Padua: CEDAM, 1939], p. 40.)

⁴² Translated from the textus in Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 117^{ra}: 'dicunt philosophi quod celum est quoddam animal obediens ipsi deo glorioso in suo motu: quilibet motus voluntarius fit sine dubio propter quoddam intentum;' see van Den Bergh's English translation of the Arabic in Averroes, *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, Discussion 15, I, p. 293.

that the actions of celestial bodies are limited by their own nature. As they cannot change their own natures, it follows that they can only influence changes according to extent and not nature. Similarly, their influence on the sublunary world is associated with generation and corruption.⁴³ Alongside these views, Nifo makes a series of references to Platonic and Neoplatonic positions which emphasise the divine nature of the heavens. He notes that Plotinus, in response to the assertion of astrologers (*astrologi*) that the stars can alter 'natures through changing their location and aspect,' argues that if earthly things, which are very susceptible to change, can only be changed with respect to their behaviour (*mos*) and location (*locus*), how much less true can this be of 'very stable things, like celestial bodies?'⁴⁴

Nifo now turns to the blend of Peripatetic and providential ideas in the pseudo-Aristotelian *De mundo* as an explanation of how 'the [sublunary] world is governed entirely by movements from on high.'⁴⁵ Nifo argues that it is sacrilege to discuss the universe without discussing the 'principle of the universe' (*principium mundi*) that 'everything exists due to God and through God.'⁴⁶ Accepting the theses he finds in *De mundo*, Nifo poses three further questions, through which he aims to determine the truth about 'how this world is controlled through the movements (*lationes*) from on high.' The following are the questions:

first, it is necessary to see how many of these movements occur here; secondly, in how many ways a celestial body acts to make them, and what its mode of operation is in respect of us; thirdly, it will be seen by which species of guidance (*gubernatio*) the movers guide us, and how they conduct themselves in the act of guiding.

Nifo answers the first question from the perspective of their effect on man. The influence of these movements 'can,' he explains,

relate to the spiritual and the corporeal part. For since man is a joining together (*nexus*) of celestial and corruptible things, as Isaac says, it is fitting that he has a two-fold nature: that is, spiritual, by which he joins with the highest things; and corporeal, by which he also unites

⁴³ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{ra}, referring to Averroes, Long Commentary on *De coelo et mundo*, III t.c. 72, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, V, fol. 230^{re}; *Expositio*, fol. 119^{rb}, references to Averroes, *De generatione et corruptione*, II t.c. 56 and 58, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, V, fols 385^{vh-k}, 386^{a-d}.

⁴⁴ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{rab}. Cf. Plotinus, *Enneads* II, iii, 1, in *Opera omnia*, trans. Marsilio Ficino, eds Georg Friedrich Creuzer and Georg Heinrich Moser (Paris: Didot, 1855), p. 61. Nifo's account draws closely (sometimes verbatim) on the account in Ficino's commentary on Plotinus, see Ficino, *In Plotinum*, in *Opera omnia*, 2 vols (Basel: Heinrich Petri, 1576; facsimile repr., Turin: Bottega d'Erasmus, 1962), II, pp. 1609–1610.

⁴⁵ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{va}. Nifo may have in mind a particular passage in *De mundo*. See in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VII, fol. 116^{vh-m}. On the *De mundo*, its ideas and later reception see Jill Kraye, 'Aristotle's God and the Authenticity of *De mundo*: An Early Modern Controversy', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 28 (1990) pp. 339–358 (341–344); repr. in Ead., *Classical Traditions in Renaissance Philosophy* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2002), XI. Kraye notes that both Marsilio Ficino and Giovanni Pico della Mirandola cite the *De mundo* as an authoritative source.

⁴⁶ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{va}. Cf. Aristotle, *De mundo*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VII, fol. 111^{c-d}.

296 with those things which are here. I speak about man since, as Plato says, man in some way is
297 everything, for everything in the world is in him and he is the microcosm (*parvus mundus*).⁴⁷

298 Nifo defines the influence of these movements 'insofar as they relate to the
299 corporeal part' as 'transmutation in substance' in the form of 'generation' and 'cor-
300 ruption,' and 'transmutation in accident' in the form of 'augmentation,' 'diminution,'
301 and 'alteration from local movement.' Influences on the 'spiritual part' take
302 the form of 'augmentation in knowledge' and its corresponding 'diminution' in the
303 forms of 'prophecy' (*prophetia*), 'belief in any new religion' (*credulitas alicuius*
304 *nove legis*), 'foresight' (*prudencia*) and 'all operations of the soul which Aristotle
305 lists in his *De anima* and *Ethica*.'⁴⁸

306 Nifo's association of the 'corporeal' and 'spiritual' duality with Platonic and
307 Neoplatonic sources is striking. The allusion to Plato is most likely a reference to
308 the *Timaeus*.⁴⁹ In the reference to Isaac, Nifo seems to have in mind the teachings of
309 the medieval Jewish Neoplatonist Isaac ben Solomon Israeli.⁵⁰ A probable source is
310 a passage in Isaac's *De elementis*, which applies a similar disposition to man's soul
311 in its treatment of the distinction between the 'corporeal' and the 'spiritual'. Isaac
312 explains that in certain situations (including dreams), because God wills it, the intel-
313 lect makes the soul acquire 'spiritual forms and discourses' which are present in the
314 soul. These appear in 'forms intermediary between corporeal and spiritual.'⁵¹
315 Albertus Magnus, in his *De caelo*, describes Isaac's distinction in this passage as
316 between 'natural' and 'animal sense.'⁵² Although *De elementis* was not printed until
317 1515, the records of the library of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola suggest that the
318 medieval Latin translation of the original work was available in Nifo's circle.⁵³

⁴⁷Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{va}. On the use of the term *gubernatio*, cf. Aristotle, *De mundo*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VII, fol. 119^{vc}: 'what the helmsman is in a ship, this God is God in the universe' ('quod in navi gubernator est ... hoc Deus est in mundo').

⁴⁸Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{va}.

⁴⁹The story of the creation of the universe and of men is found in *Timaeus*, 29d-47e. On man's relationship to the universe, see in particular 44d. On Platonism and Neoplatonism in Nifo, with particular reference to the soul, see Mahoney, 'Agostino Nifo and Neoplatonism', in *Two Aristotelians of the Italian Renaissance*, VI, pp. 205-231, and 'Plato and Aristotle in the Thought of Agostino Nifo'.

⁵⁰On Isaac's blend of Neoplatonism and Aristotelianism, see Alexander Altmann, 'The Philosophy of Isaac Israeli', in *Isaac Israeli: A Neoplatonic Philosopher of the Early Tenth Century*, eds A. Altmann and Samuel M. Stern (London: Oxford University Press, 1958), pp. 149-217, esp. pp. 172-179; Sarah Pessin, 'Jewish Neoplatonism: Being above Being and Divine Emanation in Solomon ibn Gabriol and Isaac Israeli', in *The Cambridge Companion to Medieval Jewish Philosophy*, ed sFrank and Oliver Leaman (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003), pp. 91-110; Marie-Thérèse d'Alverny, 'Pseudo-Aristotle, *De Elementis*', in *Pseudo-Aristotle in the Middle Ages: The Theology and Other Texts*, eds Jill Kraye, Charles B. Schmitt and W. F. Ryan (London: The Warburg Institute, 1986), pp. 63-83.

⁵¹Isaac ben Solomon Israeli, *Opera* (Lyon: Bartholomaeus Trot, 1515), fols 10^{vb}-11^{ra}.

⁵²Albertus Magnus, *De caelo et mundo*, l. 2, tr. 1, c. 4, in *Opera omnia*, ed. Münster, V, i, p. 110b.

⁵³Isaac's *De elementis* was translated into Latin in the twelfth century by Gerard of Cremona. Altmann and Stern, *Isaac Israeli*, p. 133. Kibre, *The Library of Pico della Mirandola*, p. 239 (inventory number 893).

Nifo's intention to accommodate Aristotelian, Neoplatonic and even theological ideas within an expanded model of spiritual and physical 'movements' is confirmed by his subsequent consideration of 'how many ways by their nature the heavens act to make those things which have been enumerated.'⁵⁴ He first considers the position of those who say that 'the celestial bodies were made as a universal embellishment, not for the creation or conservation of beings.' The latter view he assigns to the 'law of Mohammed.' The implication of this view, as he points out with reference to 'Rabbi Moyses' (Maimonides), is that 'God works all things without medium (*immediate*) and that 'there are no natural powers (*virtutes*) in anything.'⁵⁵ The most contentious example of this thought is creation *ex nihilo*, and Nifo notes the discussion in Book 12 of Averroes's Long Commentary on Aristotle's *Metaphysica*, where creation *ex nihilo* is discussed as part of 'our religion' (*lex nostra*) and the 'religion of the Christians' (*lex Christianorum*).⁵⁶ Averroes, Nifo reports, goes on to note that to rule out the existence of such natural 'powers' denies the proper place to agency in motion: Nifo is aware that, if man no longer moves a stone by pushing it (as is implied in accordance with Aristotelian concepts of agency and potency), but rather the 'agent' actually creates the motion (*illud agens creat motum*), core principles of Aristotelian physics would fail, in particular the potentiality of the object moved.⁵⁷ Nifo goes on to cite the views of several who reject the creationist position, most notably those of the medieval Arab astrologer Abū Mashar (Albumasar) and the late-classical commentator Alexander of Aphrodisias, who proposed that the celestial bodies influence the sublunary world by virtue of their natural regular motions.⁵⁸ He compares this position with the view of Heraclitus: rather than operating 'according to a kind of reciprocation' (*secundum quandam reciprocationem*), 'sometimes everything becomes fire.'⁵⁹

In this context, Nifo proposes to explain how the influence of the heavens works. He presents an account of 'intentional' and 'physical' movement, taking as his example the magnet,

which moves locally according to the power (*virtus*) of the heavens. As lapidaries say, if a magnet were brought near to a sphere and located above its two poles, without doubt the sphere is moved locally by the proximate movement of the heavens. And this is because everything which is moved locally, is moved through the power of the first thing moved,

⁵⁴ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{va}.

⁵⁵ *Ibid.*, fol. 119^{vb}. Maimonides's position in the *Guide of the Perplexed* (*Dux perplexorum*), pt 1 c. 68 and 69, is to employ an emanational argument to reconcile God as final cause with the operation of efficient cause in the universe. See *The Guide of the Perplexed*, ed. Shlomo Pines (Chicago and London: The University of Chicago Press, 1963), pp. 163–167.

⁵⁶ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{vb}; cf. Averroes, Long Commentary on *Metaphysica*, XII, t. c. 18, Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, fol. 304^{te-f}. Nifo also assigns views in support of various kinds of creation *ex nihilo* to Homer, Orpheus and the mysteriously titled 'Hermes Enoch Mercurius' in this passage.

⁵⁷ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{vb}; cf. Averroes, Long Commentary on *Metaphysica* XII, t.c. 18, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, VIII, fol. 305^{g-h}.

⁵⁸ For Alexander's views on providence, see Krayer, 'Aristotle's God', p. 340.

⁵⁹ See Aristotle, *Metaphysica*, 1067a.

350 which is a heavenly body. And after all these things are said, from them we accept that
 351 celestial bodies operate in this lower world without doubt according to every kind of move-
 352 ment: intentional and physical (*intentionales et physici*).⁶⁰

353 Nifo's account here is distinctively different from Averroes's explanation of the
 354 magnet. In the *Physica*, Aristotle had explained that the magnet, like the object thrown
 355 or fired, is evidence of a 'continuous' and 'single' motion in all things.⁶¹ Averroes's
 356 Long Commentary had expanded on some of the key issues in this passage. With
 357 reference to the medium which imparts movement to the object when it no longer has
 358 contact with the first mover, Averroes argues that it is as if such bodies 'receive a cer-
 359 tain penetration' from the outside. The nature of the medium is therefore 'between
 360 spiritual and corporeal being.'⁶² Yet, at the close of the same commentary passage,
 361 Averroes contrasts the discontinuous nature of such movement in the sublunary world,
 362 which is moved by many movers, from the continuous 'movement of the stars.'⁶³

363 Nifo's account expands on the notion of a division between 'physical' and 'inten-
 364 tional' influences, and moves them from the specific context of the medium of move-
 365 ment to the general context of all sublunary movements. The 'physical' kind of
 366 motion (*modus motus physicus*) relates to 'generation,' 'corruption,' 'alteration,'
 367 'increase,' 'decrease' and 'change of location.'⁶⁴ The 'intentional' kind of motion
 368 (*modus motus intentionalis*) occurs when 'knowledge of prophecy, religions, morals
 369 (as declared in books concerned with morality), vices and all the acts which univer-
 370 sally (*universaliter*) are found in us flow in a holy fashion (*sancte*) into men: as the
 371 astrologers (*astrologi*) say.'⁶⁵ Nifo's account of the magnet does not echo Averroes's
 372 comments concerning the discontinuity of sublunary movement, as contrasted with
 373 the continuity of celestial movement. Instead, Nifo emphasises, and makes significant
 374 claims for, the transmission of celestial influence into the sublunary world.⁶⁶ His
 375 notion of spiritual or intentional change is located, alongside the transformation of
 376 physical form, within the principles of Aristotelian physics, like Albertus's explana-
 377 tion of the transmission of spiritual essence through the movement of the stars in his
 378 *De celo*. Moreover, Nifo's concept of spiritual or intentional change embraces the

⁶⁰ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{vb}.

⁶¹ Aristotle, *Physica*, VIII, 267a.

⁶² Averroes, Long Commentary on *Physica*, VIII, t. c. 82, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, IV, fol. 430^{vi-k}.

⁶³ *Ibid*, fol. 431^{va}. On discontinuous movement, see Ruth Glasner, *Averroes' Physics: A Turning Point in Medieval Natural Philosophy* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009), pp. 125–126.

⁶⁴ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{vb}. In a later passage, fol. 120^{vb}, Nifo returns to the example of 'a stone moved by a stick which only moves because of the hand which exercises an influence on (*influit*) the stick.' Nifo concludes that in the same way that any 'instrument' (like the stick) moves by virtue of the 'first cause', it is not necessary for the 'instruments of the first bodies (i.e., of the celestial bodies) to be joined in place, but by the action of (their) virtues.'

⁶⁵ *Ibid*, fol. 119^{vb}.

⁶⁶ Nifo returns to the idea of the magnet later in the commentary (fol. 120^{va}) to explain the reference to the influence of the heavens on a choleric man.

transmission of knowledge, prophecy and religion in a form which, his choice of the authorities suggests, is intelligible to those who, like the 'astrologers', understand natural philosophy.⁶⁷

Nifo goes on to apply his emerging model of celestial influences to an even wider range of phenomena. He notes that 'generation' and 'corruption' are the principles by which, in the alchemical views of Albertus and Avicenna, a particular planet 'increases' (*multiplicat*) a particular metal.⁶⁸ He notes the alignment of the generation of animals ('when the sun enters the first point of Aries, birds begin to build nests') and of the cycle of human pregnancy (the child born 'in the eighth month' of pregnancy cannot live as it 'rises under a mortifying star') with the annual cycle of the heavens. Although commonplace ideas, they are associated with various authorities, including 'Hermes Egyptius' (Trismegistus) and Ptolemy.⁶⁹ Perhaps most interestingly, he next explains that

Plato says in the *Timaeus* that corporeal life is poured into us by the stars. Moreover, it will be made manifest that celestial bodies cause changes in accidental bodies, that is to say spiritual and corporeal movements. First experience teaches about spiritual change. For Plotinus, in the second book of the *Fourth Ennead*, says that the speaking statues made by workmen do not speak because souls speak in them. Nor do the stars speak; but demons commanded by the star, under the governance of which the art or work was celebrated.⁷⁰

The term 'spiritual change' (*mutatio spiritualis*) reappears again, this time in association with material which draws on the writings of Marsilio Ficino. The summary of the *Timaeus* ('corporeal ... stars') is taken directly from a passage in

⁶⁷ Albertus uses the example of the magnet as part of his argument concerning the need for an external input to sensation. He rejects the view of Plato that there is some kind of emission from the eyes of a bewitcher towards the eyes of someone bewitched as the same as the suggestion that 'virtue goes out from the magnet to the iron.' See *De anima*, l. 2, tr. 3, c. 6, in *Opera omnia*, ed. Münster, VII, 1, p. 107a. Nifo's use of the magnet image also differs significantly from that of Marsilio Ficino, who uses the magnet as an analogy for the animation of the corporeal universe by the 'souls of the spheres'. See Ficino, *Platonic Theology*, eds and trans. Michael J. B. Allen and James Hankins, 6 vols (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2001–2006), I, pp. 282–285.

⁶⁸ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 119^{vb}. The theory that individual *species* of metal are associated with individual planets can be found in Albertus Magnus, *Mineralia*, l. 3, tr. 1, c. 6, in *Opera*, ed. Borgnet, V, p. 66b; Albertus Magnus, *Book of Minerals*, trans. Dorothy Wyckoff (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1967), p. 168.

⁶⁹ *Ibid.*, fol. 120^{ra}. The full list of authorities cited in this passage is Plato, 'Magot Grecus,' 'Germa Babylonicus,' Hermes Egyptius, Ptolemeus, Geber Hispalensis, Thebit and Zoroaster (their 'head'). With the exception of the reference to Zoroaster and the correction of 'Magot' to 'Magor,' this list coincides precisely with a list of authorities on the aid to be gained from engraving signs (*sigillae*) on gems in Albertus Magnus, *Mineralia*, l. 2 tr. 3 c. 3, in *Opera*, ed. Borgnet, V, p. 51a; Albertus Magnus, *Book of Minerals*, trans. Wyckoff, p. 134. On the authorities cited by Albert, several of which are spurious, see Wyckoff's edition, Appendix C, pp. 272–275 and David Pingree, 'The Diffusion of Arabic Magical Texts in Western Europe', in *La diffusione delle scienze islamiche nel Medio Evo europeo*, ed. Biancamaria Scarcia Amoretti (Rome: Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei, 1987), pp. 57–102 (81–84).

⁷⁰ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 120^{ra}.

401 Ficino's commentary on Plotinus concerning the *Timaeus*.⁷¹ The example of the
 402 'speaking statues' is derived from a passage on the operation of the demons through
 403 the statues in the *Fourth Ennead*.⁷² This is most famously picked up by Ficino in
 404 both Book 3 of *De vita libri tres*, the *De vita coelitus comparanda* (completed in
 405 1489) and, with explicit reference to the views of Plotinus and 'Mercurius' (Hermes
 406 Trismegistus), in the closing chapter of his *Theologia Platonica*.⁷³

407 Nifo had already considered the case for the existence of demons in the third dispute
 408 of the *Destructio* commentary. There, he concluded that the Peripatetic position,
 409 denying the existence of demons, was insufficient to 'put to flight' either the possibil-
 410 ity that man can work magic or that the effects are caused by some external agency
 411 which has intellect.⁷⁴ If, he proceeds to argue, demons are autonomous external
 412 agents, a demon must be 'a spirit' (*spiritus*). However, he concludes that the 'best
 413 and true position' on the subject must be that of the Christian religion. The fourteenth
 414 dispute seems to revive the possibility that phenomena such as the talking statues of
 415 Plotinus – which Nifo evidently regards as well-attested – can be accommodated
 416 within a philosophical discourse of 'spiritual change' in the sublunary world. While
 417 he reserved his more detailed consideration of the nature of demons for other works,
 418 it is nonetheless notable that Nifo sought to accommodate them within his wider
 419 discussion of spiritual or intentional influences in the fourteenth dispute.⁷⁵

420 Nifo therefore builds up a range of evidence for the influence on the sublunary
 421 world of a set of physical-corporeal and spiritual-intentional forces which are at

⁷¹ Marsilio Ficino, *In Plotinum*, II, iii, c. 9, in Id., *Opera*, II, p. 1629: 'vitam nobis corpoream a stellis infundi.' On the influence of Ficino on the treatment of the soul in the *Destructio* commentary, see Edward P. Mahoney, 'Marsilio Ficino's influence on Nicoletto Vernia, Agostino Nifo and Marcantonio Zimara', in *Marsilio Ficino e il ritorno di Platone: Studi e documenti*, ed. Gian Carlo Garfagnini, 2 vols (Florence: Olschki, 1986), II, pp. 509–351 (517–520).

⁷² Plotinus, *Enneads*, IV, iii (not ii, as Nifo suggests), 11; *Enneads*, trans. A. H. Armstrong, 7 vols (Cambridge, MA, and London: Cambridge University Press, 1934), IV, p. 71. Cf. Plotinus, *Opera omnia*, p. 206.

⁷³ Marsilio Ficino, *De vita libri tres*, III, 20, in Id., *Opera*, I, pp. 560–561; Id., *Platonic Theology*, VI, pp. 194–195. On Plotinus's statues and Ficino's *De vita*, see Brian Copenhaver, 'Astrology and Magic', in *Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy*, pp. 264–300; 274–279. On the question of Ficino and demons, see also D. P. Walker, *Spiritual and Demonic Magic from Ficino to Campanella* (London: The Warburg Institute, 1958; repr. Stroud: Sutton, 2000), esp. pp. 45–53; Michael J. B. Allen, *The Platonism of Marsilio Ficino: A Study of His Phaedrus Commentary, its Sources and Genesis* (Los Angeles and Berkeley: University of California Press, 1984), pp. 8–23.

⁷⁴ Nifo, *Expositio*, dub. xviii, fol. 46^{va}.

⁷⁵ *Ibid.*, fol. 46^{va-b}; see Zambelli's discussion of this part of the third dispute as a kind of 'double truth' argument in 'Problemi metodologici', esp. pp. 146 and 162–163. Caution needs to be exercised when interpreting 'double truth' arguments, in Averroes and more generally, given the difficulty of determining the intentions of the author. For a balanced view, see Stuart MacClintock, *Perversity and Error: Studies on the 'Averroist' John of Jandun* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1956), pp. 98–99. Nifo's other, more extensive, early discussion of demons is the short treatise *De daemonibus*, in his *De intellectu. De daemonibus* (Venice: Petrus de Querengis, 1503), fols 77^{ra}–83^{vb}, which is discussed by Zambelli in 'Problemi metodologici'. A full discussion of Nifo's treatment of demons in the context of Aristotelian natural philosophy, Neoplatonic and other sources in both the *Destructio* commentary and the *De demonibus* lies beyond the scope of this study.

least partly intelligible, and seem to derive from his understanding of Averroes's natural philosophy. In the closing pages of his discussion, however, Nifo holds a firm and anti-Averroist line concerning the nature of the human soul and man's freedom of choice. First, he identifies two subjects concerning which he has found no certainty among the ancient authors (*antiqui*), especially in the writings of 'Aristotle and the other Peripatetics.' These matters, which his reader will want clarified, are: (1) 'whether wise men are of the opinion that celestial bodies compel our actions or not'; and (2) 'in what way our knowledge may be increased or decreased by reason of the stars.'⁷⁶ Next he notes a series of authorities, including Abū Mashar, Ptolemy, the 'Jews through their cabalistic wisdom,' Iamblichus, Porphyry and Zoroaster, who teach that man can 'avoid the powers of the stars and reject their fate.' With overtones of Albertine or Thomist accounts of astrology, Nifo asks 'what would become of religion, laws, divine decrees and natural order, when freedom of choice (*libertas arbitrii*) is taken away?'⁷⁷ Nifo considers a number of Stoic and other positions regarding the extent to which the heavens compel all human actions.⁷⁸ In this context, he notes the problem that occurs if Averroes is taken to mean that 'each man's cogitative power (*cogitativa*) is a natural form wholly developed from the potentiality of matter.'⁷⁹ However, in a subsequent passage,

⁷⁶Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 121^{ra}. For an overview of determinism and causality in Aristotle and subsequent classical philosophical tradition, see Sorabji, *Necessity, Cause and Blame*; for considerations in the early modern period, see Antonino Poppi, 'Fate, Fortune, Providence and Human Freedom', in *Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy*, eds Charles B. Schmitt, Quentin Skinner, Eckhard Kessler and Jill Kraye (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988), pp. 641–667.

⁷⁷Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 121^{ra}. Nifo could have found the question of the freedom from celestial influence of human choice (*liberum arbitrium*) or human will (*libera voluntas*) discussed in several texts by Albertus Magnus and Thomas Aquinas, including the same chapter of Albertus's *Mineralia* which he seems to have used elsewhere in this text as a source. In this chapter Albert notes 'in man a two-fold principle of action, namely nature and will ... nature is controlled by the stars; but the will is free.' See Albertus Magnus, *Mineralia*, in *Opera*, ed. Borgnet, V, l. 2 tr. 3 c. 3, p. 51b; Albertus Magnus, *Book of Minerals*, trans. Wyckoff, p. 135. See also Paola Zambelli, 'Albert le Grand e l'astrologie', *Recherches de théologie ancienne et médiévale*, 49 (1982), pp. 141–158 (esp. 144); Thomas Aquinas, *L'astrologie. Les opérations cachées de la nature. Les sorts*, trans. and ed. Bruno Couillaud (Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 2008), esp. pp. XLIII–XLIV. On the translation of *arbitrium* and *voluntas* in such contexts, see Jerzy B. Korolec, 'Free Will and Free Choice', in *Cambridge History of Later Medieval Philosophy*, pp. 623–641 (630).

⁷⁸Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 121^b. On the Stoic tradition, astrology and determinism, see A. A. Long, 'Astrology: Arguments Pro and Contra', in *Science and Speculation: Studies in Hellenistic Theory and Practice*, eds Jonathan Barnes, Jacques Brunschwig, Myles Burnyeat and Malcolm Schofield (Cambridge and Paris: Cambridge University Press and Editions de la Maison des Sciences de l'Homme, 1982), pp. 165–193; for a subtle account of Stoic arguments concerning necessity, see Sorabji, *Necessity, Cause and Blame*, ch. 4 (pp. 70–88).

⁷⁹Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 121^a. Cf. Plotinus, *Enneas secunda*, l. 3 c. 13, p. 67. On the complex history of the *cogitativa* from Avicenna to Averroes, see Black, 'Imagination and Estimation', esp. pp. 5–6, 13; H. A. Wolfson, 'The Internal Senses in Latin, Arabic, and Hebrew Philosophic Texts', *The Harvard Theological Review*, 28 (1935), pp. 69–113; repr. in *Studies in the History of Philosophy and Religion*, I, pp. 250–314; George P. Klubertanz, *The Discursive Power: Sources and Doctrine of the vis cogitativa according to St. Thomas Aquinas* (Saint Louis, MO: The Modern Schoolman, 1952).

440 he returns to the question of Averroes's view of the intellect and rejects the idea that
 441 Averroes's clear division between the immaterial intellect and material soul can
 442 reflect the view of Aristotle. A consequence of the infamous notion, associated with
 443 Averroes, of the unitary intellect for all men, separated from matter, was to leave the
 444 individual soul of each man as something wholly mortal:

445 If the opinion of Averroes about the soul of man puts forward the view of Aristotle, I do not
 446 see how fortune can be maintained: since then the soul of a man would exist by its nature in
 447 a simple manner wholly subordinated to the celestial bodies. Unless it is posited that, for
 448 each man, the *cogitativa* and the intellect are put back together as the singular soul of a man
 449 (*una hominis anima*), which is the mistress (*domina*) of human actions. For it may be that
 450 from these there exists one soul for each man, according to Averroes.⁸⁰

451 Nifo notes that this alternative theory of the soul allows the views of Aristotle to
 452 be reconciled with that of the Church and advances seven arguments in support of
 453 the soul as a unification of the intellect and the cogitative power. Nifo also goes on
 454 to suggest that Averroes himself might be interpreted as saying that the soul is created
 455 from the 'coming together' (*congregatum*) of the cogitative power and the
 456 intellect.⁸¹ With regard to celestial influences, this position allows for the influence
 457 of the heavens on the intellect to be only *per accidens*, as Plotinus suggested. In his
 458 concluding comments, Nifo returns to the concept of the 'secondary intention' of
 459 the heavens, and explains it in terms of the provision of heavenly 'signs', which
 460 have hidden rather than overt power over the sublunary world:

461 The fact that a [celestial] sign (*signum*) tarries above us for such a long time does not prove
 462 that it moves us so forcefully by its manifest qualities, but through the occult way that we
 463 have explained.⁸²

464 **Conclusions: Nifo and Syncretic Currents in Late Fifteenth-** 465 **Century Philosophy**

466 In the last commentary of his edition, Nifo confirms the truth of Averroes's view that
 467 the human intellect, clearly lacking in its understanding (*deficit*) of the reasons and causes
 468 of natural things, is very greatly lacking in its understanding of these higher and sublime

⁸⁰ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 122^a. On the incompatibility of the unitary intellect and freedom of choice, see Thomas Aquinas, *De unitate intellectus contra Averroistas*, c. 4, in *Opera omnia*, 50 vols (Rome: Leonine Edition, 1882-), XLIII, p. 308a-b. On Nifo's use of *De unitate intellectus* in his *De intellectu*, see Mahoney, 'Nifo and Thomas Aquinas', pp. 207–208. On the phrase 'a single soul for [each] man' (*una anima totalis hominis*) see Mahoney, 'Philosophy and Science', p. 193.

⁸¹ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 122^a. Averroes's more famous and dangerous notion of a unitary intellect to all men is discussed by Nifo elsewhere in the *Destructio* commentary. See Mahoney, 'Plato and Aristotle', V, p. 82. On the contrast in Nifo's later *De intellectu* (1503) and *Libellus de immortalitate anime* (1518) between the views of Averroes and Ficino on the freedom of the individual soul's will, see Mahoney, 'Ficino's Influence', pp. 522–524.

⁸² Nifo, *Expositio*, fols 122^a, 122^{va}. On the operation of the celestial bodies on the soul *per accidens*, see *In Plotinum*, II, l. 3 c. 13, in Ficino, *Opera omnia*, II, p. 1635.

bodies of which we do not know the quantities and of those substances, the manner of the
existence (*esse*) of which is wholly unknown to us.⁸³ 469
470

However, it is evident that, in the preceding pages, Nifo expounded a very different
account of a dualist model of physical-corporeal and intentional-spiritual change,
drawing on broadly Averroist principles which are crucially mediated by the views
of later authorities, in particular Albertus Magnus. This model comes to explain not
only physical and formal change in the natural world, but also celestial causes for
natural prophecy, knowledge, morality and demonology, as variously described by
Neoplatonic, astrological and other authorities. 471
472
473
474
475
476
477

In his recourse to the example of the magnet, Nifo provides an explanation for
these phenomena which he grounds in a language derived from Aristotelian phys-
ics. The resulting combination of ideas, it might be suggested, raises serious ques-
tions for Nifo's reader. For example, when Nifo advances the principle of man as a
microcosm in support of the connection between man and the orderliness of the
'highest things,' he does so without direct reference to the elaborate structures of
unity and interdependence which inform Neoplatonic exegesis of the *Timaeus* and
other Platonic works. Similarly, when he cites the example of Plotinus's demonic
statues as an example of 'spiritual change,' he leaves unanswered the question of the
ensouled (i.e., mixed spiritual and corporeal) nature of the Platonic demon.
Nevertheless, Nifo consistently attempts to reconcile the mechanics of Aristotelian
natural philosophy with some key Neoplatonic notions of universal correspondence.
His particular solution reflects a commitment to principles which he describes in
other contexts as Averroist, even though the origins of these principles in Averroes's
own writings are in fact significantly mediated through the works of Albertus and
other earlier philosophers. In Nifo's universe, it may be the condition of man to be
deficient in his understanding of celestial causes, but the heavens evidently operate
through a causality which is direct, in the sense of being a proximate cause for sub-
lunary changes, and to some degree intelligible, in the sense that it is capable of
being understood by man, the *parvus mundus*.⁸⁴ 478
479
480
481
482
483
484
485
486
487
488
489
490
491
492
493
494
495
496
497

The argument in the fourteenth dispute is also characterised by two other fea-
tures. First, Nifo is evidently driven by a predisposition to include, rather than dis-
miss, the *evidence* regarding the nature of the world which is presented by magic
and astrology. His line of argument in the third dispute concerning demons is
insightful in this regard: the evidence for the existence of demons is not challenged 498
499
500
501
502

⁸³ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 123^b.

⁸⁴ Albertus himself was engaged in a reconciliation of Aristotelian and Platonic ideas. See, for example, Albertus's references to man as *parvus mundus* in the *Physica* and *imago mundi* in the *De somno: Physica*, l. 8 tr. 1 c. 9, in *Opera omnia*, ed. Münster, IV.ii, pp. 565b–566a; *De somno*, l. 2 tr. 1 c. 9, in *Opera*, ed. Borgnet, IX, p. 189b. For a discussion of Albertus's combination of 'Arabic Plotinus material' and Peripatetic philosophy, see Thérèse Bonin, 'The Emanative Psychology of Albertus Magnus', *Topoi*, 19 (2000), pp. 45–57, esp. pp. 47–48. On the reconciliation of Platonic and Aristotelian notions concerning the infinite power of God and creation from antiquity to Averroes, see Sorabji, *Matter, Space and Motion*, pp. 249–281.

503 by the failure to find a proof in philosophy for their existence. In the fourteenth
 504 dispute, the 'astrologers' are presented on several occasions as observers providing
 505 evidence of the order and intelligibility of the universe. Secondly, the trajectory of
 506 the fourteenth dispute is towards the vindication of a unified view of the universe
 507 within the structure of natural philosophy. In the sixth dispute, Nifo had presented
 508 in a 'double truth' argument the incompatibility of Averroes's views on the natural
 509 origins of religions with the Christian faith, observing that Averroes's position must
 510 be in error as 'our religion could only be from God.'⁸⁵ In the fourteenth dispute, by
 511 contrast, Nifo attempts a reconciliation of natural philosophy and religion with refer-
 512 ence to the preservation of the key principle of human freedom of choice and the
 513 rejection of the Averroist theory of the unity of the intellect for all men. Indeed Nifo
 514 goes on to suggest not only that this doctrine did not reflect the mind of Aristotle,
 515 but also that it might not have been the true position of Averroes. In other writings,
 516 Nifo demonstrates a clear awareness of problems associated with the reconciliation
 517 of opposing philosophical positions, notably concerning the existence of demons in
 518 the third dispute of the *Destructio* commentary and also *De daemonibus*. By con-
 519 trast, the fourteenth dispute is best conceived as an exercise in what in modern
 520 idiom might be termed 'joined up thinking,' an attempt to harness the potential of a
 521 model of physical-corporeal and spiritual-intentional influences which Nifo derived
 522 from Averroist natural philosophy in order to reconcile a series of philosophical and
 523 theological disagreements. As his last major statement in the commentary, this
 524 attempt to bring together so many strands of contemporary thought occupies a privi-
 525 leged position in Nifo's first published volume.

526 The immediate historical context for the publication of Nifo's commentary
 527 also merits further consideration for the relief that it throws on Nifo's commit-
 528 ment to a project dedicated to the synthesis of so many philosophical ideas. By his
 529 own account, as a younger man Nifo had known Giovanni Pico della Mirandola
 530 (1463–1494), a man who had publicly committed himself to the project of debat-
 531 ing not only Aristotelian and Platonic philosophy, but also the opinions of 'every
 532 school ... to the end that the light of truth Plato mentions in his *Epistles* ... might
 533 dawn more brightly in our minds.'⁸⁶ It may therefore be insightful to compare
 534 some aspects of Nifo's synthesis of Aristotelian, Averroist, Neoplatonic and
 535 Hermetic texts in the fourteenth dispute with the approach adopted by Pico in the

⁸⁵ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 80^{ra}. This and other examples of 'double truth' argument are cited by Zambelli, 'Problemi metodologici', pp. 137–138. Although it is true, as Zambelli suggests in a later work, that the *Destructio* commentary could have been a point of reference for Pomponazzi and others in the exploration of Averroes's ideas concerning the natural status of religions, one should remember the occasions on which Nifo's own instinct in the *Destructio* commentary is already towards reconciliation of theological and philosophical approaches. See Paola Zambelli, *Una reincarnazione di Pico ai tempi di Pomponazzi* (Milan: Il polifilo, 1994), p. 49.

⁸⁶ Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, *De hominis dignitate*, in Id., *De hominis dignitate, Heptaplus, De ente et uno e scritti vari*, ed. Eugenio Garin (Turin: Aragno, 2004), p. 142; *Oration on the Dignity of Man*, in *The Renaissance Philosophy of Man*, eds Ernst Cassirer, Paul Oskar Kristeller and John Herman Randall, Jr (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1948), pp. 223–254 (244).

Oratio and *Theses* (presented in 1486). However, the publication of Nifo's *Destructio* commentary also followed closely on the posthumous first publication of the *Disputationes adversus astrologiam* (1496), Pico's attack on the practice of astrology.⁸⁷ The extent to which Pico's work demonstrates an evolution of his views on some subjects, in particular magic, and of his methodological approach is a subject for debate among modern scholars.⁸⁸ However, in general terms it is possible to compare and contrast some aspects of Nifo's approach to the synthesising of diverse philosophical traditions, as they are displayed in the fourteenth dispute, with that of Pico. While much of Nifo's work is characterised by a desire to reconcile the views of the authorities whom he respects, the fourteenth dispute demonstrates a particular kind of syncretic approach. Aristotelian and particularly Averroist ideas are brought together with material drawn from Neoplatonic and Hermetic sources which were more generally being reconsidered and published in the late fifteenth century in a manner which perhaps revives some of the ambition of Pico's project in the *Oratio* and *Theses*. However, differences are immediately evident. The extent to which Nifo's synthesis remains grounded in the scholastic tradition is evident in his reliance on a single model for celestial influence which is firmly rooted in a form of medieval Averroism that is significantly influenced by Albertus. Nifo's account of celestial influences in the fourteenth dispute repeatedly returns to ideas or interpretations which suggest the influence of Albertus Magnus on his work. While Pico was evidently interested in scholasticism, including the writings of Albertus Magnus, his syncretism was founded on other, more directly classical, Neoplatonic principles. Nifo's account in the fourteenth dispute is ultimately an attempt to marshal essentially disparate philosophical positions within a single model for celestial influence evolved from the writings of Averroes, whereas Pico looked to reconcile different philosophical positions by demonstrating their reference to, in Farmer's words, 'different *levels* of reality.'⁸⁹ If Nifo was

Translation from this edition. Nifo mentions Pico in connection with Platonic theories of the human soul in the *Destructio* commentary, fol. 9^{va}. Edward P. Mahoney, 'Plato, Pico, and Albert the Great: The Testimony and Evaluation of Agostino Nifo', *Medieval Philosophy and Theology*, 2 (1992), pp. 165–192, discusses this passage at length and identifies Albertus Magnus as a source for the views expressed by Nifo to be those of Pico. On the influence of Pico on Nifo, see also Mahoney, 'Nifo and Neoplatonism', VI, p. 222; 'Pico, Elia, Vernia and Nifo', pp. 143–156.

⁸⁷ Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, *Disputationes adversus astrologiam divinatricem*, ed. and trans. Eugenio Garin, 2 vols (Florence: Vallecchi, 1946–1952; repr. Turin: Aragno, 2004).

⁸⁸ Among recent studies, Stephen Alan Farmer, *Syncretism in the West: Pico's 900 Theses (1486): The Evolution of Traditional, Religious, and Philosophical Systems* (Tempe: Arizona Center for Medieval and Renaissance Studies, 1998), presents an account of both Pico's syncretic strategies in the *Oratio* and *Theses*, and of the modern debates surrounding the *Disputationes*; Anthony Grafton, 'Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: Trials and Triumphs of an Omnivore', in Id., *Commerce with the Classics: Ancient Books and Renaissance Readers* (Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1997), pp. 93–134, makes a strong case for the particular importance of the humanist approach to the historicity of sources adopted by Pico in the *Disputationes*.

⁸⁹ See the discussion of the basis in post-Plotinian Neoplatonism of Pico's syncretism in Farmer, *Syncretism in the West*, pp. 18–28.

563 influenced by the syncretism of Pico's work, his own syncretic account of celestial
 564 influences in the fourteenth dispute remains more fundamentally scholastic in its
 565 structures.⁹⁰

566 When Pico's *Disputationes* in particular are considered, a contrast of outlook
 567 between Pico and Nifo is also evident. Nifo's later development as a reforming
 568 astrologer has already been traced by Zambelli in relation to Pico's *Disputationes*
 569 and his contact, after leaving Padua in 1499, with Pontano.⁹¹ The *Destructio* com-
 570 mentary shows Nifo, before his departure from Padua and the publication of his
 571 works on the reform of astrology, mounting a qualified defence of the place of
 572 astrology within a broadly scholastic natural philosophy, the origins of which have
 573 already been discussed. Although the precise intention of Pico's criticism of astrol-
 574 ogy in the *Disputationes*, and its connection with his earlier work, remain a subject
 575 for discussion among modern commentators, significant differences of outlook
 576 between the fourteenth dispute and Pico's nearly contemporary work are apparent.
 577 While Nifo's account is selective in its support of the claims of astrologers, his syn-
 578 cretic combination of natural philosophy, astrology and Hermetic wisdom runs
 579 counter both to Pico's rigorous account in the *Disputationes* of the unsound basis of
 580 much astrological prediction and his challenging of the historical basis for the *prisci*
 581 *theologi*. By contrast to Pico's rigour, Nifo accepts the validity of not only an array
 582 of ancient wisdom but also, as part of his larger argument about physical-corporeal
 583 and spiritual-intentional influences, that astrology itself provides evidence that the
 584 influence of the heavens on the sublunary world is intelligible by man.⁹² This is
 585 perfectly illustrated by a passage towards the end of the long digression in the four-
 586 teenth dispute. With reference to the model of causality set out in the pseudo-
 587 Aristotelian *Liber de causis*, Nifo notes that

588 the mover of a heaven has regard for the effects which it produces in the manner that it
 589 coincides with them ... the heavenly body is constituted from a mover and thing moved just
 590 as from a craftsman and his instrument. It should be clear how also this connection is one
 591 agent of these things below, causing various things according to diverse aspects, conjunc-
 592 tions, *triplicitates*, *dignitates*, and the like, which are shown by the astrologers.⁹³

593 In her significant study of Nifo's demonology, Paola Zambelli characterised
 594 Nifo's syntheses of classical and Arabic sources in the third dispute of the *Destructio*
 595 commentary and in *De daemonibus* as ultimately flawed attempts to avoid the

⁹⁰ On Nifo's work as an example of 'eclectic Aristotelianism' in the Renaissance, see Charles B. Schmitt, *Aristotle and the Renaissance* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1983), pp. 89–109, esp. pp. 98–103.

⁹¹ The connections between Nifo and Pico in relation to magic, and Nifo's reaction in his post-1499 works on astrology to the *Disputationes* are discussed by Zambelli, 'Problemi metodologici', p. 130; *Una reincarnazione*, p. 48; *L'ambigua natura*, pp. 240–241; 'Fine del mondo', pp. 352–356.

⁹² See, for example, Pico, *Disputationes*, ed. Garin, I, pp. 100–106 and II, pp. 472–84 (2.1, and 11.2); see also Grafton, 'Trials and Triumphs', esp. pp. 117–118; on the *Disputationes* and the continuity of argument in this regard with Pico's earlier works, see the discussion and extracts (from *Disputationes* 3.24 and 3.25) in Farmer, *Syncretism in the West*, pp. 139–149.

⁹³ Nifo, *Expositio*, fol. 122^{rb}.

threats of the inquisitors.⁹⁴ The *Destructio* commentary is also well-known for its 596
presentation in 'double truth' arguments of points of conflict between Christian and 597
philosophical positions, which, it has been proposed, may have acted as a stimulus 598
to the young Pietro Pomponazzi.⁹⁵ The fourteenth dispute, however, shows a differ- 599
ent aspect to Nifo's early work. It is a sustained attempt to unite his interests in 600
Aristotelian and Platonic philosophy, in astrology, and in demonology within a 601
unified philosophical argument. The result is a combination of a broadly Christian 602
view of the human soul with an account of the operation of celestial influences 603
which Nifo derived from Averroes and other sources. In the scope of its attempt to 604
bring together conflicting positions into a unified argument based in natural philosophy, 605
it offers an insight into the ambition of its author, something which is rarely seen as 606
clearly in his later works. 607

⁹⁴Zambelli, 'Problemi metodologici', esp. pp. 164 and 171.

⁹⁵Zambelli, *Una reincarnazione*, p. 49.

Author Queries

Chapter No.: 6 0001629567

Queries	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Please confirm the Chapter title.	
AU2	Please provide the author affiliation.	
AU3	Footnotes in Chapter title has been changed as an Article Note.	

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 7

Intellectual Beatitude in the Averroist Tradition: The Case of Agostino Nifo

Leen Spruit

In a passage of the third book of *De anima*, traditionally known as text 36, Aristotle tantalised his readers with the promise: ‘The question of whether or not the intellect can, when not itself separate from [spatial] magnitude, think anything that is separate should be considered later.’¹ This passage suggests the possibility of incorporeal beings as objects of thought, that is to say, of the human intellect thinking incorporeal beings by taking hold of their form. Arabic philosophers, and particularly Averroes, maintained that the ultimate goal of our life consisted in the knowledge of the separate substances through conjunction with those intelligences. The idea of an intellectual beatitude rapidly spread in the Latin West, but was not always formulated in terms of a conjunction with the separate substances.² The first Renaissance author to formulate an extensive and explicit defence of the Averroistic view of intellectual beatitude was probably Agostino Nifo. Here, I present a close reading of Averroes’s exegesis of the above-mentioned passage,³ and a brief analysis of its echoes in the Latin West. Then, Nifo’s doctrine of intellectual beatitude in book VI of *De intellectu* (1503) is outlined.

¹ Aristotle, *De anima*, III.7, 431b 17–19.

² However, an interesting case is that of Thomas Aquinas, who in his comment on *IV Sent.* accepts the Arabic teachings on knowing the separate substances as a model for the knowledge of God face-to-face. See below note @@.

³ For a discussion of intellectual happiness in commentaries on the *Nicomachean Ethics*, see Georg Wieland, ‘The Perfection of Man: On the Cause, Mutability, and Permanence of Human Happiness in 13th Century Commentaries on the *Ethica nicomachea* (EN)’, in *Il commento filosofico nell’Occidente latino (secoli XIII–XV)*, eds Gianfranco Fioravanti, Claudio Leonardi and Stefano Perfetti (Turnhout: Brepols, 2001), pp. 359–377.

L. Spruit, Ph.D. (✉)

Centre for the History of Philosophy and Science, Radboud University Nijmegen,
Nijmegen-Midden, The Netherlands

Sapienza University in Rome, Piazzale Aldo Moro, 500185, Rome, Italy
e-mail: leendert.spruit@fastwebnet.it

20 **Happiness and the Knowledge of Separate Substances**
 21 **in Averroes**

22 Averroes tackles the issue of conjunction⁴ with the agent intellect and the knowledge
 23 of the separate substances in several works. His most extensive treatment of the
 24 issue is in his *De anima* commentary, book III, text 36.⁵ In his commentary on
 25 the *Metaphysics*, he argues that if it were impossible for the (human) intellect to
 26 know separate substances, nature would have acted in vain having produced beings
 27 that by their very nature are intelligible and yet are not known.⁶ In the treatise *De*
 28 *animae beatitudine*, at least in the versions that circulated in the West since the
 29 Middle Ages,⁷ Averroes presents the beatitude of the soul as an ascent to the sepa-
 30 rate intellects, evolving in the frame of a larger hierarchy, which extends from God
 31 through the second causes (intelligences), the agent intellect, the soul, to form and
 32 matter. However, this work is also devoted to other topics and does not offer any
 33 fundamentally new insights for the issue under scrutiny. Therefore, I shall concentrate
 34 on the analysis in the Long Commentary.

⁴The term is also used for the relationship between individual human beings and the material intellect, and for that between the material intellect and the intentions of the imagination. See Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, ed. F. Stuart Crawford (Cambridge, MA: The Mediaeval Academy of America, 1953), III, *v/c* 4–5, pp. 383–413. Besides *continuatio* and *coniunctio* Averroes also used the term *adeptio*, which al-Fārābī used in the context of an emanationist view of reality (which Averroes rejected), as a synonym of the two other terms. See Jean-Baptiste Brenet, 'Perfection de la philosophie ou philosophe parfait? Jean de Jandun lecteur d'Averroès', *Recherches de théologie et philosophie médiévales*, 68 (2001), pp. 310–348 (pp. 313–314, note 12).

⁵Other treatments are in an appendix later added to the Madrid manuscript of Averroes's early *Epitome on De anima*, and in another early work which survives only in Hebrew. For the problem of conjunction in Islamic philosophy and further references, see Deborah H. Black, 'Conjunction and the Identity of Knower and Known in Averroes', *American Catholic Philosophical Society*, 73 (1999), pp. 161–184 (pp. 161, note 2, 164–166, and 180–181, note 47). See also Herbert A. Davidson, *Alfarabi, Avicenna, and Averroes on Intellect: Their Cosmologies, Theories of the Active Intellect, and Theories of Human Intellect* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1992), pp. 321–340; Alfred L. Ivry, 'Averroes on Intellection and Conjunction', *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, 86 (1966), pp. 76–85.

⁶Aristoteles, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562 [first edition 1550–1552]; repr. Frankfurt: Minerva, 1962), VIII, I, cap. 1: 'Sed hoc non demonstrat res abstractas intelligere esse impossibile nobis, sicut inspicere solem est impossibile vespertiloni, quia si ita esset, otiose egisset natura.'

⁷This work which survives under the name of Averroes is in fact a compilation based on two letters on the conjunction with the agent intellect; it puts forth a doctrine inspired by the work of Al-Farabi. Both letters survive in Hebrew and were translated in Latin at the end of the thirteenth century in Italy. It was rediscovered by Alessandro Achillini, who published a revised version, later used by Nifo while preparing his own edition. For a thorough analysis of the origin and versions of this work, see Averroes, *La béatitude de l'âme*, eds and trans. Marc Geoffroy and Carlos Steel (Paris: Vrin, 2001).

In his commentary on text 36 of book III, Averroes begins by dividing the issue into two further questions, that is, (1) whether the intellect knows abstract entities, and (2) whether the intellect, when linked to the human body, is able to know abstract entities, taking for granted that it is able to do so when it exists 'on its own'. According to Averroes, Themistius merely addresses the latter issue, while he intends to discuss both, defining this scrutiny as 'valde difficilis et ambigua'.⁸ As to the first point, he raises the issue that if the intellect is viewed as corruptible, it cannot have any knowledge of abstract being. Indeed, Alexander holds that the intellect that knows the separate contents is neither the material intellect, nor the habitual intellect, but the 'intellectus adeptus', which is here implicitly assimilated to the 'intellectus ab extrinseco'. However, this merely presents a different perspective on the same issue, since one may now wonder how this separate intellect relates to man. These problems explain, according to Averroes, the contradictions between Alexander's *De anima* and his treatise *De intellectu*,⁹ as in this latter work he states that the material intellect, when it has completed its knowledge of the sensible world, may know the agent intellect.

Averroes formulates a first assessment of Alexander's position, suggesting a solution to the questions under scrutiny: when the material intellect knows all material forms, the agent intellect becomes its form and through a 'continuatio' with this separate substance the material intellect may know 'other', that is, abstract entities and thus become 'intellectus adeptus'.¹⁰ However, this position also does not explain how the corruptible (material) intellect receives as its form the eternal (agent) intellect. Averroes points out similar contradictions in the works of Alexander's Arabic followers, that is to say al-Fārābī¹¹ and Ibn Bājja (Lat. Avempace).¹² Therefore, he proposes an alternative which might settle the issue: the material intellect is connected to us through the forms of the imagination, while this very same intellect is connected to the agent intellect 'in another fashion'.¹³

Subsequently, Averroes makes a new start recalling that the source of all ambiguity lays in the fact that Aristotle never examined the matter thoroughly in any of his works. After a brief overview of Ibn Bājja's relevant works, Averroes begins by analysing the position of Themistius who argued that the human intellect's knowledge of material forms simply grounds leads to its capacity of knowing abstract entities, as the latter are characterised by a higher kind of intelligibility and thus far more easy to grasp. Yet, so Averroes rebukes, this argument does not hold when the

⁸ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum*, pp. 480–481.

⁹ See Bernardo Bazàn, 'L'authenticité du *De intellectu* attribué à Alexandre d'Aphrodise', *Revue philosophique de Louvain*, 71 (1973), pp. 468–487.

¹⁰ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum*, pp. 481–484.

¹¹ Elsewhere in his Long Commentary, Averroes criticised al-Fārābī for not admitting the knowledge of separate substances. See Averroes, *Commentarium magnum*, p. 433.

¹² Averroes cites his *On the Conjunction of the Intellect with Man*; for an edition of the Arabic text, see Ibn Bājja, *Opera metaphysica*, ed. Majid Fahri (Beirut: Dār al-Nahār, 1968), pp. 155–173.

¹³ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum*, pp. 484–486.

69 human intellect is considered a 'virtus in corpore', but only when it is viewed as
 70 immaterial. He then raises a further issue: why does the knowledge of separate
 71 substances need a period of intellectual growth, and occurs only at an older age?
 72 For Alexander such a process is easily explained, since a 'complementum in genera-
 73 tione' is typical for all natural beings. This leads to yet another difficulty, however:
 74 why should the knowledge of separate substances be a *complementum actionis* for
 75 the human intellect? In this Averroes once again challenges the fuzzy relationship
 76 between material, habitual and agent intellects, which compromises the knowledge
 77 of eternal beings by a material entity.¹⁴

78 Averroes now returns to the position of Ibn Bājja, who – quite enigmatically, at
 79 least in the Latin version of Averroes's exposition – held that the 'intellecta specula-
 80 tiva sunt facta,' that 'omne factum habet quidditatem', and finally that 'omne habens
 81 quidditatem, intellectus innatus est extrahere illam quidditatem'. This causal connection
 82 allows the human intellect to extract the form of the (separate) intellects and their
 83 quiddities. After a brief reference to al-Fārābī, Averroes explains that, according to
 84 Ibn Bājja, this process of abstracting quiddities cannot go on indefinitely, but that it
 85 necessarily stops at contents without any quiddity at all, that is, those which coincide
 86 with their own quiddity: 'intellectus perveniat ad quidditatem non habentem quidi-
 87 tatem; et quod tale est forma abstracta.' In a similar vein, al-Fārābī held that no
 88 infinite series of abstract entities exists between the habitual intellect and the agent
 89 intellect, but only the acquired intellect.¹⁵ Averroes notes that this kind of argumenta-
 90 tion only holds if a univocity between the quiddities of material and immaterial
 91 beings is given. However, even if the univocity were to be accepted, this view fails to
 92 explain how a corruptible intellect may grasp immaterial beings. Furthermore,
 93 granted that the material intellect knows abstract entities, why is this kind of knowl-
 94 edge not a 'regular' part of the speculative sciences? Indeed, Ibn Bājja wavered as he
 95 distinguished between natural and supernatural powers in his *Epistola expeditionis*,
 96 while in his *Epistola continuationis* he clearly ascribed the knowledge of separate
 97 substances to the speculative sciences. And yet, why do only very few human beings
 98 arrive at this kind of knowledge: is it due to ignorance or to a lack of experience, that
 99 is, to a 'diminution of our nature'? The latter answer suggests that man is said
 100 equivocally, while the former entails that the speculative sciences are not perfect.¹⁶

101 At this point, Averroes introduces his own solution based on the distinction of
 102 two intellectual operations, namely a passive one (*intelligere*) and an active one
 103 (extracting forms from matter) which precedes the passive one. A similar distinction
 104 probably pushed Themistius to view the habitual intellect as composed of material
 105 and agent intellect, and equally Alexander to view the acquired intellect as composed
 106 of agent and habitual intellect. Averroes then states that intellection may be either
 107 natural, i.e., derived from first propositions, or voluntary, that is, consisting of
 108 acquired cognitive contents. In both cases, the *intellecta speculativa* are the product

¹⁴ Ibid., pp. 486–490.

¹⁵ Ibid., pp. 490–493.

¹⁶ Ibid., pp. 493–495.

of an 'actio facta ex congregato', and therefore in this action a form and a matter can be distinguished. The notions of form and matter are not to be viewed as similar to those of natural processes: they qualify the proportion or disposition of the entities involved.¹⁷

Thus, a serial construction of couples of matter and form are pointed out: (a) the link between the imaginative forms and the agent intellect in the generation of *intellecta speculativa* representing the material world; (b) the connection of the habitual intellect (which consists of *intellecta speculativa*, that is, the cognitive contents of the sensible world) and the agent intellect in the generation of *intellecta speculativa* representing abstract entities. In Averroes's view, the objection that corruptible entities cannot grasp abstract entities does not affect this construction because (1) he views the material intellect as eternal and separate, and (2) he considers the habitual intellect as corruptible only in a certain respect.

Averroes holds that all sorts of connections between superior and inferior entities are characterised by the form-matter relationship. Thus, the agent intellect may become the form of the *intellecta speculativa* derived from sensible knowledge, and through this conjunction the human being acquires knowledge of separate substances and becomes similar to God.¹⁸ It should be borne in mind that in this construction the *continuatio* or *copulatio* causes the intellection, and not the other way round. Indeed, that the agent intellect is both efficient and formal cause of the material intellect does not entail two chronologically distinct acts. The possibility of conjunction exists from the outset, but needs to be actualised.¹⁹ As a matter of fact, Averroes also uses the term 'conjunction' to qualify the identification of subject and object at every stage of perception and cognition. The agent intellect is always in the process of becoming our form, precisely insofar as it enters into our cognitive identification with other things. Thus conjunction, it would seem, is treated by Averroes as a special cognitive act in which the separate substance closest to us, the agent intellect, is known by us as the culmination of our philosophical learning, and through it we are able to know the other separate substances. However, conjunction cannot be a search for cognitive identification with the agent intellect, for the agent intellect is never an object of our knowledge in itself, but rather is part of the very fabric of all our intelligibles.²⁰ In this way, two earlier issues can be solved. The knowledge of eternal entities through a 'new' intellection can be explained on the basis of the distinction between potential and actual knowledge, and the fact that the knowledge of abstract entities takes place in time ('non in principio, sed postremo') is due to the fact that the speculative sciences need to be developed.²¹

¹⁷ Ibid., pp. 496–497.

¹⁸ Ibid., pp. 497–500.

¹⁹ Ibid., pp. 485 and 489.

²⁰ Black, 'Conjunction and the Identity of Knower and Known in Averroes', p. 182.

²¹ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum*, p. 501. For further discussion of the texts and issues analyzed in this section, see Averroes of Cordoba, *Long Commentary on the De Anima of Aristotle*, eds. R.C. Taylor and Th.-A. Druart (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2009), in particular pp. LXIX–LXXVI.

145 **Medieval Developments: From Thomas Aquinas**
 146 **to John of Jandun**

147 From the thirteenth century on, the notion of intellectual beatitude spread rapidly in
 148 Western philosophy since the thirteenth century, but not all authors subscribing to
 149 this Aristotelian view endorsed the doctrine of the intellect's conjunction to separate
 150 substances after a full actualization of the possible intellect.²² Some authors, such as
 151 Boethius of Dacia in his *De summo bono*, simply did not address the question.²³
 152 Remarkably, Albertus Magnus qualified the issue of the possible knowledge of sep-
 153 arate substances as the most important of all questions concerning the soul,²⁴ and in
 154 his solution to the problem comes very close to Averroes's position.²⁵ The way he
 155 describes supreme happiness as residing in contemplation is surprisingly similar to
 156 the position that would be defended some 10 years later by some philosophers in the
 157 Faculty of Arts in Paris and condemned as dangerous Averroism.²⁶ Also Siger of

²² Recently, a controversy has sparked over how to interpret the conjunction among medievalist scholars, in particular Luca Bianchi and Alain de Libera. For a discussion, see Maria Bettetini, 'Introduzione: La felicità nel Medioevo', in *La felicità nel Medioevo*, eds Maria Bettetini and Francesco D. Paparella (Louvain-la-Neuve: Fédération Internationale des Instituts d'Études Médiévales, 2005), pp. VIII–X.

²³ Boethius of Dacia, *De summo bono*, in Boethius of Dacia, *Opuscula*, ed. Niels J. Green-Pedersen (Copenhagen: Gad, 1976), pp. 369–377.

²⁴ Albertus Magnus, *De anima*, ed. Clemens Stroick, in *Opera omnia*, 40 vols, eds Bernhard Geyer et al. (Münster: Aschendorff, 1951-), vol. VII.1, tract. 3, cap. 6, p. 215.

²⁵ Albert keeps some distance from Averroes, but only insofar as his position seems not to be supported by Aristotle's texts. Cf. Albertus Magnus, *De anima*, tract. 3, cap. 11, p. 221. For a discussion, see Carlos Steel, 'Medieval Philosophy: An Impossible Project? Thomas Aquinas and the "Averroistic" Ideal of Happiness', in *Was ist Philosophie in Mittelalter?*, eds Jan A. Aertsen and Andreas Speer (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 1998), pp. 152–174 (159).

²⁶ Albertus Magnus, *De anima*, tract. 3, cap. 12, pp. 224–225: 'Et ideo etiam in dubium venit, sicut SUPRA diximus, utrum intellectus, secundum quod est in nobis coniunctus imaginationi et sensui, posset aliquid separatum intelligere; intellectus enim post mortem constat, quod intelligit separata. Et nos diximus in illa quaestione, quod nobis videbatur, quoniam nobis videtur, quod in hac vita continuatur cum agente formaliter, et tunc per agentem intelligit separata, quia aliter felicitas contemplativa non attingeretur ab homine in hac vita; et hoc est contra omnes PERIPATETICOS, qui dicunt, quod fiducia contemplantium est ut formam attingere intellectum agentem. Est enim, sicut SUPRA diximus, triplex status nostri intellectus, scilicet in potentia et in profectioe potentiae ad actum et in adeptioe. In potentia autem existens nullo modo attingit agentem sicut formam, sed dum proficit, tunc movetur ad coniunctionem cum adepto, et tunc, quantum habet de intellectis, tantum est coniunctus, et quantum caret eis, tantum est non coniunctus. Habitis autem omnibus intelligibilibus in toto est coniunctus et tunc vocatur adeptus. Et sic sunt differentiae intellectus nostri quattuor: Quorum primus est possibilis vocatus intellectus, secundus autem universaliter agens et tertius speculativus et quartus adeptus. Accessus autem ex naturae aptitudine ad adeptum vocatur subtilitas, et expeditus usus adepti in actu vocatur sollertia; subtilitas autem causatur ex splendore intelligentiae super possibilem ex natura; sollertia autem est bona dispositio velociter inveniendi multas causas.' Cf. *Super Ethica*, in *Opera*, XIV.2, pp. 774–75.

Brabant, as far as Nifo's testimony can be trusted,²⁷ endorsed the thesis of direct knowledge of separate substances and eventually of God.²⁸ In contrast, this view was refuted by Thomas Aquinas, who accepted the Arabic conception of knowing the separate substances as a model for the vision of God in his commentary on the Sentences,²⁹ but challenged the foundations of philosophical happiness in his *Summa contra Gentiles*: all human knowledge 'in this state' is sense-bound, and thus our grasp of the realm of insensible, immaterial reality remains imperfect, as it is based on inference.³⁰ In his commentary on the *Metaphysics*, Aquinas rejects Averroes's view that nature would have acted in vain if the human intellect could not reach knowledge of the separate substances. First, separate substances are not designed to be known by our intellect. Second, though we may not know them, they are known by other intellects.³¹ Then, in 1277 Averroes's view was condemned by Etienne Tempier, the bishop of Paris.³² Nonetheless, the doctrine remained a topic of discussion and, in some cases, expanded upon by other authors, among whom Thomas Wylton,³³ Duns Scotus,³⁴ John of Jandun, Rudolph Brito,³⁵ Ferrandus of Spain,³⁶

²⁷ See Agostino Nifo, *De intellectu*, ed. Leen Spruit (Leiden: Brill, 2011), 'Introduction', pp. 18–24.

²⁸ See Agostino Nifo, *De intellectu libri sex. Eiusdem de demonibus libri tres* (Venice: Girolamo Scoto, 1554), book VI, ch. 12; for a discussion, see Carlos Steel, 'Siger of Brabant versus Thomas Aquinas on the Possibility of Knowing the Separate Substances', in *Nach der Verurteilung von 1277: Philosophie und Theologie an der Universität von Paris im letzten Viertel des 13. Jahrhunderts*, eds Jan A. Aertsen, Kent Emery, Jr., and Andreas Speer (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 2001), pp. 211–232.

²⁹ Thomas Aquinas, *In IV. Sent.*, dist. 49, q. 2, a. 1. For discussion, see Jan-Baptiste Brenet, 'S'uir à l'intellect, voir Dieu: Averroès et la doctrine de la jonction au cœur du Thomisme', *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, 21 (2011), pp. 215–247.

³⁰ Thomas Aquinas, *Summa contra Gentiles*, III, chs. 26–45, in particular chs. 41–45. See also Thomas Aquinas, *In duodecim libros Metaphysicorum Aristotelis expositio*, eds Marie-Raymond Cathala and Raimondo M. Spiazzi (Turin: Marietti, 1964), lectio 1, n. 285. For Aquinas on highest happiness in this life, cf. *In Eth. Nic.*, X, lectio 13; cf. I, lectio 10.

³¹ Aquinas, *In duodecim libros Metaphysicorum Aristotelis expositio*, II, lectio 1, n. 286, p. 82. For additional arguments from other works and for discussion of Thomas's position, see Steel, 'Medieval Philosophy: An Impossible Project?', pp. 159–160.

³² See theses 40, 154, 157, and 176.

³³ See Thomas Wilton, *Quaestio disputata de anima intellectiva*, ed. Władysław Senko, in *Studia Mediewistyczne*, 5 (1964), pp. 5–190 (pp. 86–87).

³⁴ John Duns Scotus, *Questiones super Metaphysicam*, II, q. 3: 'Utrum substantiae immateriales possint intelligi a nobis secundum suas qualitates pro hoc statu?', in *Opera omnia*, a Patribus Franciscanis de observantia accurate recognita, 26 vols (Paris: Louis Vivès, 1891–1895; repr. Westmead, Franborough, and Hants: Gregg International Publishers, 1969), VII, pp. 110–115.

³⁵ Radulphus Brito, *Quaestiones in Aristotelis librum tertium De anima*, in Winfried Fauser, *Der Kommentar des Radulphus Brito zur Buch III De anima* (Münster: Aschendorff, 1973), pp. 276–292.

³⁶ Ferrandus Hispanus, *De species intelligibili*, ed. Zdzisław Kuksewicz, *Medioevo*, 3 (1997), pp. 187–235 (225). See Steel, 'Medieval Philosophy: An Impossible Project?', pp. 168–169.

173 Henry Bate,³⁷ and James of Pistoia.³⁸ For present purposes, we will focus on Jandun's
174 position, which is of particular interest.³⁹

175 Jandun addresses the issue in his commentaries on *De anima* and *Metaphysics*.⁴⁰
176 In his commentary on text 36 in book III of *De anima*, he initially discusses the
177 views of Alexander of Aphrodisias, Themistius, Ibn Bājja, Averroes, and Thomas
178 Aquinas, and then, he goes on to point out some difficulties. (1) How can the agent
179 intellect become the form of the possible intellect? Either, it is already a form and
180 thus, it cannot change (i.e., become the form of another entity), or it is a subsisting
181 substance and thus, it cannot become the form of another substance (the possible
182 intellect). (2) If some of the intelligible objects are known and others are not, then
183 the agent intellect is only partially the form of the possible intellect, which is to say
184 the least a problematic view. (3) Happiness should be available to all humans, while
185 philosophical beatitude apparently is not. (4) The status of the *intellecta operabilia*
186 and of practical philosophy is uncertain. (5) Knowledge of separate substances
187 seems out of reach for our inferior, human intellect.⁴¹ These objections are all
188 answered and solved. (ad 1–2) The conjunction of agent and possible intellect is to
189 be viewed as 'new' only insofar as (actual) knowledge is concerned. (ad 3) Nothing
190 in human nature is opposed to intellectual beatitude. (ad 4) The objects of specula-
191 tive cognition pertain to the perfection of the possible intellect, rather than to the
192 practical intellect. (ad 5) Aquinas's arguments do not hold.⁴²

193 In his commentary on the *Metaphysics*, Jandun formulates other objections:
194 (a) our intellect only knows what the agent intellect abstracts, while the separate
195 substances are abstract entities *per se*; (b) infinite being transcends the finite; (c) our
196 intellect relates to the separate substances as a blind man does to colours; (d) our
197 intellect does not know what is not permitted to be known (God and separate sub-
198 stances).⁴³ Yet, (ad a) Aristotle discussed the separate substances in book 12 of the
199 *Metaphysics*, (ad b-c) Averroes referred to difficulties to realise this kind of knowl-
200 edge, not to its impossibility; (ad d) a natural desire cannot be in vain. Following

³⁷ For discussion, see Steel, 'Medieval Philosophy: An Impossible Project?', pp. 161–167; Steel, 'Siger of Brabant versus Thomas Aquinas', pp. 226–227.

³⁸ See Iacobus de Pistorio, *Quaestio de felicitate*, ed. Irene Zavattero, in *La felicità nel medioevo*, pp. 395–409.

³⁹ Some scholars argue that also Siger opposed Thomas in some of his 'lost' works, referred to by Agostino Nifo and reconstructed by Bruno Nardi. For discussion of this issue, see below and the introduction to my edition of Nifo's *De intellectu*, pp. 18–20.

⁴⁰ Among the recent studies on Jandun, in particular as to his relation with Averroes, see Brenet, 'Perfection de la philosophie ou philosophe parfait?' and id., *Transferts du sujet: La noétique d'Averroès selon Jean de Jandun* (Paris: Vrin, 2003), pp. 371–432, for the view of intellectual beatitude.

⁴¹ See John of Jandun, *Super libros de anima subtilissimae quaestiones* (Venice: Heirs of Girolamo Scoto, 1587; repr. Frankfurt am Main: Minerva, 1966), col. 419.

⁴² Jandun, *Super libros De anima*, cols 420–424.

⁴³ John of Jandun, *In duodecim libros metaphysicae* (Venice: Girolamo Scoto, 1553; repr. Frankfurt am Main: Minerva, 1966), fol. 22^v.

this, Jandun returns to the views of the Greek, Arab and Latin masters, and concludes that by means of the acquisition of the agent intellect, the possible intellect is disposed to ascend to knowledge of all separate substances, until it arrives at the intuitive knowledge of God's essence through the 'acquisition' of the agent intellect.⁴⁴ Jandun explains that at the beginning the agent intellect is united to the possible intellect only as the efficient cause of the intelligibles in it, but at the end, after the agent intellect has abstracted and 'filled' the possible intellect with all the intelligible species of material things,⁴⁵ it is united to it as its form.⁴⁶ The possible intellect thus becomes *intellectus adeptus*, knows through the agent intellect God and the other separate substances, and thereby attains its supreme state. Human happiness consists dispositionally in the acquisition of the agent intellect, but formally in the act of wisdom whereby we know God directly and are conformed to him.⁴⁷

Agostino Nifo on Intellectual Beatitude in De Intellectu

Nifo discusses the issue of human happiness in two of his early works: in book 6 of his treatise *De intellectu* and in his commentary on *De animae beatitudine*, a work then attributed to Averroes. These works were based on courses completed in 1492, but their publication came later and only after considerable reworking and self-censorship in an anti-Averroistic sense. *De intellectu* was published in 1503, the edition of and commentary on *De animae beatitudine* in 1508.⁴⁸ Remarkably, in his analysis and view of beatitude Nifo substantially endorses the Averroist position, and his commentary on *De animae beatitudine* contains only some minor pious corrections.

Some preliminary remarks are due. First, the issue of the 'state of the soul' (i.e., human beatitude) concerns several fields of the Aristotelian edifice of learning, namely, psychology, metaphysics, cosmology and ethics, and as a result requires a comparative analysis of several works, chiefly *De anima*, *Nicomachean Ethics*,

⁴⁴ Jandun, *In duodecim libros Metaphysicae*, fols 24^v, 25^v: 'Dicendum quod de Deo potest haberi duplex cognitio, una complexa alia simplex et intuitiva. Modo verum est de cognitione Dei complexa qua cognoscitur quod Deus est actus purus et substantia simpliciter, et sic de aliis, illa procedit ab habitu sapientiae. Sed cognitio simplex intuitiva qua cognoscitur Deus et alia principia abstracta quo ad quidditatem eius, illa bene habetur per adeptionem intellectus agentis, et sic intellexit Commentator.' Cf. Jandun, *Super libros De anima*, III, q. 36, cols 421–24. For the problematic aspects of individual beatitude, see Brenet, 'Perfection de la philosophie ou philosophe parfait?', pp. 344–348.

⁴⁵ For discussion of Jandun's view of intelligible species, see Leen Spruit, *Species Intelligibilis from Perception to Knowledge*, 2 vols (Leiden: Brill, 1994–1995), I, pp. 328–337.

⁴⁶ Cf. Jandun, *Super libros De anima*, III, q. 36, cols 416, 418–420.

⁴⁷ Jandun, *In Duodecim Libros Metaphysicae*, I, q. 1, fols 1^a–2^a; cf. XII, q. 4, fol. 130^a. For discussion, see Edward P. Mahoney, 'John of Jandun and Agostino Nifo on Human Felicity', in *L'homme et son univers au Moyen Âge*, ed. Christian Wenin (Louvain-la-Neuve: Éditions de l'Institut Supérieur de Philosophie, 1986), pp. 465–477 (pp. 467–468).

⁴⁸ For this compilation, see note @@ above.

[AU1]

226 *De caelo*, and *Metaphysics*. Nifo also drew on a vast number of other sources,
 227 discussing a broad range of theories and quoting countless writers, including ancient
 228 and biblical literature, Greek and Arabic philosophy, and medieval as well as
 229 contemporary, late fifteenth-century thought. Although his main interlocutors were
 230 Themistius, Ibn Bājjā, Averroes, Siger of Brabant and John of Jandun, views and
 231 strands derived from the Platonic and Hermetic traditions played an important role
 232 in Nifo's argumentative strategy. Second, time and again, Nifo's vast erudition
 233 stands in the way of a clear and lucid argumentation. The uninhibited display of
 234 learning characteristic of Nifo often makes it difficult for him, as it now makes it
 235 difficult for us, to determine his own philosophical position. The extremely detailed
 236 discussions of the views of other authors, the endless string of solutions and refuta-
 237 tions, and in general the lack of balance between *pars destruens* and *pars construens*
 238 easily distracts the reader's attention away from his rather succinctly formulated
 239 'true' and, as we hope, personal views. Furthermore, criticisms of authors rarely
 240 mean that their views are radically banned, and in the end, Nifo's final conclusions
 241 are surprising similar to those of Siger and Jandun, who had been fiercely criticised
 242 throughout book 6 of *De intellectu*.

243 In the first chapters of *De intellectu*, Nifo presents and refutes the arguments of
 244 those who entertain the mortality of the soul and hold various views regarding beati-
 245 tude: some hold that it consists of health and beauty (Carneades), other ones deem
 246 it richness and good fortune (Diogenes), pleasure (Epicurus), or glory (Stoics).⁴⁹
 247 After a brief reference to the position of the Academics (happiness consists in a
 248 coincidence of three kinds of goods, regarding soul, body and fortune, respectively)
 249 and that of the Peripatetics (happiness is sought for its own sake), Siger's view in his
 250 lost *De foelicitate* is presented (happiness is identified with God, being the highest
 251 good and principle of all goods) and refuted with the help of passages from Aristotle's
 252 *Nicomachean Ethics*.⁵⁰ Following this, Nifo discusses whether God or any separate
 253 substance can be known, outlining first Themistius's arguments against knowledge
 254 of immaterial beings and then putting forth arguments based on Themistius and
 255 Alexander proving that the intellect may grasp separate substances: (1) knowledge
 256 of immaterial beings is less burdensome than that of material things; (2) the intellect
 257 has in potency the ability to abstract intellects; and (3) the intellect may attain this
 258 end through a medium, namely the intellect in habit.⁵¹

259 Subsequently, Nifo presents the doubts Averroes had put forward concerning
 260 these arguments: (1) a distinction should be drawn between the intellect taken as
 261 intellect and the intellect insofar as it is linked to the human body; (2) if one accepts
 262 that the intellect as intellect always knows the separate substances, it cannot be
 263 explained why we do not know them from the start but only at the end of our intel-
 264 lectual development. Then, the arguments listed above are defended. Themistius
 265 proved that what is possible to the intellect as intellect, is also possible to the human

⁴⁹ Nifo, *De intellectu*, VI, chs. 2–8, fols 53^v–54^r.

⁵⁰ *Ibid.*, chs. 9–13, fols 54^v–55^r.

⁵¹ *Ibid.*, chs. 14–15, fols 55^v.

being: (i) the capabilities of the form extend to its *substratum*, and (ii) the intellect is the first, and thus the final perfection of the human being. He also proved that the intellect, as it knows materials in virtue of abstraction, does not meet any problem in grasping more abstract beings. Furthermore, according to Nifo, Averroes has shown that Alexander's arguments are conclusive if the material intellect is viewed as immaterial and eternal, and the speculative intellect as a dispositional medium for the knowledge of separate substances.⁵²

Nifo lists a series of arguments taken from Ibn Bājjā, derived from Averroes's Long Commentary on *De anima* (see above),⁵³ and further arguments made by Averroes: (i) what is highly desired is attainable, because natural desires are not impossible; (ii) every capability detached from matter may know whatever knowable object; (iii) unknown cognitive objects would exist in vain (*ociose*), that is, without being grasped. He criticises Siger for construing the latter argument solely from the point of view of the intelligences and Jandun for doing the same from the perspective of the human power to understand. Nifo's own view is that Averroes recognised an aptitude for a cognitive union both on the part of the human intellect as well as on that of the separate substances.⁵⁴

In ch. 23, Nifo discusses 13 fundamental problems concerning Averroes's doctrine, the first four of which are discussed in an extremely detailed way in the chapters 24 to 53.

What is True (Philosophical) Happiness?

First, Nifo presents an (anonymous) position – one quite interesting from a historical point of view – which suggests that beatitude consists formally in the loving of God, more precisely in a love based upon an intuitive knowledge of God. This position is refuted: (i) happiness cannot be an act or operation that is distinct from the essence of the intellect; (ii) the act of happiness is not intuitive love, but primarily comprehension.⁵⁵ After a discussion of yet another position, Averroes's true opinion is exposed as based on the view that the objects of intellect and will are identical, just as intellect and will are but one faculty. Although the intellect grasps its object 'absolutely', while the will does so 'sub indifferentia fugae vel consensus', their happiness is one and the same. God is primarily an object of the intellect, and of the will only insofar as the latter 'contracts' the act of knowledge. Furthermore, inferior intellects may know God in two ways, that is, either through His essence or through

⁵² Ibid., chs. 16–17, fols 55^v–56^r.

⁵³ It is worth remembering here that Ibn Bājjā died when Averroes was only 10 years and that everything known of Ibn Bājjā for the Latins came from the Long Commentary on *De anima* by Averroes.

⁵⁴ Ibid., chs. 18–21, fols 56^r–57^r.

⁵⁵ Ibid., chs. 25–26, fols 57^v–58^r.

299 the essence of an inferior intellect. Finally, the agent intellect is twofold: God and a
 300 level of perfection of the rational soul.⁵⁶ Thus, humans may know God in two ways,
 301 through His essence and through the essence of his own intellect:

302 In the second way, the lower intellect understands (*intelligit*) the higher one through the
 303 essence of the lower one. For instance, the intellect of the Moon understands God through
 304 the essence of the Moon's intellect, and in this way it understands God Himself, considering
 305 that, compared to the intellect of the Moon, God is the agent principle. Therefore, the rela-
 306 tionship of the lower intellect to God is as if the lower intellect were the form and the end
 307 according to the *secundaria intentio* [i.e., on a conceptual level] and this is what led Siger
 308 and his followers astray, for, in one respect, God is the end and the form of all lower intellects,
 309 that is, with respect to the *esse intentionale* [i.e., from the point of view of knowledge], in
 310 another, He is the agent principle, moved as it were by a second intention, and therefore the
 311 lower intellect understands God through its own essence, just as the intellect of the Moon
 312 understands God through the essence of the Moon's intellect. I have examined this whole
 313 question in my comment of the book *On the Soul*.⁵⁷

314 *Whether the Conjunction is Immediate or Mediate*

315 The discussion of the second issue initially regards the distinction between essence
 316 and potencies of the human soul. Given that humans are 'minimum capaces foelicitatis',
 317 Nifo asks whether they need any medium, and whether this medium is an
 318 intrinsic or extrinsic part of the soul. He refutes Jandun's position, which is based
 319 on the mediating role of the speculative intellect, itself made up of intelligible species:
 320 (i) the intellect would know the separate substances through accidents (species), not
 321 through their essences; (ii) we would not know them through an eternal intellection;
 322 (iii) the respective intellections would regard the agent, not the form; (iv) the known
 323 being would have an intellect; (v) the agent intellect's 'continuation' would depend
 324 upon our knowing; (vi) there would be no new or ancient accident in separate sub-
 325 stances except one depending upon material reality. Nifo then presents his own
 326 view: just as the intellect of the Moon depends on God in three ways, namely as
 327 efficient cause, form and end, the speculative intellect depends upon the separate
 328 intellects and thus on God.⁵⁸ The consequence of this argument is that the union
 329 with separate intellects is stronger than that between universal and individual, and
 330 that God eventually is known as form, when we know Him through His essence:

331 The speculative intellect depends on the separate substances, and above all on God, according
 332 to three meanings of 'cause,' i.e., according to the categories of efficient, formal and final
 333 cause. I shall therefore say that, just as the intellect of the Moon understands (*intelligit*) God
 334 through the essence of God with respect to the notion of form and end, and through its own
 335 essence with respect to the notion of agent, and, as it were, a posteriori, in the same way,

⁵⁶ Ibid., chs. 27–28, fols 58^r–58^v.

⁵⁷ Ibid., ch. 28, fols 58^v.

⁵⁸ Ibid., chs. 29–39, fols 58^v–61^r.

being perfected and formed (*adepti ac formati*) by the speculative intellect, we depend on the separate intellects and the first intellect, i.e., God, according to a threefold bond of dependence: end, form and agent.⁵⁹

On Whether Beatitude Occurs in This Life or After Death According to Averroes 339
340

Nifo defends the thesis that the connection between the intellect and the human body allows knowledge of the separate substances: (1) a potency and a natural desire would be idle; (2) after death no intellectual memory survives, thus beatitude is possible only in this life; (3) the rational soul is an adequate perfection which may develop its possible operations, among which happiness; (4) body does not oppose soul; (5) *copulatio* does not oppose the embodied soul (support from biblical stories, Hermes Trismegistus, and Plato); (6) when the inclinations to opposed acts survive, beatitude would be impossible also after death. Thus, the Averroists hold that God may be the form of the intellect, considering the latter both as intellect in the strict sense and insofar as it is connected to the body.⁶⁰ This is the foundation of intuitive knowledge of God in this life:

[Averroes] allowed that the soul could be united to the agent intellect (*copulatio animae cum intellectu agente*), who is God most high. When he says ‘through philosophy,’ he means a positive and privative medium, for philosophy includes a speculative and a practical part. Therefore, taking the intellect as a guide through philosophy, that is, when the soul is united (*copulata*) to the separate intellect through philosophy as if through an intermediary being, the soul reaches the highest level of knowledge (*summe sapuit*), for then it understands (*comprehendet*) God through His essence and the other separate intellects, and the soul, knowing (*apprehendens*) through the divine light, i.e., knowing the abstract divine intellects through their essence, it prophesies to the mortals and shares with them in a generous way the knowledge of them. This is the perfection of the soul.⁶¹

On Which Kind of Copulatio Provides Happiness 362

Here, the issue is first solved and then explained. The conjunction is a union of pre-existent, discontinuous beings ‘*nec remissis nec intensis*’, and therefore it is not to be confused with generation or mixture. Averroes distinguishes five types of

⁵⁹ *Ibid.*, ch. 39, fol. 60^v.

⁶⁰ *Ibid.*, chs. 40–42, fols 61^v.

⁶¹ *Ibid.*, ch. 45, fol. 62^v. Recall, that Nifo interprets Averroes through the doctrine found in the pseudo-Averroes, *De beatitudine animae*.

366 conjunction: (1) potential and agent intellects, (2) agent and speculative intellects,
 367 (3) potential intellect and the human being, (4) agent intellect and the human being,
 368 and (5) imaginative intention with potential intellect. As far as its nature is con-
 369 cerned, the agent intellect is always connected to the possible intellect and thus no
 370 medium is required, because the last of the separate intelligences grasps the *abstracta*
 371 *supra se* through the latter's and its own essence. However, insofar as the intellects
 372 are connected to us, this *copulatio* is twofold, namely as agent to *passum* (the agent
 373 intellect generating known objects that are received in the possible intellect), on the
 374 one hand, and as form, when the agent intellect becomes the potential intellect's
 375 essential intellection, on the other. Some propositions are derived from these con-
 376 siderations: (1) something (i.e., the agent intellect) may be form and agent with
 377 respect to the same substratum; (2) something may be *agens sui* in different forms:
 378 the agent intellect generates the speculative intellect which in turn causes the poten-
 379 tial intellect's acquisition of the agent intellect as form; (3) the agent intellect is the
 380 efficient cause of all known things; (4) it is not the intellection that causes the con-
 381 junction, but the other way round.⁶²

382 Moreover, the conjunction of the agent intellect with the speculative intellect is
 383 twofold: (a) the agent intellect creates the latter in the potential intellect, (b) the
 384 speculative intellect is a dispositional medium through which the agent intellect
 385 becomes the form of the potential intellect. Thus, two propositions can be formul-
 386 ated: (i) the *copulatio* of the agent and speculative intellects precedes that between
 387 agent and material intellects; (ii) not the speculative but the material intellect is the
 388 'real matter' of the agent intellect.⁶³ Once the other conjunctions have been expounded,
 389 Averroes's ladder to happiness can be presented: apprehension of individual objects,
 390 the acquisition of intellectually known objects, and, through the formation of the
 391 speculative intellect, the acquisition of the agent and material intellects; happiness
 392 has two subjects, one is proximate (potential intellect), the other is remote (the
 393 human being).⁶⁴

394 *On Whether Human Beings are Like God in the State* 395 *of Happiness, As Themistius States*

396 Nifo argues that human beings become like God because they are formed by the
 397 superior intellects and because they may know all things. In this sense human beings
 398 are like a universe and connect material things to God.⁶⁵

⁶² Ibid., chs. 46–47, fol. 63^r.

⁶³ Ibid., ch. 48, fols 63^v.

⁶⁴ Ibid., chs 49–51, fols 63^v.

⁶⁵ Ibid., ch. 54, fol. 64^r.

On Whether the Agent Intellect is Connected to us Before it is Known by us, or Before we Begin to Understand Through It 399 400

The knowledge of the agent intellect precedes its being conjoined, because every new relationship requires a new foundation, which can only be the intellection, as sensation and some unknown disposition are to be excluded. We depend upon the agent intellect as form, end, and efficient cause, and thus we know this intellect through our essence or through its own essence.⁶⁶ 401 402 403 404 405

On Whether the Intellection of the Happy Human Being is 'New' or Eternal 406 407

This issue is once again solved with the help of Averroes who argues that the intellection of those who are happy is eternal, and yet, it appears to be 'new': (1) it is an operation that denominates a new substratum; (2) it is an operation caused by the agent intellect, and every operation that is caused is something new; (3) if it were eternal, the human being would be eternal too; (4) nothing eternal depends upon something transitory.⁶⁷ 408 409 410 411 412

On Whether This Intellection is Intuitive or Abstractive 413

Against Arabic (al-Fārābī, Ibn Bājjā) and Latin (Aquinas, Giles) authors who hold that we cannot grasp the separate substances through intuitive knowledge, Nifo argues that our intellect may know the separate substances through their essences: (1) the object of our intellect is being, and thus nothing of the existing reality can be excluded from its reach; (2) there cannot be any process *in infinitum*; (3) as the senses grasp their object through intuition and abstraction, the intellect cannot be deprived of these capabilities.⁶⁸ 414 415 416 417 418 419 420

On Whether a Master May Communicate it to a Pupil 421

This issue is easily solved, as every well-prepared pupil (with regard to bodily, vegetative, sensitive and intellectual capabilities) is ready to accept the communication of his master, or of several specialised masters. Nifo also stresses the importance of virtues and internal senses.⁶⁹ 422 423 424 425

⁶⁶ Ibid., ch. 55, fol. 64r.

⁶⁷ Ibid., ch. 56, fol. 64r.

⁶⁸ Ibid., ch. 57, fols 64v–65r.

⁶⁹ Ibid., ch. 58, fol. 65r.

426 ***On Whether the Human Being is Able to Contact Separate***
 427 ***Substances Through Intellecta Falsa***

428 This issue also deserves little discussion. Falsely known objects, that is, false propo-
 429 sitions, cannot ground or lead to *continuatio* or *copulatio*, as they are external to the
 430 'course of nature.' They are present in the potential, not in the agent intellect.⁷⁰

431 ***On Whether Human Beings When They Start to be Happy,***
 432 ***Start to Know by Means of the Agent Intellect***

433 The problem of whether initial happiness entails an immediate knowledge of the
 434 agent intellect and God is similarly solved in a single chapter. There are two ways
 435 in which something can come to be: (1) being disposed to generation (the induction
 436 of the form in matter), (2) to start being generated (the form starts being in matter).
 437 Our happiness entails knowledge of the agent intellect in the second sense only,
 438 since the first type is only a predisposition; eventually, man knows the agent intel-
 439 lect as a form and an end (through its essence), and also as an agent (through our
 440 essence).⁷¹

441 ***On Whether Separate Substances are Known all Together***
 442 ***or in a Certain Order***

443 The solution to this problem offers a fine example of the intricate link between
 444 astrology, cosmology and noetics in Nifo's view of intellectual beatitude. The separate
 445 intellects contain the speculative intellect in a certain order (Saturn to Moon), while
 446 the speculative intellect contains the intelligences *a posteriori* like an effect contains
 447 its cause. Thus, when the potential intellect is joined to God as a form, it is joined to
 448 all intermediary intellects, but in a twofold manner, namely regarding their nature as
 449 well as their origin. The intermediary intellects mediate in two directions, climbing
 450 the ladder less means of knowledge (that is, forms and/or intentions) are involved,
 451 and thus one reaches a superior level of conjunction.⁷²

⁷⁰ Ibid., ch. 59, fol. 65^r.

⁷¹ Ibid., ch. 60, fols 65^v.

⁷² Ibid., ch. 61, fol. 65^v. The ascent of the human intellect through the hierarchy of intelligences which are ordered according to the order of the planets to which they are related is borrowed from Averroes, *De animae beatitudine*; cf. infra.

***On Whether Several Humans can be Happy
Through One Happiness***

452

453

The solution of this last issue is based on the distinction between a privative and a positive kind of adequacy, happiness being adequate to all human beings in a positive, not in a privative sense. Accordingly, the same happiness can exist in several persons.⁷³

454

455

456

457

Only at this point can Nifo expound the foundations of Aristotle's view.⁷⁴ The rational soul, including its vegetative and sensitive capabilities, cannot be divided into a plurality of souls with different 'latitudes.' The rational soul triggers intellectual (prudence, wisdom, wit, memory) and ethical (temperance, liberality, equity, friendship) virtues as well as several passions (fear, hate, love, pleasure), habits and potencies. The latter are faculties that arise from the essence of soul. Passions arise from appetite and the body, while habits are dispositions that arise in sensitive appetite. The rational soul may operate on different levels but never at the same time, since lower levels may disturb higher activities.⁷⁵

458

459

460

461

462

463

464

465

466

Nifo then discusses the perfection of the rational part of the soul according to Aristotle's view. An intelligible can be conceived of in three ways: (1) 'in time', that is accompanied by the perception of time, more or less abstracted from the changing nature of matter; (2) 'in the continuum', i.e., according to Aristotelian categories for analyzing natural reality; and (3) according to its own nature. The first type is twofold: (i) the ratio of the sensible form in itself, known through abstraction, and (ii) the ratio of sensible objects which concern mobile matter (accidentally in time). The second type is of two kinds, too: (i) *per se*, such as, quantity, shape, number, motion, rest, and (ii) what is conceived by the intellect when it applies to imagination, that is, mathematics (i.e., geometry). Finally, the third type is of two kinds, too: (i) accidentally (quiddities of sensible things) and in itself (God, the intellects). The rational soul develops through knowledge of the intelligibles in time (natural science) and natural reality (imagination) until it reaches the metaphysical intelligibles, when the speculative intellect is formed, and finally by way of knowledge of the separate substances until the first intellect is reached. Who does not acquire beatitude in this life, does not reach it in the afterlife.⁷⁶

467

468

469

470

471

472

473

474

475

476

477

478

479

480

481

482

⁷³ Nifo, *De intellectu*, VI, ch. 62, fols 65^v–66^r.

⁷⁴ Nifo argues that first another issue needs to be examined, namely the soul's operations and the happiness after death. After having discussed several doubts, he concludes that, given its immortality, it cannot be denied that the soul develops some activity after death. Nifo, *De intellectu*, VI, ch. 63–64. Doubts are solved in ch. 71.

⁷⁵ Nifo, *De intellectu*, VI, ch. 65, fol. 66^v. See *ibid.*, II, ch. 17, fol. 21^v: 'Sed rationalis anima in sui operatione nobilissima, scilicet in speculatione summa primi entis, quae est possibilis ei ac naturalissima, in qua summe quiescit, impeditur a corpore.'

⁷⁶ *Ibid.*, ch. 66, fol. 67^v.

483 The sensitive appetite is ruled by practical syllogisms, from which habits originate.
 484 Then appetitive potencies arise from the habits, and when they are perfected, the
 485 sensual part is turned into the intellect. The happiness of the sensible part is an
 486 operation on the passions according to the instructions of practical reason, so that
 487 the conjunction of the intellect with reason is eventually attained. Only then can a
 488 series of further *copulationes* become possible: speculative intellect, separate intel-
 489 lects and God. By contrast, the misery or damnation of the human soul after death
 490 consists of a complete conversion of reason to sense. The human soul will suffer fire
 491 on the basis of the (negative) habits and passions that survive. Thus, misery consists
 492 of an everlasting desire in pleasure.⁷⁷

493 This picture raises new doubts, however: (1) if the acquisition (*adeptio*) of the
 494 speculative intellect and moral habits are required for reaching a condition of hap-
 495 piness, then women cannot reach beatitude,⁷⁸ and the same holds for children who
 496 die young; (2) what is the destiny of the soul after death? Nifo replies that the first
 497 doubt is a problem for Peripatetic philosophy only (women have a minor disposition
 498 to be united to the intellect), not for the Christian faith. And as far as newborn chil-
 499 dren are concerned, happiness after death depends indeed, according to Aristotle,
 500 upon the happiness acquired during earthly life. For the solution of the second doubt
 501 Aristotle's texts are of little help Plato, Speusippus and Socrates held that the motors
 502 of the orbs are in the stars, rather than in any other part of the orb, and, relying on
 503 their views, Nifo argues that the relationship between the soul and the stars is based
 504 on the seed of the first intellect, which the stars transmit to the soul. This also
 505 explains the transmission of the characteristics of the celestial bodies to individual
 506 human beings; thus, after death, every soul returns to its proper star.⁷⁹ And with this
 507 rather surprising cosmological perspective Nifo concludes his treatment of human
 508 beatitude in *De intellectu*.

509 In his commentary on Averroes's *De animae beatitudine*, Nifo substantially
 510 develops the same ideas, but with some interesting specifications. From the outset,
 511 he states that the human soul acquires divine being when in conjunction with the
 512 separate substances.⁸⁰ The material intellect knows the agent intellect through the
 513 latter's essence, when it becomes the form of the material intellect. Thus, a beatific
 514 state is reached characterised by a unity of material and agent intellect and the *res*
 515 *intellecta*. As said before, in this commentary Nifo feels the need to provide some
 516 pious clarifications. For example, he states that Averroes argued for a purely natural
 517 way to beatitude. Nifo, however, referring to his *De intellectu*, maintains that this
 518 state is provided by God on the basis of *meritoriae actiones*.⁸¹ Furthermore, in this

⁷⁷ Ibid., chs. 67–68, fols 67^v–68^r.

⁷⁸ This phrase suggests that at least some Peripatetic philosophers regarded women as intellectually inferior to men.

⁷⁹ Ibid., chs 69–70, fols 68^v. See ibid., I, ch. 14, fol. 8^r: 'Videtur ergo Plato dictum Mosis sic exponere quod Deus substantias omnes spirituales creavit, ut animas, et eas posuit in stellis tanquam semina et exordia animalium humanorum.'

⁸⁰ Agostino Nifo, *In Averrois de animae beatitudine* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1508), fol. 2^v.

⁸¹ Nifo, *In Averrois de animae beatitudine*, fol. 19^v. Probably, Nifo, *De intellectu*, VI, cap. 70, fol. 68^v.

work, he still seems to accept Siger's view of God as the formal object of our beatitude.⁸² 519
 In this case too, though, as already happened in *De intellectu*, Nifo argues that 520
 humans are able to develop knowledge of God in two ways, i.e., as a form and an end, 521
 on the one hand, and as efficient cause, on the other. Two types of knowledge corre- 522
 spond to these two ways, one through the essence of God and another through the 523
 essence of the agent intellect, respectively. Indeed, when the whole speculative intel- 524
 lect has been formed, there is no need anymore for a *conversio ad phantasmata*, as 525
 the human being understands directly through the essence of the agent intellect.⁸³ 526
 Nifo stresses again the central role of the celestial hierarchy of the separate intelli- 527
 gences and God in the realization of human happiness.⁸⁴ Beatitude is the outcome of 528
 a progression of the intellect which develops through the habitual and the speculative 529
 intellect. Once the latter is fully actualised (*totum et perfectum*), the human being is 530
 united *per essentiam* to all separate substances, and this becomes the foundation for 531
 an intuitive knowledge of God, that is, a knowledge though *copulatio ut forma*.⁸⁵ 532

Conclusion

533

Nifo's theory of beatitude is a fine example of a rigorous conceptual analysis in 534
 Peripatetic style. It is articulated through a consistent application of the principles of 535
 Aristotelian natural philosophy and logics to the realm of (separate) intellects. Nifo 536
 shows how progressive apprehension of intelligible knowledge enables the human 537
 soul to ascend to God. For example, the assumption that the same intellect, namely 538
 the agent intellect, may be linked to us as agent and as form is crucial in Nifo's 539
 reasoning. It should be noted that Nifo, like Averroes before him,⁸⁶ attempts to delimit- 540
 ate the physical nature and implications of his categorial framework. Thus, the 541
 process of *copulatio* is viewed as a union, and explicitly not as generation or mixture 542
 (see, e.g., issue 4). Yet, at first sight the hierarchy of and the several distinctions 543
 between intellects appear as rather artificial and unreal, in particular that between 544
 potential, speculative and habitual intellect. It should be borne in mind, however, that 545
 the habitual and speculative intellects are largely identical and designate a state of the 546
 material or possible intellect, while the speculative intellect is seen as a dispositional 547
 medium between material and agent intellect. The agent intellect, on the other hand, 548
 is not viewed as 'detached' from the possible intellect, and can be reached only in 549
copulatio. By contrast, Nifo is well aware that true intellectual growth is based on the 550
 intimate link between active and receptive qualities of the human mind. Thus, *intellectio* 551

⁸² Ibid., fol. 20^{rb}.

⁸³ Ibid., fol. 22^{rb}.

⁸⁴ Ibid., fols 23^{va}–25^{va}.

⁸⁵ Ibid., fol. 25^{va}.

⁸⁶ See Averroes, *Commentarium magnum*, pp. 496–497: the notions of form and matter in the intellectual realm indicate a proportion or disposition.

552 presupposes *copulatio*, not the other way round. This entails, however, a more or less
 553 veiled circularity, not to say a *petitio principii*, in noetic reasoning, since it is tacitly
 554 assumed that the final aim of the human intellectual drive is the basis of its very
 555 functioning. In a similar vein, the speculative intellect is seen as a product of the
 556 activity of the agent intellect with respect to the possible intellect, as well as a dispo-
 557 sitional medium or condition for their conjunction.

558 However, although Nifo's analytical description of the functioning of the
 559 Aristotelian mind does not transcend the bounds of its implicit categorial frame, the
 560 philosopher after all develops some remarkable positions. In book 6, Nifo argues for
 561 an intuitive knowledge of the separate substances and of God, echoing the frequently
 562 savaged Jandun and anticipating Spinoza's third kind of knowledge: intuitive knowl-
 563 edge is knowledge through the essence of a thing and guarantees true happiness
 564 (*Ethics*, II, propositions 45–47). In Nifo's view, however, beatitude is purely intel-
 565 lectual: the eventual eternal joy which derives from this kind of knowledge is not
 566 due to the intervention of the will, and therefore cannot be analysed in terms of a
 567 theory of intellectual love. Furthermore, the cognitive union with God is not super-
 568 natural, as no medium granted by God is required. The speculative intellect alone
 569 suffices as the positive medium for our union with the essence of the agent intellect
 570 and thereby with all other separate substances. For Nifo, such a union or *adeptio* is
 571 the human being's highest good fortune and it is achievable in this life and by wholly
 572 natural means.⁸⁷

573 In the final chapters Nifo touches upon questions, which also have a more general
 574 ethical and theological impact, e.g. the relation between body and soul, that between
 575 sense and reason, and that between the embodied soul and the state of soul after
 576 death, the position of women and children, and the outlook of misery and happiness.
 577 Surprisingly, intellectual *copulatio* does not oppose the embodied soul. Who does
 578 not reach beatitude in this terrestrial life, cannot reach it in the afterlife. This view
 579 is intimately connected to Nifo's idea, developed in the final chapter of book IV, of
 580 the human soul as a 'potestative' whole (*totum quoddam potestativum et essentialē*)
 581 which is not split up into distinct faculties (*potestates*).⁸⁸ Only the conversion of
 582 sense to reason allows ruling passions and vices, firmly connecting the exercise of
 583 practical reason to its *copulatio* with the intellect, and that of the intellect to the
 584 separate substances. Thus, a balanced psychological life, based on the cooperation
 585 between sensitive drives and intellectual control, guarantees happiness, both practi-
 586 cal and theoretical.

⁸⁷ Nifo, *De intellectu*, VI, chs 34, 40, 42, 43–44, fols 59^v–60^r, 61^v, 61^v–62^r.

⁸⁸ *Ibid.*, IV, ch. 24, fols 48^v–49^r.

Author Query

Chapter No.: 7 0001629568

Query	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Please confirm the note no. "note @@ above" in foot note 48.	

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 8

Averroistic Themes in Girolamo Cardano's *De immortalitate animorum*

José Manuel García Valverde

Despite the great number of subjects discussed, Girolamo Cardano's principal aim in writing *De immortalitate animorum* (1545) was the refutation of the mortalist claims advanced by Pietro Pomponazzi in his *De immortalitate animae* (1516).¹ Cardano's mid-sixteenth-century Renaissance Aristotelianism. Although Cardano had studied at

Translated from Spanish by Anna Akasoy and Guido Giglioni.

¹ Cardano published his *De immortalitate animorum* when he was 43 years old. The treatise precedes the encyclopaedic works of the 1550 s (*De subtilitate* and *De varietate rerum*), which gave him renown and recognition among his contemporaries. A recent edition of *De immortalitate animorum* has been published by José Manuel García Valverde (Milan: Angeli, 2006). Quotations are from this edition. A Spanish translation by J. M. García Valverde is available in <http://filolinux.dipafilo.unimi.it/cardano/index.php>. (Progetto Cardano, Università degli Studi di Milano). Also, for a contextualisation of *De immortalitate animorum* within Cardano's large literary production, especially regarding its relationship to the preceding work, the 1544 *De sapientia*, see Alfonso Ingegno, 'Cardano tra *De sapientia* e *De immortalitate animorum*. Ipotesi per una periodizzazione', in *Girolamo Cardano, le opere, le fonti, la vita*, eds Marialuisa Baldi and Guido Canziani (Milan: Angeli, 1997), pp. 61–79. Finally, with no intention of giving an exhaustive bibliographic account on *De immortalitate animorum* and Cardano's philosophy of the mind, I will refer the reader to the 'Estudio preliminar' to the edition mentioned above (pp. 19–105) as well as to the following essays: Alfonso Ingegno, *Saggio sulla filosofia di Cardano* (Florence: La Nuova Italia, 1980), pp. 61–78; Ian Maclean, 'Cardano on the Immortality of the Soul', in *Cardano e la tradizione dei saperi*, eds Marialuisa Baldi and Guido Canziani (Milan: Angeli, 2003), pp. 191–208; Id., 'Cardano's Eclectic Psychology and its Critique by Julius Caesar Scaliger', *Vivarium*, 46 (2008), pp. 392–417; Guido Canziani, 'L'anima, la mens, la palingenesi. Appunti sul terzo libro del *Theonoston*', in *Cardano e la tradizione dei saperi*, pp. 209–248; Guido Giglioni, 'Mens in Girolamo Cardano', in *Per una storia del concetto di mente*, ed. by Eugenio Canone, 2 vols (Florence: Olschki, 2005–2007), II, pp. 83–122.

J.M.G. Valverde (✉)

Department Estetica e Historia de la filosofia, Facultad de Filosofia,
c/Camili Jose Cela, 41018 Seville, Spain
e-mail: garvalverde@hotmail.com

9 the University of Padua, he cannot be considered, strictly speaking, a Paduan Aristotelian
10 representing a monolithic intellectual movement. During the early modern period,
11 Aristotelianism developed as an exegetic matrix capable of generating a number of
12 different interpretations regarding both the matrix itself and the universe in general.
13 This point is confirmed *immortalitate animorum*. Pomponazzi's *De immortalitate*
14 *animae* seems to represent for Cardano a challenge to demonstrate that the theory of
15 the immortality of the soul could still find textual support in Aristotle's *De anima*.
16 Although Cardano was not a professional commentator of Aristotle, he believed he
17 had the skills required to identify the true core of his psychology. In spite of the many
18 centuries separating them, he reckoned that he could disclose the reasons behind
19 Aristotle's tentative statements concerning the immortality of our souls. Finally, he
20 thought that he had found a theoretical key to unlock unexpected exegetical results
21 from the third book of Aristotle's *De anima*: in matters concerning the theory of the
22 intellect, Cardano maintained that a plurality of active intellects were subject to cycles
23 of transmigration, independent of any process of natural generation, through which
24 the individual history of human minds, bound to the fate of their perishable bodies,
25 were transcended by individual active intellects.

26 Among the references used by Cardano to support this interpretation, Averroes and
27 the Averroist tradition are of the utmost importance. After Aristotle, Averroes is the
28 most frequently cited philosopher in *De immortalitate animorum*. He is followed by
29 Galen (certainly an important presence), Plato, and much less frequently, Pomponazzi,
30 Alexander of Aphrodisias and others. The works of Averroes in Latin translation men-
31 tioned by Cardano include a variety of texts. Among these – as to be expected – the
32 *Commentarium magnum* on Aristotle's *De anima* stands out, but there are also numerous
33 quotations from other commentaries written by Averroes on a number of Aristotelian
34 works, such as *De sensu*, *De somno* and *De caelo*. One should also not forget the
35 *Destructio destructionum*, which Cardano cites as *Disputationes*. It is apparent,
36 therefore, that Averroes's thought, more specifically, his distinctive interpretation
37 of Aristotelian psychology, was of great importance for Cardano.

38 Averroes is frequently mentioned in the first chapter, which presents a long list
39 of objections against the immortality of the human soul *tout court*, or against the
40 most specific version of the theory of individual immortality. He is often referred to
41 when the background of Aristotle's texts is analysed with respect to whether or not
42 he was in favour of the immortality of the human soul. Averroes also plays a distinctive
43 role when, starting from Chap. 11, Cardano launches into the explanation of his own [AU1]
44 theory of the eternity and reincarnation of individual active intellects. Averroes
45 plays therefore a key role not only as an authoritative interpreter – which is all too
46 natural –, but also as a source of creative inspiration. It is not by accident that we can
47 find traces of Averroen noetics in Cardano's own views, regarding, for example,
48 the substantial character of the active intellect (although he disagreed regarding
49 the substantial character of the passive intellect) and the relationship between the
50 active and the passive intellects in the human soul, where they constitute almost two
51 complementary aspects of one reality (i.e., the receptive and active moments in the
52 unitary process of intellection). Averroean echoes aside, one should not forget that
53 for Cardano the most appropriate solution to the question of the immortality of the

soul, both from an Aristotelian and from a rational point of view, had to reconcile the aspect of individual immortality with that of intellectual unity for all human beings. He thus reconsidered the theory of such a unity in a specific chapter – Chap. 9, ‘The opinion of the unity of the intellect and its foundations’ – which is the main subject of this article.

It is significant that in the short, but dense chapter devoted to Pomponazzi's position, Cardano seems to agree with the way Pomponazzi had criticised Averroes's theory of the unity of the intellect and accepts his verdict (as well as that of Thomas Aquinas). This is quite important considering that Cardano's primary intention in his work was to respond to Pomponazzi on his very own territory, i.e., natural reason and Aristotle's works. For Pomponazzi, the notion of a collective immortality resulting from the substantial and independent nature of the material intellect² is not convincing since we do not find any evidence of such substantial and independent nature in our thinking activity. Pomponazzi followed the Aristotelian-Thomistic principle that ‘acting follows being’ (*agere sequitur esse*), i.e., that the degree of activity of a thing corresponds to its degree of being, and argued that, if the intellectual soul shows a kind of activity which does not depend on the body at all, this activity would provide evidence for both its independence with regard to the body and – as Averroes had already claimed – its eternity and unity for the entire human species. In fact, we know that Pomponazzi's conclusion intended precisely to dismiss the very notion of such an independent activity of the intellectual soul, because he insisted, the knowledge of the intellect for Aristotle depended *ex principiis* on the senses and the representations of the senses (*phantasmata*). Having denied the complete independence of our intellectual activity, Pomponazzi rejected the very premise of Averroes's interpretation and the kind of immortality implied in this theory. Then he examined other positions regarding immortality, especially that of Thomas Aquinas, and drew some important conclusions which would turn out to be useful for later in the discussion. The first one of these conclusions is the already mentioned idea that, from the point of view of Aristotle's though, there is no activity in which the soul engages that is completely independent of the body.

De immortalitate animorum is clearly a significantly less systematic piece than Pomponazzi's treatise. This is apparent, for example, in the way Cardano criticises Plato. Chapter 3 is devoted to Plato's position on the soul, and yet criticisms of Platonic solutions reappear in the following chapter. The same is the case with Averroes. Although all of Chap. 9 is a refutation of Averroes, earlier in the text Cardano conveniently uses the commentator as an ally. There, he lists the reasons which challenge or deny an individual immortality in which all the experiences and memories accumulated during one individual's life are preserved and represent the foundation for a just and inexorable judgement after death.

²From the point of view of Averroes, there is no place in the field of Aristotelianism to appeal for an afterlife. Thus, the expression of ‘collective immortality’ must be understood as referring to the intelligible contents of the eternal Material Intellect. These contents, initially extracted from the imaginative powers of particular perishing human beings, become subsequently immortal when they are collected by an intellectual entity which is in itself everlasting.

93 Moreover, there were further reasons why the kind of solution presented by
94 Cardano in *De immortalitate animorum* could be open to Averroistic influences.
95 Averroes has long been considered the most distinguished advocate of a clear
96 distinction between the principles of revealed religion and those of natural reason
97 and philosophy. The position that, generally speaking, came to be known as
98 'Averroist' assumed that, while from a philosophical point of view, it is necessary to
99 conclude that the rational soul is one for all human beings and that one can only
100 expect a collective form of immortality, from a religious point of view, it is believed
101 that there are many souls which are individual and immortal. For all the ambiguities
102 and uncertainties involved in such a position, the gist of the Averroist view was to
103 claim that, if we endorse the principles of the Aristotelian physics and metaphysics,
104 we can only accept the notion of a collective immortality in which any element of
105 temporal individuality in the intellective soul gets lost. Averroes was the first to
106 point out how a scrupulous examination of the Aristotelian principles would lead
107 to the unequivocal separation of philosophy from faith.

108 Avicenna had gone to great lengths to reconcile the prerogatives of faith with
109 those of natural reason in Aristotle's works. In response to him, Averroes showed
110 that such a reconciliation relied on distorted understanding of the Aristotelian texts.
111 Averroes's judgement on Avicenna was implacable. He was guilty of having
112 tampered with the thought of Aristotle by mixing into it an intention which was
113 completely foreign to him. 'This is on account of Avicenna, who followed Aristotle
114 only in dialectics, but in other things he erred, and chiefly in the case of metaphysics.
115 This is because he began, as it were, from his own perspective.'³

116 A century later Thomas Aquinas would once again try to reconcile Aristotle's
117 philosophy with the theological assumptions of the Christian faith; at the same time,
118 he denounced Averroes's interpretation of the Aristotelian texts as illegitimate.
119 Aquinas thought that he could demonstrate the compatibility of Aristotle's metaphysics
120 with the religious concept of the soul as a substance created directly by God, capable of
121 surviving in the future, morally responsible both in this and in the other life, and
122 finally, destined to take up its body again at the end of the world. For this reason, he
123 embarked on the momentous task of reconciling the Aristotelian definition of the
124 soul as the form of a body with the notion of the soul as substance or as substantial
125 form which exists alone and is therefore capable of surviving the body. Thomas
126 Aquinas referred to the disjunctive hypothesis advanced by Aristotle in the first
127 book of *De anima*⁴ in order to explain the existence of an activity of thought which
128 belongs exclusively to the soul and which is developed without the help of the
129 senses. The purpose was to demonstrate the essential independence of the

³ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, ed. F. Stuart Crawford (Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1953), p. 470; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, ed. and trans. Richard C. Taylor (New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2009), pp. 374–375. See Amos Bertolacci's chapter in this volume.

⁴ See Aristotle, *De anima*, I, 1, 403a9; trans. W. S. Hett (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1936), p. 15: 'if this too is a kind of imagination, or at least is dependent upon imagination, even this cannot exist apart from the body.'

efficient cause of this activity, i.e., the intellective soul.⁵ In this sense, the human soul, insofar as it is a subsistent form (*hoc aliquid*), is immortal and continues to exist even without the body. However, this does not mean that it is not the form of the body. On the contrary, as form, the intellective soul is the principle that determines the human being and thinking is the activity which characterises the essence of the human being – the ‘principle through which something is precisely this specific something’ (*quo aliquid est hoc aliquid*). On the other hand, the intellective soul as the individual form of a particular human being is, in an Aristotelian sense, that principle which – as the first actuality of a living body – accounts for all the vital functions of a human being in accordance with the Aristotelian postulate that superior souls include the inferior ones.

The difficulty was how to reconcile the specifically intellective nature of the human soul with its role as a substantial form informing a particular body. To solve this question, as Aquinas decided to refer to a system of ontological degrees, where the intellective soul occupies an intermediary place between the material forms (which are exclusively *forms of*) and the separate forms (which are exclusively substantial forms).⁶ This intermediary nature of the human soul manifests itself in its activity since the material forms act while being completely dependent on the body and matter, whereas the human soul is capable of rising above the body and of developing an independent activity. At the same time, its intellective activity is not as perfect as that of those forms which are completely separate and self-subsisting and which perceive by way of an act of direct and immediate intuition. In the case of human beings, their intellective activity is determined by the proximity to the body. As a result, it depends on a constant supply of sensible images and on discursive patterns of reasoning that are clearly not intuitive and cannot be completely disconnected from their object. This has something to do with the fact that the intelligible species has to be represented in the sensible image. This dependency characterises the degree of perfection which we human beings can achieve. For this reason, Aquinas did not hesitate to assert that after death, the power of our soul is in a certain way diminished:

Thus to the soul according to its mode of being when united with the body belongs a mode of understanding which turns to the sense images of bodies found in corporeal organs (*per conversionem ad phantasmata corporum, quae in corporeis organis sunt*), whereas when separated from the body its mode of understanding, as in other immaterial substances, is to turn to things that are purely intelligible (*per conversionem ad ea quae sunt intelligibilia simpliciter*). Hence to understand by turning to sense images is as natural to the soul as being joined to the body, whereas to be separated from the body is off-beat for its nature (*praeter rationem suae naturae*), and so likewise is understanding without turning to sense images. The soul is joined to the body in order to be and act in accordance with its nature.⁷

⁵ Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologiae*, Ia, q. 75, a. 2; *Quaestio de anima*, a. 14.

⁶ Thomas Aquinas, *Quaestio de anima*, a. 1.

⁷ Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologiae*, Ia, q. 89, a. 1; Blackfriars edition, 61 vols (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1964–1976; repr. 2006), vol. XII, trans. Paul. T. Durbin, pp. 139–141.

169 In this way, the soul preserves after death a certain inclination (*habitus*)
 170 towards the body to which it had given life. This tendency makes the soul individual
 171 and different from the other souls. Aquinas used this close relationship between the
 172 soul and its body in order to provide a philosophical explanation for the doctrine
 173 of resurrection.

174 We thus have here a response to the question of the separation between faith and
 175 reason which had already been favoured by Averroes and which later Averroists
 176 had emphasised even more. What Aquinas argued is that, from an Aristotelian
 177 point of view, not only it is not necessary to accept the intellective unity suggested
 178 by Averroes, but that, if one tries to interpret the texts correctly, one can explain on
 179 the basis of this interpretation and in a rational manner the Christian doctrine of the
 180 soul and its theological implications.

181 Christian authors criticised Aquinas for having considerably misinterpreted the
 182 Aristotelian texts in order to make them speak a language which they would never
 183 speak. As Bruno Nardi has pointed out, the cardinal Bessarion responded to Aquinas
 184 in his criticism of George of Trebizond in terms very similar to those used by
 185 Averroes against Avicenna. He argued that the view that the intellective soul is a
 186 substantial form and certainly individual, subsistent, initially communicating with
 187 the body and immortal *a parte post*, stands in direct contrast with the principles of
 188 Aristotle's metaphysics.⁸ Pomponazzi adopted this criticism in his *De immortalitate*
 189 *animae* and offered a significantly more profound version of it. The opening
 190 sentences of chapter 8, in which Pomponazzi examines Aquinas's position, sum up
 191 the point in a very eloquent manner:

192 I do not have the least doubt about the truth of this position, for it is sanctioned by the
 193 canonic Scripture, which has to be preferred to any human rational argument and proof
 194 based on experience, since it was given by God. However, what I think is a matter of doubt
 195 is whether these statements transcend the limits of nature to the point that they presuppose
 196 some principle that is revealed or accepted through faith, and are consonant with Aristotle's
 197 statements, as Thomas Aquinas maintains.⁹

198 This is followed by a long discussion in which Pomponazzi examines each of the
 199 fundamental tenets of Aquinas's conception of the soul in the light of Aristotle's
 200 philosophy. Here we do not need to delve into Pomponazzi's arguments. What we
 201 can say is that his aim was to target the theory of Aquinas on his own ground. For
 202 Pomponazzi, to assume that the soul has a certain kind of activity or action which is
 203 separate from the body and to claim that this activity is an essential characteristic of
 204 its nature would have been a notion foreign to Aristotle. Pomponazzi pointed out
 205 that, even if one could accept the thesis that intellection in itself is a process inde-
 206 pendent of the body, and that its achievement – the intelligible which is abstracted
 207 from matter – is evidence that the activity which led to this result cannot take place
 208 in its material subject (*subjectum*), this activity – as Aquinas himself had admitted –

⁸ See Bruno Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI* (Florence: Sansoni, 1958), p. 446.

⁹ Pietro Pomponazzi, *Tractatus de immortalitate animae*, ed. Gianfranco Morra (Bologna: Nanni & Fiammenghi, 1954), p. 82.

still makes use of sensible images provided by the body. In this way, even though the rational soul does not need the body as its 'subject', it does need it as its 'object', and this ties the soul irrevocably to the body and prevents their separation. On the other hand, Aristotle had never spoken of the human rational soul as a substantial form in the same terms as Aquinas had done. Aristotle had distinguished only two kinds of substances: the spiritual substances, which could be separated from matter and were simple and immortal, and the corporeal substances, which are composed of matter and form, are corruptible and dissolve. The form of the spiritual substances is a *hoc aliquid*, whereas that of the corporeal ones is a *quo aliquid*, and according to Aristotelian principles, no *hoc aliquid* can be a *quo aliquid* at the same time. Aquinas effectively introduced a third kind of substance, which took the ambiguous role of the rational soul into account to the extent that partakes in the *hoc aliquid* as well as in the *quo aliquid*. He was able to justify this nature of the soul within a universal order of ontological hierarchies. However, what, according to Pomponazzi, he could not possibly do was to claim that this third nature had a place in the Aristotelian universe and that it could be explained with the help of the principles of Aristotelian metaphysics.

The position finally adopted by Pomponazzi was a reformulation of the theory of the double truth, which had caused such a great opposition when first introduced by the medieval Averroists. In his case, however, the split between the domains of faith and reason was much more conspicuous and appeared to be no less provocative. He simply decided to let the question of the immortality of the rational soul be a matter of faith and refrained from demonstrating it in a rational way. It was, after all, not only the case that one could prove in such a way a collective immortality as Averroes, among others, had maintained; one could also conclude that there was no possibility for any other kind of immortality. As was to be expected, this theory led to a major uproar which, however, never led to an official condemnation of its author. Many tried to refute the theory using Pomponazzi's own weapons. Kristeller published a list of authors who composed treatises of this kind: Cardinal Gasparo Contarini, the Augustinian hermit Ambrogio Fiandino, the Dominican Bartolomeo Spina, and his Aristotelian colleague Agostino Nifo. The polemical reaction reached such an extent that Pomponazzi saw himself obliged to respond to it with various works which were twice as long as the initial treatise (the *Apologia* and the *Defensorium*). Even though his voice quieted down over the course of time, the flame of the polemics continued to burn much longer.¹⁰

Cardano's *De immortalitate animorum* should be read as one of those texts which were strongly influenced by Pomponazzi's work as well as by the polemical reaction against it. The purpose of Cardano was to make a new attempt to harmonise

¹⁰ See P. O. Kristeller, *Renaissance Thought and Its Sources* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1979), p. 193. To have a comprehensive view of the controversy, including the most significant aspects of Pomponazzi's *De immortalitate animae*, see Martin L. Pine, *Pietro Pomponazzi: Radical Philosopher of the Renaissance* (Padua: Antenore, 1986), pp. 124–234. I also would like to refer the reader to the impressive 'Introduzione' that Vittoria Perrone Compagni has provided with her Italian translation of *De immortalitate* (Florence: Olschki, 1999), pp. V-CI.

247 Aristotelian thought with the notion of the immortality of the individual soul.
 248 His intention was to enter the arena of the 30-year debate not only with an original
 249 solution in his hands, but also with a thorough and definitive interpretation of Aristotle's
 250 work which had still not been achieved in the already long history of its exegesis.
 251 In order to be truly original, this very ambitious project could not ignore the
 252 difficulties already pointed out by Pomponazzi. He had to tackle the already estab-
 253 lished positions concerning the compatibility of the Aristotelian metaphysics with
 254 religious – in this case, Christian – beliefs.

255 The positions in question were fundamentally three. One was that adopted by
 256 Averroes in his critique of Avicenna, and endorsed afterwards by the medieval
 257 Averroists in their criticism of Aquinas. As we have seen, this led to the conclusion
 258 that the principles of Aristotelian psychology and metaphysics implied a notion of
 259 collective immortality, which is very different from what revealed faith suggested.
 260 The second position is represented by Aquinas, who did not see revealed faith as
 261 contradicting the principles of Aristotelian philosophy, and, as a result, saw no
 262 contradiction between reason and faith. The third position was the one defended by
 263 Pomponazzi in his *De immortalitate animae*, in which he rejected categorically the
 264 thesis that the immortality of the soul, in all its forms, had a place in the Aristotelian
 265 discourse, so that to confirm and defend such a doctrine could only be a matter of
 266 faith. These three positions can be arranged in the form of a board game, in which
 267 Aquinas is opposed to Averroes, Averroes is opposed to Avicenna and Pomponazzi
 268 finds himself first allied with Aquinas against Averroes and the Averroists, and later
 269 opposed to Aquinas himself. The rules of the game are concerned with a problem of
 270 exegetical nature regarding the Aristotelian texts, and therefore the battle took often
 271 place on terminological and linguistic grounds.

272 It was thus on this board and with these rules that Cardano decided to intervene
 273 in the debate. He rejected Averroes's notion of collective immortality – in fact, the
 274 very title of the treatise seems to state his rejection with the unusual mentioning of
 275 the plural *animi* (i.e., the minds) rather than the singular *anima* (i.e., the soul).
 276 Likewise, he rejected the introduction of elements that were foreign to the interpre-
 277 tation of Aristotelian texts. With this criticism, he implicitly joined the front of those
 278 who had criticised Aquinas for having distorted those texts in order to make them
 279 conform to Christian dogma. In this way, he challenged not only Aquinas, but also
 280 Albertus Magnus and John Philoponus:

281 But perhaps here Philopon, Thomas and Albertus are not really what I need, for nobody
 282 could insinuate that they are not moved by their love for religion. Nobody could really doubt
 283 that Thomas and Albertus were most religious, having been included among the saints. John
 284 Philoponus of Alexandria wrote profusely against Proclus and Severus in favour of the
 285 Christian faith. He went so far as to assert the creation of the world, which nobody – pious
 286 as he may be – questions, and all – Aristotelian as they may be – understand. Of all,
 287 Theophrastus is the only one I need in order to clarify the opinion of Aristotle.¹¹

¹¹ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 257; *Opera omnia*, ed. Charles Spon, 10 vols (Lyons: Jean-Antoine Huguetaun and Marc-Antoine Ravaut, 1663; reprint: Stuttgart and Bad Cannstatt: Frommann, 1966), II, p. 493b.

Finally, he also rejected the way Pomponazzi had interpreted Aristotle's theory of the intellect since he had obstinately ignored the evidence in which Aristotle appeared to maintain the immortality of the soul. Cardano tried to read Aristotle's texts in a faithful and meticulous way. His aim was obviously to show that remaining on the same argumentative level as Pomponazzi, one could overturn his claim that it was impossible to defend in a rational way the immortality of the soul. We could summarise the various stages of Cardano's argument by saying that, against Averroes, he affirmed a plurality of subsisting souls; against Aquinas, he engaged in an interpretation of Aristotle's texts devoid of any religious assumption; and against Pomponazzi, he presented this 'purist' reading as the only acceptable premise leading to his conclusion, i.e., that Aristotle was in fact in favour of some kind of individual immortality, even though this view of immortality had little to do with the concept defended by Aquinas.

Although independent, Cardano adopted elements of other and historically distant interpretations. Against Averroes, Cardano argued that it was possible to defend a certain kind of individual immortality on the basis of Aristotle's thought. In his interpretative crusade against Averroism in general and against those who – before Averroes himself – had emphasised the external and separable character of the intellect, at least the active one (e.g. Alexander of Aphrodisias), he stressed that the intellectual faculties which manifest themselves *in* our souls require necessarily that *in* our soul there be an active and a passive principle. This is almost like saying that the active intellect, in the same way as the passive intellect, is an integral part of our individuality. In interpreting Aristotle's words in *De anima* III, 5, Cardano embraced the view that Aristotle was referring here to the faculties within the soul and did not give any reason to believe that an external character should be attributed to the active principle of the rational faculty and, even less so, to the passive principle, as Averroes had done. In doing so, Cardano joined, amongst others, Themistius and Aquinas. There was, however, something else in this text that for Cardano was just as unequivocal, namely, the immortality of the active intellect, and only of the active intellect, here defined as a completely impassive principle and pure activity, which, by definition, cannot be affected by any information accumulated by the subject during his lifetime. One can say, thus, that Cardano was prepared to sacrifice one's memories on the altar of individual immortality, all the memories of a life, including any knowledge acquired, to which is added what is morally transcendent (i.e., the conscience regarding any crimes and evil deeds committed). In this way, Cardano suggested that the immortality as endorsed by Aquinas, which was acceptable from an orthodox religious point of view, was as foreign to Aristotle as Avicenna's interpretation had seemed to Averroes. Due to his desire to limit himself to Aristotle's texts, Cardano, just like Averroes, moved away from what could be affirmed on the basis of revealed faith. After all, the assumption that a number of different substantial active intellects, finite in their number, are in the process of being continuously reincarnated must have sounded so repulsive to orthodox Christians as the Averroist notion of intellectual unity.

Chapter 9 of *De immortalitate animorum* is entirely devoted to an analysis of Averroes's idea of the intellect's unity (active and passive) and it contains a thorough

333 refutation of its premises. Cardano follows the scholastic habit of listing the
334 arguments in favour of the opposite view first and then discussing and refuting
335 them. He throws invectives at the empty chatter, the incoherent discourse and the
336 false professionalism of those who defended the view of the intellect as one. This
337 position has, in Cardano's opinion, never been defended with the same arguments.
338 On the contrary, among those who, in one way or another, embraced the doctrine,
339 there was considerable divergence, some of it insurmountable. Ultimately, the insub-
340stantial character of the opinions, the already mentioned incoherence and the distorted
341 reading of the Aristotelian texts are the reasons that have made Averroism a deplor-
342able philosophy and its limitations need to be denounced. With this judgement,
343 Cardano (and we return to the board game here) joined Pomponazzi and Thomas
344 Aquinas. In fact, he mentions both as the most distinguished leaders in the fight on
345 which he says he is embarking in this treatise.

346 In his refutation of Averroes, Cardano argues that to assume the complete indi-
347 viduality of the soul would imply an infinite number of souls, given the fact that the
348 world, according to one of the fundamental postulates of Aristotelianism, is supposed
349 to be eternal. However, Aristotle is also aware of the unsolvable logical difficulties
350 that would result from assuming that something can be infinite in actuality.¹² It is
351 therefore understandable why the difficulties resulting from a numerical diversity
352 of the souls lend support to the notion of the unity of the intellect. Themistius had
353 already offered this reason as one of the most important arguments in favour of the
354 unity of the intellect *in actu*. The reasoning is that the specific individuation of the
355 souls is due to their bodies, and therefore, when these perish, their individuality, too,
356 ceases to exist. This argument appears in Chap. 1 of Cardano's *De immortalitate*
357 *animorum* in a quite detailed way:

358 We should consider whether souls differ only in number or also in species if they are many.
359 If they differ in species, there will be as many human beings as species of human beings.
360 If they differ only in number, or because of their form, then, again, it is necessary that
361 human beings differ in species. However, if they differ only because of matter, either they
362 will be variously corruptible because of that, or they will not depend on that and will be
363 incorruptible: therefore, there will be only one soul (*animus unus*) for all human beings.¹³

364 Cardano is turning the question of the immortality of the soul into a dilemma
365 where we are compelled to choose between dismissing the notion that we can survive
366 in one form or another after death, or subscribing to the depersonalised kind of
367 immortality advocated by the Averroists.

368 This argument was commonly used in Averroistic circles as is obvious from the
369 way Siger of Brabant employs it in his commentary on Aristotle's *De anima*.

¹² See Aristotle, *Physics*, III, 5, 204a20-34.

¹³ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, pp. 141-142; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 463a.

Aquinas cites it in various places in support of the position of the unity of the intellect.¹⁴ 370
 Not surprisingly, it appears in *De unitate intellectus*, but also in the *Summa contra* 371
gentiles: 372

For it seems that every form which is one specifically and many in number is individuated by 373
 matter; because things one in species and many in number agree in form and differ in matter. 374
 Therefore, if the possible intellect is multiplied numerically in different men, while being 375
 specifically one, then it must be individuated in this and that man by matter. But this individu- 376
 ation is not brought about by matter which is a part of the intellect itself, since in that case 377
 the intellect's receptivity would be of the same genus as that of prime matter, and it would 378
 receive individual forms; which is contrary to the nature of the intellect. It remains that the 379
 intellect is individuated by that matter which is the human body and of which the intellect is 380
 held to be the form. But every form individuated by matter of which that form is the act is a 381
 material form. For the being of a thing must stem from that to which it owes its individuation; 382
 since just as common principles belong to the essence of the species, so individuating princi- 383
 ples belong to the essence of this individual thing. It therefore follows that the possible intel- 384
 lect is a material form, and, consequently, that it neither receives anything nor operates without 385
 a bodily organ. And this, too, is contrary to the nature of the possible intellect. Therefore, the 386
 possible intellect is not multiplied in different men, but is one for them all.¹⁵ 387

Aquinas, who logically rejects the unity of the possible intellect, turns to the idea 388
 that the numerical plurality of rational souls (which, according to him, are those 389
 which survive after death) ultimately depends on their essential inclination towards 390
 their bodies. For Aquinas, one has to choose between the fact that the numerical 391
 diversity of souls is due to this natural inclination towards bodies, and the fact that 392
 the body is the ultimate cause of this diversity. He rejects the latter idea. Even though 393
 it is obvious that the soul belongs to one and the same species in different human 394
 beings, it is multiple as far as its number is concerned. This, however, does not lead 395
 to the conclusion that the same soul is at the same time a material form which 396
 depends in its existence and diversity on the body.¹⁶ 397

To return to Cardano's *De immortalitate animorum*, Chap. 9 continues with a 398
 second set of arguments, which are powerful and direct – or almost direct – reasons 399
 in favour of the unity of the intellect. Some of them are Averroes's well-known 400
 arguments, others are logically derived from these, and a third kind are arguments 401
 from Aristotle which can be adduced to support the unity of the intellect. A clear 402
 example of the first group is the thesis which opens the set: 'There were also likely 403
 arguments (*argumenta verisimilitudinis*), like the one that the knowledge of the 404
 student seems to be the same as the one of the teacher, migrating from the one to 405

¹⁴ See Siger of Brabant, *Quaestiones in tertium de anima*, ed. Bernardo Bazán (Louvain: Publications Universitaires; Paris: Béatrice-Nauwelaerts, 1972), q. 9, pp. 25–26.

¹⁵ Thomas Aquinas, *Summa contra gentiles*, II, 75, n. 2; trans. Anton C. Pegis, James F. Anderson, Vernon J. Bourke, and Charles J. O'Neil, 5 vols (Notre Dame, IN: University of Notre Dame Press, 1975), II (trans. Anderson), pp. 232–233.

¹⁶ *Ibid.*

406 the other, because it is one thing. This does not happen with things perceived with
 407 the senses, for in these one sees in one way, another in another way, nor does that
 408 image pass from the one to the other.¹⁷ This argument can already be found in
 409 Themistius, and in terms which are certainly quite close to those used here.¹⁸ And,
 410 one can of course also see the parallel in Averroes:

411 When the material intellect is united (*copulatus*) with us insofar as it is actualised through
 412 the agent intellect, we then are united with the agent intellect. This disposition is called
 413 acquisition (*adeptio*) and the acquired intellect (*intellectus adeptus*), as we will see later.
 414 That way in which we posited the being of the material intellect solves all the questions
 415 resulting from our holding that the intellect is one and many (*quod intellectus est unus et*
 416 *multa*). For if the thing understood in me and in you (*res intellecta apud me et apud te*) were
 417 one in every way, it would happen that when I would know some intelligible (*aliquod intel-*
 418 *lectum*), you would also know it, and many other impossible things [would also follow].
 419 If we assert it to be many, then it would happen that the thing understood in me and in you
 420 would be one in species (*in specie*) and two in individual [number] (*in individuo*). In this
 421 way the thing understood will have a thing understood and so it proceeds into infinity. Thus,
 422 it will be impossible for a student to learn from a teacher unless the knowledge which is in
 423 the teacher is a power generating and creating the knowledge (*virtus generans et creans*
 424 *scientiam*) which is in the student, in the way in which one fire generates another fire similar
 425 to it in species, which is impossible. That what is known is the same in the teacher and the
 426 student in this way caused Plato to believe that learning is recollection (*rememoratio*).
 427 Since, then, we asserted that the intelligible thing which is in me and in you is many in
 428 subject (*in subiecto*) insofar as it is true, namely, the forms of the imagination (*formae*
 429 *ymaginationi*), and one in the subject in virtue of which it is an existing intellect (namely,
 430 the material [intellect]), those questions are completely resolved.¹⁹

431 We have here one of the clearest expressions of the so-called theory of the ‘double’
 432 subject. The material intellect is truly one for all human beings. However, because
 433 of the action of the *intentiones imaginatae*, which are raised to *intentiones intellec-*
 434 *tae* due to the intervention of the active intellect, it almost turns into a form of these
 435 and makes concrete human beings into individuals, even though it remains one with
 436 respect to the entire species. Here Averroes wants to solve two problems at the same
 437 time. On the one hand, we have the difficulty that, if there is only one intellect for
 438 the entire species, then all human beings would have to think the same thing at each
 439 moment, which is not possible. By introducing the idea that there are two kinds of
 440 ‘subject’, Averroes tries to preserve the unquestionable fact that ‘thinking subjects’
 441 and ‘thought objects’ are different entities, without renouncing the idea of the mater-
 442 ial intellect’s unity. On the other hand, the problem of the continuity of knowledge
 443 is solved, which accounts for the reality of the learning process.

444 Cardano addresses this point in the argument which we are examining here. That
 445 the existence of intellectual relationships between students and teachers has often

¹⁷ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 294; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 505b.

¹⁸ Themistius, *In libros Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, ed. Richard Heinze, in *Commentaria in Aristotelem Graeca*, ed. H. Diels, 23 vols (Berlin: Reimer, 1882–1909), V, III (1890) pp. 103–104.

¹⁹ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, pp. 411–412; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, pp. 328–329.

been used as an argument to defend 'monopsychism' of an Averroist ilk is demonstrated by the fact that, characteristically, all its opponents mention it. Albertus Magnus does it, and Aquinas, too, mentions it on more than one occasion.²⁰ Cardano, however, connects the argument of the transfer of knowledge from teacher to student with the argument of the collective progress of human knowledge and the advances in the arts. These facts in themselves seem to point us to a superior force which is not under the influence of the vicissitudes of time.²¹

Other arguments which Cardano offers in favour of the unity of the intellect are related to the undoubtedly Aristotelian principle that the form is endowed with a level of greater perfection than matter, such that in the hierarchy of universal perfection immaterial substances occupy the first rank. Now, Aristotle himself in various places points out that a plurality of individuals within a species is possible only because of matter and that if the latter were absent, the species could only consist of one single individual.²² In this context, it is worth remembering the historiographic debate concerning how Aristotle could save the immateriality of the unmoveable movers and their individuality at once. Philip Merlan argued that one of the most important difficulties in Aristotle's *Metaphysics* is how to explain the existence of various unmoveable eternal movers, if plurality, as we have just seen, implies matter and each one of them is defined as a pure form. Merlan's response was that each unmoveable mover is unique within its species, i.e., that each one of them constitutes a different species of which it is its only member.²³ We have mentioned this interpretation because it is very similar to the following argument, which Cardano lists among those in favour of the unity of the intellect:

Thus we can see that the species corresponding to the human beings is not more ample, or more valuable than the intelligences, for all human beings would have one intellect at once, and that would be more imperfect than the last intelligence, and it would be sufficient for all human beings, past, present and future.²⁴

In Cardano's opinion, Averroes had identified the material intellect as the last and lowest intelligence; as such, it was the most imperfect of all celestial beings: 'For this reason it should be held according to Aristotle that the last of the separate intellects in the hierarchy is that material intellect.'²⁵ This then is how we should understand Cardano's words: the plurality which underlies the individuals does not imply a plurality of thinking intellects; otherwise, we would face the following

²⁰ See Albertus Magnus, *De unitate intellectus*, in *Opera omnia*, 40 vols, ed. Bernhard Geyer et al. (Münster: Aschendorff, 1951-), XVII, i, p. 12; Thomas Aquinas, *Summa contra gentiles*, II, 75, n. 4; *De veritate*, q. 11, a. 1, arg. 6; *Summa theologiae*, I, q. 117, a. 1 co.

²¹ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 296; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 505b.

²² See Aristotle, *Metaphysica*, VII, 8, 1034a7; XII, 2, 1069b30; XII, 8, 1074a33; *De anima*, II, 2, 414a25-27.

²³ Philip Merlan, *Studies in Epicurus and Aristotle* (Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1960), pp. 159 ff.

²⁴ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 296; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 505b.

²⁵ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima*, p. 442; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, p. 354.

479 serious difficulty: if each individual includes an intellective activity that was
 480 completely different, its condition would de facto be equal to that of the intellects.
 481 We would, thus, find here in the lower sphere we inhabit a plurality of intellects
 482 which is much larger than the plurality which exists in the supralunary world. Since
 483 this seems absurd, it is much better, suggests Cardano, to think that humankind as the
 484 human genus is represented by only one intellect, and that this intellect occupies
 485 the lower rank in the order of the intelligences. On the other hand, its nature as an
 486 intellect grants the material intellect as such an immortal character, which it would
 487 not have otherwise. However, this is the impersonal immortality which had been
 488 clearly rejected by both Albertus Magnus and Aquinas.

489 Another argument adduced by Cardano in favour of the unity of the intellect is
 490 based on the fact that Aristotle had not clearly rejected Anaxagoras's notion of the
 491 intellect (*nous*), but that he had criticised him only for his lack of clarity (*De anima*,
 492 I, 2, 404b2). Cardano also points out that Aristotle never referred to the mind (*nous*)
 493 in the plural, but only in the singular, which may suggest that he did not think there
 494 was more than one.²⁶ Finally, he concludes this set of arguments with a reason that
 495 is certainly taken from Averroes's commentary on *De anima*. This is how Cardano
 496 presents it, including his quotation from Averroes:

497 But the greatest argument in support of the unity of the intellect is the one that Averroes puts
 498 forward in his commentary of the third book of *De anima*: 'If the intellects were many in
 499 number and one in species, also the intelligible forms would be many, but one in species;
 500 then, again, through the intellect it would be possible to abstract yet another universal form
 501 from them; and, again, the abstracted forms would differ in number, but agree in the species.
 502 As a result, there would be a regress to infinity in the intelligible forms of the same thing.'²⁷

503 The plurality of material intellects presupposes an infinite multiplication of intel-
 504 ligibles. It is not easy to explain this question, which, as Averroes himself pointed
 505 out, had already been discussed by Avempace (Ibn Bājjā).²⁸ The difficulty lies in
 506 solving a problem which includes different variables: on the one hand, the plurality
 507 of possible intellective acts; on the other, the unity of the thought intelligibles.
 508 The solution which, according to Averroes, Avempace presented, and which, again
 509 according to Averroes, was more appropriate than any other solution that had been
 510 given so far, was that the multiplicity affected the intelligibles only because of the
 511 imagined forms, which serve as substrates in each individual. This explains why
 512 the intelligible of the horse which is in me is different from that which exists in
 513 someone else. In this sense, the intelligible would not be a simple *quid*. We would
 514 rather have the proper entity of the intelligible, and below that a form of the intelli-
 515 gible form whereby there would be an analogy between the intelligible and the
 516 sensible things. A single thing is perceived by me and by you, even though the
 517 image of it which exists in me is different from the image of it which exists in you.

²⁶ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 296; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 506a.

²⁷ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 296; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 506a. Cf. Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima*, p. 411.

²⁸ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima*, p. 490.

As we have already pointed out, Averroes's solution introduces the notion of a 'double' subject for the intelligibles. The argument as is expressed in the *Commentarium magnum* was usually regarded as one of the most important moments in the *via Averrois* by Albertus Magnus and Aquinas.

After having presented these arguments, Cardano takes on a more critical attitude by highlighting the various argumentative discrepancies visible among the supporters of the unity of the intellect. First, he identifies the common assumption shared by the most prominent representatives of this view (Theophrastus, Themistius, Simplicius and Averroes), that is, the idea of the immortality and unity of both the active and the passive intellect for all individuals.²⁹ This is certainly the case with Averroes, provided that here by 'passive intellect' we understand the intellect that Alexander of Aphrodisias called the 'material intellect' (*intellectus materialis*). As for the other authors, however, a more detailed discussion is needed. Did Theophrastus, Themistius and Simplicius all believe in the eternity and unity of both intellects? Or is here Cardano's judgement perhaps overhasty? He certainly suggests that all of them agree on the unity and the immortality of the active and the passive intellects. At the same time, he indicates their differences when it comes to determining whether both intellects, or only one of them are really a part of us. Cardano lists the positions as follows: 'Some assume that only the passive intellect is a part of our soul, as Theophrastus seems to intimate; others neither the active, nor the passive, and this seems to be Averroes's opinion; others, finally, both the active and the passive, as is clearly held by Themistius.'³⁰ To recapitulate, we can say that Cardano attributes to Theophrastus the unity and immortality of both intellects (active and passive) and the idea that only the passive intellect can be properly said to be human. To Themistius, he assigns the view that the characters of unity, immortality and humanity belong to both intellects. To Simplicius he attributes the thesis of the unity and immortality of both intellects (without saying whether the condition of both intellects is human or transcendent). To Averroes, finally, he attributes the unity and immortality of the two intellects, which do not properly belong to human beings. This diversity of opinions, which also manifests itself in the distinction between the two intellects, helps Cardano to criticise severely the lack of consistence among those who defend the unity of the intellect.

Concerning Theophrastus, as Cardano himself points out, everything we know about him in this respect is derived from Themistius's commentary on Aristotle's *De anima*.³¹ That a certain agreement existed between them is suggested by the fact

²⁹ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 297; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 506a.

³⁰ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, pp. 297–298; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 506a.

³¹ On this question, see Edmond Barbotin, *La théorie aristotélicienne de l'intellect d'après Théophraste* (Louvain and Paris: Publications Universitaires de Louvain, 1954) and Dimitri Gutas, 'Averroes on Theophrastus, though Themistius', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Tradition: Sources, Constitution and Reception of the Philosophy of Ibn Rushd (1126–1198)*, eds Gerhard Endress and Jan A. Aertsen, with the assistance of Klaus Braun (Leiden: Brill, 1999), pp. 125–144.

553 that Themistius formulated his own opinion on the basis of statements extracted
554 from him. An example can be found in the following fragment:

555 In also addressing the distinctions drawn by Aristotle regarding the productive intellect,
556 he says, 'What must be investigated is our saying that in the whole of nature one thing is
557 like matter, and is in potentiality, while another is causative and productive;' and that 'That
558 which produces [an affection] is always more valuable than that which is affected, and the
559 first principle [more valuable] than the matter.' While accepting this, he still works through
560 problems: 'What, then, are these two natures? And what furthermore is the substrate for,
561 and conjoint partner of, the productive [intellect]? For the intellect is in a way mixed out of
562 the productive and potential [intellects]. So if the [intellect] that moves is naturally cognate
563 [with the soul], it would also have [been so] instantaneously and perpetually. But if [the
564 intellect that moves] is a later [development], with what, and how, does it come into existence?
565 It seems that if indeed it is also imperishable, it is a substance that is not created. Yet
566 if it exists in [the soul], why not perpetually? Why is there loss of memory, confusion and
567 falsity? It may be because of the mixture [with the passive intellect].' From all this it is clear
568 that we are not inappropriately assuming that one intellect is passive and perishable, which
569 [Theophrastus and Aristotle] also call 'common' and 'inseparable from the body' (it is
570 mixture with *this* [intellect] that Theophrastus says causes loss of memory and confusion
571 [for the productive intellect]); and that another [intellect] is like a combination of the
572 potential and actual [intellects], which they posit as separate from the body, imperishable,
573 and uncreated. These intellects are natures that in different ways are one as well as two, for
574 what [is combined] from matter and form is one.³²

575 Obviously for Theophrastus, making mistakes and forgetting are due to an
576 impoverishment of its nature which the active intellect suffers when it mixes with
577 the passive intellect. With this passage from Themistius in mind, we can understand
578 Cardano's statement about Theophrastus's opinion that the passive intellect was
579 inherently part of the soul while the active intellect had an external origin. This
580 point is even clearer in the following passage, when Themistius refers to Aristotle's
581 *nous thyrathen* (i.e., the intellect that 'comes from outside'), and reports another
582 passage from Theophrastus:

583 But what affection [is produced] on an incorporeal [object] by an incorporeal [object]?
584 What kind of change [is this]? And is the source [of the change] from the object or from the
585 [intellect] itself? Because [the intellect] is affected, it would seem to be from the object (for
586 nothing that is affected is so from itself). Yet because the intellect is the source of all things,
587 and thinking is in its power, unlike the senses, [the source of the change would seem to be]
588 from within itself. But perhaps this too would seem absurd if the [potential] intellect has the
589 nature of matter by being [in actuality] nothing, yet potentially all things.³³

590 Here we can notice that the text does not make any difference between the active
591 intellect and the potential intellect. Themistius thus presents Theophrastus as always
592 referring to the intellect in a broad sense (*nous*) without making any distinction.
593 In his text, however, Theophrastus defends the character of the intellect as being
594 intrinsic to the soul, and since he wants to attribute to it an almost double nature

³²Themistius, *In Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, p. 108, 18–34; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, pp. 133–134.

³³Themistius, *In Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, p. 107, 30–108, 7; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, p. 133.

(that of receiving intelligible objects and being affected by them, a characteristic that it shares with the senses, and that of being the principle of its own intellectual activity, which instead separates it from the senses), we could say that this double intellectual tendency, active and passive, is rooted in the human soul.

This coincides only in part with what Cardano says about Theophrastus. Cardano attributes to him the intrinsic character of the potential intellect and the external character of the active intellect. On the basis of the text quoted above, we can say that Theophrastus seems to have considered both intellects, or better, both faces of the human intellect, as being inherent to the soul. Another question is whether to look at Theophrastus, as Cardano does, as one of the advocates of the unity of the intellect, or even more, as we can see in the passage under consideration here, as someone who defends the unity of both the active and the passive intellects. In this case, Cardano's source would have been a different one, probably Averroes himself, from whose works the American scholar W.W. Fortenbaugh has extracted a number of fragments belonging to Theophrastus's lost treatise.³⁴ When, for example, Averroes discusses the nature of the material intellect, he states:

Hence Aristotle, when he found the disposition (*praeparatio*) which is in the intellect to be diverse from the others, judged in a precise way that the nature which is a subject for it differs from the other disposed natures (*naturae preparatae*). What is proper to that subject of disposition is that there is in it none of the intentions intelligible in potency or in act. Hence it was necessary that it not be a body nor a form in a body. And since it is not a body, nor a power in a body, it will also not be the forms of the imagination (*formae ymaginationis*), for those are powers in bodies (*virtutes in corporibus*) and they are intentions intelligible in potency (*intentiones intellecte in potentia*). Since the subject of that disposition is neither a form of the imagination nor a mixture of elements, as Alexander intended, nor can we say that some disposition is stripped from a subject, we rightly see that Theophrastus, Themistius, Nicolaus, and others among the ancient Peripatetics hold faster to the demonstration of Aristotle and preserve his words to a greater degree. For since they attend to the accounts and words of Aristotle, none could bring these to bear upon the disposition itself alone nor upon the thing subject to the disposition [as] if we had asserted it to be a power in a body, while saying that it is simple, separate, impassible, and unmixed with the body. If that were not the opinion of Aristotle, it would be necessary that it be held that it is the true opinion.³⁵

Judging from this text, it is obvious that Averroes had put Theophrastus (alongside Themistius) in the domain of his interpretation of Aristotle's thought. They both share the same conception of the separate material intellect which is different from the soul insofar as it does not have any connection with the body and its faculties, since it is neither a body nor a form which inhabits a body. It is because of explanations such as this one provided by Averroes that Themistius and Theophrastus were later included among the authors who had defended the unity of the intellect. This tradition, as we have seen, is echoed by Cardano. The problem with Theophrastus is that – according to the texts already examined – he seems to maintain both the

³⁴ See *Theophrastus of Eresus. Sources for His Life, Writings, Thought, and Influence*, ed. William W. Fortenbaugh, Pamela M. Huby, Robert W. Sharples and Dimitri Gutas, 2 vols (Leiden: Brill, 1992).

³⁵ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima*, p. 432; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, p. 345.

636 transcendence and the immanence of at least the active principle of our intellect.
637 Such a principle is transcendent insofar as Aristotle had established with sufficient
638 clarity that its provenance was external and that he had insisted (chapter 5 of *De anima*
639 III is unambiguous in this respect) on its autonomous and impassive character.
640 But the active principle of the intellect is also immanent, since the fact that it permeates
641 the outside points to the fact that it truly exists in the human being. As we have
642 stated concerning the texts mentioned above, Theophrastus considered these two
643 intellects to be mixed. This also means, as we have said, that the active principle is
644 immanent. No great exegetic effort is needed in order to understand that, for this
645 disciple of Aristotle, such an active principle plays a role from the very beginning
646 of each individual's life, in the sense that the act of thinking is in the end immanent and
647 transcendent. It takes place in an individual, but ultimately has a superior origin and
648 is probably indivisible. In this sense, it would be correct to list Theophrastus among
649 those who, one way or another, defended a kind of collective noetics – at least
650 partly, insofar as it refers to the active principle of understanding, or, if one wishes,
651 the active intellect.

652 At any rate, Themistius's claim that there are three intellects is unambiguous and
653 he clearly describes the role that each one plays in the act of human thinking. In this
654 sense, one can say that Cardano's account of Themistius's position is correct, although
655 some caveats are in order. In Cardano's opinion, Themistius had anticipated the doctrine
656 of the unity of the intellect, had claimed that such unity held true for both the
657 active and the passive intellect, and, finally, had maintained that both intellects were
658 part of the human soul. Given these premises, Cardano could interpret Themistius as
659 opposed to Averroes and, in a narrower context, to Alexander, who had identified the
660 active intellect with God. From very early on, Themistius had certainly been praised
661 for the emphasis he had placed on the human character of the active intellect³⁶ and –
662 as a consequence – for his unwillingness to identify the active intellect with the
663 Aristotelian deity. There is no doubt that this is what Cardano had in mind when he
664 attributed to Themistius the notion that all intellects which participate in understand-
665 ing share the character of the human soul. It is therefore obvious that Themistius's
666 theory of the intellect is firmly placed in the domain of human psychology. The fea-
667 tures of this psychology are as follows: instead of assimilating the activity of the
668 intellect described in *De anima* III, 5 (i.e., the active intellect) to God's activity as
669 defined in book 12 of *Metaphysics* – as done by Alexander –, Themistius speaks
670 rather of a connection (like something composed of matter and form) of the active
671 intellect and the potential intellect, the latter being ontologically inferior to the for-
672 mer. These two intellects are both to be distinguished from the third intellect (the
673 passive intellect), which is associated with the functions of memory, emotion and
674 discursive reasoning. This last intellect is the one that cannot be separated from the
675 body, whereas the potential intellect can be separated from it, even though to a lesser
676 degree than the active intellect (the productive intellect), due to its closer relationship

³⁶ See Themistius, *In Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, p. 103, 4–5, 13; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, p. 129.

with the soul. The separable character of the potential intellect as well as its status as the matter of the productive intellect are crucial for understanding Themistius's original contribution to the question. This intellect is not merely a precondition for the intellectual development of the mind, the condition appropriate for the production of concepts, but it is also the 'forerunner' of the productive intellect in the soul, i.e., that which prepares the soul for the kind of thinking which the active intellect makes possible.³⁷ What this means is that the relationship between the productive intellect and the individual can be represented as a self-fulfilling form. This is apparent when he affirms that the essence of personal identity is the intellect *in actu*, and also in the interchangeable use of the terms 'we' and 'productive intellect.'³⁸ On the other hand, in a passage based on Aristotelian quotations, Themistius develops a point of view concerning personal identity according to which after death, 'we', insofar as we are productive intellect, do not remember any connection with the passive intellect.³⁹ The notion of an individual thinking subject thus vanishes in a theory of the intellect in which, as Cardano states, the mind ends up having a collective nature, a nature which belongs to the active as well as to the potential intellects (only the third intellect, the passive intellect, perishes). What Cardano says here about Themistius is thus clearly justified.⁴⁰ Furthermore, Themistius confirms (indeed, through Alexander) the existence of the first and unique intellect, through which we can account for the existence of common notions that are valid for all human beings, the possibility of communication, and, through that, of teaching:

The intellect that illuminates in a primary sense is one, while those that are illuminated and that illuminate are, just like light, more than one. For while the sun is one, you could speak of light as in a sense divided among the organs of sight.⁴¹

As far as Simplicius is concerned, whom Cardano also mentions as one of the advocates of the unity of the intellect,⁴² his treatment of the intellectual activity of human beings is not very different from what we have just said about Themistius, although the background of the Simplicius's philosophy is more clearly shaped by Neoplatonic ideas. Thus, in a Plotinian manner, he situates the soul – or, more specifically, intellection as its more excellent faculty – in the middle between mortality and immortality, perishable diversity and eternal unity:

The cause is the procession through intermediates from the highest entities to the lowest, so that there should be no empty space. This is so since it is necessary that the intermediates

³⁷ See Themistius, *In Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, p. 105, 30–34; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, p. 131.

³⁸ See Themistius, *In Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, p. 100, 37–101,1; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, p. 125.

³⁹ See Themistius, *In Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, p. 101, 1–4; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, p. 126.

⁴⁰ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 297; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 506a.

⁴¹ Themistius, *In Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, p. 105, 30–34; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, p. 131.

⁴² Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 297; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 506a.

710 are superior to the lowest entities as being more powerful and nearer to the things that exist
 711 primarily. So the human soul is intermediate, or rather the reason of this kind of soul, which
 712 he [i.e., Aristotle] here calls intellect, intermediate between things that are indivisible and
 713 divided, between those that are always in the same condition and those which change
 714 entirely, and between those that are entirely their own and those that exist in something else,
 715 because it transcends the latter and does not attain the state of the former: in so far as it is
 716 on a higher level than things which are in another, it too is immaterial, but in so far as it does
 717 not attain the state of the entities which are highest and remain in themselves, it neither
 718 always thinks simply nor is it thought in the pure sense.⁴³

719 From Simplicius's point of view, the question is thus to understand which nature
 720 prevails in the human soul (or at least, in its most excellent part, the intellect), whether
 721 that of the inferior beings or that of the superior ones. Plotinus, who on this matter
 722 was clearly followed by Porphyry, maintained the transcendence of our intellect.
 723 In later forms of Neoplatonism, however, it was argued that, because of the intermedi-
 724 diary nature of human intellection as well as its imperfection, the superior part of the
 725 soul has to be reconciled with the other parts.⁴⁴ Along the same lines as Themistius,
 726 Simplicius defended the autonomy of the human intellect and denied that its active
 727 element was outside of the human soul. In his commentary on *De anima*, he declared
 728 that 'the question' was only about 'our soul'. And he went on to say:

729 In our soul there is not only what is acted on, but also what acts, the principle and cause of
 730 the things that happen. Further, what acts in the soul is able to think itself and unites its
 731 activity indivisibly with its substance. The principle and cause of the things that happen,
 732 and what is activity in its substance, is separable and simple. What is separable and simple
 733 belongs to itself and is not in anything other. This sort of thing cannot admit its opposite,
 734 lack of life and lack of substance (it will never admit the contrary in itself, nor in anything
 735 else, since it belongs only to itself). So what acts in the soul, being unable to admit death
 736 and destruction, turns out to be necessarily immortal and indestructible, not primarily
 737 because of its inability to admit them, but, as has been said, on account of the fact that in its
 738 inclination to the outside it sources secondary substances and faculties.⁴⁵

739 Insofar as there is something in the human soul which has a superior nature, the
 740 soul is immortal like the higher substances, and in a way it has the character of
 741 something indivisible. In this sense, one could include Simplicius among the inter-
 742 preters who defended a certain unity of the intellect, including the immanent char-
 743 acter of the active principle. Although Simplicius maintained that the potential or
 744 material character of the intellect had a perishable nature, what he meant by that was
 745 that the potential intellect *qua* potential intellect is perishable to the extent that,
 746 while advancing towards perfection, it gradually abandons the level of potentiality

⁴³ Simplicius, *In libros Aristotelis de anima commentaria*, ed. Michael Hayduck, in *Commentaria in Aristotelem Graeca*, ed. H. Diels, 23 vols (Berlin: Reimer, 1882–1909), XI (1882), p. 238, 5–13; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul, 3.1-5*, trans. H. J. Blumenthal (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2000), p. 104.

⁴⁴ Proclus, *In Platonis Timaeum commentaria*, ed. Ernst Diehl, 3 vols (Leipzig: Teubner, 1903–1906), III, p. 333, 29 and ff.

⁴⁵ Simplicius, *In libros Aristotelis de anima commentaria*, p. 247, 3–13; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul, 3.1-5*, p. 116.

to acquire a higher condition, i.e., the immortal life of the active intellect. In this form of self-actualisation, as also presented by Themistius, there is no explicit difference between the active and the passive principle of the human intellect. It is probably for this reason that Cardano attributed to both Themistius and Simplicius the idea that there is no actual distinction between the active and the potential intellect.⁴⁶

[AU2] As for Cardano's own remarks on the various proofs in favour of the unity of the intellect, it should be pointed out that he refers to Aquinas and Pomponazzi to distance himself from Averroes's position. As we have already said, by and large, Cardano accepted Aquinas's and Pomponazzi's views on the matter. Nevertheless, he also thought it appropriate to add some new observations.

The first point he made is that – within certain limits and qualifications – he did not have conceptual objections to some of the fundamental statements of Averroism:

By all means, if we speak of the unity of the intellect in terms of nature, origin and essence, I grant this meaning to them, for human beings do not differ among them any more than horses or dogs do. The origin of all intellects seems to be the same for all, for human beings, from very early on, are endowed with the same principles, as in all swallows there is the same ability to build a nest.⁴⁷

Here Cardano agrees with the Averroists that one has to assume a certain level of unity in the species humankind. However, the advocates of the intellect's unity go beyond this assumption and here is where Cardano cannot agree with them any longer. First of all, he states that they maintain the unity of the potential intellect and support this position, among other things, by referring to the apparent unity of science. In this sense, Cardano agrees that the knowledge which is in the mathematician Apollonius of Perga and the one which could be in himself are the same despite any difference of time that may separate the two individuals. The continuity of knowledge, Cardano continues, is only an accident of the individual intellect and one can only regard it as one single thing from an accidental point of view. What is accidental is subject to change, and this fact goes against its identity as a unique and continuous reality. It is well known that science is affected by changes in time and by the diversity of individuals who devote themselves to such an activity. Science advances, suffers setbacks and even disappears. No independent, substantial entity would undergo such changes. If therefore the unity of the passive intellect is represented by the unity of knowledge, then such unity is to be rejected because the plurality of individuals prevails and this plurality turns itself into a diversity of potential intellects. As a result, the alleged unity of science is purely circumstantial and depends on the way in which we, as human beings, understand reality, and it is not the expression of a substantial being. This argument concerning the unity of science is intimately related to the possibility of learning or transferring knowledge from a teacher to his or her student. Thomas Aquinas refuted this theory by referring

⁴⁶ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 301; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 506b.

⁴⁷ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 301; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 506b.

787 to a transitive view of the process of intellection. Unity, he argued, exists in the
 788 origin – i.e., in the object of knowledge – and not at the end – i.e., in the intellect – of
 789 such a process:

790 Therefore, there is one thing that is understood by me and you, but it is understood by
 791 means of one thing by me and by means of another by you, that is, by different intelligible
 792 species, and my understanding differs from yours and my intellect differs from yours.
 793 Hence, Aristotle in the *Categories* says that knowledge is singular with respect to its sub-
 794 ject: ‘the individual knowledge of grammar is in a subject, the soul, but is not said of any
 795 subject.’ Hence, when my intellect understands itself to understand, it understands some
 796 singular activity; when however, it understands understanding simply, it understands some-
 797 thing universal. It is not singularity that is repugnant to intelligibility, but materiality; thus,
 798 since they are immaterial singulars, as was said of separate substances above, nothing prevents
 799 such singulars from being understood.⁴⁸

800 On the other hand, Cardano believes that it is pointless to think about the unity
 801 of the potential intellect since the most important reason for considering its unity is
 802 to avoid the (infinite) multiplicity of forms after death, but ‘if that intellect is perish-
 803 able, what is the point of making it one?’⁴⁹ Therefore, if one eliminates the possibility
 804 of immortality regarding the potential intellect, there is no disadvantage involved in
 805 accepting its plurality regarding the subjects of which it represents the form.⁵⁰ We
 806 can see here that Cardano joins the ranks of those who believe in the mortality of the
 807 passive intellect, a position which he has extensively developed in the previous
 808 chapters of *De immortalitate*. The passive intellect is the real form of the human
 809 being, and following the generic definition which he attributes to the soul based on
 810 book 2 of Aristotle’s *De anima*, its dissolution can only be thought of as happening
 811 simultaneously with that of the entire composite.

812 After having dealt with the unity of the passive intellect, Cardano turns to that of
 813 the active intellect. Here, too, he is not favourably disposed towards the Averroist
 814 point of view. The main thrust of Cardano’s argument is that one cannot possibly
 815 consider the intellect as one, if it is compared to light, for when we rely on the simile
 816 of the light of the sun which is at the same time in the eyes of many, then inevitably
 817 a number of problems arise. The first one is that the active intellect would not be a
 818 substance, for ‘the likeness (*similitudo*) of a substance is not a substance.’ The intel-
 819 lect, though, Cardano continues, ‘is a substance, as we have demonstrated.’⁵¹ For
 820 Cardano, however, the possibility of personal immortality can only be derived from
 821 assuming that the active intellect is an independent substance. If the comparison
 822 refers to the image of the light which is in the eyes, we have to admit the plurality of
 823 active intellects. The image which is in my eye is different from that which is in the
 824 eye of another person; therefore, the active intellects, like the images, are subject to

⁴⁸ Thomas Aquinas, *De unitate intellectus contra Averroistas*, in *Aquinas against the Averroists: On There Being Only One Intellect*, ed. Ralph McInerny (West Lafayette, IN: Purdue University Press, 1993), p. 133. See Aristotle, *Categories*, 2, 1a25-27.

⁴⁹ Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, p. 302; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 507a.

⁵⁰ *Ibid.*: ‘Nam formas materia exortas pro subiectis compositis numerare nullum est inconveniens.’

⁵¹ *Ibid.*

plurality, even though, like the images, they have a common source. Furthermore, there are other difficulties involved in identifying the active intellect with light. Is it by any chance the light itself which sees? This would imply that knowledge is not actually in us and that the light is not the medium through which our eye sees, as one should understand it, but that which itself sees. Yet another issue, however, is, according to Cardano, whether the image of the light (which is in us) is a substance:

If light and its image are both substance, our search ends here, for we do not reject, nor do we intend to reject the thesis that all intellectual souls arise from and depend on one principal substance.⁵²

This point of view can be accepted if it is based on the assumption that there is a plurality of such substances. Otherwise, if one maintains the unity of the origin, the result is a series of unacceptable conclusions. All human beings would be one and we would all know (or not know) the same all the time. Furthermore, if this intellectual substance is different from us, so that the unity is preserved in spite of the diversity of the underlying subjects, then our understanding would not be our understanding and the unity of the individual would be broken up. This last aspect is certainly something which seems to be in opposition with Cardano's own concept of the active intellect as a substance which is independent of the human soul. For this reason, he postpones the discussion of this aspect.

The starting point for the comparison of the active intellect with light can be found in chapter 5, book 3 of Aristotle's *De anima*. The analogy had already been used by Plato, so that Themistius was able to establish a parallel between the comparison as it appears in Aristotle and the one that can be found in book 6 of Plato's *Republic*. As already noticed,⁵³ Themistius indicates the existence of a first, illuminating intellect, and of many intellects which are at the same time illuminated by it and illuminate themselves through their corresponding passive intellects:

For while the sun is one, you could speak of light as in a sense divided among the organs of sight. That is why Aristotle introduced as a comparison not the sun but [its derivative] light, whereas Plato [introduced] the sun [itself], in that he makes it analogous to the good.⁵⁴

Eager to explain the function of the *nous poeietikos*, Aristotle had certainly established an analogy between this intellect and the light, comparing the former with the function that the latter fulfils in the act of vision. Light appears as the third element which turns out to be indispensable between the faculty of vision and the perceived object. Unfortunately, Aristotle did not develop this analogy in any detail and did not explain several aspects of it. (Such an explanation, no doubt, would have made many later interpretations redundant.) Obviously, light does not carry in itself the forms of the colours, the vision of which it makes possible. It would, however,

⁵² Ibid., p. 303; *Opera omnia*, II, p. 507a.

⁵³ See p. @@ and n. @@.

⁵⁴ Themistius, *In Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, p. 103, 32–34; Id., *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, p. 129.

862 be absurd to limit the active intellect to a simple intermediary between the thing
863 which is understood and the understanding subject. The comparison with light does
864 not allow us to explain in an adequate manner the truly creative aspect of the active
865 intellect. Not only does the intellect turn potential intelligibles into intelligibles in
866 actuality; it also generates them, a role which is not reflected in the relationship
867 between the light and the colours.⁵⁵ What, at any rate, interests us here is that the
868 comparison of the active intellect with light had led to a great controversy when it
869 came to determining whether or not the active intellect is immanent to the human
870 soul, and, furthermore, whether its character is one or diverse with respect to the
871 underlying subjects. Cardano participated in this debate, and the passage quoted
872 above is evidence of his involvement in the question. It cannot be denied that
873 Aristotle used a fairly laconic style in his famous chapter 5. Expanding on the anal-
874 ogy of the light as it was presented in that chapter, commentators of all times have
875 asked themselves whether the principle Aristotle described as the active intellect is
876 a transcendent nature that is one for all humankind, or whether it is something
877 which belongs to the specific constitution of individual human beings. The begin-
878 ning of the chapter seems to indicate that this active principle is in the soul.⁵⁶
879 However, it is also the case that the attributes which Aristotle assigned to it makes
880 one think of a certain kind of transcendence – separable, unaffected, unmixed,
881 always *in actu* – and many commentators have claimed that, from a purely
882 Aristotelian point of view, these attributes can only suggest that we are dealing with
883 a transcendent principle of the human soul. Alexander of Aphrodisias was a leading
884 representative of this interpretation, and there seems to be no way around the reason-
885 ing which led him to identifying it with the first cause, or, as one should say, the
886 God described in book 12 of the *Metaphysics*. For him, that which has the highest
887 degree of a certain property is the reason for that property to be present in other
888 things, and this is also the case with light. It has the highest degree of visibility and
889 therefore is the cause of the visibility of the objects. Likewise, that which has the
890 highest degree of intelligibility is the cause of other things being intelligible. Such
891 reality can only be the active intellect. If one considers this intellect the cause of the
892 existence of all other things, as well as separable and unaffected, and if one also

⁵⁵ Here I would like to mention an alternative interpretation that can be traced back to Thomas Aquinas, in his commentary upon this passage from book 3 of *De anima*. For Aquinas, it is not necessary that the active intellect contains the intelligibles or that it be their creator before they take shape in the material or potential intellect. This would be a contradiction; for, if the active intellect possessed in itself the determination of all the intelligibles, the material intellect would have no need to conceive and abstract from those intelligibles the imaginative forms that come from the senses. They would be actualised in the material intellect with the mere presence of the agent intellect. However, since the intelligibles can only be obtained through a process of abstraction that requires the availability of images, it is better – so Aquinas argues – to consider the intellect as a kind of immaterial power that makes other beings similar to it, i.e., immaterial. This is what is meant by the active intellect converting the potential into actualised intelligibles. See Thomas Aquinas, *Commentaire du traité de l'âme d'Aristote*, ed. Jean-Marie Vernier (Paris: Vrin, 1999), p. 357.

⁵⁶ Aristotle, *De anima*, III, 5, 430a10-14.

assumes that that which is separable is that which really is, one reaches the conclusion, 893
 incontrovertible for Alexander, that this reality is identical with the first cause.⁵⁷ 894
 Others, however, have tried to maintain a certain balance between both positions in 895
 order to make the immanent character of the active intellect somehow compatible 896
 with its transcendent character – a position which, as we have seen, Theophrastus 897
 seems to have held. In a similar manner, Themistius tried to save the dichotomy by 898
 distinguishing the active intellects (illuminated and illuminating), which are located 899
 in the human soul, and the other active intellect (which is only illuminating), which 900
 has a completely transcendent and unique reality. 901

As for Averroes's interpretation of the Aristotelian analogy between light and the 902
 process of intellection, here we can also find what one might consider the genuine 903
 element in his own reading of the Aristotelian theory of the intellect: 904

It is as if [Aristotle] says: and the way which forced us to suppose the agent intellect is the 905
 same as the way on account of which sight needs light. For just as sight is not moved by 906
 colours except when they are in act, which is not realised unless light is present since it is what 907
 draws them from potency into act, so too the imagined intentions (*intentiones ymaginate*) do 908
 not move the material intellect except when the intelligibles are in act (*nisi quando fuerint* 909
intellecte in actu), because it is not actualised by these unless something else is present, 910
 namely, the intellect in act. It was necessary to ascribe these two activities to the soul in us, 911
 namely, to receive the intelligible (*recipere intellectum*) and to make it (*facere eum*), although 912
 the agent and the recipient are eternal substances, on account of the fact that these two activi- 913
 ties are reduced to our will, namely, to abstract intelligibles and to understand them.⁵⁸ 914

This text clearly suggests that Averroes's thought is more complex and deserves 915
 a more detailed discussion than what Cardano, for example, offers. The latter argues 916
 that, if we speak about the active intellect as a unique reality for all humankind, and 917
 at the same time consider it a formal part of each individual, we will have to make 918
 absurd claims such as that we all know or do not know the same at the same time, 919
 or that we are all really one single human being, or that there cannot be several 920
 geometers or architects. These objections, however, had already been discussed by 921
 Averroes himself, who responded to them, as can be seen from the text we have just 922
 quoted. Averroes tried to integrate the incontrovertible experience that we are indi- 923
 viduals who think with the attribution of the characters of eternity and substantiality 924
 to both intellects. Averroes acknowledged that our will determines our intellection 925
 and therefore, in addition to the active and the material intellects, he referred to a third 926
 intellect, the acquired (*adeptus*) intellect, which represents the integration of the 927
 other two intellects in the individual. As is known, the crux of the matter here is 928
 that the active intellect does not act upon the material intellect, but upon the sensible 929
 images which are present in the imagination. Through the active intellect, the sense- 930
 ble images, which are intelligible in potentiality, turn into intelligibles in actuality 931

⁵⁷ Alexander of Aphrodisias, *De anima*, in *Praeter commentaria scripta minora*, ed. Ivo Bruns (Berlin: Reimer, 1887–1892), p. 89, 17–19.

⁵⁸ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis de anima libros*, p. 439; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, p. 345.

932 and become property of the potential intellect. This cannot be the form of the individual,
 933 since otherwise it would have to be individualised through matter and it would lose
 934 the character of pure potentiality that Aristotle attributes to it.⁵⁹ Therefore, from this
 935 situation, i.e., from the union of the active intellect with the sensible images, from
 936 their actualisation as intelligibles and their reception in the material intellect, the
 937 acquired intellect arises which belongs to the thinking subject. Because of this indi-
 938 vidual realisation, one can affirm that the intellective act is the property of a subject,
 939 although, among its basic elements, it is only the sensible images – a necessary
 940 condition for the intellective process that takes place in the human mind – which,
 941 strictly speaking, have an individual origin.

942 In his analysis of Averroes's solution, Cardano is not convinced that the active
 943 intellect understood as the form of the whole species can still safeguard the form of
 944 the individual thinking being. If the active intellect is not our form and the ultimate
 945 cause of understanding, how can we then speak properly of *our* intellective act?
 946 In *De unitate intellectus* (3, 60–66), Aquinas had argued in a way that is not very
 947 different from Cardano, even though his discussion was much more detailed. He
 948 took the following thesis as his starting point: The intellect, being a faculty of the
 949 soul, has to be considered a form of the body; as such, it has to exist since the first
 950 moment of its coming into being; however, none of this can be argued if neither the
 951 active intellect (the active principle of intellection), nor the material or potential
 952 intellect (which receives the intelligibles), are part of the structure of the human
 953 being. Averroes had suggested that the connection of the active intellect with the
 954 individual imaginative species gives the individual a form which is superior to that
 955 which he had at the beginning, which is nothing else than the sensitive soul. In what
 956 sense can the active intellect then be seen as the form of the individual? From the
 957 point of view of the individual, the acquired intellect, i.e., the individual crystallisa-
 958 tion of the active and the passive intellects which happens through the intermedia-
 959 tion of the sensible images, constitutes the true form of the compound and as such
 960 it is the highest form of the concrete human being and of his soul. Now, we should
 961 not forget that the active intellect is the form of the acquired intellect, insofar as it
 962 has made possible the conversion of the potential intelligibles (the imaginative
 963 forms) into intelligibles *in actu*. In this sense, we can show that in a way the active
 964 intellect is the form of the individual. The theory is certainly not simple, but perhaps
 965 Averroes's own words can be of some help:

966 We, therefore, have already found the way in which it is possible for that intellect [i.e., the
 967 agent intellect] to be conjoined with us (*continuetur nobiscum*) in the end and the reason
 968 why it is not united with us in the beginning (*non copulatur nobiscum in principio*). For
 969 when this has been asserted, it will necessarily happen that the intellect which is in us in act

⁵⁹ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis de anima libros*, p. 385: 'ista substantia que dicitur intellectus materialis nullam habet in sui natura de formis materialibus istis. Et quia forme materiales sunt aut corpus aut forme in corpore, manifestum est quod ista substantia que dicitur intellectus materialis neque est corpus neque forma in corpore; est igitur non mixtum cum materia omnino.'

be composed of theoretical intelligibles (*intellecta speculativa*) and the agent intellect in such a way that the agent intellect is as it were the form of the theoretical intelligibles and the theoretical intelligibles are as it were matter. In this way we will be able to generate intelligibles when we wish. For because that in virtue of which something carries out its proper activity is the form, while we carry out our proper activity in virtue of the agent intellect, it is necessary that the agent intellect be form in us. There is no way in which the form is generated in us except that. For when the theoretical intelligibles are united with us through forms of the imagination (*cum intellecta speculativa copulantur nobiscum per formas ymaginabiles*) and the agent intellect is united with the theoretical intelligibles (for that which apprehends [theoretical intelligible] is the same, namely, the material intellect), it is necessary that the agent intellect be united with us through the conjoining of the theoretical intelligibles.⁶⁰

One of the objections which can be raised against such a position is presented by Aquinas, with whom Cardano agrees here: the perfection of the human being does not occur of course in the moment of coming into being, as one would think, but only when the senses have been developed. From this point onwards, the connection between the active intellect and the concrete individual is possible. If, however, the active intellect as the individual form does not originate with the beginning of generation, it is obvious that to study the form is not a task connected with physics, but rather with metaphysics. In this case, as Cardano points out (agreeing not only with Aquinas, but also with Pomponazzi) Averroes seems to contradict Aristotle's words, since in book 12 of the *Metaphysics* the human soul never appears among the separate and eternal substances which Aristotle discusses there. Neither does he speak about the separate intellects in *De anima*. In highlighting the tensions between the psychological and cosmological components in Averroes's interpretation of Aristotle's theory of the intellect, Cardano proved to be abreast of the ongoing debate over the nature of the soul and able to contribute to the discussion with original ideas and arguments.

⁶⁰ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis de anima libros*, pp. 499–500; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, pp. 398–399.

Author Queries

Chapter No.: 8 0001629569

Queries	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	In this Chapter, we have considered all the Chapter cross references (Chapters 11, 9 etc.) belong to this book and set those "Chap." as per the style. Please check if this is OK.	
AU2	*** has been deleted before the para of the sentence "As for Cardano's own remarks on the various ...". Please confirm.	

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 9 1

Phantasms of Reason and Shadows of Matter: 2

Averroes's Notion of the Imagination 3

and Its Renaissance Interpreters 4

Guido Giglioni 5

The Imagination and Averroes's Inconceivables 6

A fundamental principle of Aristotle's philosophy, appropriated and originally 7
developed by Averroes, is that intelligibles lie *in* matter in a condition of virtual 8
existence.¹ This assumption presupposes a correspondence between reality (*esse* 9
reale) and its apprehended forms (*esse intentionale*) which allows the intellect to 10
abstract the intelligibles from the representations of the senses after they have been 11
apprehended by the imagination. The activity of the intellect – i.e., the abstraction 12
of intelligible reality from its condition of potential existence – is what Aristotle 13
and his interpreters meant by thinking activity. In this context, intellects in their 14
purest form are unremitting 'actualisers' of potential intelligibility. From sense 15
perception – indeed from the discerning powers underlying the vital faculties of 16
animate bodies – to the highest form of knowledge in which the intellect understands 17
itself (*noesis noeseos*), each level of actuality corresponds to a level of apprehension 18
within the incessant production of intelligible knowledge that pervades the universe. 19

¹ In the course of this chapter, I will use a number of words that took on specific technical meanings in the philosophical literature of the Middle Ages. It is worth reviewing them briefly: *esse reale* (reality insofar as it is in itself), *esse intentionale* (reality insofar as it is apprehended), *intentio* (apprehension), *phantasma* (representation of the imagination), *cogitativa* (the faculty of individual rationality), *obiective* (considered under the aspect of representations), *subiective* (considered under the aspect of substrata, i.e., physical subjects to be informed by their respective forms), *forma informans* (form as an actualising principle that inheres in the subject to be informed), *forma assistens* (form as an active principle that remains separate from the subject to be informed).

G. Giglioni (✉)

School of Advanced Study, Warburg Institute, University of London,
Woburn Square, WC1 0AB London, UK
e-mail: guido.giglioni@sas.ac.uk

20 To put it succinctly, in Averroes's cosmos animals *imagine*, individual human beings
 21 *cogitate*, humankind as a whole *thinks* and the heavenly intelligences *intuit* and
 22 *understand themselves*. These stages in the process of apprehension constitute real
 23 differences, and yet they postulate a continuity of intelligible activity that defines
 24 every single aspect of reality in the universe, on both a sublunary and supralunary
 25 level. In the continuum of rational life, the imagination mediates between the two
 26 extremes of matter and the intellect. In this, it represents a principle of universal
 27 fungibility, through which exchanges of knowledge constantly occur among the
 28 various parts of the universe.

29 In this chapter, I will argue that in Averroes's philosophy the imagination fulfils
 30 specific noetic, cosmological and psychological functions: it bridges the gap
 31 between the human mind and the astral intelligences (noetics), it accounts for
 32 exchanges of energy and knowledge between supralunary and sublunary bodies
 33 (cosmology) and it is the channel through which the human mind communicates
 34 with the other faculties of the soul (psychology). Most of all, the imagination plays
 35 a characteristically delicate role in Averroes's philosophy, in that it mediates between
 36 nature and culture: the imagination – in the form of dialectical, rhetorical, poetic,
 37 narrative and exegetic transactions – bridges the gap that separates the level of uni-
 38 versal and necessary knowledge from that of sensible, individual and popular repre-
 39 sentations. This means that, in abstracting the *intentiones* of meaning from the
 40 matter of the universe, an apprehensive power manifests itself in a variety of forms
 41 throughout the ladders of the sublunary and supralunary worlds, from the most ele-
 42 mentary faculties of vital discernment active in plants and bodily organs to the actu-
 43 alising power of the intellect operating in the celestial spheres. This phenomenon
 44 does not occur only in nature. The same holds true for human cultures, which can
 45 be seen as different arenas in which alternative forms of reasoning confront each
 46 other and constantly need to be reconciled by applying varying standards of proof
 47 depending on the circumstances.

48 Imaginatively bold, Averroes's philosophy and Averroism have long taxed the phil-
 49 osophical imagination with a series of counterintuitive views originating from a pecu-
 50 liar way of understanding the relationship between knowledge, the intellect and reality.
 51 Jacopo Zabarella, professor of logic and natural philosophy at the University of Padua
 52 from 1564 to 1589 (the year of his death), was not the first and only philosopher to
 53 charge Averroes with a number of inconceivable views (*inexcogabilia*) regarding the
 54 nature of thought.² The following are some of the *inconceivables* that were commonly
 55 associated with Averroes's doctrine of the mind: If, in the great scheme of things, at the
 56 highest level of intellectual knowledge, the understanding subject (*intellectus*), the
 57 understood things (*intellecta*) and the activity of understanding (*intelligere*) converge
 58 into one reality, why should the intellect need the object of knowledge to be synthesised
 59 by the imagination? (Which, by the way, is the fulcrum of Pietro Pomponazzi's dem-
 60 onstration of the mortality of the soul: by requiring an object in the form of the imagi-
 61 nation, human thinking necessarily depends on the body). Connected to this question

² Jacopo Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, in *De rebus naturalibus* (Frankfurt: Lazar Zetzner 1607), c. 964C.

is a series of related *inexcogitabilia*: What is the point of the external world? Why should the soul be united to the body? Is there any room for an individual self? And if the intellect transcends the cogitative functions of the individual self, what does distinguish the cognitive powers of human animals from other non-human animals? They all imagine and, perhaps, cogitate.

Imagination as Apprehensive Intentionality

The Renaissance can be described as the golden age of the imagination given the level of pervasiveness and sophistication that characterised the debate on the nature of the images and the imagination at the time.³ During this period, a question of philosophical exegesis that acted as a powerful catalyst for discussions about the nature of the imagination revolved around a well-known passage from Aristotle's *De anima* (I, 1, 403a): 'possibly thinking is an exception. But if this too is a kind of imagination, or at least is dependent upon the imagination, even this cannot exist apart from the body.'⁴ This is the key locus where Aristotle is debating whether the human mind can or cannot think without relying on the representative material provided by the imagination. In his Long Commentary on Aristotle's *De anima*, Averroes had recalled the crux of the Aristotelian conundrum: 'it is not so evident that understanding is different from imagination.'⁵ Here Averroes concluded that, beyond the dilemmatic formulation of the question, Aristotle had in the end reaffirmed the ontological diversity of the two faculties.

³ On the subject of early modern imagination see: Elizabeth R. Harvey, *The Inward Wits: Psychological Theory in the Middle Ages and the Renaissance* (London: The Warburg Institute, 1975); Paola Zambelli, 'L'immaginazione e il suo potere: Desiderio e fantasia psicosomatica o transitiva', in ead., *L'ambigua natura della magia* (Milan: Il Saggiatore, 1991), pp. 53–75; Frances A. Yates, *The Art of Memory* (London: Pimlico, 1992); *Phantasia ~ Imaginatio*, eds Marta Fattori and Massimo L. Bianchi (Rome: Edizioni dell'Ateneo, 1998); Peter Mack, 'Early Modern Ideas of Imagination: The Rhetorical Tradition', in *Imagination in the Later Middle Ages and Early Modern Times*, eds Lodi Nauta and Detlev Pätzold (Leuven: Peeters, 2004), pp. 59–76; Bernd Roling, 'Glaube, Imagination und leibliche Auferstehung: Pietro Pomponazzi zwischen Avicenna, Averroes und jüdischem Averroismus', in *Wissen über Grenzen. Arabisches Wissen und lateinisches Mittelalter*, eds Andreas Speer und Lydia Wegener (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 2006), pp. 677–699; Stuart Clark, *Vanities of the Eye: Vision in Early Modern European Culture* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2007); Guido Giglioni, 'Fantasy Islands: *Utopia*, *The Tempest* and *New Atlantis* as Places of Controlled Credulousness', in *World-Building in Early Modern Natural Philosophy*, ed. Allison Kavey (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2010), pp. 90–117; Id., 'Coping with Inner and Outer Demons: Marsilio Ficino's Theory of the Imagination', in *Diseases of the Imagination and Imaginary Diseases: Disease in the Early Modern Period*, ed. Yasmin Haskell (Turnhout: Brepols, 2011), pp. 19–50.

⁴ Aristotle, *De anima*, I, 1, 403a, trans. W. S. Hett (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1936), p. 15. See also *De anima*, III, 8, 432a; *De memoria et reminiscencia*, 450a.

⁵ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, ed. F. Stuart Crawford (Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1953), p. 365; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, ed. and trans. Richard C. Taylor (New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2009), p. 279.

82 Aristotle's dilemma created a distinctive hermeneutical situation that led many
 83 Renaissance philosophers to exercise their exegetic skills, from Pomponazzi, who,
 84 as already noted, used the Aristotelian statement to reaffirm the profoundly material
 85 and bodily nature of human experience and culture, to Giordano Bruno, who
 86 stretched the interpretative boundaries to a limit, comparing the process of thinking
 87 to a constitutively visual and imaginative activity and the philosopher to a painter.⁶
 88 For others – in a hermeneutically more sober fashion – the Aristotelian locus meant
 89 that human beings were unable always to think in a demonstrative and systematic
 90 way, or to 'see' the truth in a direct way, and that as a result they had to resort to vari-
 91 ous forms of deliberative thinking in political and ethical contexts, and to interpret
 92 key religious statements in a figurative way. These kinds of undemonstrative and
 93 unintuitive thinking presupposed the existence of a number of alternative views on
 94 reality that needed to be negotiated before one could reach a consensus on the par-
 95 ticular matter under discussion. No doubt, everyone seemed to agree that the imagi-
 96 nation had a key role to play in this situation. Renaissance philosophers saw the
 97 imagination as a mediator between the body and the soul, the intellect and the
 98 senses, the appetites and the will, between the animal and natural functions of the
 99 body, motion and rest, past and future, between memories, dreams and prophecies,
 100 between nature and culture.

101 Averroes's contribution to this debate was momentous. In his philosophy, the
 102 imagination played a crucial role both as a faculty of knowledge and a principle of
 103 life. First, the imagination provides the metaphysical conditions that allow the intel-
 104 lect to think what is different from itself. By definition, the primary object of a pure
 105 intellect is its own essence, because of the already mentioned coincidence between
 106 the understanding subject (*intellectus*), the intelligibles (*intellecta*) and the under-
 107 standing activity (*intelligere*); images represent the principle of otherness – the
 108 body, the world, matter, the object *qua* object. Put otherwise, while the active intel-
 109 lect knows all the other things that are different from it by knowing itself, the human
 110 intellect knows itself by knowing all the things that are different from itself. To put
 111 it in an even more straightforward way: God *qua* the supreme intellect knows the
 112 *reality* of things, human beings know the *images* of things. Alessandro Achillini
 113 (1463–1512), professor of logic, natural philosophy and medicine at Bologna and
 114 Padua, aptly summed up the point in his *Quolibeta de intelligentiis* (first edition
 115 1494, republished in 1506 and 1508): 'no intellect, with the exception perhaps of
 116 the possible intellect, understands something outside itself.'⁷ For Giulio Cesare

⁶ Giordano Bruno, *De imaginum compositione*, in *Opera Latine conscripta*, eds Francesco Fiorentino, Felice Tocco, G. Vitelli, Vittorio Imbriani and Carlo Maria Tallarigo, 8 vols (Naples and Florence: Morano and Le Monnier, 1879–1891), II, iii, pp. 91, 198. The most recent edition of *De imaginum compositione* is in *Opere mnemotecniche*, eds Michele Ciliberto, Marco Matteoli, Rita Sturlese and Nicoletta Tirinnanzi, 2 vols (Milan: Adelphi, 2004–2009), II, pp. 488, 660.

⁷ Alessandro Achillini, *Quolibeta de intelligentiis*, f. 3, c. 2: 'nullus intellectus, nisi forte possibilis, intelligit aliquid extra se', quoted in Bruno Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI* (Florence: Sansoni, 1958), p. 188.

Scaliger (1484–1558), the self-proclaimed champion of Aristotelian correctness, Averroes's principal mistake was to assume that a separate intellect could understand through human *phantasmata*, when in fact this intellect acts in such a way that, 'by intuiting itself, it sees everything.'⁸

The second important role played by the imagination in Averroes's system was to provide the psychological and physiological conditions that make each individual human being a vital self and an ensouled body capable of abstracting the *esse intentionale* from the *esse reale*. Averroes called this sophisticated form of apprehensive faculty, emerging from the potency of matter, *cogitativa*, the cogitative faculty, and he made it the distinguishing mark of human nature.⁹ However, for an Aristotelian like Zabarella, the Averroists' attempt to explain human thinking as the union of the intellect with the *phantasmata* in man's *cogitativa* was a mere 'subterfuge'. Such a union (the famed *copulatio* of the Averroists) could be interpreted as a momentary conjunction resulting from the activity of the imagination (*per phantasmata*) or as an original bond existing 'by nature' (*per naturam*). In criticising the view that such a union was made possible by man's *phantasmata*, Zabarella referred to one of Aquinas's arguments:

If someone, in Averroes's defence, says that the intellect is joined to man through the representations of his imagination (*phantasmata*), and therefore it happens that man understands when the intellect understands, this, says Thomas, means nothing, for, when the intellect according to its nature is deemed to be separate from the human nature, its union with it through the representations of the imagination (*phantasmata*) contributes nothing to making man understand, because these representations are indeed human, but in relation to the intellect their only function is to be a motive object [i.e., *they work as stimuli to the activity of thinking, not as their form*] and a known thing (*res cognita*), not a knowing subject (*cognoscens*). Therefore, through his own representations, a man does not become a subject capable of understanding, in the same way as a wall does not become capable of seeing through the colour with which it stimulates the eye.¹⁰

Possessing *phantasmata* does not make a human being think any more than possessing colours makes a thing a subject capable of seeing. *Phantasmata* are potential *res intellectae*, 'understood things', not *intelligentes res*, 'understanding things'. The role of *phantasmata* is to stimulate the production of intelligible species in the intellect. The solution to this problem offered by some Averroists was to say that the intellect depends on man's body in a 'representational' sense (*objective*), that is,

⁸ Julius Caesar Scaliger, *Hippocratis liber de somniis* (Lyon: Sébastien Gryphe, 1539), p. 9.

⁹ On the meaning of 'cogitative' faculty, see the clear and concise definition contained in Rudolph Göckel's *Lexicon philosophicum* (Frankfurt: Matthias Becker's widow, 1613), p. 380: 'The cogitative faculty is the primary faculty of the senses, and is also called particular reason, for particular conclusions are drawn from it. Averroes maintains that one can find in Aristotle's work the reference to an individual discerning faculty (*virtus distinctiva individualis*), that is, a virtue that distinguishes in an individual and not universal fashion.' Göckel also adds, without making any reference to Averroes, that 'sometimes the act of cogitating is taken for the imagination.'

¹⁰ Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, c. 926C. See Thomas Aquinas, *On There Being Only One Intellect*, ed. R. McInerney (West Lafayette, IN: Purdue University Press, 1993), p. 85.

151 insofar as it depends on human representations (*phantasmata*) understood as the
 152 object from which the intellect is 'moved' (which is very close to Pomponazzi's
 153 solution). But again, as Aquinas had already demonstrated, this would simply mean
 154 that man is *understood* rather than being the *understanding* principle, i.e., an object
 155 of thought rather than a thinking subject.¹¹

156 A second way of characterising the union between the intellect and man's imagi-
 157 native and cogitative faculties was to postulate an original, natural union between
 158 them. Such *copulatio* through nature was supposed to be in place before the devel-
 159 opment of the cogitative faculty so that its partial abstractive powers occur already
 160 at an earlier stage, even before the soul begins to supply *phantasmata* with a
 161 sufficient degree of transparency to be used by the material intellect. In this case,
 162 too, Zabarella contested that a real union could take place in human beings because
 163 the 'presence' of the intellect was 'already constituted through the cogitative faculty
 164 and completed in the human species, in the same way that a man in a ship that is not
 165 sailing is said to be present in the ship, but not united to it.' For Zabarella, it did not
 166 make any sense to say that the intellect was united 'by nature', because the intellect
 167 does not inform, i.e., pervade the whole psycho-physical compound and does not
 168 constitute it as a human being. Rather, for the human mind the experience of know-
 169 ing things would be the same as being possessed by a demon:

170 a demon that possesses a human being is not united to him, although it takes control of him
 171 (*assistat*) and it is even said to move his limbs. Therefore, as when a demon who possesses
 172 a human being understands, but the human being does not understand that he is carrying a
 173 demon, likewise, if the human mind lies in the human being in a way that it does not give
 174 man its being, when such a mind understands, man does not understand.¹²

175 Here Zabarella is rehearsing a series of well-known polemical *topoi* that had long
 176 been used in addressing Averroes's notion of the intellect. In the secondary literature
 177 on Averroes's philosophy and its medieval and Renaissance interpretations, the notion
 178 of the intellect is usually presented as the necessary prerequisite for a correct under-
 179 standing of the notion of the imagination. This interpretative angle is not without
 180 reason, for it cannot be denied that Averroes's theory of the intellect lays the meta-
 181 physical coordinates of his philosophy. The role of the imagination, however, cannot
 182 be confined to the act of providing the intellect with images of sublunary reality.

183 In recent years, a number of historians of philosophy working on Averroes's
 184 thought have been drawing attention to the fact that a better understanding of how
 185 the higher cognitive functions of the soul operate can be reached if the faculty of
 186 sense perception rather than the intellect is taken as the starting point.¹³ Michael
 187 Blaustein, for instance, has argued that apprehension, understood as a process of

¹¹ Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, c. 930.

¹² *Ibid.*, c. 928B. The image of the ship is already in Aquinas's *De unitate intellectus (On There Being Only One Intellect*, p. 87).

¹³ See Michael Blaustein, *Averroes on the Imagination and the Intellect*, PhD thesis, Harvard University, 1984; Richard C. Taylor, 'Cogitatio, Cogitativus and Cogitare: Remarks on the Cogitative Power in Averroes', in *L'élaboration du vocabulaire philosophique au Moyen Âge*, eds Jacqueline Hamesse and Carlos Steel (Turnhout: Brepols, 2000), pp. 110–146 (120); Emanuele Coccia, *La trasparenza delle immagini: Averroè e l'averroismo* (Milan: Bruno Mondadori, 2005).

image formation, represents the key notion in Averroes's theory of knowledge. For 188
 Averroes, any apprehended form is an 'intention' – *ma'nā*, in Arabic, i.e., an image 189
 (usually the term is translated as 'meaning') – of the known object, and therefore it 190
 has a dual nature, i.e., it is both a thing in its own right and the thing it represents. 191
 (The scholastics expressed the same concept with the notions of *ratio formalis* and 192
ratio obiectiva.) Intentions are representations, but they should be understood as 193
 vital apprehensions rather than passive and mechanical reflections of reality. Out of 194
 sensible and material experience, they produce representations of reality that are 195
 increasingly more abstract. This model of apprehensive intentionality is multi-layered. 196
 The external senses apprehend the 'intentions' of the sensible qualities, the common 197
 sense apprehends the 'intentions' of the senses, and so on until we arrive at the intel- 198
 lect, which apprehends the 'intentions' of the cogitative faculty. The main differ- 199
 ence between *cogitativa* and *intellectus* is that the cogitative faculty apprehends 200
 individual forms, while the intellect apprehends universal intelligible forms. Human 201
 beings cogitate, do not think, and their acts of cogitation are imagined intentions 202
 that prelude to the forms of the material intellect.¹⁴ 203

That Averroes devised a comprehensive model of apprehensive intentionality is 204
 confirmed by the way in which Renaissance philosophers interpreted his theory of 205
 the imagination. In this case, it is evident that they addressed the question in a more 206
 comprehensive manner, taking into consideration not only the intellect as a cogni- 207
 tive power, but also the wider context of the internal senses, the system of the natu- 208
 ral faculties of the body, the cosmological setting in its broader significance 209
 (including theories of physical change, reproduction and even angelology), not to 210
 mention the aesthetic, rhetorical and political implications underpinning the ques- 211
 tion of the relationship between the intellect and the imagination. The faculty of the 212
 imagination is involved in all these different contexts and its meaning cannot be 213
 narrowed down to the relationship that it entertains with the intellect. Indeed, it is 214
 through broadening the scope of the imagination in Averroes's system that we can 215
 shed new light on his theory of the intellect. 216

Since Renaissance authors perceived the Averroist view of the imagination as 217
 particularly multifaceted, a proper investigation of this notion should address at least 218
 five levels of analysis: the ontological and noetic question (or: What is the point of 219
 such an elaborate dream of the intellect – i.e., providing the intellect with the imagi- 220
 nation's *intentiones* – if everything, in the final analysis, is eternal and intellectual?), 221
 the cosmological question (or: Do celestial intellects imagine? How does the flow of 222
 intelligible light coming from the celestial intelligences intersect with the material 223
 intellect?), the anthropological and psychological question (or: What is the nature of 224
 the bond that connects the mind with the body?), the medical question (or: Does the 225
 faculty of imagining things have as much power in altering the psycho-physiological 226
 state of human beings as the faculty of believing in them?) and, finally – to borrow 227

¹⁴ Blaustein, *Averroes on the Imagination and the Intellect*. For some of the meanings of *intentio* that are relevant here, see Göckel, *Lexicon philosophicum*, p. 255: 'intentio nihil aliud est quam imago, hoc est, species rei' (in a strictly optical sense); p. 256: 'Intentionales dicuntur species sensiles, quia obiecta materialia sensui repraesentant.'

228 (in this case, quite legitimately) the convenient label introduced by Spinoza – the
 229 theologico-political question (or: What is the role of the imagination in establishing
 230 systems of human beliefs?). As we will see in the course of this chapter, in all these
 231 cases the role of the imagination appears to be crucial.

232 **The Cosmological Aspects of Averroes's Imagination**

233 Some Renaissance philosophers thought that the characteristically Averroist ten-
 234 sion between the oneness (*unitas*) of the material intellect and the unified process of
 235 actualisation imparted to the sublunary world by its energy (*informatio*) could be
 236 solved by putting the discussion in a cosmological context. In the already men-
 237 tioned *Quolibeta de intelligentiis*, Achillini explained how the material intellect,
 238 considered to be the lowest in the series of heavenly intelligences, could be united
 239 to man's soul when this was conjoined to the active intellect (i.e., the highest intel-
 240 lect). In this scheme, the function of human imagination was not confined to making
 241 all *phantasmata* of natural things transparent, but also included the ability to receive,
 242 through the mediation of the material intellect, the knowledge coming from the rest
 243 of the planetary intelligences. Achillini thought that the celestial intelligences, on
 244 the one hand, and the sublunary world, on the other, met and reverberated in the
 245 imagination of human beings when they were in the process of cogitating.¹⁵

246 Averroes's material intellect could therefore be interpreted as both the lowest
 247 planetary intelligence and the one intellect covering the mental activity of the human
 248 species. As Zabarella summed up Averroes's position,

249 [i]t was Averroes's and also Themistius's opinion, then followed by many later thinkers,
 250 that man's rational soul, which Averroes called the possible intellect, is not multiplied
 251 according to the number of human beings, but is only one in number for the whole human
 252 species, and it is the lowest intelligence of all, to which the entire human species was
 253 assigned as its specific and adequate sphere. And this intellect, when a man dies, does not
 254 die, and maintains its numerical identity in the rest of human beings.¹⁶

255 This cosmological point of view implies that the light of the intellect affects not
 256 only the knowledge of universals and concepts, but also the very roots of sensible
 257 knowledge. The *intentiones ymaginabiles*, Averroes had written in his Long
 258 Commentary on Aristotle's *De anima*, are universals in potentiality. They are like
 259 seeds that need to be brought to their condition of full actualisation.¹⁷ The cosmological

¹⁵ See Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano*, p. 217.

¹⁶ Zabarella, *Liber de mente humana*, c. 962CD.

¹⁷ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum*, p. 220: 'Et dixit: *et iste quasi sunt in anima*, quia post declara-
 bit quod ea que sunt de prima perfectione in intellectu quasi sensibilia de prima perfectione sensus,
 scilicet in hoc quod ambo movent, sunt intentiones ymaginabiles, et iste sunt universales potentia,
 licet non actu; et ideo dixit: *et iste quasi sunt in anima*, et non dixit *sunt*, quia intentio universalis est
 alia ab intentione ymaginata.' See Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima*, pp. 171–172.

significance of this process becomes even more apparent when we examine 260
 Averroes's views concerning generation and reproduction. 'The sun and the other 261
 stars are the principle of life and of everything that is alive in nature,' he wrote in his 262
 Long Commentary on Aristotle's *Metaphysica*.¹⁸ Seeds are endowed with energy 263
 coming from the stars and even living beings that are produced through spontaneous 264
 generation result from the influence of celestial heat. *Sol et homo generant hom-* 265
inem. Rationality, order and proportion, Averroes argued in the same commentary, 266
 are embedded in nature, and they derive from the astral intelligences. The active and 267
 shaping forces contained in seeds are analogous to the power emanating from the 268
 celestial intelligences, since they display a teleological behaviour (*adducunt ad* 269
finem). They have the power to regulate the specific level of heat necessary for acti- 270
 vating all vital functions. This *mensura* derives from 'the divine intellectual art.' 271
 It is by virtue of such art that 'nature accomplishes things in a perfect and orderly 272
 manner as if, under the influence of loftier active powers, it were reminded of those 273
 that are called intelligences.'¹⁹ A number of Renaissance philosophers, relying on 274
 passages like these, looked to Averroes's material intellect as yet another incarna- 275
 tion of the *anima mundi*. As already noted, the lowest intellect in the series of cele- 276
 stial intelligences belongs to human beings only insofar as they are collectively taken 277
 to represent the species 'human being'. Seen in this light, the material intellect rep- 278
 represents the thought and the imagination of the sublunary world and as such it also 279
 contains its life. This explains why cosmological and pantheistic readings of 280
 Averroes's theory of the intellect became popular during the Renaissance and were 281
 still referred to until late in the seventeenth century.²⁰ 282

[AU1]

The interplay of dreams and imagination in Averroes's philosophy is closely 283
 related to the question of the cosmological aspects of the imagination. Reading his 284
Epitome on Parva naturalia, one has the clear impression that sleeping and dream- 285
 ing provided Averroes with a golden opportunity – an experimental opportunity, 286
 as it were – to explore the potentialities of perception, feeling and imagination. 287
 The advantages offered by states of sleeping and dreaming lay in the possibility of 288

¹⁸ Averroes, *In metaphysica*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562; repr. Frankfurt: Minerva, 1962), VIII, fol. 305^c.

¹⁹ *Ibid.*, f. 305^{aE}. See also *ibid.*, fols 180^v–181^r (natural virtues in seeds are 'similes intellectui, scilicet quia agunt actiones intellectuales.' Cfr. *In de generatione animalium*, *ibid.*, VI, f. 76^c: 'haec nam virtus animata est similis arti, et continetur in genere naturae celestis: et id quod ipsam generat, est de necessitate quid separatum (sive immateriale) cum videatur agere in aliud absque instrumento corporeo. iam autem fuit declaratum in libro de Anima, quod huiusmodi res appellatur intellectus.' See also Averroes, *Compendia librorum Aristotelis qui Parva naturalia vocantur*, ed. E. Ledyard Shields (Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1949), p. 106.

²⁰ For Henry More's interpretation of Averroes's material intellect as a form of *anima mundi*, see Sarah Hutton's essay in this volume. See also Alastair Hamilton, 'A "Sinister Conceit": The Teaching of Psychopannychism from the Reformation to the Enlightenment', in *La formazione storica dell'alterità: Studi di storia della tolleranza nell'età moderna offerti a Antonio Rotondò*, eds Henry Méchoulan, Richard H. Popkin, Giuseppe Riciperati and Luisa Simonutti, 3 vols (Florence: Olschki, 2001), III, pp. 1107–1127 (1115).

289 studying the process through which the *copulatio* – the union between the intellect
 290 and the imagination – occurs *in concreto*. The main question then becomes: What is
 291 the scope and what are the boundaries of the apprehensive power, especially in all
 292 those circumstances in which sensible objects appear not to be affecting the senses?
 293 Dream imagination (*ymaginatio que fit in sompno*), precisely because it has the
 294 unique characteristic of not being *sensus in potentia*, nor *sensus in actu* (for no sensible
 295 objects are involved), is as it were a sample of imagination in its plain, unadul-
 296 terated form – pure fungibility in the exchange of cognitive goods from all regions
 297 of the universe.²¹ Another important aspect is that in dreams (but it is fair to say that
 298 the same holds true for sensory hallucinations), the ordinary route of knowledge is
 299 reversed: rather than from the senses to the intellect, the direction is from the intel-
 300 lect down to the senses.

301 Amongst the authors who discussed Averroes's theory of dreams during the
 302 Renaissance, we can mention Julius Caesar Scaliger and Gianfrancesco Pico della
 303 Mirandola (1469–1533), the former a staunch Aristotelian, the latter a harsh critic
 304 of the tradition of medieval Aristotelianism. Scaliger was well aware that the role of
 305 the imagination in divinatory dreams could have dramatic consequences for the
 306 Averroist theory of the intellect. He pointed out that a philosophical position which
 307 looks at the separate intellect as the certifier of divinatory dreams and, at the same
 308 time, describes divination in terms of knowledge that deals with individual corpo-
 309 real substances (*materialia* and *individua*) was inevitably exposed to embarrassing
 310 difficulties. In his discussion of Averroes's position, Scaliger went straight to the
 311 point and ruled out the possibility that the intellect could know through the repre-
 312 sentations conveyed by the imagination, the *phantasmata*. The intellect, he said,
 313 'does not receive knowledge when it knows, for in this case it would be an imperfect
 314 intellect.' Rather, he went on to say, 'the intellect is in itself its own knowledge and
 315 knowledge of itself (*ipsemet, sua, sui que cognitio est*).' Furthermore, in the typical
 316 spirit of Aristotelian immanentism, he reminded his readers that 'universals are in
 317 matter,' otherwise they would be the same as Plato's intellectual figments (*idearum*
 318 *figmenta non admittimus*). In Scaliger's opinion, by defending both the separate
 319 condition of the intellect and the possibility of divining particular events, Averroes
 320 was led to maintain the view that God did not create the world. Since God could not
 321 have intellection of particular things, Averroes had been forced to reject the thesis
 322 that He had created particular things. 'This is what vexed that man,' said Scaliger,
 323 'the fact that the understanding subject, the understood object and the act of under-
 324 standing are one single thing in separate intellects. Therefore, if the separate intel-
 325 lect understands what is corruptible, the intellect itself will be corruptible.'²²

326 Scaliger's critique of Averroes's theory of prophetic dreams rested on two main
 327 assumptions. First, a true intellect, in an Aristotelian sense, is pure actuality, there-
 328 fore cannot have a receptive nature and rely on the objects conveyed to it by human

²¹ Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis de anima libros*, p. 367; Id., *Long Commentary on the De anima*, p. 280.

²² Scaliger, *Hippocratis liber de somniis*, p. 10.

imaginations. Secondly, the real place where universals could be found is the material worlds of particulars. For Scaliger, the intellect represented a closed system of pure actuality constantly actualising itself; in a way, one might describe it as an uninterrupted cycle of self-referential understanding. As such, he regarded the view that the intellect communicates externally with the individual imaginations of human beings as deeply inconsistent. While Averroes had looked at prophetic dreams as interferences in an otherwise unremitting flow of intelligible knowledge, for Scaliger the very notion of interference represented a flagrant breach in the Aristotelian model of intelligible determinism.

Unlike Scaliger, Gianfrancesco Pico was quite a severe critic of Aristotelian philosophy and his attack on Averroes aimed at two central tenets in the Averroistic reading of Aristotle's metaphysics, i.e., the very notion of nature, understood as a thoroughly deterministic system, and the idea that, through a methodical and severe exercise of speculative knowledge (so methodical an exercise to become an ingrained disposition), man could even attain the very knowledge of God. In *De rerum praenotione* (1506–1507), he argued that prophetic revelation could not derive from one's personal application (*studium*) or from nature. He devoted a specific chapter to criticising the theories of Avicenna, Algazel (al-Ghazālī), Averroes, Moses Maimonides and Moses of Narbonne. Of the four, Pico portrayed Avicenna as the most radical in his views about the powers of the imagination. He interpreted Avicenna as holding the view that 'the rational soul understands only when it is converted to the higher intelligence on which it depends.' He added that, 'as a result of the very purity of that soul, it could happen that the soul is joined by God to the intelligence itself, so that it would acquire the knowledge of sacred mysteries, predict future events, subdue and command matter through the influence of the imagination (*appulsus imaginationis*), to the point that even the elements could be affected by the imagination (*ministerio imaginationis*).'²³ For Pico, the assumption that there could be a natural flow of divine revelations from celestial intelligences contravened the very principles of Aristotelian science. Such intelligences would pour intelligible species directly into the mind of human beings without taking into account the senses and the *phantasmata*. For Pico, the problem with this view was not so much the attempt to roll the Trojan horse of Platonic innatism into the citadel of Aristotelian naturalism as it was the blatant lack of consistency in the explanatory framework that was supposed to be cogent and systematic: Why then should the soul of a human being be united to a body?²⁴ Like Scaliger, Pico conceded to both Avicenna and Algazel that 'separate minds can see new species in the senses and the imaginations (*phantasmata*),' but he denied that this kind of knowledge could be seen as either ordinary or natural.

Not surprisingly, of the four authors examined, Pico reserved the most severe treatment to Averroes. Averroes, he wrote, 'dreamt (maybe he was drunk) that our cogitative power could join the intelligence that is the closest to us, which he called

²³ Gianfrancesco Pico della Mirandola, *De rerum praenotione*, in *Opera omnia*, 2 vols (Basel: Henricpetri, 1557–1573), II, p. 418.

²⁴ Pico, *De rerum praenotione*, p. 419.

369 the active intellect, and that from that conjunction perfect bliss would ensue.
 370 He believed that, once human beings had acquired all the theoretical and practical
 371 habits, the intellect would naturally extend (*continuaretur*) to the cogitative faculty
 372 and that the ability to foresee future events would inevitably accompany the newly-
 373 reached state of absolute happiness, for – and this for Pico was the main rationale
 374 behind Averroes's view – who could be happy to all effects without perceiving his
 375 or her future?²⁵ As in Scaliger's case, the principal objection Pico addressed to
 376 Averroes's interpretation of prophetic visions was that the character of 'multifarious
 377 variety' could never be reconciled with the allegedly direct intervention of 'one
 378 intelligence'. Pico dismissed Averroes's attempt to make sense of anomalous cases
 379 of imaginative receptivity towards intelligible universals as unjustifiable given the
 380 nature of Aristotelian determinism, both logical and ontological.

381 Pico was aware that in the *Epitome on Parva naturalia* Averroes himself had
 382 struggled with this delicate problem. This was all the more reason for him to ques-
 383 tion this very point: 'How could you, Averroes, obtain prophetic knowledge from
 384 this conjunction of yours, when in your commentary on sleep you argued that one
 385 cannot have theoretical science from revelation, for, if this happened to someone, he
 386 could be said to be a human being only in an equivocal sense? Indeed, you posi-
 387 tively declared that such a person would be an angel rather than a human being.'²⁶
 388 In his criticisms, Pico mentioned the role of *natura* and *studium*. By *natura* he
 389 meant the cognitive abilities that are specific to the human species; by *studium* the
 390 very possibility of progressing towards fulfilling one's intellectual potentialities
 391 through exercise, habits and concentration. But nature and individual effort were
 392 precisely the features that Pico wanted to remove from the definition of prophetic
 393 knowledge. What is more, Pico was not sure which power had been privileged by
 394 Averroes in his explanation of prophetic dreams, whether the intellect or the imagi-
 395 nation, the intellect being the source of veridical visions, but the imagination being
 396 the material requisite that allowed intelligible truths to become particular and there-
 397 fore visible.

398 From a more empirical point of view, Pico contested the view that prophetic
 399 dreams and imaginations could result from the exercise of intellectual knowledge. It
 400 was a matter of conventional wisdom among both physicians and natural philoso-
 401 phers to assume that in the act of dreaming the *copulatio* of the intellect with the
 402 bodily faculties was so close that it was not always easy to assess the extent to which
 403 the production of images depended on the digestion of food or on the actual vision of
 404 divine truths. Pico argued that, precisely because of the many material and cultural
 405 conditionings, the example of the prophets from both the Old and the New Testament
 406 did not support Averroes's account of the active intellect and the notion of *copulatio*
 407 that he had introduced to strengthen his case. 'It is apparent,' he wrote, 'that there
 408 were once very famous prophets who never gained all the speculative and practical
 409 habits,' such as David, Amos and Jeremiah. In Pico's view, Averroes ignored the fact
 410 that these prophets were mostly shepherds, soldiers, illiterate people and adolescents.

²⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 421.

²⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 422.

And yet, to Pico's surprise, Averroes's explanation had been appropriated by such distinguished authors as Moses Maimonides and Moses of Narbonne, who, Pico continued, 'remembered Averroes so well that they forgot the tradition of Jewish studies, for they say that old men do not prophesy because of the weakness of their imaginative power.' For Pico, their position reflected an embarrassing combination of medical incompetence with a smattering of scriptural exegesis. Leaving aside the authority of the biblical text, Pico explained that, even from a strictly medical point of view, the imagination of old people was in fact more reliable because the excesses of humoral moisture 'could be reduced to a right and suitable balance.' Pico found Averroes's inaccuracies in medical matters even more embarrassing, for Averroes prided himself on being a physician. Trying to rescue Averroes's theory of prophecy by using Averroistic arguments and to support the thesis that prophets like Moses did in fact prophesy when they were old, Moses of Narbonne came up with the following hypothesis ad hoc: 'Moses was excellent in using the *cogitativa*, which was something peculiar to him, but not the *imaginativa*, the use of which was common to other people.' Pico did not hesitate to dismiss this distinction as irrelevant, although the nature of the difference between *cogitativa* and *imaginativa* was one of the most delicate and controversial points in the whole tradition of exegesis of Averroes.²⁷

Medical inaccuracies aside, Pico was mostly concerned with the possibility that Averroes's notion of prophetic dream paved the way for forms of secularisation and naturalisation of prophetic knowledge. For Pico, prophecy should not be mistaken for a kind of natural precognition. Prophetic enlightenment was given directly by God to men as a gift and as a proof of His favour. Last but not least – especially given the fact that the Averroists claimed to be true Aristotelians – the idea of prophetic imagination was contrary to the very spirit of the Aristotelian theory of knowledge, according to which 'the soul is united to the body as a thoroughly blank tablet, where nothing is painted or represented, and everything can be known by the soul through the ordinary power of nature only with the mediation of the senses and the imagination (*phantasia*).'²⁸

At this point, one might wonder who in this debate was the true advocate for the power of the imagination, whether Julius Caesar Scaliger (who confined the power of the imagination, as a distinctively animal faculty, to the domain of nature, depriving its operations of any access to the intelligible realm of the intellect), or Gianfrancesco Pico (who fully acknowledged the material conditionings of the imagination and argued that natural knowledge could only be a form of knowledge mediated by the imagination and the senses, while prophecy was a direct illumination from God's

²⁷ Ibid., pp. 422–423. See Francis Bacon, *The Essayes or Counsels, Civill and Morall*, ed. Michael Kiernan (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1985), pp. 130–131: 'A certaine *Rabbine*, upon the Text; *Your Young Men shall see visions, and your Old Men shall dream dreames*; Inferreth, that *Young Men* are admitted nearer to God then *Old*; Because *Vision* is a clearer Revelation, then a *Dreame*.' Both Pico and Bacon refer to Joel, 2:28.

²⁸ Pico, *De rerum praenotione*, p. 423. On Moses of Narbonne's theory of prophecy, see Alfred L. Ivry, 'Moses of Narbonne's "Treatise on the Perfection of the Soul"'. A Methodological and Conceptual Analysis', *The Jewish Quarterly Review*, 57 (1967), pp. 271–296.

447 intellect), or, finally, Averroes and his medieval and Renaissance followers (who
 448 regarded the imagination as a power that, material as it may be, was nonetheless
 449 capable of imbibing the light of the intellect). By allowing exchanges of intelligible
 450 currents to occur between the intellect and the imagination in both directions, Averroes
 451 and the Averroists were in possession of a more flexible tool to interpret the complex
 452 reality of dreams and divinatory knowledge. They could therefore argue that, on the
 453 one hand, the imagination was able to visualise the universals of the intellect (a func-
 454 tion whose scope and limits become apparent every time prophets receive truthful
 455 dreams and visions) and, on the other hand, the material intellect extracted the reasons
 456 of the material world (*intentiones*) conveyed by the *phantasmata*. Accordingly, the
 457 intellect represented a reality of a higher order, indeed immaterial, but the aspects of
 458 matter and corporeity maintained an irreplaceable function in the sublunary world.
 459 What is more, within such a view of the cosmos, the imagination remained – para-
 460 doxically – the only link, tenuous though it may be, with reality (the lessened ‘reality’
 461 of the senses, below, and the heightened ‘reality’ of the intellect, above).

462 **The Medical Aspects of Averroes’s Notion of Imagination**

463 In Averroes’s philosophy, the human soul is the place in the universe where the supralu-
 464 nary and sublunary worlds meet. The part of the soul where this connection occurs is
 465 the cogitative power, the highest form of sense perception and the culmination of the
 466 animal faculties of the soul. By contrast, many Renaissance philosophers considered
 467 the special faculty of cogitation a pointless addition to an already crowded set of inter-
 468 nal senses. Zabarella thought that the imagination (*phantasia*) could account for the
 469 complex operations of the internal senses by itself, without assuming further subdivi-
 470 sions. Most of all, there was no need to introduce a special apprehensive power, whether
 471 estimative or cogitative, to explain feelings of agreeableness (*iucunditas*) and dislike
 472 (*molestia*) perceived by human beings and some non-human animals.²⁹ The same view
 473 was later echoed by the Coimbra commentators, who held that common sense and the
 474 imagination (*phantasia*) could account for all the animal operations of the soul: ‘all the
 475 functions of the cogitative faculty can be referred to the imagination.’³⁰

²⁹ Zabarella, *Liber de facultatibus animae*, in *De rebus naturalibus*, c. 723C. Zabarella distin-
 guishes only three internal senses: *sensus communis*, *phantasia* and *memoria*. See Coimbra
 Commentators, *In tres libros de anima Aristotelis* (Cologne: Lazar Zetzner, 1609), c. 393EF. On
 the internal senses in Averroes, see: Helmut Gätje, ‘Die “inneren Sinne” bei Averroes’, *Zeitschrift
 der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft*, 115 (1965), pp. 255–293; Deborah L. Black,
 ‘Imagination and Estimation: Arabic Paradigms and Western Transformations’, *Topoi*, 19 (2000),
 pp. 59–75; Ead., ‘Averroes on the Spirituality and Intentionality of Sensation’, *In the Age of
 Averroes: Arabic Philosophy in the Sixth/Twelfth Century* (London and Turin: The Warburg
 Institute and Aragno, 2011), pp. 159–174.

³⁰ Coimbra Commentators, *In tres libros de anima Aristotelis*, c. 394C.

In fact, behind Averroes's decision to extend the powers of the imagination there was no intention to multiply the internal senses, but to reaffirm the view that intentions and apprehensions constituted potential patterns of intelligibility to be unfolded and actualised through the use of increasingly more abstract forms of imaging activity. The intentions, lying dormant in matter as it were in a state of virtual existence (*intentiones ymaginabiles*), covered the whole spectrum of sublunary life, from the unintentional but purposeful movements of nature (*natura*) to the conscious perceptions of the animal beings (*sensus*). On this particularly delicate point, Averroes's medical work can shed some light. In the *Colliget* and *Collectanea*, he advanced the radical view – which is neither Aristotelian, nor Galenic – that natural faculties were by themselves vital and capable of discriminating among various objects. In doing so, they were endowed with a cognitive power, and therefore there was no need to assume the existence of special natural instincts in animals. Unlike Aristotle, Averroes described the vegetative faculties of the soul as capable of performing simple but fundamental cognitive tasks (by discriminating between what is conducive to life and what is not). Unlike Galen, he described the vital functions of the body as regulated by the common sense and its allied functions located in the heart.³¹

[AU2]

³¹ Averroes's *Colliget* (*Kitāb al-Kulliyāt fī 'l-Ḍibb*) was translated into Latin in Padua in 1255 by a 'magister Bonacosa hebreus.' Averroes's commentary on Avicenna's *Cantica* was translated around 1284 by Armengaud de Blaise of Montpellier. Bonacosa's translation was first published in Venice by Otinus de Luna in 1497 and reprinted in an improved edition in the Giunta edition of 1572 with a book translated by Jacob Mantino. In 1537, Jean-Baptiste Bruyerin, nephew of Symphorien Champier, physician to Henry II and author of a *De re cibaria* published in 1560 in Lyon, translated Averroes's *Collectanea de re medica* from Hebrew manuscripts. On Bruyerin, see P. Allut, *Étude biographique et bibliographique sur Symphorien Champier* (Lyon: Nicolas Scheuring, 1859), pp. 49–50; Ernst Renan, *Averroès et l'averroïsme* (Paris: Maisonneuve & Larose, 2002), p. 267). See the recent Spanish translation of the original Arabic *Kulliyāt* by María de la Concepción Vázquez de Benito and Camilo Álvarez Morales, *El libro de las generalidades de la medicina* (Madrid: Editorial Trotta, 2003) and their introduction to the volume (pp. 9–40). On Averroes's medical views see: Francisco X. Rodríguez Molero, 'La neurología en la "Suma anatómica" de Averroes', *Archivo Iberoamericano de Historia de la Medicina y Antropología Médica*, 2 (1950), pp. 137–188; Id., 'Originalidad y estilo de la anatomía de Averroes', *Revista Al-Ándalus*, 15 (1950), pp. 47–63; Id., 'Averroes, médico y filósofo', *Archivo Iberoamericano de Historia de la Medicina y Antropología Médica*, 8 (1956), pp. 187–190; Id., 'Un maestro de la medicina árabe-española: Averroes', *Miscelanea de Estudios Árabes y Hebraicos*, 11 (1962), pp. 55–73; J. Christoph Bürgel, 'Averroes "contra Galenum". Das Kapitel von der Atmung im Colliget des Averroes als ein Zeugnis mittelalterlich-islamischer Kritik an Galen, eingeleitet, arabisch herausgegeben und übersetzt', *Nachrichten der Akademie der Wissenschaften in Göttingen*, 1 (1967), pp. 263–340; E. Torre, *Averroes y la ciencia médica* (Madrid: Ediciones del Centro, 1974); Danielle Jacquart and Françoise Micheau, *La médecine arabe et l'Occident médiéval* (Paris: Maisonneuve & Larose, 1996), p. 182 passim; Carmela Baffioni, 'Further Notes on Averroes' Embryology and the Question of the "Female Sperm"', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Heritage*, ed. C. Baffioni (Naples: Guida, 2004), pp. 159–172. On Averroes's influence on medieval and Renaissance medicine, see: Heinrich Schipperges, *Die Assimilation der arabischen Medizin durch das lateinische Mittelalter* (Wiesbaden: Steiner, 1964), pp. 137–138; Nancy G. Siraisi, *Arts and Sciences at Padua. The Studium of Padua before 1350* (Toronto: Pontifical Institute of Medieval Studies, 1973), p. 155;

493 In his important study on the Venetian editions of Aristotle and Averroes, Charles
 494 Schmitt argued that Averroes's writings 'added a medical component' to the under-
 495 standing of the Aristotelian philosophy.³² Averroes's medical synthesis had broad-
 496 ened the conceptual and terminological scope of medical theory in such subjects as
 497 the composition of medicines, the role of unnatural heat (*calor putredinalis*) in
 498 causing fever, the anatomical seat of the soul, the status of the vital faculties and the
 499 theory of reproduction.³³ A possible way of defining Averroes's attitude in his medi-
 500 cal work might be to say that, in a number of anatomical questions, he tried to show
 501 how Aristotle could be used as a more reliable authority than Galen.³⁴

502 Of course, since the intellect for Averroes is incorporeal and separate, one would
 503 look in vain for an anatomical account of the mind and its faculties in his medical
 504 works. What one finds, though, is a precise anatomy of the imagination and the
 505 cogitative power.³⁵ Averroes located the functions of the imagination and cogitation
 506 in the head, in a series of intercommunicating concavities (*cellulae cerebri*), two in
 507 the frontal part of the brain, one in the middle and one in the back, anatomically
 508 configured in such a way that, by opening and closing their respective entrances, the
 509 soul could be able to imagine, remember and formulate inferences.³⁶ Averroes also
 510 hinted at a 'ruling power' (*virtus regitiva*), a general faculty which 'communicates
 511 with the body as a whole' and which is served by four or five sub-faculties, i.e., the
 512 attractive, retentive, digestive, excretive and discerning (*discretiva*) powers.³⁷
 513 Undoubtedly, one of the most intriguing aspects in Averroes's physiology is to be
 514 found in the way it redefines the network of natural, vital and animal faculties in the
 515 body. As already said, Averroes expunged the notion of vital faculty as understood
 516 by Galen, but, unlike Aristotle, he assigned a certain level of discerning power even

Charles B. Schmitt, 'Renaissance Averroism Studied through the Venetian Editions of Aristotle-Averroes (with Particular Reference to the Giunta Edition of 1550-2)', originally in *L'averroismo in Italia* (Rome: Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei, 1979), pp. 121-142; repr. in Charles B. Schmitt, *The Aristotelian Tradition and Renaissance Universities* (London: Variorum Reprints, 1984), pp. 121-142, pp. 123, 140; Per-Gunnar Ottosson, *Scholastic Medicine and Philosophy: A Study of Commentaries on Galen's Tegni (ca. 1300-1450)* (Naples: Bibliopolis, 1984), pp. 138-139; Edward P. Mahoney, 'Albert the Great and the Studio Patavino in the Late Fifteenth and Early Sixteenth Centuries', in *Albertus Magnus and the Sciences. Commemorative Essays*, ed. James A. Weisheipl (Bologna: Edizioni Studio Domenicano, 1994), pp. 537-563; Nancy G. Siraisi, *Avicenna in Renaissance Italy. The Canon and Medical Teaching in Italian Universities after 1500* (Princeton, Princeton University Press, 1987), pp. 248-253 (the case of Giovanni Battista Da Monte).

³² Schmitt, 'Renaissance Averroism Studied through the Venetian Editions of Aristotle-Averroes', p. 124.

³³ See Luis García Ballester and Eustaquio Sánchez Salor, 'Introduction' to Arnald of Villanova, *Commentum supra tractatum Galieni de malicia complexionis diverse*, in *Opera medica omnia* (Granada and Barcelona: Publicacions de la Universitat de Barcelona, 1975-), XV, pp. 108-109.

³⁴ The discerning ability is one of the natural powers. See Averroes, *Colliget*, in Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, Supplementum I, fols 20^{vG}, 24^{CD}.

³⁵ See Taylor, 'Remarks on the Cogitative Power in Averroes', p. 124.

³⁶ Averroes, *Colliget*, fol. 9^{vGH}.

³⁷ *Ibid.*, fol. 18^{vM}.

to the vegetative functions of the body. As a result, Averroes's system of bodily functions looks more coherent and cohesive than the Aristotelian and Galenic ones: from the concocting faculties of the similar parts to the cogitative faculty located in the ventricles of the head, one continuous rational force permeates the whole organism. There is no leap from the vegetative to the sensitive soul as in Aristotle's physiology, no gap between nature, life and knowledge as in Galen's physiology. Unlike Galen, Averroes did not see the point of introducing extra vital virtues: 'there are no more operations apart from these two, that is, the nutritive (*nutribilis*) and the sensitive (*sensitiva*) faculties.'³⁸ In Averroes's anatomy, the natural and nutritive faculty – the basis for all other faculties – is located in the heart, and from there the *nutrimentum cordiale* – i.e., the vital heat – is distributed to the various parts of the body.³⁹ The heart, in turn, controls the brain. In keeping with the principles of Aristotle's cardio-centric physiology, Averroes provided a series of empirical proofs and rational arguments to demonstrate that the brain depends on the heart even for its sensori-motor operations. One of these proofs is based on a syllogism that is particularly revealing to understand Averroes's position on the anatomy of perception and life:

the animal is provided with nourishment and the nutritive power only through the sensitive power of the senses. But the organ whereby the brain is helped by the heart through the heat which it transmits to the brain is the five senses; therefore the sensitive power is first and foremost located in the heart; and this power is the common sense.⁴⁰

The most important thing animals need for their self-preservation is nourishment. In their search for food, they are greatly helped by the senses, which, although they are managed by the brain through the nervous system, are nevertheless maintained by the natural heat produced and administered by the heart. During the Renaissance, a number of physicians and natural philosophers interpreted Averroes's attempt to conflate Aristotelian with Galenic motifs as an original and bold rearrangement of disciplinary boundaries. Some of them considered the reorganisation too bold. Jean Fernel (1497–1558), the author of a wide-ranging reorganization of medical learning, thought, for instance, that Averroes's view ran the risk of oversimplifying the anatomical picture by transforming the vital and natural faculties into manifestations of one discerning power emanating from the heart and distributed throughout the body by means of the natural heat. In his *Physiologia* (published in various reedited versions in 1542, 1554 and 1567), he explained that 'all those who were led by Averroes to swear allegiance' to the Aristotelian view that there is no specifically vital power intermediate between the natural and the animal (cognitive) faculties were nevertheless forced to admit the existence of such a vital power after a more careful study of the operations of the body.⁴¹ This is another case in which

³⁸ Ibid., fols 21^rF–21^vG.

³⁹ Ibid., fol. 21^vG-L.

⁴⁰ Averroes, *Colliget*, fol. 24^rCD.

⁴¹ Jean Fernel, *Physiologia*, translated and annotated by John M. Forrester, with an introduction of John Henry and J. M. Forrester (Philadelphia: American Philosophical Society, 2003), p. 369.

554 the characteristically Averroean tension between the intelligible light of the intellect
 555 and the intentional forms embedded in matter comes to the fore. And in this case,
 556 too, light and shadows meet halfway in Averroes's sublunary world. Within the
 557 lesser world of the human body this means that all vital processes follow specific
 558 patterns of intentionality and cogitation. If we go back to the statement with which
 559 I opened this chapter – animals *imagine*, individual human beings *cogitate*, human-
 560 kind *thinks* and the heavenly intellects *intuit* and *understand themselves* – I am now
 561 in the position to add the phrase that plants and all unsentient living beings have the
 562 ability to *discern* and *discriminate*, for discerning is the primary function in the
 563 intentional pattern that seems to characterise Averroes's view of nature. He explained
 564 this crucial point in the course of a dense discussion in the second book of the
 565 *Colliget*. It is also the crucial moment when the soul makes its appearance in his
 566 medical encyclopaedia.

567 We will briefly say that there are further faculties (*virtutes*) besides the forms of the tem-
 568 peraments (*complexionales formae*) and they are called 'souls' ... And therefore we say
 569 that physicians, when they investigate the operations, they say that the faculties that can be
 570 found in the human being are three, and they are natural, vital or animal. In their opinion,
 571 the natural operations are the ones through which nutrition, growth and reproduction occur.
 572 The vital powers are the pulsific powers (*virtutes pulsatiles*), which reside in the heart and
 573 perform the function of dilating and contracting through breathing in and out, and the
 574 motive power (*virtus motiva*), which is located in the heart and is called 'elective' (*electiva*),
 575 through which the animal is moved to desire an object or to flee from it. Also, the physi-
 576 cians believe that there are five animal faculties, the faculties of the senses, i.e., touch, taste,
 577 smell, hearing and sight. In addition, there are the faculty of locomotion (*virtus motiva in*
 578 *loco*), the faculty of the imagination (*virtus imaginativa*), the estimative, cogitative, reten-
 579 tive and recollecting faculties (*aestimativa, cogitativa, conservativa, reminiscibilis*). This is
 580 the division that is used by the physicians when they divide the faculties of the soul, and
 581 although such division is not appropriate, it will not do any harm to you in the exercise of
 582 the medical art. By contrast, the division that bears on the natural motions is entirely appropri-
 583 ate for it is apparent that these operations cannot be based only on the four qualities, but
 584 also on faculties added to them, which are called 'souls'.⁴²

585 Here Averroes is referring to the division of the faculties – natural, vital and
 586 animal – which was current amongst physicians. This division is not 'appropriate',
 587 but it can be used on a pragmatic and operational basis. The medical division of the
 588 faculties of the soul that is 'fully appropriate' is the one concerning the natural
 589 operations of the soul because – more correctly than in Aristotle's theory of life –
 590 Galen's view on the natural faculties demonstrates that, even at the level of diges-
 591 tion, growth and reproduction, the operations of the body postulate the presence of
 592 elementary functions of the soul, such as the ability to distinguish and identify nutri-
 593 tive from harmful substances. Therefore these functions cannot be reduced to the
 594 material qualities of the four elements. Averroes's eclectic approach in medicine is
 595 rich in theoretical implications. On the one hand, his decision to bring Galen's vital
 596 faculties back to the Aristotelian notion of the vegetative soul implied the naturalisa-
 597 tion, so to speak, of the internal senses, which accordingly became more closely

⁴² Averroes, *Colliget*, fols 16^{vM}–17^{rAB}.

connected to the operations of the natural faculties (the primordial tendencies behind appetites and involuntary movements do not need a special faculty, i.e., Galen's 'vital' faculty). On the other hand, he entrusted the most elementary functions of life with animal prerogatives and with the ability to make decisions (the 'elective' power), for, in Averroes's opinion, there was ample and compelling evidence for assuming that the natural functions of the body show a glimpse of animal life (in contrast with the strict Aristotelian division into the vegetative and sensitive 'parts' of the soul).

All vital functions are therefore distinguished by Averroes not according to the traditional ontological divisions between the domains of *nature*, *life* and *soul*, but by assuming various degrees of abstraction within one apprehensive power (*esse intentionale*). In this sense, the rational faculty is more spiritual than the faculty of the imagination (*virtus rationalis est magis spiritualis quam imaginativa*) because it is capable of apprehending the universals (*perfectio virtutis rationalis est apprehensio rerum universalium*), but it cannot operate its abstracting function without the preliminary operations of the faculty of the imagination.⁴³

Conclusion: The Imagination as a Surrogate for Thinking 614

We can summarise the various aspects of Averroes's multifaceted position discussed above by saying that in his view of the cosmos the imagination acts as a surrogate for reality (i.e., the intellect). This key role can be examined on various levels. The imagination is a surrogate for thinking, for life, for beliefs and for demonstrative rigour in contexts of hermeneutic understanding (law and religion). Since Averroes maintains that the intellect is not simply real knowledge, but reality *qua* reality, and that, however, human beings can experience reality only through the imagination, it is not difficult to understand why, in investigating the nature and the extent of that particular reality (*esse*) that constitute the *esse intentionale* – i.e., reality *qua* represented –, the *onus probandi* falls on the imagination.

In and by themselves, the representations of the imagination (*phantasmata*) cannot elicit acts of understanding (*intellectiones*) from the very 'matter' of knowledge. While it is true that the intellect cannot think without the objects provided by the imagination, it is also true that the faculty of the imagination cannot operate without the light of the intellect. In Averroes's view of reality and knowledge, the representations of the imagination provide a reservoir of intelligible species in a latent state, ready to be actualised by the material intellect. By encompassing all the forms of material reality in a condition of potential existence, the material intellect acts as the intelligible counterpart of prime matter. Within the sublunary world, the highest level of apprehensive activity that is compatible with the material limitations of the imagination is the cogitative operations performed by human beings.

⁴³ Ibid., fol. 17^{vHk}.

636 As seen in the course of this chapter, the imagination – and dream imagination in
 637 particular – plays an important role in unravelling some of the most notorious puzzles
 638 of Averroes's philosophy. As suggested at the beginning, this role needs to be
 639 explored in all its various dimensions (metaphysical, epistemological, cosmological,
 640 medical and theologico-political). The most intricate of the Averroistic puzzles is,
 641 no doubt, the way in which the intellect is tied to the world of representations (*copu-*
 642 *latio*) and the explanation of how the intelligibles in potentiality, contained in a
 643 virtual state in material reality, become intelligibles in actuality in the intellect (i.e.,
 644 the original correspondence between the *esse intentionale*, *esse intelligibile/intel-*
 645 *lectum* and *esse reale*). Here it is worth reminding ourselves that Averroes's intellect
 646 is, first and foremost, a cosmological, collective and impersonal entity. It is separate,
 647 and humankind participates in its intelligible light through the representative faculty
 648 that the Latin translators of Averroes called the *cogitativa*. The act of understanding
 649 occurs in the soul of human beings through episodic contacts between human imag-
 650 inations (*phantasmata*) and the virtual reservoir of intelligible forms in the material
 651 intellect, contacts that are put into effect by the active intellect. Above all, in tack-
 652 ling the problem of the dual existence of the intelligible natures – in the material
 653 intellect and in the cogitative soul of human beings – , one should never lose sight
 654 of the cosmological dimension that characterises the Averroistic notion of the intel-
 655 lect. In releasing the light of reason from the representative matter of the individual
 656 imaginations (the *phantasmata*), the power of the intellect brings to actualisation a
 657 tendency to apprehend that runs throughout the universe, from the most elementary
 658 living beings to the heavenly intelligences. In this sense, reason can be said to be
 659 already in matter and, in the specific case of human beings, reason takes on the form
 660 of an embodied cogitative faculty, corporeal and yet fully representational.

661 In his *De intellectu* (1503), Agostino Nifo gave a very pointed definition of
 662 Averroes's material intellect as 'the matter of all separate intellects,' for this intellect
 663 works like a switchboard that connects streams of knowledge from above and from
 664 below.⁴⁴ While it is a repository of intelligible knowledge, it also acts as a provider
 665 of information coming from the sublunary world. In a way, the world as a whole
 666 may be seen as *the* object par excellence for the material intellect, and the material
 667 intellect as *the* representation, the *phantasma* par excellence for the active intellect.
 668 I have summed up the complex layering of the Averroistic cosmos by saying that,
 669 within the Averroistic ladder of being, living beings discern, animals imagine, indi-
 670 vidual human beings cogitate, humankind as a whole thinks and intellects intuit and
 671 understand themselves; that is to say, natural operations in living organisms are
 672 capable of discriminating between the useful and the harmful, animal nature pro-
 673 cesses images (*intentions* is Averroes's term) from matter, individual men cogitate
 674 those images and the human intellect thinks insofar as it is considered a species, i.e.,
 675 the human species. In this sense, the intellect of the human species thinks the sublunary
 676 world seen as one collective representation of the universe to be further

⁴⁴ Agostino Nifo, *De intellectu*, quoted in Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI*, p. 218. See Leen Spruit's essay in this volume.

abstracted and processed by higher levels of intellectual activity. During the Renaissance, depending on how one interpreted the special relationship that connects intellects, the material intellect and bodily imaginations, the door could be left open even for possible pantheistic views of nature.

No doubt, Averroes's universe was in the end an Aristotelian universe. One might safely say that it is one of the most radical attempts to apply Aristotelian principles to the understanding of reality. In this Aristotelian universe, every aspect of reality, with the exception of the unmovable mover, is in the process of being actualised. In the ascending ladder of being each form serves as *matter* for the next form of a higher ontological level: the material intellect is matter for the active intellect, the cogitative faculty is matter for the material intellect, prime matter, finally – this recalcitrant, refractory, never completely actualised source of potentiality – is matter for the imagination. In this sense, the world of human imaginations – in itself a synthesis of the representations of the natural processes occurring in both the sublunary world and in those microcosms of life that are the human bodies – is the basis for the intellectual world of humankind.

Very aptly, Bruno Nardi described *phantasmata* in an Averroistic sense as 'an epitome of the whole world of sensible experience,' where it is important to stress the point that sensible experience is not confined to human experience.⁴⁵ Single individuals imagine (including some non-human animals), but only those individuals in nature that possess the cogitative faculty (i.e., human animals) can process images out of matter which can be mediated with beliefs and are sufficiently abstract to be actualised by the intellect. In all cases, their imaginations accrue from material processes and cosmological events. As such, they reflect the life of the whole universe. Precarious as it may be, the intellect's link with both nature and humanity is thus saved. Perhaps, in this subtle and delicate interplay of nature, history and humanity lies the most lasting legacy of Averroes's theory of the imagination. However, the cosmological understanding of the imagination was progressively abandoned by the end of the sixteenth century. During the Renaissance, Averroes's bewildering views on knowledge and nature – Zabarella's *inexcogitabilia* – cried out for philosophical comment. Then the speculative furor seemed to subside. His multifaceted theory of the imagination fell gradually into oblivion and only the political and religious implications were absorbed into the theological-political controversies of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

⁴⁵ Nardi, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI*, p. 244.

Author Queries

Chapter No.: 9 0001629570

Queries	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Please provide the closing bracket for the line 'natural virtues in seeds are 'similes intellectui' in the 19th footnote.	
AU2	Please provide the opening bracket for the line 'p. 267). See the recent Spanish' in the 31st footnote.	

Uncorrected Proof

Part II 1
The Early Modern Period 2

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 10

[AU1]

The Cambridge Platonists and Averroes

Sarah Hutton

The 'Averroism' which figures in my chapter is a radically attenuated version of the philosophy of Ibn Rushd – Averroism as represented by a single doctrine imputed to the Commentator, namely the idea of a single soul, common to all human beings. The subject of my chapter has less, therefore to do with the thought of Averroes in its later reception or manifestation, and more to do with an idea of Averroism which was current in seventeenth-century England. This is particularly true of the Cambridge Platonists for whom the Averroist doctrine of the *intellectus agens* is the key doctrine which they associate with Averroes and which they understood as a doctrine of a 'single soul' or 'common soul'.¹ The only one of their number to offer anything like an extensive critique of Averroes was Henry More (1614–1687). Although he too was primarily concerned with the Averroistic conception of the *intellectus agens*, his response is distinctive for his concern with the Italian Averroists of recent times, Girolamo Cardano, Pietro Pomponazzi and Giulio Cesare Vanini. Even though the Cambridge Platonists' views on the *intellectus agens* tell us more about themselves than about Averroes, their limited focus is nevertheless revealing of currents of diffusion of Averroistic ideas, and of the presence of Averroes even in the new waters of early modern philosophy. As I shall argue later, there is an important sense in which More's partial and distorted conception of the philosophy of Ibn Rushd contributed to a new conception of the self centred on consciousness. My chapter will offer a brief survey of identifiable references to Averroes in the work the Cambridge Platonists, starting with three Emmanuel College men, John Smith (1618–1652),

¹ The doctrine that there was a single Agent Intellect was held by Avicenna and al-Fārābī as well as Averroes. But Averroes held that there was a common *material* intellect. His conception of the unicity of the intellect was often, as with the Cambridge Platonists, called 'monopsychism'.

S. Hutton (✉)

Department of English, Aberystwyth University, Hugh Owen Building, Penglais,
SY23 3DY Aberystwyth, Ceredigion, Wales, UK
e-mail: sfh@aber.ac.uk

25 Nathaniel Culverwell (1619–1651) and Ralph Cudworth (1617–1688). I shall then
 26 discuss Henry More, to whom the major part of this chapter will be devoted. But
 27 before discussing the Cambridge school, a few words on the background.

28 In early seventeenth-century England knowledge of Arabic philosophy was at a
 29 crossroads where the decline of the Aristotelian commentary tradition intersected
 30 with a newly developing interest in Arabic and Arabic sources. The most tangible
 31 evidence of the latter was the founding of a Chair in Arabic at Oxford in 1636 by
 32 Archbishop Laud.² On the other hand, the decline of Aristotelianism took its toll on
 33 the commentary tradition, contributing to the eclipse, among others, of *the*
 34 *Commentator*, Ibn Rushd. However, Aristotelianism was by no means a spent force
 35 in this period.³ A third factor which impinges on the reception of Averroes at the
 36 time was the revised readings of Aristotle by the so-called Aristotelian naturalists,
 37 Cardano, Pomponazzi and Vanini.⁴ The interpretations of these latter-day
 38 Aristotelians refocused attention on the Aristotelian conception of the soul, and
 39 thereby lent new impetus to Averroes's interpretation of Aristotelian psychology.
 40 This development goes some way towards accounting for the preoccupation with
 41 the *intellectus agens* in the references to Averroism in the English context.

42 Averroes was certainly known in seventeenth-century England prior to the period
 43 when the Cambridge Platonists flourished. Evidence for knowledge of Averroes
 44 *latinus* is evident from library collections. The catalogue of the extensive library of
 45 the second Viscount Conway, for example, lists both Averroes's commentaries on
 46 Aristotle (*Opera cum commentariis Averrois*, Venice, 1552), a 1525 edition of his
 47 *De substantia orbis* and Marco Antonio Zimara's *Tabulae et dilucidationes in dicta*
 48 *Aristotelis et Averrois* (Venice, 1564).⁵ These texts were, however, acquired at an
 49 early point in the Conway acquisition process – probably no later than the first
 50 decades of the seventeenth century, before the developments in Arabic studies
 51 spearheaded by Edward Pococke and others. John Selden's references to Averroes
 52 in *De jure naturali ac gentium* 1.9 reflect that new interest, since he not only refers
 53 to Arabic sources, but quotes from an Arabic manuscript recently donated to the
 54 Bodleian library by Archbishop Laud.⁶ Selden's references occur in the course of a

² G. J. Toomer, *Eastern Wisdom and Learning: The Study of Arabic in Seventeenth-Century England* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1996).

³ Charles B. Schmitt, *Aristotle and the Renaissance* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1983).

⁴ Eckhard Kessler, 'The Intellectual Soul', in *The Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy*, eds Charles B. Schmitt, Quentin Skinner, E. Kessler and Jill Kraye (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988), pp. 485–534; Brian P. Copenhaver and Charles B. Schmitt, *Renaissance Philosophy* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1992); Martin Pine, *Pietro Pomponazzi: Radical Philosopher of the Renaissance* (Padua: Antenore, 1986).

⁵ Armagh, Robinson Library, ms g.III.15. See Ian Roy, 'The Libraries of Edward, Second Viscount Conway, and Others. An Inventory and Valuation of 1643', *Bulletin of the Institute of Historical Research*, 41 (1968), pp. 35–46. Various writings by Averroes appear in sixteenth-century academic booklists. See E. S. Leedham-Green, *Books in Cambridge Inventories: Book-Lists from Vice-Chancellor's Court Probate Inventories in the Tudor and Stuart Periods*, 2 vols (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1986).

⁶ John Selden, *De jure naturali ac gentium* (London: Richard Bishop, 1640), I. ix, pp. 109–116.

discussion of the medieval debates surrounding the *intellectus agens*. He cites Arab 55
 thinkers to the effect that ratiocination was conceived as external to man. And he 56
 asserts that Averroes identified *intellectus agens* with the 'holy spirit'. Selden's only 57
 other reference to Averroes is a margin citation of his commentaries on Aristotle's 58
Metaphysica and *De anima*.⁷ Although Selden was evidently eager to display first- 59
 hand knowledge of sources in Arabic, his references to Averroes are hardly evi- 60
 dence that he knew his writings in any depth. Nevertheless, Selden represents a new, 61
 if rather specialist, scholarly interest in Arabic sources. It was probably the same 62
 kind of scholarly interest that led Ralph Cudworth to acquire a 1501 Latin edition 63
 of Averroes's *Destructiones destructionum* (i.e., *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut: The Incoherence* 64
of the Incoherence) though we have no evidence that he read it.⁸ 65

As their (latter-day) sobriquet implies, the Cambridge Platonists did not have a 66
 vested interest in Aristotle and his commentators. Their philosophical preference 67
 for Plato was itself symptomatic of the early modern reaction against the Aristotelian 68
 synthesis which had dominated European philosophy since the Middle Ages. 69
 Nevertheless, as philosophical theologians who were serious about a philosophical 70
 defence of religion, they were the heirs of a long-standing apologetic tradition 71
 which focused on the nature of the soul, and incorporated anti-Averroist arguments 72
 which may be traced back to Thomas Aquinas. In that respect, they are not untypi- 73
 cal of early modern Christian apologists. Also, as Christian Platonists, they sit 74
 within a broadly syncretic tradition, whose major recent exponent, Marsilio Ficino, 75
 devoted considerable attention to Averroism in his *Theologia platonica*. Although 76
 the Cambridge Platonist response to Averroism is not, apparently, indebted to 77
 Ficino,⁹ their Platonism nevertheless gives it a distinctive edge. For one thing, their 78
 syncretic tendency rendered them receptive to a range of different philosophies, 79
 even those which they saw as erroneous. Their own conception of universal spirit 80
 (More's Spirit of Nature and Cudworth's Plastic Nature) is susceptible to the charge 81
 that it is Averroes's active intellect by another name. However, neither More's 82
 Hylaric Principle nor Cudworth's hypothesis of plastic nature supervene upon the 83
 individual soul. Neither More nor Cudworth denied personal immortality and both 84
 asserted the freedom of the individual human will. Thus parallels between plastic 85
 nature and *intellectus agens* do not seem to have been a serious issue for the 86

⁷ *Ibid.*, pp. 113, 116, 112.

⁸ Giosuè Musca lists *Destructiones Averroes cum Niphi expositione (litera antiqua)* (1501) (sic), in his, "'Omne genus animalium". *Antichità e Medioevo in una biblioteca privata inglese del Seicento*, *Quaderni Medievali*, 25 (1988), pp. 25–76 (61). Lack of evidence that Cudworth read this text does not mean that he did not do so. On Agostino Nifo's commentary on Averroes's *Destructio*, see Nicholas Holland's chapter in this volume.

⁹ The direct influence of Ficino on the Cambridge Platonists was actually rather limited. See my 'Marsilio Ficino and Ralph Cudworth', in *The Rebirth of Platonic Philosophy*, ed. James Hankins (iTatti, forthcoming). Also, 'Henry More, Ficino and Plotinus: The Continuity of Renaissance Platonism', in *Forme del neoplatonismo: Dall'eredità ficiniana ai Platonici di Cambridge*, ed. Luisa Simonutti (Florence: Olschki, 2007), pp. 281–296. On Ficino's critique of Averroes's theory of the intellect, see Michael Allen's chapter in this volume.

87 Cambridge Platonists, and on this account they were never accused of Averroism
 88 or proto-Averroism. Of more relevance – certainly to Henry More – was Aquinas’s
 89 charge that Averroes’s psychology entails too radical a separation of the intellec-
 90 tual soul from the other functions of the soul, and hence also from the body. In
 91 consequence, the *intellectus agens* is too easily separable from body. This is a
 92 charge Aquinas also levels at un-named ‘Platonists’, whose sharp dualism of soul
 93 and body he believed to be vulnerable to Averroistic errors. However, the Cambridge
 94 Platonists avoid this charge because their dualism is mitigated by a conception of
 95 the soul which emphasised empathy with the body. This is especially relevant in
 96 the case of Henry More whose anti-Averroist arguments, as we shall see, centre on
 97 the integration of soul and body, and therefore implicitly address Aquinas’s objec-
 98 tion. Another of Aquinas’s objections to Averroism was the danger posed to
 99 Christian ethics of a theory which undermined the moral accountability of the indi-
 100 vidual soul. The Cambridge Platonists shared his ethical position, but although
 101 they defended freewill on ethical grounds, their anti-determinism was directed
 102 against Calvin and Hobbes rather than Averroes. Henry More, however, was cer-
 103 tainly alive to the inherent determinism in naturalising interpretations of the *intel-*
 104 *lectus agens* by the likes of Pomponazzi and Cardano.

105 **Ralph Cudworth**

106 The major philosopher of the Cambridge Platonists was Ralph Cudworth. As already
 107 noted, he possessed a copy of Averroes’s *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*. But he makes no direct
 108 references to Averroes in his *True Intellectual System of the Universe* (1678), the only
 109 major work of his to be published in his lifetime.¹⁰ He does, however, make (critical)
 110 mention of the Aristotelian conception of the active and passive intellect. Like his
 111 Cambridge Platonist colleagues, Cudworth subscribed to the benign, syncretist view
 112 that grains of truth may be found even in error. Accordingly, Cudworth takes a gener-
 113 ally favourable view of Aristotle, notwithstanding that Aristotelianism had, by
 114 Cudworth’s day, been discredited as an authoritative philosophy. Cudworth was well
 115 aware of the criticisms which had been levelled at Aristotelianism, but he nevertheless
 116 regarded Aristotle as theologically preferable to many other philosophers. He took the
 117 view that Aristotle’s philosophy was ‘right and sound’ because it asserted ‘Incorporeal
 118 Substance’ to be ‘a Deity distinct from the World, the Naturality of Morality, and
 119 Liberty of Will.’¹¹ He also took the view that Aristotle’s acceptance of final causes
 120 rendered his philosophy ‘more consistent with Piety than the Cartesian *Hypothesis* it
 121 self’. Cudworth was, however, critical of Aristotle for not stating more clearly his
 122 arguments for the immortality of the soul and the existence of providence.

¹⁰ Although Cudworth’s *True Intellectual System of the Universe*, did not appear until 1678, and his *Treatise concerning Eternal and Immutable Morality* was not published until long after his death, in 1731, Cudworth was already working on them before the Restoration.

¹¹ Ralph Cudworth, *True Intellectual System of the Universe* (London: Richard Royston, 1678), p. 53.

In keeping with his humanistic approach to ancient philosophy, Cudworth drew a distinction between Aristotle and his interpreters, and, as appropriate, sought to exonerate him from the errors perpetrated by his followers. The doctrine of the *intellectus agens* is a case in point, though he does not link it specifically to Averroes. In his (posthumously-published) *A Treatise Concerning Eternal and Immutable Morality*, Cudworth defends Aristotle's theory of intellection, denying that it entails the derivation of abstract ideas from sense impressions through the operations of an 'agent intellect'. In so arguing he comes closer to pointing the finger at Averroes, but he does not in fact name him. In reference to Aristotle's distinction in *De anima* 3, between active intellect (*intellectus agens* or *nous poetikos*) and potential intellect (*intellectus possibilis* or *nous pathetikos*), Cudworth attributes the doctrine of the 'agent intelligence' to later interpreters of Aristotle. In support of this view, he cites the early Greek interpreters, who, he argues, were in a better position to understand Aristotle's meaning. Although he implicitly acknowledges scope for confusion in interpreting this particular passage, he is singularly vague as to the interpreters he has in mind, whether Greek, or later interpreters. But it is evident that he regards this 'peripatetical' theory of intellection as an example of the same kind of erroneous thinking that puts matter before mind ('the same sottishness of mind that would make stupid and senseless matter the original source of all things').

As for that opinion, that the conceptions of the mind and the intelligible ideas or reasons of the mind should be raised out of the phantasms by the strange chemistry of an agent intelligence: this as it is founded on a mistake of Aristotle's meaning, who never dreamed of any such chimerical agent intelligence, as appears from the Greek interpreters that best understood him so it is very like to that other opinion called peripatetical, that asserts the eduction of immaterial forms out of the power of matter. And as both of them arise from the same sottishness of mind that would make stupid and senseless matter the original source of all things, so there is the same impossibility in both, that perfection should be raised out of imperfection, and that vigour, activity and awakened energy, should ascend and emerge out of dull, sluggish, and drowsy passion.¹²

So far is Cudworth from condemning Aristotle, that he in fact notes a parallel between Aristotle's doctrine of the active intellect (properly understood) and his own epistemology which emphasises the key role of mind in the generation of knowledge:

But indeed this opinion attributes as much activity to the mind, if at least the agent intelligence be part of it, *as ours doth*. As he would attribute as much activity to the sun, that should say the sun had a power of educing light out of night or the dark air, as he that should say the sun had a power of exerting light out of his own body. The former being but an improper way of expressing the same thing, which is properly signified in the latter way. But that other opinion, that asserts that the abstract and universal reasons of things as distinct from phantasms, are nothing else but mere names without any signification, is so ridiculously false, that it deserves no confutation at all. (my italics)¹³

¹² Ralph Cudworth, *A Treatise Concerning Eternal and Immutable Morality*, ed. Sarah Hutton (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1996), pp. 82–83.

¹³ *Ibid.*, p. 84. For further discussion of Cudworth's use of Aristotle, see my 'Aristotle and the Cambridge Platonists: The Case of Cudworth', in *Philosophy in the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries: Conversations with Aristotle*, eds Constance T. Blackwell and Sachiko Kusukawa (London: Ashgate, 2000), pp. 337–349.

163 Cudworth, then, does not appear to have been unduly concerned about Averroism
 164 *per se*. He focused on Aristotle rather than his Commentator. His Cambridge
 165 colleagues shared his interest in *intellectus agens*, but they seem to have been more
 166 aware of potential problems with Averroes's conception of it.

167 John Smith and Nathaniel Culverwell

168 In his posthumously-published *Select Discourses*,¹⁴ which was written before 1652,
 169 John Smith, like Cudworth, discusses the *intellectus agens* in relation to Aristotle.
 170 Section 8 of his 'Discourse on the Immortality of the Soul' discusses the *intellectus*
 171 *patiens* and *intellectus agens* of *De anima* 3. There is nothing specifically Averroistic
 172 about this. For Smith the concept of the *intellectus agens* is rich in possibilities as a
 173 means of explaining prophetic inspiration. Later in the same work, in his Discourse
 174 'Of Prophesie' he describes the operations of the *intellectus agens*, 'When our
 175 Rational facultie being moved together with the Soul of the World, and filled with a
 176 divinely-inspired fury, doth predict those things that are to come.'¹⁵ This is not, of
 177 course, an Averroist usage, but owes much to other traditions. It is notable that his
 178 comments show how it could be assimilated to a syncretic Platonism, for, on the
 179 authority of Philo, he rolled the '*Intellectus agens*' into a Platonist mould by repre-
 180 senting it as 'the same with *Anima Mundi* or *Universal Soul*, as it is described by the
 181 *Pythagoreans* and *Platonists*.' Smith makes no more than passing reference to the
 182 Averroist conception of *intellectus agens* in his *Select Discourses*, but the reference
 183 is nonetheless important as an indicator of his primary association of Averroism
 184 with the doctrine of a single soul common to all human beings. He dismisses this
 185 doctrine as a mistaken interpretation of the *notiones communes* or common notions
 186 which are the same in all human beings.

187 Smith's Emmanuel College contemporary, Nathaniel Culverwell, explores simi-
 188 lar territory, though giving more space to Averroes's doctrine of *intellectus agens*.
 189 Culverwell's *An Elegant and Learned Discourse of the Light of Nature*, which was
 190 published posthumously in 1652, is also useful as an indicator of the kind of sources
 191 which were available for a knowledge of Averroism in mid-seventeenth-century
 192 England. In the ninth chapter, entitled 'The Light of Reason', Culverwell pauses to
 193 discuss the doctrine of the *active intellect* or *intellectus Agens* (separately from
 194 *intellectus patiens*). The context of his discussion is his broader investigation of the
 195 light of nature, and of human reason as the illuminator of the soul, or 'Candle of the
 196 Lord'. Averroes's active intellect attracted Culverwell's attention as an alternative
 197 theory of illumination of the human soul. He invokes it in order to clarify his own
 198 conception of the illuminating power of reason, which he conceives as internal to
 199 each individual soul. He identified the doctrine of the active intellect as an 'Oriental

¹⁴ Smith's *Select Discourses* (London: James Flesher, 1660) were edited by John Worthington about a decade after his death.

¹⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 186.

Invention', by 'those Arabian writers Averroes and Avicenna'. His objection to it is that it undermines the personal soul. By this teaching, these Arabian philosophers replaced the 'the spirit of a man' or 'that *internal* reason which illuminates the soul' (hence his use of the biblical metaphor, 'Candle of the Lord') with illumination from an external source. Avicenna and Averroes, he writes, 'must needs have an Angel to hold the Candle to enlighten men in their choicest operations'.¹⁶ The difference between the two is that Averroes holds there to be only one such source of illumination for all men: 'Averroes will allow but one Angel to superintend and prompt the whole Species of mankinde.' To Culverwell's mind, this reduces man to the status of passive instrument of an external 'intelligence'. Contrary to Culverwell's conception of man as an exalted, god-like being, Averroes's doctrine of the *intellectus agens* makes him 'the most imperfect and contemptible being that could be, totally dependant upon an Angel in his most essential workings; the whole sphere of his being was to be mov'd by an Intelligence'.¹⁷

Culverwell proceeds to list others affected by this error. The list includes Themistius, Plotinus and unspecified Platonists (who 'were always so much conversant with spirits, which made their Philosophy ever question'd for a touch of Magick').¹⁸ He also mentions Roger Bacon and Maimonides (the Jews would 'would fain perswade us that God himself is their *Intellectus Agens*'). 'Amongst fresher and more moderne writers,' he names Jacopo Zabarella, who, he claims, regarded 'God himself as the *Intellectus Agens* of the soul' – a position he arrives at, according to Culverwell, through a distorting reading of his 'master' Aristotle. The chief modern villain named is Girolamo Cardano, whose most 'prodigious error' was his 'brutish conceit' that human intellect is no different from that of animals – the only difference being the receptivity of humans to the active intelligence. This list of sources indicates that Culverwell was aware of sympathetic readers of Averroes (Zabarella, Cardano).¹⁹ However, although he apparently had direct knowledge of the writings of Zabarella (*De mente agente*) and Maimonides (*Guide of the Perplexed*), his knowledge of Averroes seems to have been obtained at second hand, chiefly from Scaliger (*Exotericarum exercitationum liber XV de subtilitate ad Hieronymum Cardanum*)²⁰ and John Selden (*De jure naturali ac gentium*).²¹ His critique of the Averroist error is mitigated by his view that 'buried in that heap of Errours' is the truth 'That God himself ... [doth] constantly assist the understanding with a Proportionable Co-operation.'²² Indeed God may illuminate the soul more fully, through revelation or prophecy.

¹⁶ Nathaniel Culverwell, *An Elegant and Learned Discourse of the Light of Nature*, eds Robert A. Greene and Hugh McCallum (Toronto: University of Toronto Press), p. 68.

¹⁷ *Ibid.*

¹⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 68–69.

¹⁹ *Ibid.* Zabarella, *De rebus naturalibus* (1604). On Averroistic motives in Cardano, see Valverde's chapter in this volume.

²⁰ Culverwell, *Light*, p. 68; Julius Caesar Scaliger, *Exotericarum exercitationum liber XV de subtilitate ad Hieronymum Cardanum* (Paris: Michel Vasconsan, 1557).

²¹ Selden, *De jure naturali ac gentium*, l.ix (116n.).

²² Culverwell, *Light*, p. 70.

234 **Henry More**

235 The only one of the Cambridge Platonists to devote sustained attention to Averroism
 236 was Henry More, whose writings contain many more references to Averroism than
 237 may be found among the rest of the Cambridge Platonists combined.²³ Where
 238 Cudworth's syncretism rendered him more likely to take a generous view of philo-
 239 sophical errors which came close to what he understood as the truth, Henry More
 240 was decidedly cautious about analogues to true Christian philosophy, especially his
 241 own. As with Culverwell, Smith and Cudworth, More's conception of Averroism is
 242 both reductive and unspecific: what he identified as Averroism amounts largely to
 243 the doctrine of the *intellectus agens* which he elides with the problem of a single,
 244 universal soul. Nevertheless, as compared with the other Cambridge Platonists,
 245 there are striking differences in how he regarded Averroism. For he saw it as a
 246 serious problem – at least in his earlier works. He also associates the Averroistic
 247 conception of the *intellectus agens* with naturalistic interpretations of Aristotle,
 248 particularly with Pomponazzi, but also Vanini and Cardano.

249 Averroism figures in several of More's books, particularly his early writings.
 250 References to Averroism occur in his earliest collection of poems, *Psychodia*
 251 *Platonica* (1642) (republished in *Philosophical Poems*, 1647) and in the most
 252 important philosophical work of his early maturity, his *Immortality of the Soul*
 253 (1659), as well as his major work of theology, *An Explanation of the Grand Mystery*
 254 *of Godliness* (1660). The presence of Averroistic themes in the poems with which
 255 he made his publishing debut as well as in the philosophical works published in the
 256 1650s makes Averroism one of the continuities which bridges the generic divide
 257 between the poems of his youth and his later philosophical prose writings. However,
 258 Averroism does not appear to be an issue in More's later philosophical works,
 259 namely those published after 1662: *Divine Dialogues* (1668), *Enchiridion metaphy-*
 260 *sicum* (1671) and *Enchiridion ethicum* (1667).

261 A peculiarity of More's direct references to Averroes is that he calls him 'Aven-
 262 roes'. This mis-nomer probably derives from William Bedwell, the English Arabic
 263 scholar, who refers to Averroes as 'Aben Rhoi'.²⁴ More's first reference to 'Aven-
 264 roes' occurs in the fourth poem in his *Psychodia Platonica* (1642).²⁵ This is his

²³ Why this should be so, given the Christian Platonism which they shared, may be an individual matter. But it may also reflect a difference of emphasis owing to their college backgrounds: all except for More were trained at Emmanuel College. The only study which discusses More's Averroism is David Leech, '*No Spirit, No God*': *An Examination of the Cambridge Platonist Henry More's Defence of Soul as a Bulwark against Atheism*' (PhD Thesis, Cambridge, 2006), to which I wish to acknowledge my debt, though we differ in our assessment of the influence of Plotinus on More.

²⁴ Alastair Hamilton, *William Bedwell the Arabist* (Leiden: Brill, 1985). Examples of Bedwell's usage of the term may be found in the documents printed on pp. 107, 109 and 115.

²⁵ Henry More, *Psychodia Platonica, or, A Platonick Song of the Soul* (Cambridge, 1642). Reprinted in *Philosophical Poems* (Cambridge: Roger Daniel, 1647).

Antimonopsychia or *Confutation of the Unitie of Souls*, in which he sets out to refute 'The all-devouring Unity/ Of souls,' an opinion which he attributes to 'That Learned Arab hight Aven-Roe' (Stanza 7). More again refers to Averroes as 'Aven-roes' in his *Of the Immortality of the Soul* (1659), this time in passing reference to the Averroist conception of planetary intelligences, and in the course of an account of Fazio Cardano's story of encountering an Averroist spirit. An additional reference to the 'Aven-roists' appears the version published in More's *A Collection of Several Philosophical Writings*, in 1662, and this version of the name is retained in the Latin translation of his works, his *Opera omnia* (1678).

There are also places in More's writings where he clearly has Averroism in mind, although he does not identify it as such or mention Averroes by name. For example, in his *An Explanation of the Grand Mystery of Godliness* (1660), More identifies a form of atheism associated with Aristotelianism. These 'Aristotelean' atheists deny particular providence and ascribe God's governance of earthly affairs to the 'Influence of the *Celestial Bodies*, actuated by the *Intelligences* appertaining to each Sphere.' The proponents of this view named by More are the 'witty fools' Pomponazzi and Vanini, the latter of whom compounds his error by amalgamating the workings of the separate intelligences into one 'Soul of the Heavens' which

will serve as effectually to do all these things as the *Aristotelean Intelligences*; and therefore ever & anon doubts of those, and establisheth this as the onely Intellectual or Immaterial Principle and highest Deity.²⁶

By explaining the powers of this intelligence in 'a natural way by Periodical Influences of the Heavenly Bodies,' Vanini in effect circumscribes the power of God within the limits of nature:

he has imprisoned the Divinity in those upper rooms for fear of the worst, that he may be as far out of his reach as the Earth is from the Moon.²⁷

More believed that the source of Vanini's views was another Italian, namely 'that odd and crooked Writer *Hieronymus Cardanus*'.²⁸ Later in the same book, the same concern relating to the Averroist doctrine of the agent intellect and the celestial intelligences recurs in the context of More's refutation of astrology. These chapters were republished in 1681 with the title, *Tetractys anti-astrologica* in response to John Butler's *A Vindication of Astrology*, i.e., his *Agiastrologia* [*agia-astrologia*], or *The Most Sacred and Divine Science of Astrology* (London, 1680).

The dominant concern of More's engagement with Averroes is the doctrine of 'Unity of souls' or 'monopsychism'. This is the subject of *Antimonopsychia*, the shortest of the four long philosophical poems published in his *Philosophical Poems*. The connecting motif of these early poems is the central theme of the immortality of the soul. They celebrate the life of the soul (the subject of the first and longest poem,

²⁶ More, *An Explanation*, p. 335.

²⁷ *Ibid.*

²⁸ *Ibid.*, section 4.

303 *Psychozoia*) and they counter doctrines which deny or threaten that life: the erroneous
 304 doctrines on which he focuses in the other poems are, besides monopsychism, mortal-
 305 talism, soul-sleeping and materialism. To More, these doctrines are inter-related by
 306 virtue of the fact that they all deny the immortality of the soul, and they do so in
 307 analogous ways. The erroneous conception of the soul with which More most associ-
 308 ated monopsychism was mortalism, which is the subject of the previous poem,
 309 *Antipsychopannychia, A Confutation of the sleep of the SOUL after death*. In
 310 *Antipsychopannychia*, More sets out to show that 'no souls die' (1.3). Of course,
 311 Averroes's *intellectus agens* does not entail the annihilation of the soul on death, but
 312 it does entail that only a part of the soul survives the death of the body, namely, the
 313 intellect. This is not immortality in a personal sense, there being only one single
 314 intellect common to all. Averroes's denial of personal immortality therefore amounts
 315 to the annihilation of the individual at the point of death: 'For if one onely soul act in
 316 every body, what ever we are now, surely this body laid in the dust we shall be noth-
 317 ing.'²⁹ More was prepared to accept that monopsychism was 'more tenable' than
 318 materialism, since it does, after all, posit the existence of soul, and indeed immortal-
 319 ity of a sort. (In fact there are strong parallels with his own universal spirit, the 'Spirit
 320 of Nature'). However, even if monopsychism is more refined than materialism or
 321 mortalism, that doesn't change the fact that like them, its fatal denial of personal
 322 immortality leads to atheism, 'to the subversion of all the Fundamentals of Religion
 323 and Piety amongst men.'³⁰ Averroes's conception of the soul is, therefore, a problem
 324 to be confronted by all proponents of personal immortality.

325 In his poem *Antimonopsychia* More sets out to refute the doctrine that 'there is
 326 but one soul; and [that] sense, understanding and motion be acts of this one soul
 327 informing severall bodies.'³¹ He does so by making the case for the multiplicity of
 328 souls, the unity of the soul, and the individuality of each soul. His first step is to
 329 establish the plurality of souls, by presenting arguments against,

330 ... the Souls strange solitude
 331 That there is not one onely soul. (Stanza 10)

332 More lists many absurdities which arise from positing a single soul for all human
 333 beings, e.g., that the same soul will hold as many contradictory opinions as there are
 334 philosophers who share it. Every individual will be guilty of all the sins committed
 335 by other people. There will be no free will, and living things will be reduced to
 336 empty shells, filled with universal intellect:

337 Thoughts good and bad that Universall mind
 338 Must take upon it self; and every ill,
 339 That is committed by all humane kind,
 340 They are that souls. Alas, we have no will,

²⁹ More, *Antipsychopannychia*, Preface.

³⁰ More, *Immortality of the Soul*, Preface, section 10.

³¹ More, *Antipsychopannychia*, Preface. All references to More's *Immortality* are from the version published in his *A Collection of Several Philosophical Writings* (London: James Flesher, 1662), in which each constituent text is separately paginated.

No free election, nor yet any skill, 341
 But are a number of dull stalking trees 342
 That the universall Intellect doth fill 343
 With its own life and motion: what it please 344
 That there it acts. What strange absurdities are these? (Stanza 9) 345

Since Averroes's version of monopsychism entailed complete separation of intellect 346
 from the rest of the soul and body, More's counter-argument invests a great deal in 347
 demonstrating the unity of the soul and to arguing that the soul never entirely loses 348
 recollection of sensation or of its own thinking processes. Central to his case are the 349
 soul's self-awareness and memory. On the basis of an appeal to common experi- 350
 ence, More argues that each individual is only aware of his own soul, and not of 351
 himself as part of a universal soul. This self-awareness or consciousness (though he 352
 does not use that term) is not confined to the intellective soul, but extends to both its 353
 sensitive and rational aspects. Another aspect of self-awareness is memory. Without 354
 it the soul could remember nothing of its former life, will mistakenly believe itself 355
 to be newly created and therefore would not understand the moral consequences of 356
 its actions in it (Stanza 2). This is primarily a moral argument. But memory also has 357
 a unifying function, since its operation, like self-awareness in effect binds the intel- 358
 lect to the lower functions of the soul. More calls Memory 'the watchman of the 359
 soul' (stanza 33) because it observes all its functions, 'phansie', 'sense' and 'cogita- 360
 tion'. Since memory is, furthermore, 'the very bond of life' (stanza 32), as he puts 361
 it, which unites soul to the experience of the individual body: it is memory which 362
 makes us who we are, differentiating us from other souls. Thus, in this poem More 363
 counters monopsychism with a conception of the soul in which the soul is a com- 364
 posite of intellectual and sensitive functions, in which consciousness, memory and 365
 self-awareness are key to its unity, and thereby to its individuality. For this, as for 366
 the account of the soul in *Psychozoia* he was indebted to Plotinus's theory of the 367
 tricentric soul, a unified composite of 'one nature in many powers' (*Enneads* 9.2.5). 368
 Plotinus also conceives of Memory as the foundation of individual identity (*Enneads* 369
 4.3.27), and of the soul as conscious of its operations – thinking entails self-reflection 370
 (*Enneads* 9.1.2).³² More's anti-Averroist argument for the unity of the soul, then, 371
 draws on Plotinus in order to advance an idea of individuality or personhood – 372
 something which he develops further in *Immortality of the Soul*. 373

Ipseity or Personality 374

The anti-Averroist arguments from More's poems are recapitulated in his *Immortality* 375
of the Soul where (with cross-references to the arguments in his poems)³³ he takes 376
 issue, above all, with the doctrine that, as he puts it, 'one Universal Soule ... hears, 377

³² For further discussion, see Pauline Remes, *Neoplatonism* (Stocksfield: Acumen, 2008), and Eyjólfur Emilsson, *Plotinus on Intellect* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2007).

³³ More, *Immortality of the Soul*, Preface and p. 212.

378 sees and reasons in every man.' To the arguments already advanced in his poems, he
 379 adds a few more for good measure. Many of these additional arguments concern the
 380 absurdities that arise if a single common soul is posited for all human beings – for
 381 example if mathematicians and fools had a common intellect, fools would be wise
 382 and intelligent, and 'one man will be all men, and all men but one individual man,'
 383 which 'is a perfect contradiction to all the Laws of *Metaphysics* and *Logick*.'³⁴ In
 384 Book 3 chapter 16, specifically targets the doctrine of the World Soul and
 385 Pomponazzi's theory of the celestial intelligences (*De immortalitate anima*, ch. 14).
 386 Here he also develops the idea which he had proposed in *Antimonopsychia*, that
 387 individual souls are unified and differentiated by the soul's self-awareness, or, as he
 388 puts it, the soul's being 'conscious to her self of her own perceptions.' A significant
 389 difference from his account of the soul's self-awareness in the poems is that in
 390 *Immortality of the Soul* he does not focus on memory as a separate function of the
 391 soul, but subsumes it within the idea of consciousness or 'animadversion', as he
 392 now calls it. The soul's self-awareness, or consciousness, then, is the essence of
 393 individuality, that is to say 'every man's personal *Ipseity*.' And the perceptions of
 394 which the soul is aware include both thoughts and sensations:

395 a Man is most properly that, whatever it is, that *animadvert* in him; for that is such an
 396 operation that no Being but himself can doe it for him. And that which *animadvert* in us,
 397 does not only perceive and take notice of its *Intellectual* and *Rational* operations, but of all
 398 *Sensations* whatsoever that we are conscious of, whether they terminate in our Body or on
 399 some outward Object ... From whence it is plain, *That which we are* is both *Sensitive* and
 400 *Intellectual*.³⁵

401 '*Animadversion*' is the defining characteristic of the individual human soul and the
 402 key to its unity: 'the true and usual Notion of the Unity of a Soul', according to More
 403 is that 'it mainly consists in this, that the *Animadversive* thereof is *but one*, and that
 404 there is no *Sensation* nor *Perception* of any kind in the Soul, but what is communicated
 405 and perceived by the whole *Animadversive*'.³⁶ It is, therefore, 'quite repugnant to the
 406 Idea of the *Unity* of the Soul not to be conscious to herself of her own perceptions'.³⁷

407 It is tempting to see the influence of Cartesianism here, and to suggest that that
 408 More was recasting his argument by reference to Descartes's conception of the indi-
 409 vidual soul as *res cogitans*. After all, at this time his enthusiasm for Cartesianism
 410 had not yet been tempered by the doubts about its atheistic implications which char-
 411 acterise his later work.³⁸ More had first celebrated Descartes's philosophy in another of
 412 his poems, *Democritus Platonissans* (which was added to the collection of his poems
 413 in 1647), while in the Preface to *Immortality of the Soul* he famously recommended
 414 'reading of Des Cartes in all publick Schools or Universities'.³⁹ However, the

[AU2]

³⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 213.

³⁵ More, *Immortality*, p. 212.

³⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 212.

³⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 213.

³⁸ Alan Gabbey, "'Philosophia cartesiana triumphata", Henry More, 1646–71', in *Problems in Cartesianism*, eds Thomas M. Lennon, John M. Nicholas, and John W. Davis (Kingston and Montreal: McGill-Queen's University Press: 1982), pp. 171–509.

³⁹ More, *Immortality*, Preface, section 15.

conception of the soul and of individual identity to which the quotation above refers 415
 entails far more than cogitation. The self-awareness of the soul includes awareness 416
 of sensation, such that for More the soul is more properly *res percipiens*, something 417
 which perceives or is cognisant. As we have just noted, conscious soul is aware of 418
 both thoughts and sensation. It follows therefore, that our individual identity is com- 419
 posite: 'That which we are is both *Sensitive* and *Intellectual*.'⁴⁰ These features of 420
 More's conception of the soul point, once again, to Plotinus. More's observations 421
 about consciousness and identity ('animadversion' and 'ipseity') echo Plotinus 422
 argument that it is the soul's experience of the body which individuates it. By dis- 423
 solving the link between soul and body, monopyschism removes the essential basis 424
 of personal identity: 425

So soon as this Body of his [a man's] is dissipated and dissolved, that she [the soul] will no 426
 longer raise such determinate Thoughts or Senses that refer to that Union; and that so the 427
 Memory of such Actions, Notions, Impressions, that were held together in relation to a 428
 particular Body, being lost and laid aside upon the failing of the Body to which they did 429
 refer, this *Ipsity* or *Personality*, which consisted mainly in this, does necessarily perish in 430
 death.⁴¹ 431

Descartes's radical separation of mind and body does not satisfactorily explain 432
 how mind interacts with body, or how, after the separation of soul and body at death, 433
 the soul bears any stamp of individuality. David Leech has drawn attention to the 434
 fact that Descartes's *res cogitans* is 'quasi Averroistic' since it offers no obvious 435
 means of accounting for personal immortality, and that More may have had 436
 Pomponazzi and Vanini in mind when expressing concerns about atheism in his 437
 correspondence with Descartes.⁴² A major theme of that correspondence is the 438
 insufficiency of the Cartesian *res cogitans* as a definition of the mind or soul. More's 439
 insistence, in his letters to Descartes that extension is a property of immaterial sub- 440
 stance as well as of matter, is echoed in *Immortality* 3.16, when he commends the 441
 'Notion ... that proportions the Soul to the dimensions of the Body'.⁴³ This is con- 442
 sistent to his view that the soul, while immaterial in itself, is always in a sense 443
 embodied – as in the Neoplatonic doctrine of the vehicle of the soul, which he 444
 develops in his *Conjectura Cabalistica* (1653). Rather than drawing on Descartes to 445
 construct a notion of personal identity, More draws on Neoplatonism to construct a 446
 conception of personal identity in opposition to the Averroist monopyschism and in 447
 terms which are consistent with his epistolary critique of Cartesianism. 448

The Immortality of the Soul marks the point in More's career where his attentions 449
 turned from older forms of atheism associated with the Aristotelian tradition to the 450
 new philosophies of Descartes, Hobbes and (in due course) Spinoza. The absence of 451
 references to Averroes in More's later writings would seem to indicate that the focus 452
 of his concerns shifted in his later writings as he turned his attention to meet these 453
 new challenges. From this point of view, Averroism came to seem less important to 454

⁴⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 212.

⁴¹ *Ibid.*, p. 214.

⁴² Leech, "No spirit, no god", p. 164.

⁴³ More, *Immortality*, p. 215.

455 More by comparison with more modern forms of philosophical atheism. However, in
 456 many ways the quarrels he had with modern philosophy recapitulate the concerns
 457 raised by Averroism, particularly the question of personal immortality, for which he
 458 believed that neither Cartesianism, Hobbism, nor Spinozism could satisfactorily
 459 account. A cognate misconception was 'Sadducism', or the denial of the existence of
 460 immaterial souls.⁴⁴ Already in his earliest writings, monopsychism, or the doctrine of
 461 the 'all-devouring Unity/Of Souls' exemplifies a type of problem which recurs in
 462 several guises, principally heterodox theories that deny the personal immortality of
 463 the soul. Averroism may therefore be seen as a presentiment of later philosophical
 464 foes. Thus, the disappearance of Averroism from More's later writings may be
 465 explained as a subsuming of Averroism (or rather, what Averroism represented for
 466 More) within other manifestations of generic philosophico-theological problems.
 467 More's central pre-occupation, throughout his intellectual career was, after all, to
 468 combat philosophical atheism. This is the continuing motif which connects his earliest
 469 writings to his mature philosophy, though the means by which he pursued it were
 470 developed and modified considerably. He never ceased to defend the immortality of
 471 the soul and he continued to refine and strengthen his apologetic arguments. After
 472 1662, and especially in his *Enchiridion metaphysicum*, the central theme of his phi-
 473 losophy is his conception of the Spirit of Nature or Hylarchic Principle.

474 Tracing the undercurrents of Averroism in More's later writings is beyond the
 475 scope of this chapter. But we have identified one distinctive concept which may be
 476 said to have been developed in response to Averroism and that is the notion of iden-
 477 tity and person through which he constructed a refutation of monopsychism. It was
 478 Platonism, in the wider sense which included 'Deep Plotin's lore', which afforded
 479 him a means of refuting the Averroist doctrine of the single universal soul.⁴⁵ Since
 480 Averroism is given most extensive treatment in the early writings where he first
 481 declared himself a Platonist, Averroism (or rather the implications of his *intellectus*
 482 *agens*) may be understood as a significant factor in determining More's philosphi-
 483 cal preference for Platonism.

484 Conclusion

485 On the evidence which I have here presented, the Cambridge Platonists bear testi-
 486 mony to continuing awareness of Averroes's philosophy in seventeenth-century
 487 England. In all but one case, Averroism does not appear to have been of significant

⁴⁴The term 'Sadducism' was used by Joseph Glanvill, who shared More's interest in paranormal phenomena. See *A Blow at Modern Sadducism in some Philosophical Considerations about Witchcraft* (London: James Collins, 1668); Glanvill, *Sadducismus Triumphatus: Of Full and Plain Evidence Concerning Witches, with a Letter of Dr H. More on the Same Subject* (London: James Collins, 1681).

⁴⁵David Leech argues that More's Platonist conception of the soul underwent a process of development and refinement between his earlier and later writings, becoming less indebted to Plotinus, and more to Iamblichus and others. Leech 'No Spirit, No God'.

interest to any of them. The exception, however, is Henry More, who, while he can hardly be said to have been preoccupied with Averroes, regarded him as sufficiently important to warrant a refutation. Furthermore, More's concern with Averroism offers important insights into More's early thought, and his reception of Cartesianism and other philosophies. Finally, his engagement with the Averroism illustrates how philosophical debate contributes to conceptual development – in his case a theory of personal identity founded on consciousness. The Plotinian psychology with which he sought to combat it, bears comparison with Cudworth's account of the soul and points towards Locke. The Cambridge Platonists certainly do not fit the Renan-Pintard view that Averroism was a force for modernisation by contributing to the secularisation of philosophy, though interestingly More regarded it as the resort of 'Libertines'. The libertines he had in mind were the Paduan Averroists, Pomponazzi and Vanini, those he regarded as promoters of 'Aristotelean atheism'. In More's view Averroism is 'the handsomest Hypothesis that they can frame in favour of themselves.' By comparison with straightforwardly materialist philosophies (like Hobbism), the distorted immaterialism of monopsychism, presented a greater challenge, because it is 'farre beyond that dull conceit, *That there is nothing but meer Matter in the World;* which is infinitely more lyable to confutation.' The insidious appeal of monopsychism to the libertine is that he might delude himself with the comfort that his wicked behaviour in earthly life would be drowned in oblivion in the afterlife:

that so soon as this Body of his is dissipated and dissolved, that she will no longer raise any such determinate Thoughts or Senses that referre to that Union, and that so the Memory of such Actions, Notions and Impressions, that were held together in relation to a particular Body, being lost and laid aside upon the failing of the Body to which they did referre, this *Ipseity or Personality* which consisted mainly in this, does necessarily perish in death. This certainly is that (if they know their own meaning) which many Libertines would have, who are afraid to meet themselves in the other World, for fear they should quarrel with themselves there for their transactions in this.⁴⁶

⁴⁶ *Immortality*, p. 214.

Author Queries

Chapter No.: 10 0001629571

Queries	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Chapter title mismatches with TOC.	
AU2	Please provide the opening bracket for this occurrence.	

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 11

Reconsidering the Case of Elijah Delmedigo's Averroism and Its Impact on Spinoza

Carlos Fraenkel

Elijah Delmedigo (d. 1493) has been called 'the foremost Jewish Averroist of the Renaissance.'¹ He remained faithful to the medieval Islamic and Jewish rationalist tradition that he saw embodied, above all, in the works of Averroes and Maimonides, even when Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, his most brilliant Italian student, turned away from the austere rationalism of his teacher.² Pico's imagination had been captured by Neoplatonism and Kabbalah, both of which Delmedigo dismissed as an amalgam of fanciful doctrines without serious philosophical content.³ In vain he tried to persuade Pico to return to what he considered the firm philosophical grounds laid by Averroes.⁴

¹ Alfred Ivry, 'Remnants of Jewish Averroism in the Renaissance', in *Jewish Thought in the Sixteenth Century*, ed. Bernard D. Cooperman (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1983), pp. 243–265 (250). For overviews of Delmedigo's life and works, see David M. Geffen, 'Insights into the Life and Thought of Elijah Del Medigo Based on His Published and Unpublished Works', *Proceedings of the American Academy for Jewish Research*, 61–62 (1973–1974), pp. 69–86 and J. J. Ross, 'Introduction', in Elijah Delmedigo, *Sefer behinat ha-dat*, critical edition with introduction and commentary by J. J. Ross (Tel Aviv: Chaim Rosenberg School of Jewish Studies, 1984) (Hebrew).

² On Delmedigo and Pico, see Alberto Bartòla, 'Eliyhau del Medigo e Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: La testimonianza dei codici vaticani', *Rinascimento*, 33 (1993), pp. 253–278.

³ This is a simplification. At times Delmedigo seems to distinguish between contemporary pseudo-Kabbalah and a true ancient core; see Kalman Bland, 'Elijah del Medigo's Averroist Response to the Kabbalists of Fifteenth-Century Jewry and Pico della Mirandola', *The Journal of Jewish Thought and Philosophy*, 1 (1991), pp. 23–53.

⁴ See Delmedigo's unpublished letter to Pico, Ms Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale, Latin 6508, 71^a–77^b.

C. Fraenkel (✉)

Department of Philosophy, McGill University,
 Sherbrooke St. West, Montreal, H3A 2T7, QC, Canada
 e-mail: carlos.fraenkel@mcgill.ca

14 The medieval rationalist tradition shaped not only Delmedigo's philosophical
 15 outlook, but also his interpretation of Judaism, set out in *Sefer behinat ha-dat*
 16 ('The Examination of Religion'), a philosophical-theological treatise written
 17 towards the end of his life. In this text, his conception of the relationship between
 18 philosophy and religion is clearly based on Averroes and Maimonides. In the scholar-
 19 ly literature, however, one finds persistently reiterated the view that Delmedigo
 20 adopted a 'double truth' doctrine, allegedly set forth by Christian Averroists. Other
 21 scholars insist on Delmedigo's orthodox Averroism, but do not offer a satisfactory
 22 explanation of the passages in *Behinat ha-dat* and elsewhere that seem to support the
 23 'double truth' thesis.

24 In the first part of this chapter I intend to revisit the 'double truth' issue. Leaving
 25 aside the question of whether any medieval philosopher actually endorsed such a
 26 doctrine, I will argue that Delmedigo clearly did not. His stance on the relationship
 27 between philosophy and religion fundamentally agrees with that of Averroes,
 28 according to which 'the truth does not contradict the truth' (*al-Ḍaqq lā yuḌādd*
 29 *al-Ḍaqq*).⁵ This does not mean that Delmedigo simply applied an Averroistic frame-
 30 work to Judaism. Rather, Delmedigo's position shows considerable originality and
 31 is best described as the outcome of a critical dialogue with both Averroes and
 32 Maimonides. Reading Delmedigo as a *critical* student of Averroes and Maimonides
 33 is sufficient to account for the novel aspects of his position, including the passages
 34 in his work that allegedly reflect a 'double truth' doctrine. Moreover, whereas we
 35 know that Delmedigo closely studied Averroes and Maimonides, there is no evi-
 36 dence that his views on the relationship between philosophy and religion were
 37 significantly influenced by Christian sources.

38 My second aim in this paper is to revisit the question of Delmedigo's influence
 39 on Spinoza.⁶ There is, I argue, a distinctly Averroistic side to the way Spinoza con-
 40 ceives of the relationship between philosophy and religion before working out the
 41 critique of religion in the *Tractatus theologico-politicus*. The *Tractatus* in a sense
 42 radicalises the stance on philosophy and religion set forth by Averroes in his chief
 43 philosophical-theological work, the *FaḌl al-maqāl* ('Decisive Treatise'). It is highly

⁵ Averroes, *FaḌl al-maqāl (Decisive Treatise)*, ed. George Hourani with corrections by Muhsin Mahdi, Eng. trans. Charles Butterworth (Provo: Brigham Young University Press, 2001), pp. 8–9 (in the edition I use, the pagination of the Arabic text and the English translation are the same). Hebrew trans. and ed. N. Golb in 'The Hebrew Translation of Averroes' "FaḌl Al-Maqāl", *Proceedings of the American Academy for Jewish Research*, 25 (1956), pp. 91–113; 26 (1957), pp. 41–64. As Richard Taylor pointed out, Averroes is likely alluding to Aristotle's claim in the *Prior Analytics* that the truth "must in every respect agree with itself" (I, 32; 47a8-9), a claim on which he elaborates in the Middle Commentary on the *Prior Analytics* and in the Long Commentary on the *De Anima*. See Taylor, "'Truth Does Not Contradict Truth': Averroes and the Unity of Truth," *Topoi* 19 (2000), pp. 3–16. It is possible that Delmedigo and Spinoza were aware of Averroes's discussions of the *Prior Analytics* passage. However, the main Averroistic source for their views on the relationship between philosophy and religion is surely the *FaḌl al-maqāl*.

⁶ This part is mostly based on Carlos Fraenkel, 'Spinoza on Philosophy and Religion: The Averroistic Sources', in *The Rationalists: Between Tradition and Innovation*, eds Carlos Fraenkel, Dario Perinetti, and Justin Smith (Dordrecht: Springer, 2010), pp. 58–81.

likely that Spinoza was familiar with Averroes's claims in the form in which they were taken up by Delmedigo. Clarifying Delmedigo's relationship to Averroes will thus also help to shed light on what may be called Spinoza's Averroism. The only scholar who has dealt with this issue is Leon Roth, in a paper published in 1922. Roth, I will argue, misunderstood Delmedigo and as a consequence misrepresented his influence on Spinoza.

Religion as an Imitation of Philosophy: Al-Fārābī, Averroes, and Maimonides⁷

The standard view of medieval Islamic and Jewish philosophers is that the content of their religious traditions, taken literally, is a replacement for philosophy, devised by philosophers to educate and guide non-philosophers.⁸ Taken allegorically, on the other hand, it corresponds to the doctrines demonstrated in philosophy. Religion's authority thus depends on the assumption that the teachings of religion are true on the allegorical level. This interpretation of religion was first worked out by the Muslim philosopher al-Fārābī (d. 950). According to al-Fārābī, 'religion' (*millā*) is an 'imitation of philosophy' (*muḏākiya li'l-falsafa*).⁹ Hence religion

comes after philosophy, in general, since it aims simply to instruct the multitude (*ta'alīm al-jumhūr*) in theoretical and practical matters that have been inferred in philosophy in such a way as to enable the multitude to understand them by persuasion or imaginative representation, or both.¹⁰

The difference between the philosopher and the prophet comes down to this: The prophet, in addition to intellectual perfection, also has the skills of an orator, poet and legislator, which allow him to translate philosophical insights into a language and a set of practical rules accessible to non-philosophers. Religion is thus integrated into a philosophical framework as a pedagogical-political program for non-philosophers. One implication of this view is that a religious text, if understood

⁷ The following section partially summarises Carlos Fraenkel, 'Philosophy and Exegesis in Al-Fārābī, Averroes, and Maimonides', *Laval Théologique et Philosophique*, 64 (2008), pp. 105–125.

⁸ For related controversies in modern scholarship, see Akasoy in this volume.

⁹ Al-Fārābī, *Kitāb taḥṣil al-sā'ada* ('The Attainment of Happiness'), ed. Ja'far Āl Yāsīn (Beirut: Dār al-Andalus, 1981), p. 185; English trans. Muhsin Mahdi in *Al-Farabi's Philosophy of Plato and Aristotle* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1962), p. 44. Al-Fārābī's most elaborate discussion of religion is the *Kitāb al-milla* (*Book of Religion*), ed. Muhsin Mahdi (Beirut: Dār al-Mashriq, 1968); English trans. Charles Butterworth in *The Political Writings: Selected Aphorisms and Other Texts* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2001).

¹⁰ Al-Fārābī, *Kitāb al-ḥurūf* = *Alfarabi's Book of Letters: Commentary on Aristotle's Metaphysics*, ed. Muhsin Mahdi (Beirut: Dār al-Mashriq, 1969); English trans. of Book 2 in *Medieval Islamic Philosophical Writings*, ed. Muhammad Khalidi (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), secs 142–143.

70 literally, is similar but not identical to the philosophical doctrines it imitates. If
 71 understood as an allegorical representation, however, it can be translated, as it
 72 were, into these doctrines by means of allegorical interpretation. A standard exam-
 73 ple from the medieval Islamic and Jewish context is scripture's description of God
 74 as a king, which is seen as a pedagogically useful metaphorical imitation of the
 75 philosophical doctrine of God occupying the first rank in the hierarchy of existents.
 76 The notion of a king conveys an approximate idea of God's rank to non-philoso-
 77 phers, who cannot understand the ontological order but do understand the political
 78 order.¹¹ Taken literally, the representation of God as a king is pedagogically and
 79 politically useful but not true; allegorically, on the other hand, it is true but not
 80 pedagogically and politically useful. The two most prominent proponents of this
 81 interpretation of religion at the end of the early medieval period were the Muslim
 82 philosopher Averroes (d. 1198) and the Jewish philosopher Maimonides (d. 1204),
 83 who were also the last important representatives of the Aristotelian school in
 84 Muslim Spain. Each worked out an interpretation of his religion (that is, of Islam
 85 or Judaism respectively) as a philosophical religion, on the basis of al-Fārābī's
 86 model for conceiving the relationship between philosophy and religion.

87 One difference in their interpretation, however, must be addressed, for it is
 88 important to understand how both Delmedigo and Spinoza later appropriated the
 89 concept of a philosophical religion. Whereas for Averroes the true doctrines consti-
 90 tuting the allegorical content of scripture must remain the exclusive domain of the
 91 philosophers, who have the intellectual capacity to understand them, for Maimonides
 92 they can and must be made at least partly accessible to non-philosophers as well:
 93 through religious legislation and allegorical interpretation. The importance of this
 94 difference between Maimonides and Averroes was already noted by Shlomo Pines.
 95 According to Pines, on this point Maimonides was influenced by the theology of the
 96 Almohads, the North African Berbers who conquered Spain in the twelfth century
 97 and 'compelled all their subjects to profess an official theology.' This theology was
 98 derived from the system of the *mutakallimūn*, 'who were the official theologians of
 99 the Almohad kingdom.'¹² Maimonides seems to have thought that all members of
 100 the religious community can be *habituated* to true opinions – the doctrine of God's
 101 incorporeality for instance – by means of religious legislation. These true opinions

¹¹ See e.g. Al-Fārābī, *Kitāb taḥṣīl al-sa'āda*, Ar., p. 185; Eng., p. 45, quoted by Averroes in *Commentary on Plato's Republic*, Hebrew trans. Samuel ben Judah of Marseilles, ed. with English trans. Erwin I. J. Rosenthal (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1969); new English trans. Ralph Lerner as *Averroes on Plato's Republic* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1974), p. 30. Cf. Maimonides, *Dalālat al-hā'irīn* (*Guide of the Perplexed*), ed. Salomon Munk and Issachar Yoel (Jerusalem: Yunovits, 1931); *Moreh ha-Nevukhim*, Hebrew trans. Samuel ibn Tibbon, ed. Yehuda Even-Shmuel (Jerusalem: Mosad ha-Rav Kook, 1987); *The Guide of the Perplexed*, trans. Shlomo Pines, 2 vols (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1963). In particular, see, *Guide of the Perplexed* (I, 8–9), I, pp. 33–35.

¹² Shlomo Pines, 'Translator's Introduction', in Maimonides, *The Guide of the Perplexed*, I, pp. cxviii–cxix. To date the most detailed treatment of the Almohad elements in Maimonides's thought is Sarah Stroumsa, *Maimonides in His World: Portrait of a Mediterranean Thinker* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2009). For further references see Akasoy in this volume.

must then be reconciled with scripture through allegorical interpretation.¹³ In this respect, therefore, Maimonides deviates from the standard conception of the relationship between philosophy and religion in early medieval Islamic and Jewish philosophy. Because of Maimonides's enormous impact on subsequent Jewish philosophy, however, his version was adopted by most Jewish philosophers from the thirteenth century to the early modern period. This explains why philosophical commentaries on the Bible, for example, became one of the main genres of Jewish philosophy throughout this period. But from the point of view of an Averroist, Maimonides's project leads to a problematic amalgamation of philosophy and the historical forms of religion, for Maimonides introduces philosophy into jurisprudence and Biblical interpretation, i.e., into religious disciplines in which for Averroes it is completely out of place.¹⁴

Let me briefly examine how Averroes argues for keeping philosophy and the historical forms of religion apart in the *Faṣl al-maqāl*. In contrast to Latin Averroists, Averroes holds that no genuine contradiction between philosophy and religion can exist. Islam contains the truth and exhorts all Muslims to pursue it:

Since this Law (*sharī'a*) is true and calls to the reflection leading to cognition of the truth, we, the Muslim community, know firmly that demonstrative reflection cannot lead to something differing with what is set down in the Law. For the truth does not contradict the truth (*al-ḥaqq lā yuḍādd al-ḥaqq*); rather, it agrees with and bears witness to it.¹⁵

Averroes, of course, knows that this cannot be the case if the *sharī'a* is understood literally. For then it contains much that is at odds with what philosophy demonstrates. The reason for this is that for Averroes, as for al-Fārābī, there is an important 'difference in human nature' (*ikhtilāf fiṭrat al-nās*), namely, that which exists between philosophers and non-philosophers, and the divine Law is addressed to all Muslims, not only to the philosophers among them.¹⁶ To achieve this, the prophet proceeds as follows. For one thing, he calls the philosophers to pursue true knowledge on the basis of demonstrations. In addition, he translates this knowledge by means of dialectical and rhetorical arguments, as well as poetic representations into a language accessible to non-philosophers. As a consequence, contradictions arise between the literal sense of the divine Law and the doctrines demonstrated by the philosophers. These contradictions can be solved, according to Averroes, through

¹³ See in particular, Maimonides, *Guide of the Perplexed* (I, 35), I, pp. 79–81.

¹⁴ For a detailed discussion of Maimonides's peculiar position and its impact on later Jewish philosophy, see Carlos Fraenkel, 'Legislating Truth: Maimonides, the Almohads, and the Thirteenth-Century Jewish Enlightenment', in *Studies in the History of Culture and Science: A Tribute to Gad Freudenthal* 2011, eds Resianne Fontaine, Ruth Glasner, Reimund Leicht and Giuseppe Veltri (Leiden: Brill, 2011), pp. 209–231.

¹⁵ Averroes, *Faṣl al-maqāl*, pp. 9–10. Strictly speaking, the view that the truth of philosophy does not contradict the truth of religion is also compatible with the weaker claim, proposed for instance by Thomas Aquinas, that revelation contains truths that neither contradict philosophy, nor are accessible to it.

¹⁶ Averroes, *Faṣl al-maqāl*, p. 10.

134 'exegesis' (*ta'wīl*), which discloses the 'allegorical sense' (*bāṭin*) of the divine
 135 Law.¹⁷ The decisive point for my present purpose is that allegorical exegesis is per-
 136 mitted only to philosophers according to Averroes. The difference between philoso-
 137 phers and non-philosophers with respect to the truth is thus twofold: Only the
 138 philosophers have access to the truth through scientific demonstrations, and only the
 139 philosophers have access to the allegorical sense of the divine Law. For Averroes,
 140 pointing out in public that the literal sense of the divine Law is false and disclosing
 141 its allegorical sense would precisely undermine the intention of the prophet, who
 142 concealed the allegorical sense because of the 'difference in human nature'. Averroes
 143 explains this by drawing an analogy between the role of the medical doctor and the
 144 role of the lawgiver, in which he opposes the lawgiver to a person who intends to
 145 disclose the allegorical content of the divine Law:

146 Here is a parable of these people's intention as contrasted to the intention of the Lawgiver
 147 (*al-shāri'*): Someone intends [to go] to a skilled physician who intends to preserve the
 148 health of all of the people and to remove sickness from them by setting down for them
 149 prescriptions to which there is common assent (*mushtarakat al-taṣdīq*) about the obligation
 150 of practicing the things that preserve their health and remove their sickness, as well as of
 151 avoiding the contrary things. He is not able to make them all become physicians, because
 152 the physician is the one who knows by demonstrative methods (*bi'l-turuq al-burhāniyya*)
 153 the things that preserve health and remove sickness. Then this one [the allegorical exegete]
 154 goes out to the people and says to them: 'These methods this physician has set down for
 155 you... have interpretations.' Yet they do not understand [these interpretations] and thus
 156 come to no assent as to what to do because of them.¹⁸

157 To the 'health' in the parable corresponds the perfection to which the prophet and
 158 lawgiver intends to lead all human beings insofar as they can attain it. To the 'pre-
 159 scriptions' corresponds the divine Law. What Averroes means is that if the beliefs
 160 based on the literal sense of the divine Law are taken away from non-philosophers,
 161 they risk falling into nihilism given that they lack the required intellectual abilities
 162 for understanding the allegorical sense. As a consequence they will not follow the
 163 guidance of the lawgiver on account of the literal sense, because the literal sense has
 164 lost its authority for them, nor will they follow it on account of the allegorical sense,
 165 which they do not understand. They lose, for instance, their belief in God as a king
 166 who enjoins virtue and prohibits vice. At the same time, they are unable to under-
 167 stand the notion of a first cause and how it relates to a virtuous life. Hence they lose
 168 both their belief in God and their belief in the value of a virtuous life. Again and
 169 again, Averroes stresses that the allegorical sense of the divine Law is not to be
 170 made public. His sharp criticism of Muslim theologians who 'strayed and led astray'
 171 is motivated above all by the fact that they 'revealed their allegorical interpretation

¹⁷ For this argument, see in particular *ibid.*, pp. 8, 19, 24–25; cf. Averroes, *Kashf 'an manāḥij al-adilla fī 'aqā'id al-milla*, ed. Maḥmūd Qāsim (Cairo: Maktabat al-anjlū al-miṣriyya, 1964), pp. 132–135; English trans. Ibrahim Najjar, in *Faith and Reason in Islam: Averroes' Exposition of Religious Arguments* (Oxford: Oneworld, 2001), pp. 16–19.

¹⁸ Averroes, *Faṣl al-maqāl*, pp. 27–28; for the metaphor of the physician, see also Averroes, *Kashf*, Ar., p. 181; Eng., p. 67.

to the multitude' (*ṣaraḥū bi-ta'wīlihim li'l-jumhūr*), i.e., did not respect the divisions due to the 'difference in human nature'.¹⁹ The theologian must never go beyond the literal sense when he addresses non-philosophers. Like philosophy, the allegorical sense of scripture must remain concealed. Philosophical doctrines, Averroes argues, may only be recorded in books that employ scientific demonstrations. For these, according to Averroes, are protected by their difficulty: books which 'use demonstrations are accessible only to those who understand demonstrations.'²⁰ In contrast to Maimonides, then, Averroes did not consider the possibility that non-philosophers can be habituated to philosophical doctrines by means of legislation, even if they do not understand how these doctrines are demonstrated.

Duplex Veritas? Reconsidering the Case of Elijah Delmedigo 182

I turn now to Delmedigo's conception of the relationship between philosophy and religion. The first to draw attention to Averroes's *Faṣl al-maqāl* as a source of Delmedigo's *Behinat ha-dat* was Adolph Hübsch.²¹ According to Hübsch, Delmedigo's treatise is essentially Averroes's treatise in a Jewish garb, a claim he tried to substantiate through a long list of supposed parallels between the two works. Responding to Hübsch's thesis, Julius Guttmann highlighted a number of substantive differences between Averroes and Delmedigo.²² In particular, Guttmann stressed that Delmedigo, in contrast to the historical Averroes, was not committed to the 'identity of religious and scientific truth,' but had 'obviously' adopted the 'double truth' doctrine characteristic of Christian Averroists.²³ Guttmann failed, however, to adduce specific Christian sources for Delmedigo's alleged 'double truth' doctrine, finally suggesting that Delmedigo's version of that doctrine was a 'lame and inconsistent compromise' between Averroes's original position and the position of Christian Averroists.²⁴ Later scholars went back and forth between the interpretations proposed by Hübsch and Guttmann. Some, like Hübsch, argued that Delmedigo was an orthodox Averroist, without, however, offering a satisfactory explanation of the passages in Delmedigo's works that Guttmann had presented as evidence for

¹⁹ See Averroes, *Faṣl al-maqāl*, pp. 29–32. According to *Kashf* (Ar., pp. 132–133; Eng., pp. 16–17), one of the main accomplishments of the *Faṣl al-maqāl* is to have shown that allegorical interpretation is strictly reserved to philosophers.

²⁰ Averroes, *Faṣl al-maqāl*, p. 21.

²¹ Adolph Hübsch, 'Elia Delmedigos Bechinat ha-Dath und Ibn Roshd's Facl al-maqal', *Monatsschrift für Geschichte und Wissenschaft des Judentums*, 31 (1882), pp. 552–563; 32 (1883), pp. 28–48.

²² Julius Guttmann, 'Elias del Medigos Verhältnis zu Averroes in seinem Bechinat ha-Dat', in *Jewish Studies in Memory of Israel Abrahams*, ed. Alexander Kohut (New York: Press of the Jewish Institute of Religion, 1927), pp. 192–208.

²³ *Ibid.*, pp. 197–198.

²⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 199–200.

200 Delmedigo's disagreement with Averroes.²⁵ Others followed Guttman in arguing
 201 that Delmedigo had adopted the 'double truth' doctrine of Christian Averroists, but
 202 were unable to explain how Delmedigo's version is related to the version of the
 203 doctrine contained in his alleged sources.²⁶ One problem of the scholarly discussion
 204 is its exclusive focus on Delmedigo's Averroism. I will argue, by contrast, that a
 205 crucial piece of the puzzle concerning his stance on the relationship between phi-
 206 losophy and religion is to be found in Maimonides. This is hardly surprising.
 207 Throughout *Behinat ha-dat* Delmedigo refers to Maimonides (the only author he
 208 mentions by name) with great respect: as 'the excellent man' (*ha-'ish ha-me'uleh*)
 209 or the man 'of great excellence and value' (*gadol ha-ma'alah ve-ha-'erekh*).²⁷
 210 Although, as we will see, he disagrees with Maimonides on one important point, he
 211 clearly sees himself as partaking in the Maimonidean project.

212 I will not discuss the question of whether the 'double truth' doctrine has, in fact,
 213 ever been held by a philosopher or whether it is just a scholarly construct. What
 214 Guttman meant by 'double truth' is the existence of contradictions between propo-
 215 sitions established in philosophy and propositions established in theology. In such a
 216 case theology overrules philosophy, i.e., the philosophical proposition is taken to be
 217 false and the theological proposition to be true. Whether Christian Averroists made
 218 such assertions in good faith or on the basis of political considerations remains sub-
 219 ject to scholarly dispute. For my purpose, the crucial question is whether Delmedigo
 220 held this view, i.e., allowed for genuine contradictions between propositions of the
 221 Law of Moses and propositions demonstrated in philosophy. Let me begin by exam-
 222 ining a passage in which Delmedigo explains the purpose of the Law of Moses:

223 And we say that adherents of religion who are correct in their views do not doubt that the
 224 purpose of the Law of Moses is to guide us in human affairs and in good deeds, as well as
 225 in true opinions insofar as this is possible for the entire people, and according to the nature
 226 of the select few (*ha-yehidim*) with respect to what is their exclusive domain. Hence the
 227 Law of Moses and the prophets set down certain fundamental principles by way of tradition
 228 and by way of rhetorical and dialectical explanations in accordance with the method of
 229 assent (*mishpat ha-'immur*) that is characteristic of the multitude, and it [the Law of Moses]
 230 stirred the select few to investigate according to the method of assent characteristic of them
 231 concerning these issues [i.e., the demonstrative method] ... And the following becomes
 232 clear ...: that the Law of Moses aims at the perfection of every adherent of religion insofar
 233 as possible to him. And since demonstrative science is impossible for the multitude as a
 234 whole, while it is possible for the select few – for this reason the Law of Moses requires
 235 both these things [i.e., assent on the basis of rhetorical and dialectical arguments and assent
 236 on the basis of demonstrative arguments].²⁸

237 Delmedigo stresses from the outset that methods vary significantly from one dis-
 238 cipline to another. The same Biblical text, for example, will be studied in different
 239 ways by a Talmudist, whose goal is to arrive at a legal decision, by a grammarian,

²⁵ See Ivry, 'Remnants' and in particular Aryeh L. Motzkin, 'Elija del Medigo, Averroes and Averroism', *Italia*, 6 (1987), pp. 7–20.

²⁶ See Geffen, *Life and Thought of Elijah Del Medigo*, and Ross, 'Introduction'.

²⁷ Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, pp. 84, 86, 92, 96.

²⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 76; cf. p. 98 on the goal of the Law of Moses.

whose goal is to provide evidence for a grammatical rule, and by an exegete, whose goal is to clarify the text's meaning.²⁹ The inference Delmedigo wants the reader to draw is clear: a prophet, whose goal is *political* – maximizing the perfection of the religious community –, will speak differently about things like God, angels, and providence than a philosopher whose goal is *scientific* – establishing what is true and what is false.³⁰ While the prophet's methods are dialectical, rhetorical and poetical, the philosopher uses scientific demonstrations. These goal-dependent differences in method can, but need not, lead to contradictions.³¹ There is, for instance, no contradiction between prophetic and philosophical statements concerning God's existence and unity.³² For the prophet, however, the scope of true opinions which he can communicate and the quality of the proofs on which he can ground them are constrained by his overall goal: to promote practical and theoretical perfection in a community made up of philosophers and non-philosophers. If the goal-dependent differences in method give rise to contradictions, Delmedigo argues, one way of resolving them is through allegorical exegesis. There are cases in which 'a thing has an interpretation reserved to the select few.'³³ One such case are angels: for philosophers they are entities 'assumed to be separate from any body and corporeal attribute.' In other words: they are the incorporeal intelligences of the supralunary world as conceived by medieval Aristotelians. In the Bible, by contrast, angels are described as entities 'apprehended through sense-perception as we apprehend bodies.'³⁴ This, of course, is a concession to non-philosophers, who are not familiar with the physical and metaphysical proofs for the existence and the attributes of incorporeal intelligences. If the prophet concludes that in order to attain his overall goal it is necessary to convey a notion of angels to non-philosophers, he must present them within a conceptual framework that his audience can understand. Like Averroes, Delmedigo harshly criticises the disclosing of such allegorical interpretations in public:

Many of those who philosophise among the people of our nation have in my opinion strayed from the method of the Torah and its intention. And this is because they sought to change all the literal meanings of the verses (*peshate ha-pesuqim*) which are [found] in most of the branches and stories of the Torah, as if they wished to make the words of the Torah more beautiful and to ground them on the meanings [inferred by] scientific syllogism (*ha-heqqesh ha-sikhly*). And they did not succeed in either this or that ... and I think that this should not be done at all ... My method, therefore, is very different from the method of many who

²⁹ Ibid., p. 75.

³⁰ On the difference between the Mosaic Law and philosophy with respect to method, see in particular pp. 92–94.

³¹ Strictly speaking, these are different methods belonging to the same discipline, i.e., logic. On the inclusion of *Rhetoric* and *Poetics* into Aristotle's *Organon* and its philosophical implications, see Deborah Black, *Logic and Aristotle's Rhetoric and Poetics in Medieval Arabic Philosophy* (Leiden: Brill, 1990). Delmedigo briefly refers to the different methods of 'logic' (*ha-limmud ha-kolel*) at p. 75.

³² See Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, pp. 76–78.

³³ Ibid., p. 77.

³⁴ Ibid., p. 93.

273 philosophise in our nation. They changed the goal both of the Torah and of philosophy and
 274 mixed the two [kinds] of investigation – the theological and the speculative (*ha-torani ve-*
 275 *ha-'iyyuni*) – together, as well as the universal and the particular method (*ha-derekh ha-*
 276 *kolel ve-ha-miyyuhad*). And they are like intermediaries between the theologians
 277 (*ha-medabberim*) among the religious people and the philosophers.³⁵

278 Delmedigo explicitly mentions Maimonides as someone who ‘walked on the
 279 way’ he has criticised, although he takes care to stress what he surmises were
 280 Maimonides’s noble motives.³⁶ As we saw above, Delmedigo attaches great impor-
 281 tance to what in his view are the distinct goals of prophecy and philosophy and the
 282 distinct methods used to attain them. While the method of the philosopher is ‘uni-
 283 versal’ – establishing what is true and false on the basis of scientific demonstrations
 284 which are valid always and everywhere – the method of the prophet is ‘particular’ –
 285 promoting practical and theoretical perfection in a religious community shaped by
 286 a particular set of geographic and cultural conditions. If the prophet judges that
 287 circumstances require presenting angels to non-philosophers in corporeal terms, his
 288 purpose would be undermined by a philosopher who publicly disclosed that the
 289 prophet’s account, correctly understood, refers to incorporeal intelligences. The
 290 philosopher would be disregarding the political considerations that led to the alle-
 291 gorical representation in the first place.³⁷ As Averroes does with the analogy between
 292 the lawgiver and the doctor, Delmedigo stresses the danger inherent in disclosing
 293 the allegorical content of the Law of Moses to non-philosophers:

294 When we tell these deep things (*'eleh ha-'amuqot*) as they truly are to the multitude, we do
 295 not benefit them, for they do not understand them, but we cause them great damage.³⁸

296 It would, therefore, be a mistake to publicly interpret Biblical verses that conflict
 297 with demonstrated philosophical doctrines. This does not, however, mean that
 298 contradictions cannot *in principle* be resolved through allegorical interpretation.
 299 At no point does Delmedigo question the truth of the Mosaic Law.

³⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 93–94.

³⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 84. Indeed, Delmedigo’s reverence for Maimonides is such that he makes an exception with respect to the public interpretation of God’s anthropomorphic attributes. Whereas Averroes strictly opposed disclosing God’s incorporeality in public, Delmedigo recognises it as a fundamental principle of the Law of Moses, newly introduced by Maimonides (see p. 86). He even goes so far as to turn the precedent into a general rule: Doctrines previously concealed may be disclosed if the opinions commonly held by non-philosophers permit it (see p. 93). On the concept of gradually disclosing the Mosaic Law’s allegorical content in the Maimonidean tradition, see Fraenkel, ‘Legislating Truth’. But Delmedigo is clearly uncomfortable with this aspect of Maimonides’s project. It runs against the general thrust of his argument, which is even more insistent than Averroes’s on the need to keep philosophy and religion apart.

³⁷ According to Delmedigo, the disclosure of the allegorical interpretation of angels led to conflict and strife between philosophers and kabbalists in the Jewish community (see *Behinat ha-dat*, pp. 93–94). His account of the conflict is clearly modelled on Averroes’s description of the emergence of factions in Islam as a consequence of the disclosure of allegorical interpretations; see *Faṣl al-maqāl*, pp. 29–32.

³⁸ Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, p. 96. Note that this passage comes in the context of Delmedigo’s discussion of rabbinic *aggadot*.

Until now I have portrayed Delmedigo as an orthodox Averroist. His position is, however, more complicated. As we shall see, a closer examination will also solve the riddle of the passages which seem to support the thesis that he adopted a 'double truth' doctrine.

Following a tradition going back to Maimonides, Delmedigo provides a list of 'fundamental principles' (*shorashim*) of the Law of Moses.³⁹ The criterion to identify these principles in the Bible and in rabbinic literature is their 'necessity (*hekhrah*) for this divine religion.'⁴⁰ The fundamental principles can be subdivided into three classes according to their relation to philosophical doctrines. Firstly, there are principles like God's existence and God's unity, which coincide with doctrines demonstrated in philosophy. They are thus the same for philosophers and non-philosophers, only that the former, in addition to believing in them on account of the authority of the Law of Moses, also assent to them on account of scientific demonstrations. Secondly, there are principles which 'appear' (*yira'u*) to contradict philosophical doctrines. Both philosophers and non-philosophers assent to these principles, but the philosophers interpret them according to 'an interpretation reserved to the select few' and thus resolve the apparent contradiction.⁴¹ Delmedigo gives no example of this second class of principles, but it is plausible to assume that they must be treated in the same way as the angels discussed above, whose existence is affirmed by philosophers and non-philosophers, but who are understood to be incorporeal by the former and corporeal by the latter. The third class of principles is the one which gave rise to the suggestion made by Guttman and others that Delmedigo endorsed some version of the 'double truth' doctrine. Here is the relevant passage:

We should not seek to verify things with respect to which a clear conflict (*mahloqet mev'u'eret*) exists between the Torah and philosophy – if there is such a thing – by means of a syllogistic investigation, but we ought to rely on the words of the Law and the opinion concerning the Law's meaning which is generally admitted among the adherents of religion. The reason for this is that a syllogistic dispute (*mahloqet heqeshi*) gives rise, as it were, to doubt at the beginning of the investigation. But we, the adherents of the Torah, should at no time entertain any doubt whatsoever with respect to fundamental principles. Hence we should not engage in a syllogistic dispute with respect to the principles in question.⁴²

The first thing to note is that the qualification ('if there is such a thing') shows that Delmedigo at least thought it possible that no 'clear conflict' exists between the Law of Moses and philosophy. In this case all conflicts would fall into the class of apparent conflicts which can be resolved through allegorical exegesis. If there is a clear conflict, however, the position of the Law of Moses must be accepted according to the meaning 'generally admitted among the adherents of religion,' i.e., not according

³⁹ See Menachem Kellner, *Dogma in Medieval Jewish Thought* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1986). Delmedigo is briefly discussed in chapter 9.

⁴⁰ See Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, p. 85.

⁴¹ *Ibid.*, p. 77.

⁴² *Ibid.*, p. 77 (my emphasis).

338 to 'an interpretation reserved to the select few' as in the case of apparent conflicts.
339 This acceptance should, moreover, rely on the authority of tradition alone, not on a
340 'syllogistic investigation' which tries to scientifically prove the position of the Law
341 of Moses. The reason given is that a syllogistic dispute between the two positions
342 gives rise to doubts about the validity of the principle in question, since its validity
343 is considered to be in need of defence and hence is no longer taken for granted.
344 But such doubts should at no time be entertained by 'the adherents of the Torah'.
345 In a later passage Delmedigo adduces additional reasons for refraining from syllo-
346 gistic disputes in case of clear conflicts:

347 If we want to clarify [these contradictions] by means of the syllogistic method, and dispute
348 with our opponent on the basis of this method, this will lead to many damages: firstly, we
349 will strive to clarify by means of the syllogistic investigation, I mean the demonstrative and
350 intellectual investigation, something which can only be verified by the method of the Torah.
351 Secondly, when we are unable to clarify these things by means of a syllogistic investigation,
352 this will lead us to deny the Torah or to reveal meanings of it that do not conform to religion,
353 or we will reject the syllogistic methods altogether and thus destroy our intellect and its
354 activities.⁴³

355 The first point suggests that principles on which a clear conflict between the Law
356 of Moses and philosophy exists can *in principle* not be settled by means of the
357 syllogistic method. There is no conclusive proof for either of the conflicting posi-
358 tions. In the same context Delmedigo says that the disputed issues are exposed to
359 'doubt', that 'also the wise disagree on them,' and that the position advocated by the
360 philosophers is never 'irrefutable'.⁴⁴ He stresses, moreover, that his admission that
361 clear conflicts between the Law of Moses and philosophy are possible cannot be
362 used for Christian apologetics: to justify doctrines like the trinity or the incarnation,
363 which require accepting propositions that either entail a logical contradiction or
364 contradict sense-data. Even if these doctrines were true, Delmedigo argues, God
365 could not punish us for rejecting them. Since God endowed us with reason, it is
366 impossible for us to believe in such doctrines, and we cannot be punished for not
367 doing what is impossible for us to do.⁴⁵ But if God cannot demand that we accept
368 evidently false doctrines, he also cannot demand that we reject evidently true ones.
369 Hence a philosophical proposition cannot be evidently true if it is at odds with a
370 fundamental principle of the Law of Moses.

371 Attributing a doctrine of 'double truth' to Delmedigo, then, misrepresents his
372 position. The case he considers is a conflict between two improvable propositions.
373 The philosopher, whose goal is to establish the truth, follows the methods of science
374 and endorses the position that is *most likely* in light of the available evidence, which
375 in this case contradicts a fundamental principle of the Law of Moses. Delmedigo's
376 claim, however, that only the method of the Law of Moses can resolve the conflict
377 in question does not imply that its adherents must accept a less likely position on the

⁴³ Ibid., p. 78.

⁴⁴ Ibid.

⁴⁵ Ibid., pp. 81–82.

authority of super-rational revelation. The most plausible model for Delmedigo's notion of 'clear conflict' is Maimonides's account of the conflict between the Law of Moses and Arabic Aristotelians on the question whether the world is created or eternal. For Maimonides this conflict cannot be resolved conclusively on scientific grounds. Although he considers it possible to interpret the Law of Moses allegorically in light of the position of the philosophers, this would lead, he argues, to the subversion of the Law's fundamental purpose.⁴⁶ The conflict is thus set up in a way that corresponds precisely to Delmedigo's 'clear conflict'. In contrast to Delmedigo, however, Maimonides attempts to resolve the conflict by means of the syllogistic method. He argues that according to Aristotle too, neither position can be conclusively proven, but that Aristotle considered the eternity thesis more likely on account of the insufficient scientific data available in his time. Later Aristotelians went beyond Aristotle by taking the evidence he presented to be conclusive proof for the eternity thesis. Maimonides's re-examination of the problem leads him to conclude that the creation thesis is not only possible, but, in fact, more likely in light of new scientific discoveries which have been made since Aristotle's time. The position of the Law of Moses is, therefore, not only intelligible in light of political considerations; it also has greater plausibility from a scientific point of view.⁴⁷ Delmedigo would certainly agree with Maimonides that in the case of clear conflicts the position of the Law of Moses is more likely than the position advocated by the philosophers. Why, then, does he oppose settling such conflicts in the way proposed by Maimonides? Delmedigo's reply, I think, would be as follows: On Maimonides's account, a Jewish scientist in Aristotle's time, even if he had carefully examined all available scientific data, would have agreed with Aristotle that the eternity thesis is more plausible than the creation thesis. For this is how Maimonides construes the case: Instead of blaming Aristotle for wrongly assessing the evidence relating to the disputed question, he holds the historical state of knowledge responsible for it. Given the evidence available in Aristotle's time, his choice of the eternity thesis over the creation thesis was scientifically sound. For a Jewish scientist in Aristotle's place this would have had disastrous consequences: He would have been forced to choose one of the three options that for Delmedigo follow from the failure to solve the conflict by means of a syllogistic investigation: rejecting the position of the Law of Moses, reinterpreting it in light of the thesis advocated by the philosophers, or rejecting the syllogistic methods altogether as incompatible with his religious commitments. Since in the case of clear conflicts there is no conclusive proof for either position, the only way to resolve the conflict *scientifically* is to determine each position's degree of probability. But if Maimonides is right that probability assessments can change in light of scientific progress, they cannot be relied on for securing the fundamental principles of religion. At times the available evidence may support the

⁴⁶ See Maimonides, *Guide of the Perplexed* (II, 25), II, p. 328.

⁴⁷ See *Ibid.*, *Guide of the Perplexed* (II, 13–25), II, pp. 281–330. For the concept of scientific progress, see in particular *ibid.* (II, 19), II, pp. 302–312 and (II, 24), II, pp. 322–327. For considerations of probability, see *ibid.* (II, 23), pp. 321–322.

417 position of the Law of Moses; at times it may support the position of the philosophers.
 418 Attempting to settle the dispute through a syllogistic investigation thus risks causing
 419 fatal damage to either the religious or the philosophical project. On this picture,
 420 Delmedigo's recommendation to keep the two projects apart has nothing to do with
 421 a 'double truth' doctrine. It simply means that a Jewish scientist, like every scientist,
 422 should resolve scientific disputes involving propositions that cannot be conclusively
 423 proven in light of the best evidence available in his time. If this leads him to a position
 424 at odds with the Law of Moses, he can rest assured that he is mistaken, while knowing
 425 that his inference is scientifically sound. He will leave it to scientific progress in the
 426 future to provide the evidence that will tip the scale in favour of the Law of Moses.
 427 This is how I understand Delmedigo's explanation of how he himself proceeded:

428 Therefore I did not choose in my treatises devoted to scientific investigation (*ha-limmud*
 429 *ha-sikhly*) to dispute with the philosophers on issues on which they disagree with us by
 430 means of the philosophical method; for scientific investigation cannot [resolve such disputes].
 431 Instead I relied on prophecy and the true tradition. And I think that earlier members of our
 432 religious community who wished to clarify these things through scientific investigation
 433 changed the methods of investigation which are unique for each object of study. They
 434 became like intermediaries between those who adhere to the Mosaic Law and those who do
 435 not and thus are neither adherents of the Mosaic Law nor philosophers.⁴⁸

436 Elsewhere, Delmedigo explicitly admits to having adopted philosophical posi-
 437 tions that are in conflict with the Law:

438 If something will be said that is contrary to the Law (*contrarium legi*), this is not surprising,
 439 for I want to speak of the ideas of the philosophers according to their principles. But it is
 440 known that the method of the Law (*via legis*) in which greater trust must be placed (*cui*
 441 *magis creditur*), differs from the philosophical method (*via philosophica*).⁴⁹

442 Clear conflicts between fundamental principles and scientific propositions indi-
 443 cate a problem that cannot be resolved given the state of scientific knowledge at the
 444 time, although it may well be resolved in the future. Trying to solve this problem is
 445 futile, for the project of science unfolds according to its own logic and methods and
 446 cannot be driven by considerations external to it. On the assumption that the Law of
 447 Moses is true, however, the Jewish scientist will always remain convinced that once
 448 all evidence becomes available, the position of the Law of Moses will be vindicated.
 449 Philosophical and religious commitments thus can be at variance *temporarily* on
 450 account of the contingent state of scientific knowledge. *Absolutely* speaking, how-
 451 ever, Delmedigo agrees with Averroes that 'the truth does not contradict the truth.'
 452 It should now also be clear why, according to Delmedigo, a fundamental principle
 453 that is in conflict with a philosophical proposition 'can only be verified by the

⁴⁸ Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, p. 83.

⁴⁹ Elijah Delmedigo, *Annotationes, De primo motore quaestio, De efficientia mundi*, in John of Jandun, *Quaestiones in libros Physicorum Aristotelis* (Venice: Hieronymus de Sanctis, and Johannes Lucilius Santritter, for Petrus Bazon and Petrus Plasiis, 1488), 122^a–134^b (133^a). See Josep Puig Montada, 'On the Chronology of Elia del Medigo's Physical Writings', in *Jewish Studies at the Turn of the Twentieth Century*, eds Judit Targarona Borrás and Angel Sáenz-Badillos, 2 vols (Leiden: Brill, 1999), II, pp. 54–56.

method of the Torah.' For, if it cannot be established on scientific grounds, it must be inferred as a necessary condition of the Law of Moses, which in turn can be explained in terms of the goal aimed at by the prophetic lawgiver. Within this political framework the principle thus becomes explicable. There is, then, no need to attribute to Delmedigo any form of 'double truth' doctrine which allows for genuine contradictions between philosophy and religion and which takes reason to be overruled by the authority of a super-rational revelation.

Let me adduce additional evidence that Delmedigo had Maimonides in mind when he introduced the notion of 'clear conflicts' between the Law of Moses and philosophy. The three examples given for possible conflicts of this kind are 'the existence of prophecy, the existence of reward and punishment ... and the possibility of miracles with respect to God's essence.'⁵⁰ Hübsch suggested that on this point Delmedigo was following Averroes, who mentions 'God's existence ... prophets, and happiness and misery in the hereafter' as examples of the 'principles of the Law' (*mabādi' al-sharī'a*).⁵¹ The two sets of examples, however, not only fail to match, since Delmedigo includes miracles and excludes God's existence. But Averroes's examples are meant to illustrate the *exact opposite* of Delmedigo's, viz. that principles such as these are supported unanimously by religious and philosophical modes of demonstration. They would thus fall into Delmedigo's first category of fundamental principles (which, in fact, includes the principle of God's existence). Guttman, in turn, suggested that Delmedigo deliberately departed from Averroes on this point on account of the 'double truth' doctrine.⁵² In my view, Delmedigo was not primarily thinking of Averroes at all. For all three examples occur in the *Guide of the Perplexed* (II, 25), the dramatic culmination of Maimonides's account of the conflict between the Law of Moses and the philosophers on the issue of the created nature of the world. Asserting the world's eternity, Maimonides argues

destroys the Law in its principle (*hādd al-sharī'a bi-aṣliḥā*), necessarily gives the lie to every miracle, and reduces to inanity all the hopes and threats that the Law has held out, unless, by God, one interprets the miracles figuratively also ... This, however, would result in some sort of crazy imaginings.⁵³

Asserting creation, on the other hand, makes it possible to respond to questions such as this: 'Why did God give prophetic revelation to this one and not to that?'⁵⁴ Delmedigo clearly follows Maimonides closely, not only with respect to the examples he uses to illustrate possible conflicts between the Law of Moses and philosophy, but also in ruling out that such conflicts can be resolved through allegorical interpretation.

⁵⁰ Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, p. 77.

⁵¹ See Hübsch, 'Elia Delmedigos Bechinat ha-Dath und Ibn Roshd's Facl al-maqal', pp. 30–34, referring to *Faṣl al-maqāl*, p. 18.

⁵² Guttman, 'Elias del Medigos Verhältnis zu Averroes', pp. 206–207.

⁵³ Maimonides, *Guide of the Perplexed* (II, 25), II, p. 328; *Dalālat al-ḥā'irīn*, p. 229.

⁵⁴ Maimonides, *Guide of the Perplexed* (II, 25), II, p. 329; *Dalālat al-ḥā'irīn*, p. 230.

490 One could ask, of course, why Delmedigo uses Maimonides's discussion of the
 491 world's creation as a model for his account of 'clear conflicts', but does not mention
 492 the very issue of creation as one of his examples. One obvious reason is that
 493 Delmedigo simply does not include the world's creation in his list of fundamental
 494 principles.⁵⁵ Moreover, several of Delmedigo's philosophical treatises – *De primo*
 495 *motore*, *De efficientia mundi* and the *Annotationes* to Averroes's commentary on
 496 Aristotle's *Physica*– suggest that he thought it possible to reconcile the world's
 497 creation and eternity though the concept of *creatio aeterna*.⁵⁶ If the world's creation
 498 were a fundamental principle, therefore, it would likely be in the second category,
 499 i.e., the category of principles which are understood differently by philosophers and
 500 non-philosophers.

501 This brings me to a further question: Did Delmedigo consider any of the funda-
 502 mental principles of the Law of Moses to be truly at odds with philosophy? As I
 503 pointed out above, at very least Delmedigo thought it possible that the Law of Moses
 504 and philosophy were in complete agreement, for he introduces the concept of 'clear
 505 conflicts' with the qualification 'if there is such a thing.' With respect to miracles,
 506 he explicitly says in a later passage that their acceptance can be based on both a
 507 literal and an allegorical understanding. This implies that 'miracles' fall into the
 508 second category of fundamental principles. To complicate things further: miracles
 509 do not actually figure among the fundamental principles on Delmedigo's list. As for
 510 prophecy and reward and punishment, Delmedigo must have been aware of the
 511 standard philosophical interpretations of these concepts in the medieval Muslim and
 512 Jewish rationalist tradition. These principles, too, would, therefore likely be placed
 513 in the second category. This ambiguity about the question of whether any funda-
 514 mental principles of the Law of Moses are truly in conflict with the Averroism
 515 Delmedigo endorsed as a philosopher, reflects the great caution with which he
 516 thought the issue should be treated. The political purpose of the Law of Moses must
 517 never be undermined through allegorical interpretation. 'We are perplexed,'
 518 Delmedigo writes,

519 about the difficulty to decide ... which of these issues should be interpreted allegorically
 520 and which should not ... And we say that the man who truly knows the fundamental prin-
 521 ciples of the Torah and its purpose, knows which of the issues contained in the Torah are fit
 522 to be interpreted and which are not ... And those who stand out in the religious community
 523 (*he-hashuvim me-anshey ha-dat*) ought to reflect deeply about these issues and be on their
 524 guard when it comes to their own reasoning (*ve-lahshod sikhlam*).⁵⁷

525 This is followed by the passage, quoted above, in which Delmedigo stresses the
 526 difference between his own method and 'the method of many who philosophise in our
 527 nation.' Whereas the latter 'mixed the two [kinds] of investigation – the theological

⁵⁵ See Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, pp. 85–87. The question of why he does not consider creation a fundamental principle is, of course, interesting, but cannot be discussed here.

⁵⁶ For a discussion of these treatises, see Josep Puig Montada, 'Elia del Medigo and his Physical *Quaestiones*', in *Was ist Philosophie im Mittelalter?*, eds Jan Aertsen and Andreas Speer (Berlin: De Gruyter, 1998), pp. 929–936.

⁵⁷ *Behinat ha-dat*, p. 93.

and the speculative,' Delmedigo emphasises the importance of keeping them apart. 528
 The great caution that Delmedigo urges for when it comes to dealing with possible 529
 conflicts between philosophy and the Law of Moses also helps to explain an addi- 530
 tional point on which he departs from the orthodox Averroist position. In *Faṣl al-maqāl*, 531
 Averroes not only assumes that every contradiction between the divine Law and phi- 532
 losophy can *in principle* be resolved through allegorical interpretation; he also rules 533
 that the philosopher is *obliged* to resolve contradictions in this manner.⁵⁸ One may ask 534
 what benefit is derived from engaging in such an exegetical exercise, given Averroes's 535
 strict prohibition on disclosing allegorical interpretations. Why is it not sufficient if 536
 the philosopher is in principle committed to the agreement between the divine Law 537
 and philosophy? While Delmedigo *allows* for resolving contradictions through the 538
 use of allegories as long as they are not of the 'clear conflicts' type, he is clearly not 539
 enthusiastic about doing so. Upon reflection such interpretations seem useless, quite 540
 apart from the danger they pose if disclosed in public under inappropriate circum- 541
 stances. The best way to study the propositions of the Law of Moses is in light of the 542
 Law's own peculiar method and purpose. The aim, then, would be to understand how 543
 these propositions are necessary for or contribute to maximizing the perfection of the 544
 religious community. Instead of working out, for example, how the anthropomorphic 545
 representation of angels allegorically refers to incorporeal intelligences, the question 546
 would be which political considerations motivated Moses to represent angels anthro- 547
 pomorphically in the first place. Seeking the allegorical content of the Law of Moses 548
 would mean studying it with the goal of establishing the truth. But this is the goal of 549
 philosophy. It would be just as pointless as making dialectical, rhetorical, or poetical 550
 arguments in a philosophical treatise in order to communicate its content to non- 551
 philosophers. This is not the goal of philosophy, but of prophecy. Concerning mira- 552
 cles, for example, Delmedigo explicitly questions the purpose of changing the literal 553
 meaning of the Law of Moses, since, as we saw above, both philosophers and non- 554
 philosophers accept them, even though they understand them in different ways.⁵⁹ It is 555
 thus not surprising that he implicitly casts doubt on the philosopher's obligation to 556
 provide allegorical explanations. Also outside the domain of 'clear conflicts', the 557
 philosopher should only 'perhaps' (*'ulay*) interpret passages in the Law of Moses 558
 which, taken literally, contradict doctrines demonstrated in philosophy.⁶⁰ Delmedigo 559
 thus puts even more stress than Averroes on the methodological autonomy of philo- 560
 sophical and prophetic discourse. He remains committed to the core assumption of the 561
 medieval Islamic and Jewish rationalist tradition concerning the fundamental unity of 562
 the truth. For this assumption grounds the authority of the Law of Moses for a philoso- 563
 pher who does not recognise a super-rational source of validation. But he sees no point 564
 in working out this unity in practice by trying to prove religious principles scientifically 565
 or by interpreting the Bible allegorically, whether in public or in private. Given the 566
 distinct methods and goals of philosophy and prophecy, no benefit would derive from 567

⁵⁸ See Averroes, *Faṣl al-maqāl*, pp. 9–10 and 19–20.

⁵⁹ See Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, p. 93.

⁶⁰ *Ibid.*

568 such an undertaking. On the contrary, it could easily cause harm given the uncertainty
 569 of what may and may not be interpreted allegorically without damaging the purpose
 570 of the Law of Moses.

571 **The Portrait of Spinoza as an Averroist**

572 Let me start by outlining the broader question that motivates my interest in Spinoza's
 573 relationship to the Averroistic tradition.⁶¹ In his critique of religion in the *Tractatus*
 574 *theologico-politicus*, Spinoza develops an exegetical method by which he intends to
 575 show that scripture contains no truth and, therefore, cannot interfere with philoso-
 576 phy.⁶² Whereas philosophy determines what is true and false, religion based on
 577 scripture secures obedience to the law.⁶³ On the other hand, there are a significant
 578 number of passages throughout Spinoza's work – from the *Cogitata metaphysica* to
 579 the *Ethics* and the late correspondence with Henry Oldenburg – in which he attri-
 580 butes a true core to scripture, often presented as its allegorical content. My main
 581 thesis is that this inconsistency is best explained by assuming that Spinoza is com-
 582 mitted to two projects that he was ultimately unable to reconcile: he wants to use
 583 religion as a replacement for philosophy, one that provides the basis for the best life
 584 accessible to non-philosophers, and he wants to refute religion's claim to truth in
 585 order to defend what he calls 'the freedom to philosophise'.

586 The concept of religion as a replacement for philosophy is precisely the concept
 587 adopted by medieval Muslim and Jewish philosophers. Spinoza, who knew this
 588 concept well through his study of medieval Jewish philosophy, calls it 'dogmatic',
 589 describing and rejecting it in the *Tractatus theologico-politicus*.⁶⁴ The example he
 590 uses to illustrate this dogmatic interpretation of religion is Maimonides. His main
 591 criticism is that the dogmatist, instead of strictly separating philosophy from theology,
 592 turns theology into the 'handmaid of philosophy' (*ancilla philosophiae*).⁶⁵

593 I have shown in detail elsewhere that, before Spinoza started working on the
 594 *Tractatus theologico-politicus* in 1665, he consistently endorsed the dogmatic position

⁶¹ For a comprehensive account of my thesis concerning Spinoza's conception of the relationship between philosophy and religion, see Carlos Fraenkel, 'Could Spinoza Have Presented the Ethics as the True Content of the Bible?', in *Oxford Studies in Early Modern Philosophy*, IV, eds Daniel Garber and Steven Nadler (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2008), pp. 1–50.

⁶² See in particular Benedictus de Spinoza, *Tractatus theologico-politicus*, ed. Fokke Akkerman, with French trans. Jacqueline Lagrée and Pierre-François Moreau, in *Oeuvres complètes*, under the direction of P.-F. Moreau (Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1999-), III, chapter 7. I quote the *Tractatus* from this edition. I add references to Carl Gebhardt's edition, *Opera*, 4 vols (Heidelberg: Carl Winters Universitätsbuchhandlung, 1925), according to which I also quote all other writings of Spinoza.

⁶³ See in particular *Tractatus theologico-politicus*, in *Oeuvres*, III, chapters 12–15.

⁶⁴ See Chaps. 7 and 15.

⁶⁵ Cf. the title of ch. 15: 'Nec theologiam rationi, nec rationem theologiae ancillari, ostenditur, et ratio, qua nobis S. Scripturae auctoritatem persuademus'.

whenever he discussed the character of scripture.⁶⁶ A passage from *Cogitata metaphysica* (II, 8), in which Spinoza discusses God's will, must suffice here to illustrate this early dogmatism. The problem at stake is this: How are we to understand passages in scripture according to which 'God hates some things and loves other things', since, taken literally, they imply that God's will is affected by and reacts to things he created and hence is mutable? This appears to contradict the view of the philosopher, according to whom God's will is immutable:

But when we say that God hates certain things and loves certain things, this is said in the same way as scripture says that the earth will spit out human beings and other things of this kind. That God, however, is not angry at anyone, nor loves things as the multitude (*vulgus*) believes, can be sufficiently derived from scripture itself. For this is in Isaiah and more clearly in Paul's Epistle to the Romans, chapter 9... Finally, if in the holy scriptures some other things occur, which induce doubt, this is not the place to explain them; since here we only inquire into the things which we can grasp in the most certain way through natural reason (*ratione naturali*); and it is sufficient that we demonstrate these clearly in order to know that scripture must also teach the same things (*ut sciamus Sacram paginam eadem etiam docere debere*); because the truth does not contradict the truth (*veritas veritati non repugnat*) and scripture cannot teach the absurdities (*nugae*) which the multitude imagines ... Let us not think for a moment that anything could be found in sacred scripture that would contradict the natural light (*quod lumini naturae repugnet*).⁶⁷

The conflict between the philosophical doctrine of God's will and scripture is resolved in the way most medieval Muslim and Jewish rationalists would resolve it: the statements about God's love and hate in scripture must be understood allegorically. Only non-philosophers understand them literally. Moreover, the correct understanding of God's love and hate can be found in scripture itself, in both the prophets of the Hebrew Bible (Isaiah) and in the New Testament (Paul). The criterion to determine which passages of scripture are to be understood literally and which allegorically is clearly their agreement or disagreement with the corresponding philosophical doctrine. Contradictions between philosophy and scripture derive from the fact that scripture does not teach things *more philosophico*, i.e., in the way we grasp them when we follow 'natural reason'. But since the truth arrived at by reason is the same as the truth contained in scripture, we can rest assured that nothing that is clearly demonstrated by reason contradicts what scripture teaches. The character of the teachings of scripture is adapted to the imagination of non-philosophers. Understood literally, they are false, but the philosopher-exegete should in principle be able to make the philosophical content visible within the non-philosophical form.

From other passages in Spinoza's early work we learn in which way the literal sense is useful to non-philosophers. In the first letter to Willem van Blyenbergh, written in January 1665, Spinoza argues, for example, using a Maimonidean formula, that the prophet must speak 'in the language of human beings' (*more humano*) in order to instruct non-philosophers. By speaking of God *more humano* and translating causal connections

⁶⁶ See Fraenkel, 'Could Spinoza?'

⁶⁷ Spinoza, *Cogitata metaphysica*, in *Opera*, I, pp. 264–265.

637 into laws associated with rewards and punishments, scripture is able to replace for the
 638 non-philosopher philosophical insight as a guide to virtuous action.⁶⁸ This I take to be
 639 Spinoza's main motivation for adopting the dogmatic position: It allows preserving the
 640 authority of scripture as the basis for traditional religion which provides a pedagogical-
 641 political programme for non-philosophers – Spinoza's *ancilla philosophiae*.

642 Up to about 1665, Spinoza's position on the relationship between philosophy and
 643 scripture shares the main features of the position he rejects as 'dogmatism' in the
 644 *Tractatus theologico-politicus*. The issue becomes more complicated after 1665,
 645 when he begins to work out his critique of religion, published in 1670 as part of the
 646 *Tractatus*.⁶⁹ But despite the critique of religion carried out in the *Tractatus*, different
 647 versions of the dogmatic position reappear throughout Spinoza's later writings,
 648 reflecting the position characteristic of medieval Muslim and Jewish philosophers.⁷⁰
 649 What all the passages in question have in common is this: none of them can be
 650 justified through the exegetical method that Spinoza promises to adopt in the
 651 *Tractatus theologico-politicus*, namely 'to neither affirm anything of [scripture] nor
 652 to admit anything as its doctrine which I did not most clearly derive from it.'⁷¹ To
 653 put it in a provocative way: If Spinoza had never written his critique of religion,
 654 these passages, together with those of his earliest writings, would have allowed him
 655 to claim that the allegorical content of scripture is never in conflict with what the
 656 *Ethics* teaches *more geometrico*, and that the literal content of scripture teaches
 657 *more humano*, i.e., by means of parables and laws the doctrines of the *Ethics*.

658 Moreover, the dogmatic position, which has philosophy determine the true core
 659 of religion, is not only compatible with the philosophical project in the *Ethics*, but
 660 also with the freedom to philosophise that Spinoza sets out to defend in the *Tractatus*
 661 *theologico-politicus*. It is clear that Spinoza's main opponent in the *Tractatus* is not
 662 the dogmatic position, but the position of the Calvinist Church in seventeenth-
 663 century Netherlands, in particular the view that the authority of scripture overrides
 664 the authority of reason. Spinoza describes this position as 'scepticism' in the
 665 *Tractatus theologico-politicus* and contrasts it with the dogmatic position.⁷² It is this
 666 form of 'scepticism' that turns philosophy into the 'handmaid of theology'. This in
 667 turn is the chief threat to the *libertas philosophandi* according to Spinoza.⁷³

⁶⁸ Spinoza, *Epistolae*, in *Opera*, IV, pp. 92–94.

⁶⁹ I take 1665 to be the turning point, because in his correspondence with Willem van Blyenbergh in January and February (letters 19, 21, 23, in *Opera*, IV, pp. 86–95; 126–133; 144–152), Spinoza still firmly upholds the dogmatic position, whereas from his correspondence with Oldenburg in the Autumn of the same year we learn that he had started to work on the *Tractatus theologico-politicus*. See letters 29 and 30, in *Opera*, IV, pp. 164–166.

⁷⁰ For a discussion of these passages, see Fraenkel, 'Could Spinoza?'

⁷¹ Spinoza, 'Praefatio' to *Tractatus theologico-politicus*, in *Oeuvres*, III. Spinoza elaborates on the method in *Tractatus theologico-politicus* (ch. 7), in *Opera*, III.

⁷² See Spinoza, *Tractatus theologico-politicus* (ch. 15), in *Opera*, III.

⁷³ In the preface to the *Tractatus theologico-politicus*, Spinoza describes 'scepticism' as the 'one obstacle' that prevents potential philosophers from philosophizing (*Oeuvres*, III, p. 74; *Opera*, III, p. 12); cf. *Epistola* 30, in *Opera*, IV, p. 166.

Let me now address three important objections to my thesis concerning Spinoza's early dogmatism.⁷⁴ The first objection is that I am wrong to claim that until 1665 Spinoza consistently endorsed the dogmatic position, for there are three passages in his early writings in which he clearly states that philosophy and theology contradict each other. These are the *scholium* to *Principia philosophiae Cartesianae* II, 13, *Cogitata metaphysica* II, 12, and *Epistola* 23 to Blyenbergh. In the last of these passages the alleged contradiction is most clearly formulated:

Furthermore, I should like it here to be noted that while we are speaking philosophically (*Philosophice loquimur*), we ought not to use the language of theology. For since theology has usually, and with good reason, represented God as a perfect man, it is therefore appropriate that in theology it is said that God desires something, that God is affected by anger through the deeds of the impious and delights in those of the pious. But in philosophy, where we clearly perceive that to ascribe to God those attributes which make a man perfect would be as wrong as to ascribe to a man the attributes that make perfect an elephant or an ass, these and similar words have no place, and we cannot use them without utterly confusing our concepts. So, speaking philosophically, we cannot say that God wants something from somebody, or that something angers or delights him. For these are all human attributes, which have no place in God.⁷⁵

The second objection is that Spinoza not only stresses the contradictions between philosophical and theological propositions, but also shows no interest in resolving them by allegorically commenting on scripture as Maimonides does in his chief philosophical-theological work, the *Guide of the Perplexed*.⁷⁶

The third objection, finally, concerns my claim that the dogmatic position is consistent with the *libertas philosophandi* defended in the *Tractatus theologico-politicus*. This seems to be contradicted by the fact that Spinoza criticises Maimonides in the *Tractatus* for introducing a form of philosophical tyranny into scriptural exegesis. According to Spinoza, *libertas philosophandi* not only means that philosophers must be safe from persecution in the name of religion, but that all citizens have the right to believe whatever they think is right on the basis of scripture, regardless of whether or not this belief corresponds to what has been demonstrated in philosophy. If Maimonides's view were correct, Spinoza writes,

it would follow that the multitude, which for the most part does not know demonstrations or has no leisure for them, could admit of scripture only that which is derived from the authority and testimony of philosophers (*de Scriptura nihil nisi ex sola auctoritate et testimoniis philosophantium admittere poterit*), and would therefore have to assume that philosophers cannot err in their interpretations of scripture. This would indeed be a novel form of ecclesiastical authority, with very strange priests or pontiffs, more likely to excite the multitude's ridicule than veneration.⁷⁷

⁷⁴ For a discussion of why Spinoza adopted the dogmatic position in his early writings, why he rejected it in the *Tractatus theologico-politicus*, and why he continued making use of it even after dismissing it, see again Fraenkel 'Could Spinoza?'

⁷⁵ Spinoza, *Epistolae*, in *Opera*, IV, p. 98.

⁷⁶ See the programmatic passages in Maimonides, *Guide of the Perplexed*, I, pp. 5–20; (II, 2), II, pp. 252–254.

⁷⁷ Spinoza, *Tractatus theologico-politicus*, in *Oeuvres*, III, p. 316; *Opera*, III, p. 114.

706 All three objections can be met, I contend, once we recognise that Spinoza's
 707 dogmatism in important respects does not follow Maimonides, but the Averroistic
 708 tradition in the form it was taken up by Delmedigo. It is virtually certain that Spinoza
 709 did not read Averroes's *Faṣḥ al-maqāl*. For one thing it was not part of the Latin
 710 reception of Averroes. It is precisely because Averroes's philosophical-theological
 711 works were not known to the Latin West that he came to be represented as a philo-
 712 sophical heretic and denier of religion.⁷⁸ One only needs to read the article on
 713 Averroes in Pierre Bayle's *Dictionnaire historique et critique* to see that this distorted
 714 view of Averroes remained alive in the early modern period.⁷⁹ What I will
 715 characterise as Spinoza's Averroism has nothing in common with this tradition. It is,
 716 moreover, highly unlikely that Spinoza read the medieval Hebrew translation of the
 717 *Faṣḥ al-maqāl*.⁸⁰ No reference to it is found in Spinoza, nor is there any evidence that
 718 this translation was known in Jewish intellectual circles in the seventeenth century.

719 We do know, on the other hand, that Spinoza owned a copy of Delmedigo's
 720 *Behinat ha-dat*. All Averroistic elements in Spinoza's position on the relationship
 721 between philosophy and religion can be explained on the assumption that he read
 722 Delmedigo's treatise. This assumption gains plausibility because other writings in
 723 the same volume containing Delmedigo's treatise left traces in Spinoza's work.
 724 It gains additional plausibility because the contradiction between philosophy and
 725 theology discussed in one of the three passages in Spinoza's early writings mentioned
 726 above corresponds precisely to the only example for such contradictions
 727 given by Delmedigo: the contradiction concerning the understanding of angels.⁸¹
 728 Finally, when it comes to the methodological autonomy of philosophical and prophetic
 729 discourse, Spinoza is clearly closer to Delmedigo than to Averroes.

730 In a paper published in 1922, Leon Roth documented the traces in Spinoza's
 731 work left by the volume containing Delmedigo's treatise. In the same paper he also
 732 drew attention to the importance of Delmedigo for understanding Spinoza.⁸² Roth's
 733 suggestion has not been pursued further by Spinoza scholars. In my view he not
 734 only misunderstood Delmedigo, but also misrepresented his influence on Spinoza:

735 It is perhaps hardly necessary to point out how closely this [i.e., Delmedigo's position] is
 736 reproduced in the *Tractatus theologico-politicus*. The professed aim of the *Tractatus* is to
 737 refute the view of Maimonides that philosophy and theology are identical, and the crucial
 738 chapter to which all the earlier chapters are preliminary [i.e., chapter 15] sums up the
 739 discussion in the very words of the *Examination of Religion* ... The definite sundering of

⁷⁸ Alfred Ivry, 'Averroes and the West: The First Encounter/Non-Encounter', in *A Straight Path: Studies in Medieval Philosophy and Culture*, ed. Ruth Link-Salinger (Washington, DC: Catholic University of America Press, 1988), pp. 142–158.

⁷⁹ See Pierre Bayle, *Dictionnaire historique et critique*, 1st edn (1697); 4th edn (Amsterdam: Brunel, Wetstein & Smith, 1730), pp. 384–391.

⁸⁰ For the Hebrew translation, see Golb, 'The Hebrew Translation'.

⁸¹ See Spinoza, *Cogitata metaphysica* (II, 12), in *Opera*, I, pp. 275–281, and Delmedigo, *Behinat ha-dat*, p. 93.

⁸² Leon Roth, 'The *Abscondita Sapientiae* of Joseph del Medigo', *Chronicon Spinozanum*, 2 (1922), pp. 54–66.

the spheres of theology and philosophy to the establishment of which ... the *Tractatus theologico-politicus* is specifically devoted, is one of the landmarks in the history of political freedom as well as of intellectual development ... We now see that the very phraseology of its main thesis is to be found in the obscure Hebrew essay of R. Elijah.⁸³

As we saw above, a close reading of *Behinat ha-dat* does not confirm Roth's thesis. If my argument holds, Delmedigo assumed, like Averroes, that religion and philosophy are fundamentally in agreement. But even if I am wrong and Delmedigo does allow for genuine contradictions between religion and philosophy, the former always overrides the latter. Both positions are incompatible with Spinoza's stance in the *Tractatus theologicus-politicus*.

Delmedigo provides, on the other hand, a key to understanding Spinoza's early dogmatism. On the assumption that my reconstruction of Delmedigo is correct, this version of Averroism is not exposed to the three objections which I outlined above. Firstly, the contradictions between theology and philosophy that Spinoza stresses in the third letter to Blyenbergh simply follow from the fact that the arguments of theology are based on the literal sense of scripture. This by no means implies that for Spinoza the allegorical sense of scripture does not agree with the doctrines demonstrated in philosophy. As we saw earlier, he expressly states their agreement, among other places in *Cogitata metaphysica* II, 8. Theology, according to Spinoza, 'with good reason represented God as a perfect man', who 'is affected by anger through the deeds of the impious and delights in those of the pious.' For theology's purpose is not to determine philosophically God's existence and essence, but to convey through dialectical, rhetorical and poetical means an idea of God to non-philosophers and to guide them to virtuous action. Also the second objection does not hold. It is clear now why an Averroist would not attempt to resolve contradictions between philosophy and theology by composing an allegorical commentary on problematic passages in scripture as Maimonides did. On this point both Averroes and Delmedigo disagree with Maimonides who, as I pointed out above, deviates from the standard position of medieval Muslim and Jewish philosophers, likely under the influence of Almohad theology. Delmedigo, moreover, explicitly criticises this aspect of Maimonideanism, which became a distinctive feature of Jewish philosophy after Maimonides. Finally, Averroists also would not implement an exegetical tyranny of philosophers. On the contrary, the philosopher must refrain from intervening in the beliefs of non-philosophers even if they are philosophically untenable. Averroes and Delmedigo recognise, of course, a set of fundamental religious principles to which all members of the religious community must subscribe. It includes, for example, God's existence and unity. But these exist in Spinoza's *religio catholica* as well. He clearly does not extend freedom of opinion and interpretation to the principles of the *religio catholica*.⁸⁴

In the passage from *Cogitata metaphysica* II, 8 Spinoza only considers issues 'which we can grasp in the most certain way through natural reason' and which can be 'demonstrated clearly.' Concerning these issues, he argues, we know 'that scripture

⁸³ *Ibid.*, p. 58.

⁸⁴ Cf. Spinoza, *Tractatus theologico-politicus* (ch. 14), in *Oeuvres*, III.

781 must also teach the same things, because the truth does not contradict the truth.'
782 He does not address the possibility of improvable propositions concerning which
783 philosophy and religion may temporarily be at variance, as in the case of Delmedigo's
784 third class of principles of the Law of Moses. But the omission of this somewhat
785 peculiar consideration should not detract from the fundamental agreement between
786 Spinoza's early dogmatism and Delmedigo's Averroism. With respect to the meth-
787 odological autonomy of philosophical and prophetic discourse, Spinoza is clearly
788 closer to Delmedigo than to Averroes. Averroes, as we saw, not only assumes that
789 every contradiction between the divine Law and philosophy can in principle be
790 resolved through allegorical interpretation, but also rules that the philosopher is
791 obligated to resolve contradictions in this manner. Delmedigo casts doubt on the
792 philosopher's obligation to provide allegorical explanations. The philosopher should
793 'perhaps' interpret passages in the Law of Moses which, taken literally, contradict
794 doctrines demonstrated in philosophy. Spinoza, in turn, goes one step further than
795 Delmedigo: he drops the obligation to provide allegorical interpretations altogether.
796 Recall once again the passage from *Cogitata metaphysica* II, 8: 'here we only
797 inquire into the things which we can grasp in the most certain way through natural
798 reason; and it is sufficient that we demonstrate these clearly in order to know that
799 scripture must also teach the same things.' Thus in order to ground the authority of
800 scripture dogmatically, Spinoza considers it sufficient to assume that its allegorical
801 content can in principle not contradict what is clearly demonstrated by natural rea-
802 son. There is no need to actually seek the allegorical content. Finally, if the position
803 advocated in the *Tractatus theologico-politicus* can in a certain sense be understood
804 as a further radicalization of the methodological autonomy of philosophy and reli-
805 gion assumed in the Averroistic tradition, in another sense, however, Spinoza breaks
806 with the fundamental premise that underlies the dogmatism not only of al-Fārābī,
807 Maimonides, Averroes and Delmedigo, but also of his own early writings, namely
808 that 'the truth does not contradict the truth.'

Chapter 12

Averroes and Arabic Philosophy in the Modern *Historia Philosophica*: Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries

Gregorio Piaia

The varied fortune of great thinkers is like the fate of shares on the stock market: their value goes up or down depending on their appreciation, and it is not rare to find cases in which a once celebrated and acclaimed philosopher ends up in the margins of the market of ideas, though his share price may rise again with a change in the intellectual climate and cultural fashion. The most emblematic case of this fluctuation is of course Aristotle, to whom we could apply the image that Alessandro Manzoni used for Napoleon in his ode *Il cinque maggio* (lines 47–48): ‘due volte nella polvere, due volte sull’altar’.¹ And, of course, together with Aristotle, we should mention Averroes, who for centuries was considered the Aristotelian commentator *par excellence*. Dante deliberately placed him among the *spiriti magni* in the *nobil castello* of Limbo (*Inf. IV*, 144), at the end of his review of the ancient wise men who lived before or outside Christianity, but who because of their intellectual and moral stature deserved to be placed in Limbo rather than Hell itself, as was the case of Epicurus.

If Dante consecrated Averroes’s fame as the Commentator on the ‘maestro di color che sanno’ – Aristotle, that is, ‘the’ philosopher – Averroes’s fortune was well-consolidated in the fifteenth, sixteenth and the first decades of the seventeenth century thanks also to the numerous Venetian editions of the Aristotelian *corpus* translated into Latin together with Averroes’s commentaries: from the 1483 incunable, printed *impendio industriaque Andreae Torresani*, to the *apud Junctas* editions of 1550–1552, 1562 and 1573–1575, and the Zaccaria Zenaro edition *apud Cominum de Tridino* (= Trino Monferrato) of 1560–1562. The famous Giunti edition in particular, which also included Averroes’s own works (such as the *Sermo de substantia*

¹ Alessandro Manzoni, *Liriche e tragedie*, ed. Vladimiro Arangio Ruiz (Turin: UTET, 1968), p. 93.

G. Piaia (✉)

Dipartimento FISPPA, p.zza Capitaniano, 35100 Padova, Italy

e-mail: gregorio.piaia@unipd.it

29 *orbis*, the *Destructio destructionis Philosophiae Algazelis* in the translation by Calo
 30 Calonymos, and the *De animae beatitudine, seu epistola de intellectu*,² could not
 31 fail to find a place in the libraries of European scholars. Nevertheless, if we look
 32 through the *Advis pour dresser une bibliothèque* (1627) by Gabriel Naudé, one of
 33 the most famous erudite men of letters of the age, we find that of the long series of
 34 Aristotelian commentators only Alexander of Aphrodisias and Themistius are men-
 35 tioned explicitly, while Averroes is evidently among those ‘vieux Interpretes
 36 d’Aristote’ whose works should be replaced by those of the most recent interpreters
 37 of Peripateticism, all of them professors of the University of Padua: Agostino Nifo
 38 (c.1473–1538/45), Alessandro Achillini (1463–1512), Pietro Pomponazzi (1462–
 39 1525), Jacopo Zabarella (1532–1589), Francesco Piccolomini (1523–1607), Cesare
 40 Cremonini (1550–1631) and Fortunio Liceti (1577–1657).³ Nor can it be said that
 41 Naudé neglected Arabic writers, given that in his library we find the works of
 42 Avicenna and Avenzoar (*Ibn Zuhr*) on medicine, those of Albohazen (Abū'l-Ḥasan
 43 ‘Alī ibn Abī'l-Rijāl) on astronomy, Alhazen (Ibn al-Haytham) on optics, and
 44 Albumasar (Abū Ma’shar) on the interpretation of dreams.⁴

45 Indeed Naudé himself showed that he was well aware of the figure of Averroes
 46 (placed significantly alongside Aristotle) in another of his famous works, the
 47 *Apologie pour les grands personnages soupçonnez de magie* (1625), regarding that
 48 demon, which – if we are to believe Girolamo Cardano – Averroes had among his
 49 followers. It is a statement which is unacceptable on a theoretical level, Naudé
 50 objects decidedly, since Averroes did not or could not believe in the existence of
 51 demons, just as Avicenna did not believe in the powers of the philosopher’s stone,
 52 whatever the alchemists might say.⁵ It is still significant that, when dealing with the

² We should bear in mind, however, that the letter *De animae beatitudine* is not a work by Averroes, but ‘the culmination of a tradition whose final product was placed under the name of Averroes’. See Marc Geoffroy, ‘À la recherche de la *béatitude*’, in Averroès, *La béatitude de l’âme*, eds and trans. Marc Geoffroy and Carlos Steel (Paris: Vrin, 2001), pp. 9–81 (9); Carlos Steel, ‘La tradition latine du traité’, in *ibid.*, pp. 83–129 (111–112, on the ‘apud Junctas’ editions).

³ Gabriel Naudé, *Advis pour dresser une bibliothèque*, 2 edn (Paris: Rolet le Duc, 1644), ch. 4, pp. 43 and 71.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 40.

⁵ Gabriel Naudé, *Apologie pour tous les grands personnages qui ont été faussement soupçonnez de magie* (The Hague: Adrien Vlac, 1653), pp. 320–321: ‘Ceux qui pour ne faire Aristote inférieur à Socrate maintiennent aussi qu’il avoit l’assistance particulière de quelque Demon, ne me semblent moins faire de violence à sa doctrine, que Cardan à celle d’Averroes, qui n’a jamais creu qu’il y eust des diables, quand il introduit un Demon qui se disoit l’un de ses disciples et sectateurs, ou que les Alchymistes font tous les jours à Avicenne, qui nie absolument dans Aegidius Romanus la possibilité de leur trasmutation metallique, quand ils luy attribuent la cognoissance et pratique de la pierre Philosophale: car il n’y a rien si certain dans la doctrine d’Aristote, et de si constant parmy tous ses Interpretes, qu’il n’a jamais admis d’autres intelligences que celles qu’il donnoit à un chacun des globes de la machine celeste pour lui causer son mouvement, rejettant toutes autres sortes de Demons et d’Ange pour demeurer ferme en ses principes, et n’admettre aucune chose qui ne luy fust cogneuë ou par le mouvement ou par l’operation.’ There is another mention of Averroes on p. 354, regarding his praise of the works of al-Kindī.

origin of philosophy in the introduction to his *Syntagma philosophicum*, which was published posthumously in 1658, Pierre Gassendi mentions Averroes (along with Lucretius) as an example of the followers who, through an excess of zeal, attributed the founder of their own sect with having initiated philosophy itself, neglecting or refusing to recognise the thinkers who came before, who were certainly not unknown: an 'exaggeration' that Gassendi considers deplorable, all the more so coming from the philosopher Averroes than from the poet Lucretius, since a philosopher must swear on the truth and not on a man.⁶

The close connection with Aristotle, therefore, guaranteed Averroes widespread and certain fame, but it proved to be a double-edged sword when scholars – like Gassendi – not only denounced the excesses committed by the Commentator, but radically criticised the very practice of the *commentarium*, and distance themselves from all the thinkers of the past, whether they be Plato or Aristotle, or Epicurus. This is the case of Nicolas Malebranche (1638–1715), who considered the work of the commentator to be 'peu digne d'un homme d'esprit.'⁷ Here Averroes is given the role of representing an activity judged as perverse not only on an intellectual but also on a moral level, as the fruit of 'vanity' and 'self-love': these – to return to our original metaphor – then push up the value of a thinker's 'share' to the point of making him an excellent, even divine, man, in such a way that the commentator can then, unworthily, bask in his reflected fame. Hence, according to Malebranche, the falseness and the senselessness of most prefaces. As an example, he refers in turn to Averroes's preface to his Long Commentary on the *Physics*, quoting other passages (taken from the commentary on the *De generatione animalium* and the *Destructio destructionis*) from which his veneration of Aristotle and his doctrine transpires, defined as *summa veritas*.⁸ Malebranche's judgement here is a total *destructio*, without the possibility of appeal:

In truth, must not be mad to speak thus? And must not the prejudice of this author have degenerated into extravagance and folly? ... Nevertheless, the works of this commentator have spread throughout Europe and even more distant countries. They have been translated

⁶ Pierre Gassendi, *Opera omnia*, 6 vols (Lyon: Laurent Anisson and Jean-Baptiste Devenet, 1658; repr. Stuttgart and Bad Cannstatt: Frommann, 1964), I, p. 7a: 'ideo heic solum observandum, solere vulgo sectatores tanti illos ducere quorum Sectis nomina dant, ut ipsis primam Philosophiae originem acceptam ferant. Ac ne omneis recenseam, seligo dumtaxat ex Aristotelis Averroëm, qui ex Aristotelis Interpretibus Commentatoris nomen fecit suum; et ex Epicureis Lucretium, quem solum expositorem Philosophiae Epicuri habemus.' There follows the quotation of a long passage from Averroes's preface to the *Physics* (where Aristotle is presented as he who 'invented' and perfected physics, logic, and metaphysics), followed by the quotation of various passages from the *De rerum natura*, which exalt the discoveries of Epicurus. 'Et posset quidem forte Lucretius videri Averroë excusator,' concludes Gassendi, 'quod ut Philosophum, sic Poëtam agat, quem exaggeratio magis deceat; verum quomodocumque tandem Philosophiam quis profiteatur, quoniam decet illum non in hominem, sed in veritatem iurare; idcirco non possunt huiusmodi omnes exaggerationes eum non dedecere' (p. 7b).

⁷ Nicolas Malebranche, *De la recherche de la vérité*, (II, II, 6), ed. Geneviève Rodis-Lewis, in *Oeuvres complètes*, ed. André Robinet, 20 vols (Paris: Vrin, 1958–1970), I, p. 295.

⁸ See also Bertolacci's and Martin's contributions in this volume.

82 from Arabic into Hebrew, and from Hebrew into Latin, and perhaps even into many other
 83 languages, which sufficiently shows how the savants have esteemed them. So one can
 84 hardly give a more obvious example than this of the prejudice of persons of learning. For it
 85 shows that not only do they often become prejudiced about some author, but their prejudice
 86 is also communicated to others in proportion to the esteem they have in the world. And so
 87 the false praises the commentators give to an author often cause persons of limited intelli-
 88 gence, devoted to reading him, to become preoccupied and fall into an infinity of errors.⁹

89 The crisis of Peripateticism and the establishment of the new philosophy and the
 90 new science are also reflected in the image of Averroes and, more generally, that of
 91 Arabic science. From this point of view, Francis Bacon has very clear ideas: if in the
 92 *Advancement of Learning* (1605) he lumps together in his criticism the great naturalists
 93 of the past (Pliny, Albertus Magnus and Cardano) and ‘divers of the Arabians’, in the
 94 *Novum organum* (1620) he believes it is useless to mention the Arabs and the
 95 Scholastics, since their contribution to the development of the sciences is judged to be
 96 negative.¹⁰ This does not mean that another of the ‘Fathers’ of modern thought,
 97 Montesquieu, was not fully aware of the role of the Arabs, the Arabs of the Iberian
 98 Peninsula in particular, in the development of science in Europe, though he wonders
 99 with a touch of humour how it was that it was precisely the Arabs who remained out-
 100 side this process.¹¹ On the other hand, Averroes’s positive fame must have been per-
 101 sistent, in certain cultural circles at least, since, on 1st September, 1721, Anthony
 102 Epis, sent a letter from Bucharest to the great man of letters Jean Le Clerc in
 103 Amsterdam, to ask him to purchase and send as soon as possible a dozen works to
 104 Vienna, works of erudition above all, among which an Arabic-Latin edition of
 105 Averroes’s *Opera omnia*. The recipient of this precious collection was no minor figure,
 106 but the Greek Nicholas Maurocordatos, Voivode (governor, that is, of the Sublime
 107 Port) of Moldavia and Wallachia, known for his works of erudition and ‘très versé’, as
 108 Epis himself specifies in a letter dated 8th November, 1720, ‘dans les langues Arabe,
 109 Persienne, et Turque’, as well as Ancient Greek, Latin, French, and Italian.¹²

110 Averroes’s fortune (or lack of it) in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries cannot
 111 however be linked only to his close relationship with Aristotle. Besides the traditional
 112 figure of the Commentator, destined to crystallise into the negative cliché of the ‘yoke of

⁹ Malebranche, *De la recherche de la vérité*, p. 298; *The Search after Truth*, eds and trans. Thomas M. Lennon and Paul J. Olscamp (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997), pp. 148–149. Averroes’s exaltation of Aristotle is also ironically mentioned in III, 1, 3, § 2, pp. 399–400. But see also VI, II, 4: ‘Descartes ne nous a pas été donné de Dieu pour nous apprendre tout ce qu’il est possible de sçavoir, comme Averroes le dit d’Aristote’ (*De la recherche de la vérité*, in *Oeuvres complètes* II, p. 340).

¹⁰ Francis Bacon, *The Advancement of Learning*, ed. Michael Kiernan (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2003), pp. 26 and 228; Id., *The Instauration Magna Part II: Novum Organum and Associated Texts*, eds Graham Rees and Maria Wakely (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2004), p. 113.

¹¹ Charles-Louis de Secondat de Montesquieu, *Mes pensées*, in *Oeuvres complètes*, ed. Roger Caillois (Paris: Gallimard, 1949), n. 2189, p. 1569: ‘Ce furent les Mahométans (Maures d’Espagne) qui portèrent les sciences en Occident. Depuis ce temps-là, ils n’ont jamais voulu reprendre ce qu’ils nous avoient donné.’

¹² Jean Le Clerc, *Epistolario*, eds Maria Grazia and Mario Sina (Florence: Olschki, 1987–1997), IV, pp. 57 and 691.

Aristotle and the Averroists,¹³ another *topos* established itself representing Averroes as an unscrupulous thinker with respect to religion, and sometimes even as an unbeliever.¹⁴ It is highly significant that the only mention of Averroes in the work of David Hume is to a highly ironic remark on the Catholic doctrine of the Eucharist, namely on the 'real presence' of the body of Christ in the consecrated Host given to the faithful; it is a remark traditionally attributed to Averroes which Hume quotes with evident relish:

It must be allowed, that the ROMAN CATHOLICS are a very learned sect; and that no one communion, but that of the church of ENGLAND, can dispute their being the most learned of all the Christian churches: Yet AVERROES, the famous ARABIAN, who, no doubt, had heard of the EGYPTIAN superstitions [previously quoted through Herodotus], declares, that, of all religions, the most absurd and nonsensical is that, whose votaries eat, after having created, their deity.¹⁵

Neither Hume nor his editors took the trouble to indicate the source of this vitriolic remark, but it is clear that it was inspired by *remarque H* from the article *Averroes* in Pierre Bayle's *Dictionnaire historique et critique* (1697, 1702). I have analysed this article elsewhere and also touched on the treatment meted out to Averroes in Johann Jacob Brucker's *Historia critica philosophiae*, which came out in Leipzig in the years 1742–1744.¹⁶ Here I would like to move our investigation to the period (spanning roughly a century) which preceded the appearance of Brucker's celebrated work, when *historia philosophica* assumed the characteristics of a literary genre in its own right, which included the entire history of philosophy, from its origins up until the present day, and was quick to carry out a strategic function in modern European culture. The aim is to illustrate the place given to Averroes, and to Islamic thought more generally, in this longer-term perspective, and to point out any oscillations or variants in the presentation of our philosopher from Cordoba. There is nothing exciting – we have to say – regarding Bayle's treatment, which is characterised by a fundamental disquiet and by ambiguities and implications of great doctrinal weight. But it is interesting to define the image of Averroes as transmitted by a field of research, namely the history of philosophy, which thanks to Ernest Renan was later to rediscover this thinker, no longer confined to the narrow role of Commentator.

¹³ Antonio Genovesi, *Dissertatio physico-historica de rerum origine et constitutione* [1745], eds Sara Boneschi and Maurizio Torrini (Florence: Giunti, 2001), p. 187 (cf. Maria Teresa Marcialis, 'Storia della scienza e universalità del senso comune in Antonio Genovesi', in *Identità nazionale e valori universali nella moderna storiografia filosofica*, eds Gregorio Piaia and Riccardo Pozzo [Padua: CLEUP, 2008], pp. 53–71).

¹⁴ See Jonathan Israel, *Enlightenment Contested: Philosophy, Modernity, and the Emancipation of Man, 1670–1752* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2006), pp. 621–622.

¹⁵ David Hume, *The Natural History of Religion*, in Id., *Essays Moral, Political, and Literary*, eds T. H. Green and T. H. Grose, 2 vols (London: Longmans, Green, and Co., 1898; repr. Aalen: Scientia, 1964), II, p. 343.

¹⁶ See my 'L'immagine di Averroè in Pierre Bayle', forthcoming in the Acts of the Symposium *Averroès, l'averroïsme, l'antiaverroïsme* (held in Geneva in 2006), ed. Alain de Libera.

144 The first writer to consider is naturally Georg Horn, known with the Latin name
 145 Hornius (1620–1670), who was a professor of Universal History at the University
 146 of Leiden and whose *Historiae philosophicae libri septem* (published in Leiden in
 147 1655, but written as early as 1640) shows the level of maturity reached by the genre
 148 of the history of philosophy, both as to periodization ('from the creation of the
 149 world to our times') and as to its method of exposition and its use of sources.¹⁷ Two
 150 of the 89 chapters into which the book is divided are devoted to *philosophia Arabica*.
 151 The first of these (book 5, ch. 9) mentions its remotest origins, dating back to Ham
 152 and Canaan, the son and grandson of Noah, who settled in Arabia and Palestine, and
 153 who were both followers of *philosophia Cainitica*, i.e., those glimmers of primitive
 154 revelation that Adam had transmitted to his descendents after being banished from
 155 the Garden of Eden. Great importance is then given to the figure of Job, who lived
 156 in the land of Uz, held to be near to Arabia.¹⁸ He is attributed with having written a
 157 *liber dialecticus*, resulting from his discussions with friends, they too considered
 158 'philosophers'; indeed, he founded schools and was the first to initiate that method
 159 of *disputatio* which was still used in the universities in Horn's time.¹⁹ Our historiog-
 160 rapher is therefore inclined to place in the Near East the origin of a philosophical
 161 discipline which was usually seen as a typical product of the Greek world: he
 162 opposes Diogenes Laertius's Hellenocentrism (which had inspired many humanist
 163 and Renaissance treatises) with a universalistic vision of the history of philosophy
 164 inspired by the Platonic and Augustinian tradition, which drove him to re-evaluate
 165 and emphasise the wisdom of the Near East.

166 After the age of Job, philosophy was absent from the Arabs until the advent of
 167 Muhammad, the 'monster' (*monstrum illud Muhammed*), who – in Horn's opinion –
 168 surpassed everyone in talking nonsense (*nugae*); most able at simulating and dis-
 169 simulating (*sagax, fallax, summus simulandi et dissimulandi artifex*), he collected
 170 the contents of the Quran, a work defined as *opera collatitia*, from various sources.
 171 It might seem strange, admits Horn, to place Muhammad among the philosophers,
 172 given that according to a certain tradition he prohibited the study of the liberal arts
 173 and philosophy. But the perplexity is resolved by recourse to an analogy with the

¹⁷ Cf. Luciano Malusa, 'The First General Histories of Philosophy in England and in the Low Countries', in *Models of the History of Philosophy, I: From Its Origins in the Renaissance to the 'Historia Philosophica'*, ed. Giovanni Santinello, trans. Constance W. T. Blackwell and Philip Weller (Dordrecht, Boston and London: Kluwer, 1993), pp. 236–259.

¹⁸ Georg Horn, *Historiae philosophicae libri septem, quibus de origine, successione, sectis et vita philosophorum ab orbe condito usque ad nostram aetatem agitur* (Leiden: Jean Elsevier, 1655), p. 284: 'Fuit insignis Philosophiae doctor, cui neque antiquior, neque doctior, neque sublimior ex tota antiquitate, opponi potest.' There follows a quotation from Justus Lipsius, where Job is mentioned – in the company of Plato, Hermes Trismegistus, Epictetus, and Arrian – among those who were inspired by the spirit of the truth, even though they did not belong to the chosen people.

¹⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 284: 'Amici ejus et ipsi in Philosophia doctissimi, procul dubio ex Jobi Schola profecti, cum perpetuis paralogismis ludant, egregie a Jobo convincuntur ... Nec antiquiores disputationes habemus quam quae in ejus opere mirabile occurrunt. Amici ejus sunt, uti nunc loquuntur, opposites, ipse autem respondet. Quod disputandi genus inventum a Jobo Ambrosius [*De officiis*, I, 12] tradit.'

Greek world: just as the ancient Sceptics are counted among the philosophers, even though they radically contested the doctrines of all the other philosophers, so Muhammad can also be given the title 'philosopher', even though he did not make any contribution to the development of this discipline.²⁰ But now, with the spread of the evil (*malum*) from Arabia to vast areas of Asia and Africa, 'under the caliphate of al-Ma'mūn the Arabs transferred to themselves equally all Greek and Latin philosophy'. This event was occasioned, according to Arabic writers, by a dream which the Caliph had, in which the ghost of Aristotle appeared to him. It was thus that, after having conquered the Byzantine emperor Michael III, the Caliph al-Ma'mūn imposed as a condition of peace free access to the books which contained the wisdom of the ancient Greeks: a delegation went to Constantinople and bought up the rarest books on philosophy, geodesy, music, arithmetic, and medicine, and brought them to Baghdad, even though this aroused criticism from those who considered this foreign fashion (*peregrinitas*) to be harmful to Islam.²¹ The Greeks had a different version of this *translatio* of philosophy to the Arabs: here Horn quotes a long passage from the *Sarracenicarum historiae libri tres* (1596) by Celio Agostino Curione (whom he confuses with Celio Secondo Curione), which tells the story of Leo bishop of Thessalonica, 'insignis philosophus', who had moved to Constantinople in order to avoid the controversy over images and had devoted himself there to private teaching. Among his pupils was a young man who became very skilled in geometry and who was taken prisoner by the Arabs; when he showed them his skill he was called to the court of al-Ma'mūn. The caliph knew who his master was and wrote to Leo to invite him to Baghdad, but the Byzantine emperor refused to give his consent, 'ne scientias, quarum causa Romani, cunctis gentibus admirationi erant, barbaris proderentur', and instead heaped honours on the bishop Leo.²²

The other chapter (book V, ch. x) deals with the Arabic philosophers, with a final word on Jewish thinkers, who, 'since they generally lived together with the Saracens, from these they received the knowledge of philosophy.'²³ The overall opinion is highly positive, for *philosophia Arabica*, solidly based on writers such as Aristotle

²⁰Ibid., p. 286: 'Mirum autem fortasse cuidam videbitur, cur Muhammedem catalogo Philosophorum accenseamus, qui tamen omnes literas omneque studium disciplinarum Philosophicarum publico edicto et armis proscripserit. Cujus instituti nostri hanc rationem damus. Quemadmodum Academici, Pyrrhonii et Sceptici, ea de caussa quoque Philosophis accensentur, quia aliorum Philosophorum placita et dicta confutarunt vel rejecerunt, ita Muhammedem quoque Philosophis accenseri, non quod aliquid magni invenerit, sed quia, quae ab aliis bene constituta erant, omnia rejecerit.' See John Tolan, *Saracens: Islam in the Medieval European Imagination* (New York: Columbia University Press, 2002); Id., "'Saracen Philosophers Secretly Deride Islam'", *Medieval Encounters*, 8 (2002), pp. 184–208.

²¹Horn, *Historia philosophica*, pp. 286–287. See Dimitri Gutas, *Greek Thought, Arabic Culture: The Graeco-Arabic Translation Movement in Baghdad and Early 'Abbāsīd Society (2nd–4th/8th–10th centuries)* (London: Routledge, 1998). He deals with al-Ma'mūn's dream.

²²Horn, *Historia philosophica*, pp. 287–289. The chapter ends with a reference to the 'numerous Academies' active in the Turkish and Persian Empires in Horn's time.

²³Ibid., p. 294.

203 and Galen, is clearly distinguished both from the *fabula* of the Quran and the *sunna*
 204 (Muhammad's sayings and deeds as recorded in prophetic traditions called *ḥadīth*)
 205 and from the philosophies which give too much space to the imaginings of the
 206 ancients or to 'novelties.'²⁴ Horn summarises the genesis of *philosophia Arabica* as
 207 follows: having come across some of Aristotle's writings, by that time almost
 208 unknown to the Greeks themselves, the Arabs translated them into their language,
 209 which they loved greatly, to then go on to translate 'the great majority of the greatest
 210 books of the Greeks and the Latins.' The translations fell into the hands of very
 211 acute minds, who were gradually won over by the 'ardour of the most subtle phi-
 212 losophy.' There had been lively cultural interest, above all in mathematical studies,
 213 for several centuries in that area, but what had been lacking was a unifying element
 214 that could act as a guide, and which was finally provided by the Aristotelian phi-
 215 losophy (the reference is obviously to the method of logic).²⁵

216 Of the many Arabic philosophers whose works are preserved in the well-stocked
 217 libraries of the Near East and North Africa, Horn notes that very few are known to
 218 us. The works that are known are by Avicenna, Averroes, al-Fārābī, 'Abi Abdillas'
 219 [= Abū 'Abdallāh Muḥammad or Abū 'Abdallāh al-Battānī?] and Albumasar). [AU1]
 220 Avicenna, presented as the greatest interpreter of Aristotle, is given most space: one
 221 page (while Averroes is given only a third of a page), which is mostly concerned
 222 with an anecdote on the act of plagiarism allegedly at the origin of the works of this
 223 great philosopher. Relying on *Arabia* (1633), a work by the erudite Maronite Gabriel
 224 Sionita (1577?–1648), Horn in fact recounts that in Bukhara there lived a very
 225 famous physician who was highly jealous of his knowledge, to such an extent that
 226 he would only employ ignorant servants. The mother of the young Avicenna, desirous
 227 of securing a good education for her son, presented him to the physician as being
 228 deaf and dumb, and hence unable to study anything (*ineptus ad omnia studia*). The
 229 physician took him on as his servant, and, to put him to the test, dropped pieces of
 230 bronze near his ears several times; the young man, however, did not react in any
 231 way. Reassured, the physician left his papers unguarded, which his young servant
 232 transcribed and published in his own name, after their author's death.²⁶

233 As for Averroes, Horn presents him as Avicenna's contemporary and great adver-
 234 sary (in reality he was born 146 years later). Although both were followers of
 235 Aristotle, they were in complete doctrinal disagreement. Horn does not indulge in
 236 anecdotes here, perhaps because of a lack of sources, but limits himself to brief
 237 snippets of information: the followers of Averroes, known as Averroists, were and

²⁴ Ibid., pp. 289–290: 'Non enim ea [sc. philosophia Arabica] est ridicula ex Alcorani aut Sunae fabulis, non etiam ex commentis veterum conflata aut novitatibus incrustata, sed usi institutione praestantissimorum et probatissimorum auctororum, Aristotelis, Galeni, eorum vestigia sedulo secuti sunt.'

²⁵ Ibid., p. 290: 'Erat tamen illa ipsa sapientia quasi duce destituta, qui totum agmen componeret, confusa ordinaret, daretque ipsi corpori certum statum. Quod cum divinus Aristoteles apud Graecos vel solus praestitisset, factum inde, ut non Graecis modo, sed et (quis putasset?) Arabibus auctor emendandi confusissimam congeriem fuerit.'

²⁶ Ibid., p. 291. See Gabriel Sionita, *Arabia, seu Arabum vicinarumque gentium orientalium leges, ritus, sacri et profani mores, instituta et historia* (Amsterdam: Jean Jansson, 1633), pp. 16–19.

still are (*et hodie et olim*) involved in great controversies (*magnae contentiones*) 238
 with other philosophers, above all in Italy; Averroes is granted the title 'Commentator' 239
 thanks to his writings on Aristotle, which the Scholastics borrowed from heavily; 240
dulcis in fundo, Averroes 'considered Aristotle to be the god of wisdom and thought 241
 that he was immune to mistakes.' Horn refers back to this last statement a little 242
 further on, when, after quoting an opinion of Pico's on the Arabic philosophers,²⁷ he 243
 mentions their limitations (*defectus*). As they lived in an uncivilised condition (*in* 244
media barbarie) and therefore they lacked any form of linguistic and philological 245
 proficiency, these thinkers could in effect only count on their own genius. To this 246
 can be added another fault, i.e., 'that, as long as they consider Aristotle to be some 247
 sort of god of wisdom who cannot err, more often than not they err with their erring 248
 Aristotle.' And this is the most serious limit: the impossibility of reading Aristotle 249
 in his own language or in a 'tolerable' translation, given that those available were 250
 largely deteriorated and faulty (*multis in locis mutilae, perversae, corruptae*), and 251
 what is more Aristotle's style was for the Greeks themselves *concisum et* 252
interruptum.²⁸ 253

The brief and aseptic portrait of Averroes outlined by Horn can function within 254
 the more general framework of *philosophia Arabica* as a means of comparison with 255
 other authors of *historia philosophica*. Among these a prominent place is occupied 256
 by the famous erudite Johannes Gerhard Voss, better known in his Latinised name 257
 Vossius (1577–1649), who was professor of history at the University of Amsterdam 258
 from 1633 to his death, and whose *De philosophia et philosophorum sectis libri duo* 259
 came out posthumously in The Hague in 1657–1658, edited by his son Isaac.²⁹ 260
 In the *De philosophia*, Averroes is mentioned as 'the' commentator and as a physi- 261
 cian, involved in both medical theory and practice (*medicus non tam practicus quam* 262
theoreticus). Relying on Giles of Rome's testimony, Vossius presents Averroes as a 263
 contemporary of Emperor Frederick Barbarossa. As the good erudite he was, given 264
 the lack of information available on Averroes, Vossius declares he will insert an 265
 extract from an unedited work by Johannes Leo Africanus (1494–1554), but evi- 266
 dently could not find the text among his papers since its lack is indicated by the verb 267
 'Desunt' in the middle of a blank space.³⁰ Averroes is treated at greater length in 268

²⁷ Horn, *Historia philosophica*, p. 292: 'De Arabum Philosophis ita judicat Joh. Picus Mirandolanus, in Apologia pro XC. [sic] Thesibus: "Est, inquit, apud Arabes in Averroee firmum quiddam & inconcussum in Avenpace, in Alpharabio grave & meditatatum, in Avicenna divinum atque Platonium".'

²⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 292–293.

²⁹ On Vossius see the contribution by Luciano Malusa in *Models of the History of Philosophy*, I, pp. 222–235.

³⁰ Gerhard Johann Vossius, *Operum tomus tertius philologicus: De artium et scientiarum natura ac constitutione libri quinque* (Amsterdam: P. & J. Blaev, 1696), p. 261b. Johannes Leo Africanus is the Christian name of the geographer al-ḥasan ibn Muḥammad al-Wazzān, who lived in Rome for a time after being captured by pirates; he was the author of a *Descrittione dell'Africa* (written in Arabic and published in Italian in Venice in 1550 and in Latin in Antwerp in 1556) and died in Tunis after 1554. On Leo Africanus, see now Natalie Zemon Davis, *Trickster Travels: A Sixteenth-Century Muslim between Worlds* (New York: Hill and Wang, 2006).

269 chapter 17 ('De Peripateticis') of *De philosophorum sectis*. Here he is defined as the
 270 *princeps* of the Arabic Aristotelian commentators and the fact that he did not know
 271 Greek is seen not as a limit but almost as a point of merit.³¹ The brief biographical
 272 information (the *Colliget* is also mentioned) ends, however, with a criticism of
 273 Averroes's rationalistic and anti-Christian positions:

274 That such a great philosopher was short-sighted concerning the true and only path to salva-
 275 tion is proved by his saying that he preferred to be with the philosophers rather than the
 276 Christians.³²

277 The accusation of 'impiety' brought against Averroes was to find a great vehicle
 278 of diffusion in the entry which Louis Moreri (1643–1680) devoted to him in his
 279 popular *Dictionnaire historique* (Lyon, 1674) which Bayle himself used in his article
 280 on Averroes. After providing some essential biographical information, Moreri
 281 reminds us that in the second book of his *Quodlibeta* Giles of Rome

282 deplores the blindness of such a great man, who, having no religion, said that he preferred
 283 to have his soul in the company of philosophers rather than Christians. Others report the
 284 matter differently. Averroes characterised the Christian religion as 'impossible' because of
 285 the mystery of Eucharist. He called the religion of the Jews a religion of children owing to
 286 the various precepts and legal observations. He admitted that the religion of the Muslims,
 287 which is all focused on satisfying the senses, is a religion of pigs, and then he exclaimed:
 288 'Let my soul die of the philosophers's death.'³³

289 The *topos* of the 'impious' Averroes is found again, for example, in the chapter
 290 *De interpretibus Aristotelis Arabicis* of the *Polyhistor philosophicus*, by another
 291 champion of seventeenth-century erudition, Daniel Georg Morhof (1639–1691).³⁴
 292 In this rich bio-bibliographical review, organised according to the great historical
 293 and cultural periods, we also find a reference to *De scriptoribus Arabicis* by Johannes
 294 Leo Africanus, which had been edited in the meantime by that most erudite theologian

³¹ Vossius, *Operum tomus tertius philologicus*, p. 307a: 'Qui Graece nescius feliciter adeo mentem Aristotelis perspexit, quid non fecisset, si linguam scisset Graecam?'

³² *Ibid.*, p. 307b: 'Quam parum viderit tantus Philosophus in vera et unica salutis via, arguit illud, quod diceret, malle se animam suam esse cum Philosophis, quam cum Christianis.'

³³ Louis Moreri, *Le grand dictionnaire historique, ou le mélange curieux de l'histoire sacrée et profane*, 4 vols, 8th edn (Amsterdam – The Hague: Henry Desbordes, Compagnies des libraires, 1698), I, 307b. Besides Giles of Rome, the bibliography placed at the end of the entry *Averroez* also includes Vossius, Giovanni Pico, and three authors of lives of the most illustrious mathematicians and physicians: Jan Antonides Van der Linden, Pieter Castelee (Castellanus), and the Jesuit Giuseppe Biancani.

³⁴ Daniel Georg Morhof, *Polyhistor literarius, philosophicus et practicus*, II: *Polyhistor philosophicus*, 4th edn (Lübeck: Peter Boeckmann, 1747; repr. Aalen: Scientia, 1970), 1, 10, 2, p. 53: 'Fuit vero impius homo Averroës, & profanis sentiis plenus.' The first edition came out in Lubeck in 1688–1692. Cf. Ilario Tolomio, *The 'Historia Philosophica' in the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries*, in *Models of the History of Philosophy*, 1: *From Its Origins in the Renaissance to the 'Historia Philosophica'*, pp. 82–85.

and Orientalist Johann Heinrich Hottinger (1620–1667).³⁵ The entry on Averroes is very short, ten lines in all (even less space than is dedicated to Avicenna, who receives three and a half lines; in the previous chapter, for example, Alexander of Aphrodisias is given 17 lines, Themistius 11, and Simplicius 24). Morhof mentions the 1575 Giunti edition in detail, pointing out that it also includes a paraphrase of Plato's *Republic*, and for more information on Averroes he refers to Jacopo Gaddi's *De scriptoribus non ecclesiasticis Graecis, Latinis, Italicis* (Florence 1648–1649), while for a refutation for Averroes's position, he points to the *Castigationes adversus Averroëm* by Ambrogio Leone of Nola (1457–1525), a monumental work in 45 volumes printed in Venice by his son Camillo between 1517 and 1532.

Horn, Vossius, and Morhof were learned men; but in the second half of the seventeenth century, primarily in France, *historia philosophica* was also practised by men of letters seeking to address a wider public, and thereby preferring to write in the vulgar tongue. This is true of the Jesuit René Rapin (1621–1687), famous among his contemporaries for his bucolic Latin poetry, but who was also the author of a series of *Réflexions* on various aspects of 'belles lettres', among which his *Réflexions sur la philosophie ancienne et moderne, et sur l'usage qu'on en doit faire pour la religion* (1676), which enjoyed great popularity and was translated into English, Latin, and German.³⁶ In this work Arabic philosophy is dealt with in a short chapter – barely two pages – between passages on ancient Christian thought and Scholasticism. In this chapter, Rapin relies on *De causis corruptarum artium* by Juan Luis Vives (1531), the *Bibliotheca selecta* by Possevino, Aquinas's *Contra Averroistas*, the *Lectionum antiquarum libri* by Celio Rodigino, and Giovanni Pico,³⁷ first stressing how the the Arabs carried out 'a sort of revolution' in the cultural field, a revolution which corresponds to the great changes they produced 'dans l'Empire' (in the geopolitical field, that is), then identifying in the subtlety and abstract nature of their national character, the peculiarity and at the same time the defect of their philosophy:

The character of their minds – subtle, dreamy and deep –, which attached them to Aristotle's text in a manner that was too literal, made them take an abstract way of reasoning, which is somehow different from the solidity of the Greeks and the Latins. And although there seemed

³⁵ Johann Heinrich Hottinger, *Bibliothecarius quadripartitus* (Zurich: Melechiur Stauffacher, 1664), pp. 246–294. Averroes is dealt with on pp. 271–279: the biography, enlivened by a number of anecdotes, which starts with Averroes's Arabic name and family, stresses his qualities ('vir prudens, patiens, liberalis ac pius'), examines the charge of heresy brought against him by a number of Muslim theologians, and ends with a list of his major works and the date and place of his death. On Hottinger, see Jan Loop, 'Johan Heinrich Hottinger (1620–1667) and the *Historia Orientalis*', *Church History and Religious Culture*, 88 (2008), pp. 169–203.

³⁶ See Gregorio Piaia, 'The General Histories of Philosophy in France and in Italy 1650–1750', in *Models of the History of Philosophy, II: From the Cartesian Age to Brucker*, eds Gregorio Piaia and Giovanni Santinello (Dordrecht: Springer, 2011), pp. 29–50.

³⁷ René Rapin, *Les réflexions sur l'éloquence, la poétique, l'histoire et la philosophie. Avec le jugement qu'on doit faire des auteurs qui se sont signalez dans ces quatre parties des belles lettres*, 2nd edn (Amsterdam: Abraham Wolfgang, 1693), pp. 338–340.

326 to be a great deal of subtlety in this fashion of philosophizing, we should nevertheless admit
 327 that this new character of reason seemed false, because of the errors into which Avicenna,
 328 Al Kindi, Al Gazel, Averroes, Al Farabi, Albohazen and some other fell. These are the errors
 329 reported by Possevino in book 3 of his *Bibliotheca*, and their number is huge.³⁸

330 Rapin's opinion thus appears to oscillate between a recognition of the splendour
 331 achieved by Arabic culture and a denunciation of the excesses of their philosophy,
 332 which to him resulted in making not only biased, but incomprehensible and incom-
 333 municable theses.³⁹ This ambivalence is apparent in his treatment of Averroes:
 334 Rapin quotes the negative opinion of Aquinas, for whom Averroes was, more than
 335 a follower, 'a corruptor of the doctrine of Aristotle;' but he reminds us soon after
 336 that 'for the profundity of his genius dreaming-natured, and for the study he made
 337 of Aristotle, he deserves to be called his Commentator,' thereby founding a sect of
 338 philosophers which took his name and took issue with the Greek commentators of
 339 Aristotle. Unfortunately, given that he knew the works of Aristotle through a bad
 340 translation, 'he incurred changes in sense so horrible that Bagolino, a philosopher
 341 from Verona, Zimara, and Mantino tried in vain to correct him.' According to Rapin,
 342 however, the difference between the 'genius' of the Greek language and that of the
 343 Arabic language renders translations between the two almost impossible.⁴⁰

344 In the same years in which the Jesuit Rapin published his *Réflexions sur la phi-*
 345 *losophie*, the Calvinist Pierre de Villemandy (1736/37-1703), professor of
 346 Philosophy at the Protestant Academy of Saumur, published a textbook comparing
 347 the philosophies of Aristotle, Epicurus, and Descartes, and further containing a brief
 348 history of philosophy. Arabic thought is given half a page, most of it taken from the
 349 work by Horn⁴¹; it is worth pointing out, however, the role of Averroes in Villemandy's
 350 periodization, which differed from the most popular scheme of the time, and was
 351 based on the distinction between *philosophia vetus* and *philosophia nova*. Villemandy
 352 in fact adopts the evolutionary framework characteristic of the development of an
 353 organic nature: 'nascent philosophy' (from Cain to the various 'barbaric' philoso-
 354 phies), 'adolescent philosophy' (from the ancient legislators to ancient Greek and
 355 Christian thought), and 'adult philosophy', in turn divided into four periods. The

³⁸ Ibid., p. 338. On Rapin's interest in the theme of 'national characteristics' in philosophy, see Gregorio Piaia, 'European Identity and National Characteristics in the *Historia Philosophica* of the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 34 (1996), pp. 593–605 (596–597).

³⁹ Rapin, *Réflexions sur l'éloquence, la poétique, l'histoire et la philosophie*, p. 339: 'Mais outre que la Philosophie devint pointilleuse sous les Arabes, par ces précisions et par ces concepts abstraits, qu'elle introduit dans l'école, elle devint aussi tout à fait sauvage dans ses expressions: la raison ayant, pour ainsi dire, desappris à se montrer sous des termes raisonnables. Il faut avouer toutefois que les Arabes, par la qualité de leur esprit, et par le loisir que la prospérité de leurs armes, et l'abondance leur causa, s'appliquèrent tellement à l'étude des Mathématiques et de la Philosophie, qu'ils devinrent en ces temps-là les premiers sçavans du monde.'

⁴⁰ Ibid.

⁴¹ Pierre de Villemandy, *Manuductio ad philosophiae Aristoteleae, Epicureae et Cartesianae, parallelismum*, 4th edn (Amsterdam: Henry Wetsten and Henry Desbordes, 1685), pp. 71–72. On this work, see Piaia, 'The General Histories of Philosophy in France and in Italy', pp. 50–58.

first goes from Averroes to Albertus Magnus, who initiated Scholasticism; the second from Albertus to the Humanists (notably Lorenzo Valla, Angelo Poliziano, Rudolph Agricola and Luis Vives), the third includes the schools of Leuven and Coimbra; and the fourth the contemporary Aristotelians, followers of Epicurus (Gassendi), Cartesians and proponents of 'elective' philosophy, i.e., eclecticism. Averroes is placed at the beginning of 'adult philosophy' for his role in re-establishing (*instauravit*) the philosophy of Aristotle, which had disappeared by the end of the sixth century.⁴²

Besides this erudite or didactic literature there developed, again mainly in France, another current involving Averroes that can be placed half way between populist works on the history of philosophy and literary entertainment. A typical example of this is Laurent Bordelon's *Théâtre philosophique*. Bordelon (1653–1730) was a highly prolific writer with many cultural interests. Inspired by the *Dialogues of the Dead* by Lucian of Samosata, Bordelon imagines a series of dialogue taking place in the Champs Elysées between 30 pairs of philosophers both ancient (among whom Confucius) and modern, with each dialogue including a brief biographical profile of the two interlocutors. Two thinkers are included from the medieval period: Averroes and Arnald of Villanova. Averroes's interlocutor is the Greek Bion the Borysthenite, known for his paradoxical attitude, which he in turn accuses Averroes of. It is Bion in fact who opens the skirmish, declaring that he admires the singular good fortune (*bon-heur*) enjoyed by Averroes, who has earned himself the title of the Aristotelian commentator by antonomasia without any knowledge of Greek. Averroes replies that his interlocutor's fortune is much greater, since – according to what is recounted among the living – he had initially professed himself to be an atheist, and after a serious illness, had then asked the pardon of the gods.⁴³ Caught out in this way, Bion defends himself by saying he knows nothing of this, but Averroes persists, observing that this ignorance derives from the fact that things did not go the way they are said to have gone. Bion then tries to elude the question with an ironic remark on the Commentator⁴⁴; Averroes does not let go of his prey however and reveals the most hidden and cynical motivations behind Bion's attitude with a taste for psychological analysis that recalls the *maximes* of the duke de La Rochefoucauld and other great French moralists of the seventeenth century:

but, regarding something you said, I think I am not making a rash judgment if I imagine that this repentance at the time of your death is no indication of a better faith than that of an infinite number of people, who come to this place every day from the other world and die regretting their sins because they think they will no longer be able to commit them; they turn

⁴² Villemandy, *Manuductio*, pp. 72–76.

⁴³ See Diogenes Laërtius, *Lives of Eminent Philosophers*, IV, 55–56.

⁴⁴ Laurent Bordelon, *Théâtre philosophique, sur lequel on represente par des Dialogues dans les Champs Elisées les philosophes anciens & modernes, et où l'on rapporte ensuite leurs opinions, leurs reparties, leurs sentences & les plus remarquables actions de leur vie* (Paris: Claude Barbin and Jean Musier, 1692), p. 226: 'A ce que je vois, vous êtes si habile en commentaire, que vous voulez en faire aussi sur cette action, quoy que vous n'en sachiez pas plus toutes les circonstances, que le Grec des ouvrages d'Aristote.'

392 they eyes to the side of the gods, for they have realised that, if they had turned them to the
 393 side of the world, they would have been treated only with indifference and abandoned.
 394 Finally, there are here people who acknowledge in all honesty that they showed virtue and
 395 piety when dying only to make the most of their reputation and leave a good image of them-
 396 selves at the moment of leaving the world.⁴⁵

397 At this point in the dispute Bion can only insist on the *beau talent* displayed by
 398 his interlocutor in the field of the commentary, while Averroes remains in charge of
 399 the situation and points out in a satisfied tone that his adversary has no answer to
 400 make. There follows a biographical profile of Bion and a much shorter one of
 401 Averroes, both taken from Moreri's dictionary.⁴⁶

402 Much longer is the biography of Averroes contained in the *Eloges et caracteres*
 403 *des philosophes les plus célèbres* [sic] by a certain Dupont-Bertris. This work of
 404 philosophical popularization came out in 1726 and presents itself as a continuation
 405 of the *Abrégé des vies des anciens philosophes* attributed to François Fénelon
 406 (1651–1715) and published the same year.⁴⁷ Echoing, at least in the title, famous
 407 works such as *The Characters* by Theophrastus and La Bruyère and Fontenelle's
 408 *Éloges des Académiciens*, Dupont-Bertris gives us a biography of 15 thinkers starting
 409 with Seneca and Plutarch and ending with Leibniz. Among these are also two
 410 Muslims, Avicenna and Averroes, who both receive the same number of pages.⁴⁸
 411 Avicenna is presented as the 'Arabic' thinker 'whose principles best accord with
 412 those of our holy religion,' even though he committed a number of doctrinal errors.⁴⁹
 413 Averroes on the other hand is presented as a rationalist indifferent to any positive
 414 religion, but is nevertheless saved – albeit in general terms – from the accusation of
 415 dangerous impiety.⁵⁰ His principal errors concern the unity of the Intellect, the eter-
 416 nity of the world, and the exclusion of singular individuals from the action of divine
 417 providence. Following Vives, Dupont-Bertris attributes Averroes's great fortune to
 418 the obscurity of his writings, but also recognises in him 'a basis of real merit.' Intent
 419 on going beyond existing prejudices to oscillate between two opposing opinions,

⁴⁵ Ibid., pp. 226–228.

⁴⁶ Ibid., pp. 234–235.

⁴⁷ See Piaia, 'The General Histories of Philosophy in France and in Italy 1650–1750', pp. 151–157.

⁴⁸ Dupont-Bertris, *Eloges et caracteres des philosophes les plus célèbres, depuis la Naissance de Jesus-Christ, jusqu'à présent* (Paris: chez Henri-Simon-Pierre Gissey, 1726), pp. 61–83 (Avicenna), 119–142 (Averroes). These are in practice small 12° pages (*livre de poche* format) each with a mere 720 characters. See Gregorio Piaia, 'Philosophical Historiography in France from Bayle to Deslandes', in *Models of the History of Philosophy, II: From the Cartesian Age to Brucker*, pp. 93–175 (151).

⁴⁹ Ibid., pp. 69 and 73.

⁵⁰ Ibid., pp. 135–138: 'Il n'y a qu'un esprit prévenu, et qu'une imagination échauffée, qui puissent vouloir nous faire croire que les ouvrages d'Averroez rendent impies leurs lecteurs [indeed Albertus Magnus, Thomas Aquinas, Duns Scotus, etc. read them without harming their faith in any way...] ... Convenons de bonne foi, qu'il ne paroît pas que le philosophe Arabe ait goûté aucune religion. C'étoit un philosophe entièrement dévoué aux lumières de sa raison ... L'épithète de scélerat ne convint jamais à Averroez.'

ultimately he appears to take note of them without possessing any particular competence in the matter.⁵¹

Different and more philosophically characterised is the presence of Averroes in the *Anleitung zur Historie der Leibnitzisch-Wolffischen Philosophie* (Frankfurt and Leipzig 1737) by the German physician and philosopher Georg Volckmar Hartmann. This systematic account of the thought of Christian Wolff is preceded by a historical review of the agreement and disagreement between reason and faith, and on the utility of philosophy for theology. In this context references to the work of Averroes as an Aristotelian commentator are not lacking, nor are references to his doctrinal positions (the 'double truth') and those of the Averroists, a sect, notes Hartmann, which was later supplanted by 'corpuscular philosophy.'⁵² This *Historische Nachricht* is similarly preceded by the biographies of the philosophers who have been quoted the most: we thus find Averroes listed after Aristotle and followed by the likes of Descartes, Bayle, Leibniz, Wolff, Johann Joachim Lange (an adversary of Wolff), and Franz Budde. The *Kurtze Nachricht vom dem Leben Averrhöis* quotes the information supplied by Moreri and Bayle on Averroes's anti-religious attitude, mentions his commentaries, and stresses the influence these had on scholastic philosophy and then on the mixing of philosophy and theology. The biographical profile closes with a word on the denial of the immortality of the soul and a reference to the Giunti edition of 1573–1575.⁵³

Let us close our investigation with the first great general history of philosophy written in French, the *Histoire critique de la philosophie* by André-François Boureau-Deslandes (1737), which precedes by several years Brucker's similarly-titled *Historia critica philosophiae*. Highly criticised by Brucker for having failed to distinguish properly between the history of philosophy and the history of culture, in reality Deslandes's work can be placed at the crossroads between seventeenth-century *historia philosophica*, the critical spirit diffused by Pierre Bayle, and that *histoire de l'esprit humain* which was to enjoy great favour in France in the eighteenth century, but also in Germany, thanks to writers like Herder and Christoph Meiners.⁵⁴ The approach which Deslandes takes to historiographical investigation is particularly interesting, because it gives space to judgements on the historical, religious, and cultural context in which the Arabic philosophers worked. In presenting

⁵¹ Ibid., p. 123: 'Tout ce qu'on a dit de merveilleux sur Averroez a occasionné un examen sérieux de ses ouvrages, qui dans les uns a confirmé les premières idées, et qui dans les autres les a entièrement détruites.'

⁵² Georg Volckmar Hartmann, *Anleitung zur Historie der Leibnitzisch-Wolffischen Philosophie*, in Christian Wolff, *Gesammelte Werke*, III. *Materialien und Dokumente*, IV (Hildesheim and New York: Olms, 1973), pp. 138–144.

⁵³ Ibid., pp. 7–8. On the developments of *historia philosophica* in Germany before Kant see also Marco Sgarbi's chapter in this volume.

⁵⁴ See Piaia, 'The General Histories of Philosophy in France and in Italy 1650–1750', pp. 177–211; Mario Longo, 'Scuola di Gottinga e *Popularphilosophie*', in *Storia delle storie generali della filosofia*, ed. Giovanni Santinello, 5 vols (Brescia and Padua: La Scuola and Antenore, 1979–2004), III, pp. 690–694, 722–758.

452 the Islamic world, Deslandes is doubly critical. If, on the one hand, he does not
 453 show much indulgence towards the prophet Muhammad, defined as 'more astute
 454 and dissimulating than bold,' on the other, he criticises the 'ignorance, by the
 455 Christians, of the uses and customs of the Mohammedans,' unjustly accused of
 456 following a corrupt and immoral lifestyle, when it is their habit to carry out regu-
 457 larly that which in the Christian tradition are known as the works of bodily mercy,
 458 and what is more they treat foreigners with the utmost respect; thus, Deslandes
 459 notes with some sarcasm, someone like Abelard, who had to suffer so many tribula-
 460 tions among the Christians, would have lived serenely among the Muslims.⁵⁵

461 Deslandes dwells on the cultural development at the time of the caliph al-Ma'mūn;
 462 indeed the splendour of sciences in Islamic lands causes him to apply the concept of
 463 *horror vacui* to the history of philosophy and to outline a true theory of cultural prog-
 464 ress in which the Arabs seem to play a role equal to that of the Ancient Greeks and
 465 Romans, and the twelfth century (the century of Averroes) is compared respectively to
 466 the century of Alexander the Great and to that of Augustus.⁵⁶ He reviews the various
 467 fields of Arabic culture, understood in a broad sense, beyond the confines of philoso-
 468 phy. As for 'the progress they made in the study of Physics,' it is all referred back to
 469 the 'books of Aristotle,' translated into Arabic 'rather unfaithfully' and becoming the
 470 object of an 'almost divine cult,' in which al-Fārābī, Avicenna and above all Averroes
 471 stand out. This 'servile admiration' for Aristotle ended up corrupting the human mind
 472 and giving rise to a 'tumultuous and barely intelligible philosophy, which was content
 473 with words and formulas invented at will, and which further added to the difficulties
 474 thanks to the obscure way in which attempts were made to resolve them'.⁵⁷ Suited by
 475 nature to speculation, the Arabs became such 'profound metaphysicians' following in
 476 the steps of Aristotle that they were overwhelmed by an infinite number of questions.
 477 They managed, however, to create a semblance of order by recourse to two general
 478 principles, placed at the foundation of their vision of the world:

479 The first, that all the parts of the universe correspond to each other, the higher to the lower
 480 ones, and that they participate in the same soul. The second, that this soul always exists, but
 481 it is divided into an infinite number of parts corresponding to each single being, and these
 482 parts go back to the universal mass when that particular being perishes. This is precisely
 483 Avveroes's opinion, and his enemies find in this view a strong hue of atheism, all the more
 484 so because he does not recognise any other God apart from that universal intelligence, that
 485 ocean of minds in which each human being participates.⁵⁸

⁵⁵ [André-François Boureau Deslandes], *Histoire critique de la philosophie, où l'on traite de son origine, de ses progrès, et des diverses révolutions qui lui sont arrivées jusqu'à notre tems*, 3 vols (Amsterdam: François Changuion, 1737), III, p. 239.

⁵⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 243: 'Il semble que la Nature ne puisse souffrir de vuide, ni d'éclipse. Les siècles où le Christianisme étoit plongé dans une barbarie honteuse, furent les siècles mêmes où les Arabes se distinguèrent le plus. Il faut seulement observer que le douzième est leur siècle favori, leur siècle de distinction. Ils le regardoient de même oeil que les Grecs regardoient celui d'Alexandre, & les Romains celui d'Auguste.'

⁵⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 256, where Deslandes refers explicitly to book V of the *De causis corruptarum artium* by Vives.

⁵⁸ *Ibid.*, III, pp. 257–258.

This passage concludes Deslandes's treatment of the philosopher of Cordoba 486
(though a little further on there is also a reference to his evaluation of theoretical and 487
practical medicine).⁵⁹ Though Deslandes does not express a personal opinion, it is 488
likely that Averroes's marked Aristotelianism aroused in him an attitude of clear 489
prejudiced rejection. We cannot, however, exclude that the libertine Deslandes could 490
have been sensitive to the pantheism (*cet Océan d'Esprits*) which he attributed to 491
Averroes in odour of unbelief. Perhaps the ambiguous game of mirrors that was 492
later to characterise the interpretations of Averroes finds its first expression in 493
Deslandes, as well as in Pierre Bayle. 494

⁵⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 261.

Author Query

Chapter No.: 12 0001629573

Query	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Please provide the opening parenthesis of the sentence “[= Abū ‘Abdallāh Muḥammad or Abū; ‘Abdallāh al-Battānī?]] and Albumasar.”	

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 13 1

Immanuel Kant, Universal Understanding, 2

and the Meaning of Averroism in the German 3

Enlightenment 4

[AU1] **Marco Sgarbi** 5

Ibant obscuri sola sub nocte per umbras, 6
*Perque domos Ditis vacuas et inania regna.*¹ 7

The Presence of Averroistic Motifs in the German Enlightenment 8

Did early modern German thinkers stop paying attention to Averroes? Were there 9
 hidden undercurrents of Averroism during the eighteenth century in Germany? 10
 How did German authors in this period contextualise Averroes and Arabic phi- 11
 losophy within their own cultural heritage? How different was their perception of 12
 Averroes from the actual Ibn Rushd, the theologian, jurist and philosopher of the 13
 Islamic tradition? In this chapter, I will try to answer these questions by focusing 14
 on Kant and the philosophy of the German Enlightenment. It may seem odd to 15
 devote a chapter to ascertaining the nature of Kant's 'Averroism', for it is highly 16
 likely that he had only a smattering of knowledge concerning Averroes's philosophy. 17
 However, it may thus come as a surprise that one of the most important philosophers 18

¹ Virgil, *Aeneid*, 6, 268–269: 'They walked through the dark, in the desolate night populated by shades, along the lifeless regions where Pluto reigns.' Quoted by Kant in his *Träume eines Geistersehers, erläutert durch Träume der Metaphysik* in *Gesammelte Schriften* (Berlin: Deutsche Akademie der Wissenschaften, 1900-), II, p. 329.

M. Sgarbi (✉)

Center for Italian Renaissance Studies, The Harvard University, Cambridge, MA, USA

e-mail: marco.sgarbi@univr.it

19 of the Enlightenment and, indeed, a former pupil of Kant, Johann Gottfried
20 Herder (1744–1803), characterised Kant's critical philosophy as a form of
21 Averroism.²

22 In the past two decades, three authors have investigated possible relationships
23 between Kant and the Averroistic tradition. The first, in an essay entitled 'El "aver-
24 roismo" en la filosofía moral de Kant', published in 1992, is Fernando Montero
25 Moliner. In 1996, Alparslan Açıkgenç wrote on 'Ibn Rushd, Kant and Transcendent
26 Rationality.' Finally, the most recent article on the topic is 'Wandering in the Path of
27 the Averroean System: Is Kant's Doctrine on the *Bewusstsein Überhaupt*
28 Averroistic?' by Philipp W. Rosemann and published in 1999.³ By characterising
29 Kant's philosophy as Averroistic, Moliner intends to refer to the distinctively
30 Kantian emphasis on universal values in ethical philosophy and the ensuing efface-
31 ment of the role of the individual in human action. For Kant, universality is the
32 necessary condition of morality, while individual motivations, including happiness,
33 are as a result incompatible with a true ethical behaviour. It seems therefore that
34 there is no room in this view for the value of individual human experience in the
35 field of moral philosophy.⁴ Açıkgenç's approach is a comparative analysis of
36 Averroes's and Kant's views of rationality, with particular emphasis on the question
37 of the difference between subjective and objective knowledge. Rosemann discusses
38 the nature of the faculties and operations of the soul in Averroes's *Commentarium*
39 *magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros* and in Kant's *Critique of Pure Reason*. His
40 conclusion is that Kant 'could be considered an Averroist, in the sense of being a
41 philosopher whose thought exhibits analogies with the Averroean theory of the
42 agent intellect.'⁵

43 Other scholars had already dealt in a cursory manner with the question of the
44 possible presence of Averroistic motifs in Kant's philosophy. Ernest Renan was
45 the first, in his *Averroès et l'averroïsme* (1852), to put forward an interpretation of
46 the Averroistic system from a critical point of view. He pointed out how Ibn Rushd's

² Johann Gottfried Herder, *Ideen zur Philosophie der Geschichte der Menschheit*, in *Sämtliche Werke*, ed. Bernhard Suphan, 33 vols (Berlin: Weidmann, 1877–1899), XIII, pp. 345–346. For a reconstruction of the principal phases in the Herder-Kant controversy over the meaning of history, see: Rudolf Haym, *Herder nach seinem Leben und seinen Werken dargestellt*, 2 vols (Berlin: Gärtners, 1880–1885), II, pp. 247–262; Philip Merlan, *Monopsychism, Mysticism, Metacosciousness: Problems of the Soul in the Neoaristotelian and Neoplatonic Tradition* (The Hague: Nijhoff, [1963] 1969), p. 114, n. 2; Allen W. Wood, 'Translator's Introduction', in Kant, *Anthropology, History, and Education*, ed. Günter Zöllner and Robert B. Loudon (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007), pp. 121–123.

³ See Fernando Montero Moliner, 'El "averroismo" en la filosofía moral de Kant', *Anales del Seminario de Historia de la Filosofía*, 9 (1992), pp. 39–58; Alparslan Açıkgenç, 'Ibn Rushd, Kant and Transcendent Rationality: A Critical Synthesis', *Alif: Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 164–190; Philipp W. Rosemann, 'Wandering in the Path of the Averroean System: Is Kant's Doctrine on the *Bewusstsein Überhaupt* Averroistic?', *American Catholic Philosophical Quarterly*, 73 (1999), pp. 185–230.

⁴ Moliner, 'El "averroismo" en la filosofía moral de Kant', p. 39.

⁵ Rosemann, 'Wandering in the Path of the Averroean System', pp. 229–230.

notion of the 'unity of the intellect' meant nothing but 'the universality of the principles of pure reason and the unity of the psychological constitution of the entire human species.'⁶ In the field of Kantian studies, the first scholar who noticed the existence of strong similarities between Averroes's rationalism and Kant's criticism was Carl du Prel, in his 'Kants mystische Weltanschauung' published in 1889. Du Prel wrote his essay as an introduction to the *Vorlesungen über Psychologie*, part of Kant's lectures that had been edited by Karl Heinrich Ludwig Pölitiz in 1821 under the title *Vorlesungen über Metaphysik*. In Du Prel's opinion, Kant had maintained the existence of one transcendental subject and each individual human subject could merely be seen as its manifestation in the world. This partial immersion of the transcendental subject in the world represented the reason for the unknowability of the noumena. In addition, Du Prel advocated the pre-existence of the individual in the transcendental subject, its incarnation in a sensible body and its return to the original subject after death. In this view, universal morality, expressed by categorical imperatives, would be the voice of the noumenic subject. In opposition to Du Prel's theses, Heinz Heimsoeth published in 1924 an article on the relationship between personal awareness and the unknowable 'thing-in-itself' in Kant's philosophy ('Persönlichkeitsbewußtsein und Ding an sich in der Kantischen Philosophie'). Heimsoeth ruled out the possibility that Kant's transcendentalism could be interpreted in Averroistic terms. He acknowledged, however, the existence of an irresolvable tension lingering in Kant's ethical philosophy between the scholastic thesis of the individual immortality of the soul and the Averroistic doctrine of the unity of the mind in all human beings.⁷ More recently, in an article on Averroes's view concerning the immortality of humankind ('Averroes über die Unsterblichkeit des Menschengeschlechtes'), Philip Merlan confirmed Herder's original thesis that a form of Averroism can be traced in Kant's moral philosophy. In his 1960 article, Merlan concluded that Herder was right 'when he saw an Averroist in Kant.'⁸ In 1963, in his book *Monopsychism, Mysticism, Metaconsciousness*, Merlan devoted an entire chapter to demonstrating, not always convincingly, that Kant's philosophy was compatible with Averroism. To the list of modern philosophers who could be interpreted in the light of Averroism, he added Wilhelm Windelband, Edmund Husserl, Georg Simmel and Erwin Schrodinger.⁹ Finally, it is worth mentioning

⁶ Ernest Renan, *Averroès et l'averroïsme*, in *Œuvres Complètes*, ed. Henriette Psichari, 10 vols (Paris: Calmann-Lévy, 1947–1961), III, p. 117.

⁷ Heinz Heimsoeth, 'Persönlichkeitsbewußtsein und Ding an sich in der Kantischen Philosophie', in Id., *Studien zur Philosophie Immanuel Kants*, ed. H. Heimsoeth (Bonn: Bouvier, 1971), pp. 227–257. See also Rosemann, 'Wandering in the Path of the Averroean System', p. 187.

⁸ Philip Merlan, 'Averroes über die Unsterblichkeit des Menschengeschlechtes', in *L'homme et son destin d'après les penseurs du Moyen Âge* (Louvain and Paris: Nauwelaerts and Béatrice-Nauwelaerts, 1960), pp. 305–311 (310). See also Rosemann, 'Wandering in the Path of the Averroean System', p. 188.

⁹ Merlan, *Monopsychism, Mysticism, Metaconsciousness*, pp. 114–137.

79 that in issue 16 of the journal *Alif*, published in 1996 and dedicated to Averroes and
80 his legacy in the East and West, at least three articles focus on German philosophy
81 and the Enlightenment.¹⁰

82 All these studies are based on generic comparisons between Kant and Averroes.
83 The aim of this chapter is to determine the nature and extent of Kant's actual knowl-
84 edge of Averroes. To this purpose, it is important to establish what Kant could have
85 known of Averroes's philosophy and to understand what Herder's motivations were in
86 charging Kant with Averroism. My aim, in the rest of this chapter, is to reconstruct the
87 debate over Averroistic doctrines in the German Enlightenment and to draw attention
88 to the sources that were available to Kant at the time. Investigating the Averroistic
89 tradition, or traces of Averroism in the Enlightenment also implies a confrontation
90 with such sweeping philosophical themes as 'monopsychism' and Spinozism.
91 To limit the scope of my investigation, I will focus on the following questions: the
92 mind-body relationship, the immortality of the soul and the oneness of the mind.

93 **Averroism in German Eclecticism, in the Leibnizian-Wolffian** 94 **School, and in the Aristotelian Tradition**

95 Averroistic Aristotelianism was never as widespread in Germany as it was in Italy.
96 In German universities, whether Catholic or Protestant, Averroes was not studied in
97 a systematic manner. Editions of Aristotle containing Averroes's commentaries –
98 the Giuntine, for example – had a scarce circulation. Initially, the lack of circulation
99 was probably due to a certain hostility towards Aristotle on the part of Protestant
100 philosophers and to their preference for the writings of Philipp Melanchthon, who
101 had never mentioned Averroes in his *Liber de anima*. Moreover, the bilingual Latin-
102 Greek edition by Giulio Pace and Isaac Casaubon was preferred to the Giuntine
103 edition for its exegetic and philological interpretation.¹¹

104 Averroes was not, however, completely unknown to German philosophers and
105 teachers of philosophy. Averroistic doctrines circulated with the dissemination of
106 works by Pietro Pomponazzi (1462–1525), but they were met with strong opposi-
107 tions. A significant case is Nikolaus Taurellus (1547–1606), the most important
108 German Aristotelian of his time, who criticised the doctrine of the double truth and
109 of the oneness of the mind in his *Philosophiae triumphus*.¹² Indeed, almost all sev-
110 enteenth-century German Aristotelians embraced the doctrine of the individual
111 immortality of the soul and rejected the theory of the unicity of the intellect.

¹⁰ Charles Butterworth, 'Averroes, Precursor of the Enlightenment?', *Alif: Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 6–18; Harold Stone, 'Why Europeans Stopped Reading Averroës: The Case of Pierre Bayle', *ibid.*, pp. 77–95; Ernest Wolf-Gazo, 'Contextualizing Averroës within the German Hermeneutic Tradition', *ibid.*, pp. 133–163.

¹¹ Stone, 'Why Europeans Stopped Reading Averroës', p. 78.

¹² See Peter Petersen, *Geschichte der aristotelischen Philosophie im protestantischen Deutschland* (Leipzig: Meiner, 1921), p. 256.

Attitudes were much the same at the beginning of the eighteenth century. The period from 1690 to 1720 was characterised in Germany by a renewal of philosophical culture, the most important philosophical events of the time being the growing fame of G.W. Leibniz (1646–1716), the popularity of Christian Thomasius's philosophy, the development of a distinctively German tradition of eclecticism, the increasing influence of Pietism and the emerging of Christian Wolff (1679–1754) as a leading figure in the field of academic philosophy. Philosophers were strongly influenced by religious topics and, as a result, Aristotle and the Aristotelian tradition (including Averroism) became the favourite targets of philosophical criticism. Aristotelians and Averroists were portrayed as typical products of intellectual hubris, in no need of religious revelation and confident in the power of 'unaided' reason. Not only were Aristotelianism and Averroism deemed to be wrong from an intellectual point of view; they were also regarded as perilous sources of atheistic and heretical views.¹³ As shown by Harold Stone, this trend was inaugurated by Pierre Bayle's entry in his *Dictionnaire Historique et Critique* (1697, 1702), a text would turn out to be one of 'the unwitting causes of Averroes's disappearance as a major philosophic influence.' The problem was that 'Bayle left his eighteenth-century readers dubious of the value of philosophic speculation and uncertain about how revelation could provide a basis for rationality.'¹⁴

In this context, Averroism and all doctrines related to it were considered impious and atheist by the proponents of the eclectic movement. The most famous representative of German eclecticism was without doubt Johann Franz Budde (1697–1702), who not only proposed a general renewal of scholastic philosophy and the rejection of all syncretistic solutions, but was also the first to be seriously and systematically involved with the writing of history of philosophy.¹⁵ In his historical works he dealt with Averroism within the Aristotelian tradition and accused both of atheism. Emanuele Coccia has already identified the most important passage that Budde addressed against Averroes in his *Theses theologicae de atheismo et superstitione*, published in 1716:

Averroes's opinion (one should say Aristotle's opinion) admits only one mind – numerically one – in the world, to the point that there would be only one soul in all human beings, is no longer reasonable. How can we conceive of one mind alone in all human beings, without any extension? From such an idea one would infer that this mind is material ... And since human beings have not only different but often contrary thoughts in their minds, one should say that the same mind would contradict itself at the same time and in the same human being ... What can be more ridiculous?¹⁶

¹³ Mario Longo, 'The History of Philosophy from Eclecticism to Pietism', in *Models of the History of Philosophy, II: From the Cartesian Age to Brucker*, ed. Gregorio Paia and Giovanni Santinello (Dordrecht: Springer, 2011), pp. 301–386 (307).

¹⁴ Stone, 'Why Europeans Stopped Reading Averroës', p. 87.

¹⁵ Longo, 'The History of Philosophy from Eclecticism to Pietism', pp. 343–372.

¹⁶ Johann Franz Budde, *Traité de l'athéisme et de la superstition*, trans. L. Philon (Amsterdam: Pierre Mortier, 1740). See also Id., *Theses theologicae de atheismo et superstitione* (Leiden: Johannes Le Mair, 1767), p. 153: 'Quantumvis autem impia pariter ac inepta sit haec sententia [i.e.: unam numero mentem seu unum intellectum, non per singulos divisum, sed communem omnibus inesse], tanta tamen olim Averrois fuit auctoritas, ut plurimi viri docti in eam ingredirentur, praesertim in Italia.' See Emanuele Coccia, *La trasparenza delle immagini: Averroè e l'averroismo* (Milan: Bruno Mondadori, 2005), pp. 24–25.

146 In the *Analecta historiae philosophicae*, published originally in 1706, Budde
 147 took on an influential and original historiographical approach towards Averroism
 148 that was very popular until the end of the eighteenth century. He looked at Averroism
 149 as a form of Spinozism before Spinoza. In Budde's view, Averroism is in good com-
 150 pany with all the Aristotelians, the Eleatics, David of Dinant, Renaissance Neo-
 151 Platonists, Andrea Cesalpino and the Neo-Stoics.¹⁷ Budde's reconstructions and
 152 judgments greatly influenced the perception of Averroism in Germany until the end
 153 of the Enlightenment and, as a result, Averroism tended to become synonymous
 154 with Spinozism.

155 The charges of atheism levelled at Averroism by Johann Joachim Lange (1670–
 156 1744), a student of Budde in Halle, were more specific. In his treatise on the origin
 157 of God and natural religion against the claims of atheism (*Causa Dei et religionis*
 158 *naturalis adversus atheismum*), he criticised Aristotle and the schoolmen, especially
 159 the interpreters of natural philosophy, for the atheistic implications of their doc-
 160 trines. Lange was particularly severe against Aristotle's theory of the eternity of the
 161 world and his denial of divine providence.¹⁸ In his opinion, the mistakes of Averroists
 162 and Aristotelians could all be reduced to two: the eternity of the world and the uni-
 163 city of the intellect for all human beings. Lange devoted the 'Proposition' 11 of the
 164 first part of his treatise ('Protheoria') to an examination of the process through
 165 which Italy, in spite of being a centre for studies during the fifteenth century, turned
 166 out to be a 'factory of atheism' (*atheismi officina*) as a result of its cultural subjec-
 167 tion to scholastic Aristotelianism (*subserviente philosophia Aristotelica*) and subse-
 168 quently spread the 'infection' to the rest of Europe.¹⁹ Among the Averroists and
 169 atheists, Lange included David of Dinant, Girolamo Cardano, Pietro Pomponazzi,
 170 Andrea Cesalpino, Cesare Cremonini and Giordano Bruno.²⁰ Lange extended his
 171 charges of Averroism, Spinozism and fatalisms to an emergent philosophical trend
 172 at the time, the Wolffian school of philosophy.²¹

173 At the beginning of the eighteenth century, the followers of Wolff reacted against
 174 the eclectic movement. To be sure, Christian Wolff was no Averroist. His views
 175 were derived from Leibniz's philosophy, which contained various criticisms of

¹⁷ Johann Franz Budde, *Analecta historiae philosophicae* (Halle: Orphanotrophii, 1724), pp. 309–359.

¹⁸ Johann Joachim Lange, *Causa Dei et religionis naturalis adversus atheismum* (Halle: Orphanotrophii, 1723), pp. 32–36, 129–143.

¹⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 70: 'Quemadmodum Italia, renascentibus seculo XV. Et deinceps litteris, litteratorum sedes fuit praecipua: sic subserviente philosophia Aristotelica etiam atheismi officina facta est; Gallia tamen ac Anglia aliisque regionibus eadem labe ex parte infectis.'

²⁰ *Ibid.*, pp. 71–75.

²¹ *Ibid.*, pp. 16–17: 'Sic dicti *Idealistae* sunt, qui statuunt, nihil existere, nisi spiritus materiae expertes, seu *simplicia*, quae aliis etiam *monades* vocantur. Et cum simplicium suorum naturam in ideisatione (ut ita loquar) seu *perceptione ideali* collocent, mundum materialem et ejus corpora habent pro ideis simplicium, seu pro lusu imaginationis, qualis est in somnio, ordinato tamen.' See *ibid.*, pp. 49, 64.

Averroes's philosophy and of the Aristotelian tradition. In the 'Preliminary Dissertation on the Conformity of Faith with Reason' of his *Theodicy* (1710), Leibniz had referred to a sect of early modern Italian philosophers opposed to the 'conformity of faith with reason' thesis advocated by him. 'They were dubbed "Averroists";'

because they were adherents of a famous Arab author, who was called the Commentator by pre-eminence, and who appeared to be the one of all his race that penetrated furthest into Aristotle's meaning. This Commentator, extending what Greek expositors had already taught, maintained that, according to Aristotle, and even according to reason (and at that time the two were considered almost identical), there was no case for the immortality of the soul.²²

[AU2]

Leibniz examined the reasoning that, in his opinion, had brought about the Averroistic heresy among Italian philosophers during the Renaissance in the following manner:²³

The human kind is eternal, according to Aristotle; therefore, if individual souls die not, one must resort to the metempsychosis rejected by that philosopher. Or, if there are always new souls, one must admit the infinity of these souls existing from all eternity; but actual infinity is impossible, according to the doctrine of the same Aristotle. Therefore it is a necessary conclusion that the souls, that is, the forms of organic bodies, must perish with the bodies, or at least this must happen to the passive understanding that belongs to each one individually. Thus there will only remain the active understanding common to all men, which according to Aristotle comes from outside, and which must work wheresoever the organs are suitably disposed; even as the wind produces a kind of music when it is blown into properly adjusted organ pipes.²⁴

Leibniz further added that

others who adhered less to Aristotle went so far as to advocate a universal soul forming the ocean of all individual souls, and believed this universal soul alone capable of subsisting, whilst individual souls are born and die. According to this opinion the souls of animals are born by being separated like drops from their ocean, when they find a body, which they can animate; and they die by being reunited to the ocean of souls when the body is destroyed, as streams are lost in the sea. Many even went so far as to believe that God is that universal soul, although others thought that this soul was subordinate and created.²⁵

Leibniz called the supporters of this philosophical doctrine 'monopsychites', and pointed out that such an opinion was 'almost universally accepted amongst scholars in Persia and in the States of the Grand Mogul.' This view had then been resumed

²²G. W. Leibniz, *Essais de theodicée sur la bonté de dieu, la liberté de l'homme et l'origine du mal*, in *Die philosophischen Schriften*, ed. C. J. Gerhardt, 7 vols (Berlin: Weidmann, 1885; repr. Hildesheim: Olms 1960–1961), VI, p. 53; *Theodicy*, ed. Austin Farrer, trans. E. M. Huggard, La Salle, IL: Open Court, 1985), pp. 77–78.

²³It may be worth pointing out that Leibniz's argument is strikingly similar to the one advanced by Girolamo Cardano in his *De immortalitate animorum* (1545). See José Manuel Valverde's chapter in this volume.

²⁴Leibniz, *Essais de theodicée*, in *Die philosophischen Schriften*, VI, p. 53; *Theodicy*, pp. 77–78.

²⁵Leibniz, *Essais de theodicée*, in *Die philosophischen Schriften*, VI, p. 54; *Theodicy*, p. 78.

211 by Spinoza, who, Leibniz continued, 'recognises only one substance in the world,
 212 whereof individual souls are but transient modifications.'²⁶ Worse than the Averroistic
 213 position was for Leibniz that held by the Buddhists, who reduced everything to
 214 nothingness, considered to be the source of all things.²⁷ At least, thought Leibniz,
 215 the Averroists maintained that everything was bound to fade away into one active
 216 mind. Among the Averroists, Leibniz included Pietro Pomponazzi, Cesare Cremonini
 217 and Andrea Cesalpino. He then detected traces of Averroism in Claude Guillermet
 218 de Bérigard and Gabriel Naudé. The *Naudaeana*, in particular, showed that
 219 Averroism was alive and well in Italy at that time.²⁸

220 In Leibniz's opinion, the Averroistic doctrines were indefensible and even extrav-
 221 agant. He believed that his system of pre-established harmony would be the best
 222 cure for this evil:

223 For it shows that there are necessarily simple substances without extension, scattered
 224 throughout all Nature; that these substances must exist independently except from God; and
 225 that they are never separated from organic body. Those who believe that souls capable of
 226 feeling, but incapable of reason are mortal, or who maintain that none but reasoning souls
 227 can have feeling, Christians in general and Cartesians in particular, offer a handle to the
 228 Monopsychites and to Averroists.²⁹

229 To strengthen his demonstration, Leibniz added a well-known argument concern-
 230 ing the soul of animals, for 'it will ever be difficult to persuade men that beasts feel
 231 nothing; and once the admission has been made that that which is capable of feeling
 232 can die, it is difficult to found upon reason a proof of the immortality of our souls.'³⁰

233 In the tradition of Wolffian philosophy – the kind of philosophy which shaped
 234 Kant's philosophical apprenticeship –, Averroism played a relevant role in the dis-
 235 cussion of such themes as pre-established harmony, the relationship between the
 236 mind and the body and the immortality of the soul. Indeed, Wolffian philosophers
 237 paid more attention to Averroistic and monopsychistic themes than the eclectic
 238 philosophers ever did. In keeping with the principles of Wolff's metaphysics, a
 239 number of philosophers believed that the thorniest questions in Averroes's philoso-
 240 phy would disappear once the mind had been identified with the monad and its
 241 immortality accepted. This was the opinion advocated by Johann Peter Reusch
 242 (1691–1758), Friedrich Christian Baumeister (1709–1785), Georg Bernhard
 243 Bilfinger (1693–1750) and Alexander Gottlieb Baumgarten (1714–1762), among
 244 others, whose works were read and commented upon by Kant in his lectures.

245 To complete this reconstruction of the reception of Averroism in the cultural
 246 milieu prior to Kant, it is necessary to refer briefly to the most important philosophical
 247 current in Königsberg until the first two decades of the eighteenth century in
 248 Königsberg, the so-called 'pure Aristotelianism'. The movement of 'pure

²⁶ Leibniz, *Essais de theodicée*, in *Die philosophischen Schriften*, VI, p. 55; *Theodicy*, p. 79.

²⁷ Leibniz, *Essais de theodicée*, in *Die philosophischen Schriften*, VI, p. 56; *Theodicy*, p. 80.

²⁸ Leibniz, *Essais de theodicée*, in *Die philosophischen Schriften*, VI, p. 57; *Theodicy*, p. 81.

²⁹ Leibniz, *Essais de theodicée*, in *Die philosophischen Schriften*, VI, p. 56; *Theodicy*, p. 80.

³⁰ *Ibid.* See also Leibniz, *Considerations sur la doctrine d'un Esprit Universel Unique*, in *Die philosophischen Schriften*, VI, p. 529–538 (529).

Aristotelianism' had originated in Padua from the Alexandrinistic interpretation of Aristotle and became very popular in German universities thanks the works of Jacopo Zabarella (1532–1589) and Giulio Pace (1550–1631), who had been acquainted with the Averroistic reading of Aristotle. Averroistic doctrines were discussed in particular in the course of lectures on natural philosophy, every time the question of the origin and immortality of human soul was raised. Paul Rabe (1656–1713), the last significant Aristotelian of Königsberg, tried to make sense of the most characteristic Averroistic positions in his *Cursus philosophicus* (1704), a comprehensive companion to Aristotelian philosophy. In his opinion, the passive or material intellect was not the same as the human soul and, like the active intellect, it could be separated from the body.³¹ However, since only the active intellect existed separately as immortal and eternal, the possibility of interpreting the passive and active intellect as one substance remained open. While the universal principles of knowledge were the potential object of the passive intellect, the active intellect represented the eternal actualisation of those principles.³² In spite of Rabe's lingering interest in the Averroistic interpretation of Aristotle, it is safe to say that Königsberg Aristotelianism had long moved away from Averroes.

Was Kant an Averroist?

The influence of Leibniz and Wolff on Kant's perception of Averroism are particularly evident in his lectures on metaphysics based on Baumgarten's *Metaphysica* (1739). Baumgarten addressed the question of the origin of the human soul and its immortality in the section dedicated to rational psychology, as it was usual in the Wolffian school. Eight different versions of Kant's lectures on metaphysics exist spanning from the early 1760s to the late 1790s. One might say that, for more than 30 years, Kant was exposed to the question of Averroism in his lectures, even if only indirectly. One of the versions of the lectures, the oldest one dated 1762–1764, is of particular interest here because it was transcribed by Herder, who 20 years later would accuse Kant of Averroism.³³ The origins of this accusation can probably be traced back to these lectures.

³¹ Paul Rabe, *Cursus philosophicus, seu compendium praecipuarum scientiarum philosophicarum* (Königsberg: Boye, 1703), p. 1141. On Rabe, see Riccardo Pozzo, 'Tracce zabarelliane nella logica kantiana', *Fenomenologia e Società*, 18 (1995), pp. 58–69; Id., 'Kant on the Five Intellectual Virtues', in *The Impact of Aristotelianism on Modern Philosophy*, ed. Riccardo Pozzo (Washington, DC: The Catholic University of America Press, 2004), pp. 173–192 (pp. 181–186); Id., 'L'ontologia nei manuali di metafisica della *Aufklärung*', *Quaestio*, 9 (2009), pp. 285–301; Marco Sgarbi, 'Kant, Rabe e la logica aristotelica', *Rivista di Storia della Filosofia*, 64 (2009), pp. 269–293; Id., 'Metaphysics in Königsberg Prior to Kant (1703–1770)', *Trans/Form/Ação*, 33 (2010), pp. 31–64; Id., *Logica e metafisica nel Kant precritico: L'ambiente intellettuale di Königsberg e la formazione della filosofia kantiana* (Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang, 2010); Id. *La Kritik der reinen Vernunft nel contesto della tradizione logica aristotelica* (Hildesheim: Olms, 2010).

³² Rabe, *Cursus philosophicus*, p. 1142.

³³ See Immanuel Kant, *Metaphysik Herder*, in *Gesammelte Schriften*, XXVIII, pp. 3–166.

277 All the lectures on metaphysics are more or less the same, even Kant progressively
 278 added his own personal thoughts on Baumgarten's book. The most significant courses
 279 of metaphysics are the *Metaphysik Mrongovius* and the *Metaphysik Volckmann*, dat-
 280 able around 1782 and 1784. It is a recurrent feature that the final chapter of the lectures
 281 deals with the problem of the immortality of the soul. In Mrongovius's transcription,
 282 the chapter begins with the following questions: 'Will the soul continue to live? 1.
 283 Will it continue as a human being (*Mensch*) or as an intelligence (*Intelligenz*)? 2. Does
 284 this survival derive from the constitution of its nature (and therefore it is truly immor-
 285 tal), or from a special divine decree? 3. Will this survival be general or particular?'³⁴
 286 Each of these questions provides evidence to determine whether Kant can be charac-
 287 terised as an Averroist. The answers remained the same for the 30 years during which
 288 he lectured on metaphysics. In his rational psychology, Kant demonstrated the persis-
 289 tence of the soul as substance, its survival after death as intelligence and its survival as
 290 a person.³⁵ The soul of human beings survives as an intelligence to preserve the founda-
 291 tions of ethical life. The survival of the human beings concerns the individual and
 292 not the species, even if the condition of the soul before its birth was devoid of self-
 293 consciousness and consciousness of the world. As such, the soul lacks identity and is
 294 part of the *corpus mysticum*, i.e., the intelligible world.³⁶ Thus it would appear that,
 295 according to Kant, before their birth, minds are part of a universal intellect, and after
 296 their birth, they become separated from the others. If so, one might say that Kant's
 297 Averroism would be *a parte ante* and not *a parte post*. And yet Herder accused Kant
 298 of being a fully-fledged Averroist.³⁷ Can we say that a blatant form of misunderstanding
 299 lies behind such a charge?

300 In 1766, some years after Herder's transcription, Kant published a fascinating
 301 essay, the *Träume eines Geistersehers, erläutert durch Träume der Metaphysik*. In
 302 this text, which deals with the relationship between the sensible and the intelligible
 303 world, Kant set out to explain the allegedly supernatural experiences of Emanuel
 304 Swedenborg, who claimed to be able to talk with immaterial spirits. Although he
 305 declared himself unable to describe them, Kant acknowledged the existence of
 306 immaterial beings in the world. '[I]mmediately united with each other,' he argued,
 307 'they might form, perhaps, a great whole which might be called the immaterial
 308 world (*mundus intelligibilis*),' ruled by spiritual laws (*Wirkungsgesetze pneuma-*
 309 *tisch*).³⁸ This immaterial world, Kant went on to say, 'can be regarded as a whole
 310 existing by itself.'³⁹ He then specified the key feature of this world: it 'would primarily

³⁴ Immanuel Kant, *Metaphysik Mrongovius*, in *Gesammelte Schriften*, XXIX, p. 910.

³⁵ Kant, *Metaphysik Mrongovius*, p. 912.

³⁶ Immanuel Kant, *Metaphysik LI*, in *Gesammelte Schriften*, XXVIII, p. 284.

³⁷ Laura Anna Macor, *Die Bestimmung des Menschen (1748–1800). Eine Begriffsgeschichte* (Stuttgart-Bad Cannstatt: Frommann-Holzboog, forthcoming), § 34.b.

³⁸ Immanuel Kant, *Träume eines Geistersehers, erläutert durch Träume der Metaphysik* in *Gesammelte Schriften*, II, p. 329; *Dreams of a Spirit-Seer*, ed. Frank Sewall, trans. E. F. Goerwitz (Bristol: Thoemmes Press, 1992), p. 56.

³⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 330 [trans., p. 56].

comprise all created intelligences. Some of these are combined with matter, thus forming a person, and some not.⁴⁰ The intelligible world, or *corpus mysticum*, would then be the whole body of intelligences. In the *Träume eines Geistersehers*, Kant maintained that the human mind was the only one to possess a real intelligence already in its sensible life, and, for this reason, we should regard

the human soul as being conjoined in its present life with two worlds at the same time, of which it clearly perceives only the material world, in so far as it is conjoined with a body, and thus forms a personal unit. But, as a member of the spiritual world, it receives and gives out the pure influences of immaterial natures.⁴¹

Kant added that,

[a]mong the forces which move the human heart, some of the most powerful seem to lie outside of it. They consequently are not mere means to selfishness and private interest, which would be an aim lying inside of man himself, but they incline our emotions to place the focus in which they combine outside of us, in other rational beings.⁴²

For Kant, these forces promote the tendency to compare our judgment on what is good or true with the judgment of others, combining such opinions into a harmonious whole. For Kant, this was the proof that our own judgment depends upon 'the common human understanding (*allgemeinen menschlichen Verstande*), and it becomes a reason for ascribing to the whole of thinking beings (*dem Ganzen denkender Wesen*) a sort of unity of reason (*eine Art von Vernunftseinheit*).'⁴³ This theory of universal human understanding produced in turn the rule of the general will, which confers upon the world of all thinking beings 'a *moral unity*, and a systematic constitution according to purely spiritual laws.'⁴⁴ Kant emphasised the unity of all minds in one universal mind (the *Geisterwelt*) and regarded it as the foundation of morality. In his opinion, the rule of the general will and the common human understanding could be compared to some sort of Newtonian law of gravity.⁴⁵ In all likelihood, when writing the *Träume eines Geistersehers*, Kant had been influenced by the ideas of the English moralists Andrew Michael Ramsay (1686–1743) and George Cheyne (1673–1743), who believed in the existence of a moral 'gravity.'⁴⁶ Through the years, Kant changed his mind and developed a formal theory of a moral universal which was first formulated in the 1784 pamphlet *Idee zu einer allgemeinen Geschichte in weltbürgerlicher Absicht* ('Idea for a Universal History with a

⁴⁰ Ibid., p. 332 [trans., p. 59].

⁴¹ Ibid., p. 332 [trans., p. 60].

⁴² Ibid., p. 334 [trans., p. 62].

⁴³ Ibid. [trans., p. 63 (with slight change to Goerwitz's translation)].

⁴⁴ Ibid., p. 335 [trans., p. 64].

⁴⁵ Ibid., pp. 335–336 [trans., pp. 65–66].

⁴⁶ See Giorgio Tonelli, 'Kant's Ethics as a Part of Metaphysics: A Possible Newtonian Suggestion? With Some Comments on Kant's "Dream of a Seer"', in *Philosophy and the Civilizing Arts: Essays Presented to Herbert W. Schneider*, ed. Craig Walton and John Peter Anton (Athens, OH: Ohio University Press, 1974), pp. 236–263.

343 Cosmopolitan Aim'), precisely the work that would trigger Herder's critical response
 344 concerning the alleged presence of Averroistic themes in Kant's philosophy. Herder's
 345 discussion in *Ideen zur Philosophie der Geschichte der Menschheit* is particularly
 346 intriguing and is worth reporting in full:

347 We can speak, therefore, of an education of mankind. Every individual only becomes man
 348 by means of education, and the whole species lives solely as this chain of individuals. To be
 349 sure, if anyone [Herder is referring here to Kant], in speaking of the education of mankind,
 350 should mean the education of the species as a whole and not that of so many individuals
 351 comprising it, he would be wholly unintelligible to me. For 'species' and 'genus' are merely
 352 abstract concepts, empty sounds, unless they refer to individual beings. Thus, if I were to
 353 attribute to such abstract concepts every perfection, culture and enlightenment of which
 354 man is capable, I should contribute to the actual history of man no more than if I were to
 355 speak of animalkind, stonekind and metalkind, and decorate them with all the noblest quali-
 356 ties which, if they really existed, in any one single individual or entity, would cancel each
 357 other out. Our philosophy of history shall not pursue the path of the Averroan system,
 358 according to which the whole human species possess but one mind (and that of a low order),
 359 which is distributed to individuals only piecemeal.⁴⁷

360 Kant replied to these criticisms in the review of Herder's *Ideen* he published in
 361 1785 in the *Allgemeine Litteraturzeitung*. Kant argued ironically that if Herder were
 362 right, then an exponent of such philosophy (i.e., Averroistic philosophy) would be
 363 an 'evil' man.⁴⁸ He then defended himself by stating that

364 If 'the human species' signifies the whole of a series of generations going (indeterminably)
 365 into the infinite (as this meaning is entirely customary), and it is assumed that this series
 366 ceaselessly approximates the line of its destiny running alongside it, then it is not to utter a
 367 contradiction to say that in all its parts it is asymptotic to this line and yet on the whole that
 368 it will coincide with it, in other words, that no member of all the generations of humankind,
 369 but only the species will fully reach its destiny.⁴⁹

370 Kant was annoyed less by Herder's misunderstanding of his thought than by his
 371 being accused of Averroism. Kant characterised the misunderstanding as 'a trifle'.
 372 More important for him was the fact that Herder seemed to be an author 'to whom
 373 everything that has been given out previously as philosophy has often been so
 374 displeasing.'⁵⁰

375 But what might Kant have said in his writing of 1784? Could Herder's charge
 376 have derived from reading the *Träume eines Geistersehers*? In the *Idee*, Kant main-
 377 tained that individuals, even whole nations, when following their purposes, proceed

⁴⁷ Herder, *Ideen zur Philosophie der Geschichte der Menschheit*, pp. 345–346; trans. F. M. Barnard, in *Herder on Social and Political Culture* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1969), p. 312.

⁴⁸ Immanuel Kant, 'Recensionen von J. G. Herders *Ideen zur Philosophie der Geschichte der Menschheit*, Theil 1.2.', in *Gesammelte Schriften*, VIII, p. 65; 'Review of J. G. Herder's *Ideas for the Philosophy of the History of Humanity*. Parts 1 and 2', trans. Allen W. Wood, in Kant, *Anthropology, History, and Education*, p. 142.

⁴⁹ Ibid.

⁵⁰ Ibid.

unconsciously towards a natural goal.⁵¹ Human beings need countless series of generations, each of which passes its own 'enlightenment' to its successor in order finally to bring the seeds of 'enlightenment' to complete fulfilment in a humankind which is completely consonant with nature's purpose.⁵² In the human being (as the only rational creature on earth) the natural dispositions that are directed to the use of reason are to be fully developed in the kind, not in the individual.⁵³ It is therefore safe to say that Kant elaborated a philosophical view according to which human reason in its universality cannot be developed in the individual, but only in the species. The history of human beings should become the history of humankind, namely the history of universal reason in its making. Here it is important to stress the conditional tense, for Kant is aware that universal reason is simply a hypothetical condition in order for the human beings to act morally. There is no really existing universal mind or reason for Kant.

Kant's non-Averroism is apparent in his later views on ethics in the *Grundlegung zur Metaphysik der Sitten* ('Groundwork for the Metaphysics of Morals'), published in 1785. Of the eight formulations of the moral law, the so-called 'formula of humanity as an end in itself' reveals traces of Averroistic thought. The formula states that one should act in such a way that humanity, whether in one's own person or in the person of any other, be always treated as an end in itself, and never as a means to an end.⁵⁴ Allen Wood has reconstructed the logical steps underlying the inference. The ground of the moral principle is the principle according to which rational nature exists as an end in itself – this is how human beings necessarily represent their own existence. Each rational being, however, also represents his or her existence by relying on precisely the same rational ground which is valid for another; therefore, this rational ground works as an objective principle, from which, as a supreme practical ground, all laws of the will must be derived. Kant's famous practical imperative – to use humanity always as an end, never as a means – revolves around this notion of humanity as the embodiment of universal reason.⁵⁵

Kant champions the existence of a universal reason according to which human beings must act 'as if' this universal reason is the reason of every individual human being who decides to act. Universal rationality, insofar as it represents humankind, would therefore be in the individual and would be the source of its actions. As a categorical imperative, it is a universal rule and is therefore not constitutive for the individual. Universal rationality is an end towards which we must tend if we want to act in a moral way, but not an actual object existing in reality. As a result, Kantian

⁵¹ Immanuel Kant, *Idee zu einer allgemeinen Geschichte in weltbürgerlicher Absicht*, in *Gesammelte Schriften*, VIII, pp. 17–31; *Idea for a Universal History with a Cosmopolitan Aim*, trans. Allen W. Wood, pp. 108–120.

⁵² Kant, *Idee zu einer allgemeinen Geschichte*, p. 17; *Idea for a Universal History*, pp. 108–109.

⁵³ Kant, *Idee zu einer allgemeinen Geschichte*, pp. 18–19; *Idea for a Universal History*, pp. 109–110.

⁵⁴ Immanuel Kant, *Grundlegung zur Metaphysik der Sitten*, in *Gesammelte Schriften*, IV, p. 429.

⁵⁵ Allen W. Wood, *Kant's Ethical Thought* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999), pp. 124–125.

412 Averroism, if it can indeed be called Averroism, is only hypothetical and regulative.
 413 It is precisely along these lines that Moliner developed his reflections on Kant's
 414 Averroism in moral philosophy.

415 Herder was not the only one to charge Kant with Averroism. Merlan has already
 416 noticed that in 1797 Karl Arnold Wilmans, a student of medicine in Halle, wrote
 417 a dissertation entitled *De similitudine inter mysticismum purum et Kantianam reli-*
 418 *gionis doctrinam* ('On the Similarity between Pure Mysticism and the Kant's
 419 Religious Doctrine'), according to which Kantian doctrines bore a strong resem-
 420 blance to Averroism and mysticism.⁵⁶ Wilmans supported the idea that Kant was
 421 close to the Averroistic doctrine because in his moral thought human beings, once
 422 separated from their bodies, share their minds with the rest of humankind.
 423 Wilmans's dissertation would have been just one of the many dissertations of the
 424 time on Kant's religious thought, if Kant himself had not included a letter of
 425 Wilmans as an appendix to his *Der Streit der Fakultäten* ('The Conflict of the
 426 Faculties').⁵⁷ Having in mind Herder's criticisms, Kant understood Wilmans posi-
 427 tion, but disagreed with him nonetheless, stating that he did not want agree with
 428 him 'entirely'.⁵⁸ The word 'entirely' is extremely significant, because it means
 429 that in a broader sense Kant agreed with Wilmans. Wilmans wrote a letter to Kant
 430 on 20 January 1798. We know part of the content of this letter from Kant's reply
 431 of on 4 May 1799.⁵⁹ Here Kant made clear that he could not accept the distinction
 432 between the materiality of the understanding (*Verstand*) and the immateriality of
 433 reason (*Vernunft*), a distinction that Wilmans had presented as characteristic of
 434 the Kantian philosophy. Kant rejected the charge that his philosophical system
 435 created a rift within the subject between the understanding (governing the process
 436 of organizing the multiplicity of representations) and reason (in charge of trans-
 437 forming the unity of the experience into a consciousness). It is evident that
 438 Wilmans's charge was that of Averroism, i.e., of assuming a real distinction
 439 between a material singular understanding for each individual and a universal
 440 reason for the whole of humankind.⁶⁰ Kant rejected Wilmans's interpretation, but
 441 he did not provide any further explanation. In the meantime, Reinhold Bernhard
 442 Jachmann (1767–1843), a student of Kant, replied to the accusations of Averroism
 443 and mysticism in his book *Prüfung der Kantischen Religionsphilosophie in*
 444 *Hinsicht auf die ihr beygelegte Aehnlichkeit mit dem reinen Mystizism*
 445 ('Examination of Kant's Philosophy of Religion with Respect to the Alleged
 446 Similarity to Pure Mysticism'), published in 1800. Since Kant wrote the preface

⁵⁶ Merlan, *Monopsychism, Mysticism, Metaconsciousness*, p. 131.

⁵⁷ Karl Arnold Wilmans, 'Anhang von einer reinen Mystik in der Religion', in Kant, *Gesammelte Schriften*, VII, pp. 69–75.

⁵⁸ Immanuel Kant, *Der Streit der philosophischen Facultät mit der theologischen*, in *Gesammelte Schriften*, VII, p. 69.

⁵⁹ Immanuel Kant to Karl Arnold Wilmans, in *Gesammelte Schriften*, XII, pp. 281–282.

⁶⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 282.

to Jachmann's book, one might assume that he was in agreement with his former student in rejecting possible Averroistic and mystical interpretations of his philosophy.⁶¹

One might therefore conclude that, while Kant was no Averroen (and certainly no Averroist), his philosophy, nevertheless, lent itself to possible Averroist interpretations. One might wonder why other philosophers at the time like Schelling or Hegel have never been directly charged with Averroism. One possible reason may lie in the contemporary perception of Kant as a representative of the Enlightenment. Considered from this philosophical point of view, the doctrine of the equality of all human beings based on the universal scope of their reasons could no longer be taken as a form of Averroism.

⁶¹ Immanuel Kant, 'Vorrede' to Reinhold Bernhard Jachmann's *Prüfung der Kantischen Religionsphilosophie*, in *Gesammelte Schriften*, VIII, 8, p. 441.

Author Queries

Chapter No.: 13 0001629574

Queries	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Please confirm the affiliation of the author "Marco Sgarbi."	
AU2	Please provide the opening parenthesis of the sentence "trans. E. M. Huggard, La Salle, IL: Open Court, 1985)..."	

Uncorrected Proof

Part III	1
Averroism and Modernity	2

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 14

Ernest Renan and Averroism: The Story of a Misinterpretation

John Marenbon

Ernest Renan described Averroism as ‘the story of an enormous misinterpretation.’ There is, then, some poetic justice in the fact that his own book on the subject, *Averroès et l’averroïsme*, has itself been misunderstood. Renan specialists in general, give it no more than a passing mention, because it was written as a thesis and falls outside the field where he made his name, Old and New Testament history.¹ Henriette Psychari, the editor of Renan’s collected works (and his grandson’s sister-in-law), does not even think the book worth a mention.² There is one exception: Jules Chaix-Ruy has looked in detail at how Renan collected the sources for Averroism, and at his correspondence about the subject.³ But the links he draws between this book and Renan’s later work, though interesting, are very different

¹ For example, Charles Chauvin, *Renan (1823–1892)* (Paris: Desclée de Brouwer, 2000) 4 lines on *Averroès et l’averroïsme* [AA] (p. 35); Henri Peyre, *Renan* (Paris: Presses universitaires de France, 1969) 2 lines on AA (p. 14); Harold W. Wardman, *Ernest Renan: A Critical Biography* (London: Athlone Press, 1964) 3 lines on AA (p. 62); François Millepierres, *La Vie d’Ernest Renan, sage d’Occident* (Paris: Rivière, 1961) 3 lines on AA (p. 199); Johannes Tielroy, *Ernest Renan, sa vie et ses œuvres* (Paris: Mercure de France, 1958) AA not mentioned; Lewis F. Mott, *Ernest Renan* (London: Appleby, 1923) 3 lines on AA, emphasizing the cost of printing it; Jean Pommier (*Renan d’après des documents inédits* (Paris: Perrin, 1923) dedicates a paragraph to AA (pp. 94–95), where he finds links with Renan’s crisis of faith, his trip to Italy and the play, *Caliban*, which he went on to write).

² Henriette Psychari, *Renan d’après lui-même* (Paris: Plon, 1937).

³ Jules Chaix-Ruy, “L’Avverroès” d’Ernest Renan’, *Annales de l’Institut d’études orientales*, 8 (1949–50), pp. 5–60; *Ernest Renan* (Paris: Vitte, 1956), pp. 152–179. Chaix-Ruy concentrates on themes in Averroès’s philosophy that Renan, he believes, adopted into his own thought, and on Renan’s view that the story of Islamic civilization shows what happens when religious faith succeeds finally in stifling philosophical speculation.

J. Marenbon (✉)
Trinity College, Cambridge University,
Cambridge, CB2 1TQ, UK
e-mail: jm258@cam.ac.uk

15 from those that will be explored here. By contrast with its lack of impact on studies
 16 of Renan himself, *Averroès et l'averroïsme* has cast a long shadow over medieval-
 17 ists, and it has been discussed quite frequently by those interested in Averroism.⁴
 18 But the notion of Averroism which subsequent historians have developed, criti-
 19 cised and, more recently, rejected is not, as it may appear, Renan's, but derives
 20 rather from a distortion of his subtle approach to intellectual history. The one dis-
 21 cussion that does justice to Renan's method is a Preface by Alain de Libera.⁵ The
 22 following pages attempt to go further along the path set by de Libera, looking more
 23 closely at the place of *Averroès et l'averroïsme* back within the context of Renan's
 24 intellectual development and, in doing so, to bring out the subtle methodology
 25 which makes the book, though in many respects out-dated, one that still has lessons
 26 for medievalists.

27 **Renan's Works and Averroès et l'Averroïsme**

28 Renan is famous, above all, as the author of the *Vie de Jésus*, first published in 1863,
 29 which was translated immediately into 10 languages and sold 60,000 copies within
 30 5 months and nearly 200,000 within 4 years of its publication.⁶ The book's last
 31 sentence – Renan, a consummate rhetorician, was a master of pointed conclusions
 32 – gives a good idea why. 'All centuries to come,' he writes, 'will proclaim that,
 33 among the sons of men, none greater than Jesus was ever born.' Jesus, as the preced-
 34 ing 450 pages had made clear, was not the Son of God, yet in his life, that of an
 35 ordinary mortal, he not only symbolised, but realised the highest moral ideal: the
 36 *Vie de Jésus* compensated its readers for its denial of the supernatural with a credi-
 37 ble and sympathetic human hero. Renan went on to write an 8-volume *Histoire des*
 38 *origines du Christianisme* (1866-1881) and a 5-volume *Histoire du peuple d'Israël*
 39 (1887-1893), as well as publishing on philosophical matters, problems of the day
 40 and politics as well as memoirs and even drama.

41 *La Vie de Jésus* was the outcome of the spiritual and intellectual journey that
 42 had taken him from his modest family in the small Breton town of Tréguier in 1823
 43 to the Collège de France. Like many intellectually gifted boys from such back-
 44 grounds, the priesthood was seen as his natural destiny, a vocation encouraged by
 45 his pious and ambitious mother; and a rich donor enabled him to have a seminary
 46 education. At St Sulpice, in his early twenties, Renan began to acquire the reputa-

⁴ Jean-Paul Charnet, 'Le dernier surgeon de l'Averroïsme en occident: *Averroès et l'Averroïsme* de Renan', in *Multiple Averroès*, ed. Jean Jolivet (Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 1978), pp. 333–348 [Charnet is a specialist on Islamic history and politics]; Pierre Thillet, 'Renan, Averroès et l'Averroïsme', in *Mémorial Ernest Renan*, ed. Jean Balcou (Paris: Champion, 1993), pp. 239–250 [Thillet is an historian of ancient philosophy and its Arabic tradition]; Maurice-Ruben Hayoun, *Renan, la Bible et les juifs* (Paris: Arléa, 2008), pp. 246–257.

⁵ Reprint of 2nd edn of *Averroès et l'averroïsme* by Maisonneuve & Larose, Paris (2002), pp. 7–19.

⁶ Antoine Albalat, *La Vie de Jésus d'Ernest Renan* (Paris: Société française d'éditions littéraires et techniques, 1933), pp. 62–63.

tion of a formidable Hebrew and Syriac specialist, but also, especially on account of his study of the biblical evidence, to have serious doubts about his faith – especially about the divinity of Jesus Christ. He agreed, hesitantly, to accept the tonsure and Minor Orders, but by autumn 1845, he had decided, with the financial support of Henriette, his self-sacrificing, free-thinking sister, to leave St Sulpice and his preparation for the priesthood and make his career in the university.

For this career, and despite his reputation in oriental languages, he needed academic qualifications, and he set about taking the *licence* (1846), the *agrégation* in Philosophy, in which he did brilliantly (1848), and then planning and writing the two theses which were needed for him to become a *docteur ès lettres*. In June 1847, Renan wrote in a letter to his Henriette, whom acted as his confidante, that he had decided on their subjects and that nothing would now make him change them.⁷ The French thesis was to be on the *History of Greek Studies among the Peoples of the East*, and he announced an ambitious plan for it, covering the Jewish, Syriac, Arabic, Persian, Georgian, Armenian and even Indian traditions. The Latin thesis was to be on Averroes ‘the famous Arab philosopher, seen as a commentator on Aristotle and especially on the destiny of Averroism and its influence on scholastic philosophy.’ He explains that he had been encouraged to take on the subject because it would please Victor Cousin – a figure of immense power in the world of French academic philosophy at the time – who was known to have complained that there was no work on the subject accessible to those ignorant of ‘eastern languages’.⁸ In fact, Renan ended up by turning this study of Averroes and Averroism into his French thesis. It was first published in 1852, and it was the first of his many books to appear. Given, then, that it was, apparently a youthful work, written for a specific academic purpose, on a subject chosen at least in part to please a powerful potential patron, on a subject outside his main sphere of interest, are the Renan specialists not right to pay such little attention to *Averroès et l’averroïsme*?

Yet these details about the origins of *Averroès et l’averroïsme* are misleading if they are not set in context. Although it was his first published book, Renan had already written three major works. He had completed a version of his *Histoire générale et système comparé des langues sémitiques* – an extraordinary and lengthy demonstration of his philological skills – by 1847, when he submitted it for and won the Prix Volney.⁹ He had also completed by 1848 another long study – the recent edition runs to over 700 pages – of the study of Greek in the medieval Latin West.¹⁰ In 1848 and

⁷ Ernest Renan, *Œuvres Complètes*, ed. Henriette Psichari, 10 vols (Paris: Calmann-Lévy, 1947–1961) (hereafter: *OC*), IX, pp. 1002–1003.

⁸ The choice of subject did indeed please Cousin, whom he met for the first time in October 1848 and who was ‘ravi de ma thèse sur Averroès’ (Letter to Henriette 22 October 1848, *OC* IX, p. 1134).

⁹ It was first published in 1855, though its appearance was already announced on the back of the first edition of *Averroès et l’averroïsme*: *OC* VIII, pp. 129–589; cf. p. 134.

¹⁰ *Histoire de l’étude de la langue grecque dans l’Occident de l’Europe depuis la fin du Ve siècle jusqu’à celle du XIVe*. The work, though ‘crowned’ by the Académie des Inscriptions et des Belles Lettres in 1848 and announced to appear soon in 1852, remained in manuscript until it was edited by Perrine Simon-Nahum and published in Paris (Cerf, 2009).

80 the early months of 1849 he went on to write an almost equally long and more theo-
 81 retical work, *L'Avenir de la science* – a sort of declaration of faith in the value of ‘sci-
 82 ence’, especially the human sciences and, in particular philology. He was dissuaded
 83 from publishing anything but short extracts from it at the time, and only in old age
 84 did Renan put the work (subtitled *Pensées de 1848* and complete with its original
 85 dedication to Eugène Burnouf [d. 1852], dated March 1849) into print.¹¹ *Averroès et*
 86 *l'averroïsme* was, then, no ordinary doctoral thesis but the work of a man who, though
 87 under 30 when it was published, was already a prolific and wide-ranging writer and
 88 was acknowledged as a formidable philologist. Moreover, despite his profession to his
 89 sister that his plans for his thesis subjects were fixed, Renan did make an important
 90 change. What he had conceived as a very ambitious French thesis, ranging over Greek
 91 studies in every oriental culture, was repackaged as a short (74-page) Latin disserta-
 92 tion, on the narrow (though fascinating and important) subject of Aristotelian philoso-
 93 phy in Syriac. That monograph was published in 1852, and as good as forgotten,¹²
 94 whereas Renan thought highly enough of *Averroès et l'averroïsme* to produce a sec-
 95 ond edition in 1861, in which he left the main arguments and conclusions unaltered,
 96 but went over every paragraph, making many minor changes and adding some new
 97 material.¹³

98 It is hardly surprising, given his own background, that he should have been inter-
 99 ested by Averroes, since, from the sources at hand, Averroes could be made into a
 100 champion of philosophy who contradicts religious orthodoxy and was persecuted for
 101 doing so. Although there was a widespread popular link between Averroes and impi-
 102 ety, Renan's portrait of him as the sober exponent, to the élite, of a philosophical
 103 understanding of the world, at odds with Islamic orthodoxy, was new. His treatment
 104 of Averroes's exile late in his life gives an idea of this change of emphasis. The two
 105 fullest earlier accounts by historians of philosophy, in Brucker's *Historia critica*
 106 *philosophiae* from nearly a century before and in Tennemann's *Geschichte der*
 107 *Philosophie*, published in 1810,¹⁴ hold that Averroes's philosophy was merely an
 108 excuse for his political enemies to secure his condemnation. For Renan, by contrast, it
 109 was the result of the victory of the ‘religious party’ over the ‘philosophical party’.¹⁵
 110 The history of Averroism also allowed Renan to develop this theme of philosophy and
 111 its oppression by religious orthodoxy on a wider scale, in discussing the extinction
 112 within Islam of the Aristotelian tradition of philosophy represented by Averroes and

¹¹ It was first printed in 1890: *OC* III, pp. 715–1151.

¹² *De philosophia peripatetica apud Syros* (Paris: Durand, 1852). The work was not reprinted, even in Renan's *Oeuvres Complètes*.

¹³ The first edition: *Averroès et l'averroïsme* (Paris: Duran, 1852 [AA¹]); the second edition of 1861 is reprinted in *OC* III, pp. 11–365 [AA²].

¹⁴ Johann Jacob Brucker, *Historia critica philosophiae*, 2nd edn, 6 vols (Leipzig: Weidmann and Reich, 1767), III, pp. 100–101; Wilhelm Gottlieb Tennemann, *Geschichte der Philosophie*, 12 vols (Leipzig; Barth, 1810), VIII/1, p. 420.

¹⁵ AA¹, pp. 18–19; AA², pp. 37–38.

¹⁶ See the Chap. 16 by Akasoy in this volume.

the struggles of the Latin Averroistic tradition against the Church authorities.¹⁶ These links between Averroes, Averroism and the challenges and questions have been noticed by historians, as have possible lines of influence by Averroist doctrine on Renan's own thinking.¹⁷ But little attention has been paid to a more central way in which *Averroès et l'averroïsme* develops the ideas of methodology that Renan had been was thinking out at this time: the value of misinterpretation and myth in the history of thought.¹⁸

Myth and Misinterpretation

It was not just his personal position as an overt, if quiet, dissident that drew Renan to Averroes and Averroism: in dealing with this subject, he was able to consider from a different angle the very problems which his anguished fascination with the identity of Jesus set for him. Renan had lost his belief in Jesus's divinity as a result of his careful study of the historical evidence using the tools of philology, for him the leader of the scientific disciplines. Yet he was far from celebrating this loss as a straightforward scientific achievement: the figure and story of Christ remained important, and deserved to do so, even once the Biblical account of him was recognised not to be literally true.

In 1849, at the time he was working on *Averroès et l'averroïsme*, Renan wrote an article on the various theories being advanced about Christ, 'Historiens critiques de la vie de Jésus', in which he also develops his own views.¹⁹ Among the progressive theorists, Renan distinguishes between the rationalists and the mythologists. The rationalists accept the basic truth of the miraculous stories, but seek to explain them by reference to the transmission and the forms in which facts were expressed at different times. Renan finds this selective approach to the credibility of the evidence unconvincing, and such mechanical methods 'ill-suited to preserving the dignity of Jesus's character.'²⁰ The mythologists, by contrast, deny any truth to the stories and try to explain how they were formed without any real foundation. The leader of the mythologists – and the originator of the contrast between the rational and mythological approaches – was David Strauss, the German theologian whose

¹⁷ Thillet ('Renan', pp. 241–242) points out the parallels between Averroes's career and Renan's; Charnay ('Le dernier surgen', pp. 340–341) points out how Renan rejects the Averroistic 'theory of double truth' but ends up adopting a position not far from Averroes's idea of there being a single Intellect for all humans.

¹⁸ Harold W. Wardman, *Renan, historien philosophe* (Paris: Société d'enseignement supérieur, 1979), pp. 19–20, does indeed quote an important passage of *Averroès et l'averroïsme* on the value of misinterpretation in his treatment of Renan's thought on religion.

¹⁹ 'Les historiens critiques de Jésus', *Liberté de penser*, 3 (1849), pp. 365–384 and 437–470 (Paris: Joubert), reprinted in *Études d'histoire religieuse* (1857)= *OC* VII, pp. 11–303 (pp. 116–167). Page references are to both editions because in some cases there are changes.

²⁰ 'Historiens critiques', p. 371 (*OC* VII, p. 124).

142 *Life of Jesus Critically Examined*, had caused such shock when it was first published
 143 in 1835.²¹ Renan insists that, despite his reputation in France, Strauss is moderate
 144 theologically. Strauss, he says, applies Hegelian philosophy of history to the gos-
 145 pel story. The real Christ, for Strauss, is not any historical person, but the human
 146 spirit. This view leaves Strauss free to affirm orthodox Christian doctrine whilst
 147 radically denying the historicity of the gospels. The most radical German thinkers
 148 such as Feuerbach, Renan explains, go much further in denying the Incarnation.

149 Renan calls his own view a 'Christologie philosophique'. If, in an ideal *History*
 150 *of Philosophy*, Plato deserves one volume, then Jesus, Renan contends, deserves
 151 two.²² 'It is time,' he says

152 that reason should stop criticizing religions as constructions made in opposition to it by a
 153 rival power, and that it at last should recognise itself in all of humanity's products, without
 154 distinction or antithesis.²³

155 The central notion in this 'philosophical Christology' – it is beautifully expressed in
 156 one of Renan's magnificent conclusions – is that the object of Christian adoration is an
 157 ideal hero whom the philosopher knows not to confuse with a real, historical figure:

158 Such is the philosopher's Christology. In his adoration he does not confuse a real hero with
 159 an ideal hero. We must without hesitation adore Christ – that is to say, the character who
 160 comes out of the Gospels, because all that is sublime participates in the divine, and the
 161 Christ of the Gospels is the most beautiful incarnation of God in its most beautiful form,
 162 which is man as a moral being. It is this which is truly the son of God and the son of Man,
 163 God in man. These great interpreters of Christianity were not mistaken when they had him
 164 be born on earth without a father and attributed his procreation not to ordinary intercourse
 165 but to a virgin womb and the heavenly power. It is a magnificent myth, an admirable symbol
 166 that hides the true explanation of the ideal Jesus beneath its covering. But as for the Galilean
 167 who had this name, I do not know him ...²⁴

168 Like David Strauss, the young Renan is a mythologist. But where Strauss borrows
 169 from Hegel to deduce by reasoning that there must exist a God-Man, but not as an
 170 historical individual, Renan looks to the myth which through the centuries human
 171 beings have woven over an original reality. For Strauss, it is for the enlightened theo-
 172 logian to demythologise religion, replacing the myths that crude orthodoxy takes as
 173 history with a true philosophical understanding of God. For the young Renan, it is the
 174 myth – an elaborate human creation, expressing a conception of morality – which is
 175 the valuable content of religion: the two books on Jesus the Philosopher in his ideal

²¹ *Das Leben Jesu, kritisch bearbeitet*, 2 vols (Tübingen: Osiander, 1835–1836). There is an English translation of the fourth edition translated (for the main part) by the novelist George Eliot, published in 1846: re-print – David Friedrich Strauss, *The Life of Jesus Critically Examined* (London: SCM Press, 1973).

²² Renan made the same remark in his *L'Avenir de la science* (OC III, p. 946) and he anticipated it in his *Cahiers de jeunesse (Nephtali)* (OC IX, pp. 189–190).

²³ 'Historiens critiques', p. 451; OC VII, p. 156 (where the text is revised).

²⁴ 'Historiens critiques', p. 469; OC VII, p. 166, where the final sentence is changed to read: 'As for the man of Galilee, who is almost stolen away from our eyes by the reflections of divinity, what does it matter if he escapes us?'

History of Philosophy would not be concerned with the thoughts of an actual Nazarene religious leader, but with thinking through which generations of human beings have created a mythical and yet truly living Christ. By the time he wrote *La Vie de Jésus*, Renan had taken a further step away from Strauss, since he now claimed that the historical Jesus, though not divine, *really* incarnated the virtues attributed to him. This development enabled Renan, using his historical and textual scholarship, to tell the simple, moving story of Jesus which makes his book so remarkable – and made it so popular. But from the perspective of methodology in intellectual history and the history of philosophy, his earlier approach is richer and more fruitful. And it is explored further, and worked out in detail, in the book he was writing at the same time as he published ‘Historiens critiques’, *Averroès et l’averroïsme*.

As usual, it is in his conclusion that Renan brings out the aims and methodology of *Averroès et l’averroïsme* in their full richness; not surprisingly, because Renan always remains a conscientious scholar, and the conclusion is the moment when he can leave his apparatus of scholarship behind and draw out ideas that may have remained implicit in his text, or its method, until then. The long, final paragraph of *Averroès et l’averroïsme* centres, like the conclusion of ‘Historiens critiques de Jésus’ on the value of misinterpretation.

The history of Averroism is, correctly speaking, nothing but the history of an enormous misinterpretation. He was a very loose interpreter of Peripatetic teaching, and Averroes found himself interpreted in a still looser way. Modified and then modified again, Aristotelian philosophy comes down to this: the denial of the supernatural, or miracles, of angels, of demons, of divine intervention; the explanation of religions and beliefs as the results of imposture. Clearly neither Aristotle nor Averroes at all thought that one day their teaching would come down to this. But, in men who are raised to the dignity of symbols, we must always distinguish their personal lives from their lives beyond the grave, what they were in reality and what opinion has made of them. For the philologist, a text has only one sense. But for the human spirit, which has put into this text its life and all its desires, for the human spirit which, every hour, feels new needs, the philologist’s scrupulous interpretation cannot suffice. The text which it has adopted must resolve all its doubts, satisfy all its desires. From this there comes about the [1861: a sort of] necessity for misinterpretation in the philosophical and religious history of humankind. In periods of authority misinterpretation is, as it were, the revenge of the human spirit against the infallibility of the official text. People surrender their liberty on one point only to regain it on another. They are able to find a thousand ways out, a thousand subtleties to escape from the chain that has been laid on them. Distinctions, commentaries, *addenda*, explanations – this is how, weighed down by the two greatest authorities which have ever reigned over thought, the Bible and Aristotle, the spirit still remained free. It is in this way that there is no proposition so outrageous that it has never been propounded by some theologian, happily claiming not to have strayed beyond the bounds of orthodoxy, no doctrine so mystical that it could not be put forward in the guise of an interpretation of Aristotle. What would have become of humanity if, from eighteen centuries ago, it had understood the Bible according to the dictionaries of Gesenius and Bretschneider? Nothing is created by a text that is too exactly understood. Interpretation which is truly fecund – which finds in an [1861: the] authority accepted once for all time an answer to human nature’s ever new needs – cannot be achieved by philology, but by the conscience alone.²⁵

²⁵ AA¹, pp. 345–346; AA², pp. 322–323. The aspect of Renan’s work brought out in this conclusion, though noted by others (e.g. Charnay, ‘Le dernier surgeon’, p. 340), is treated most fully and with the greatest penetration by Alain de Libera (‘Préface’, pp. 15–19).

220 Just as, through their myth-making, humans gave reality to an ideal Jesus, so
 221 through their distortions over the generations scholars make Aristotle and Averroes
 222 serve as leaders in the search for the very liberty which the authoritative status of
 223 these writers seems to deny. For the full force and paradox of his position to be
 224 apparent, one must bear in mind that Gesenius's *Thesaurus philologicus criticus*
 225 *linguae Hebraeae* was a revered authority for Renan: the most important of the tools
 226 which, by allowing to reach a proper historical understanding of the Bible, drove
 227 him from his original faith to, as he thought, a rational and correct understanding of
 228 the universe. On the one hand, then, the scientific investigation of texts, applied to
 229 the Bible, is an engine of progress; but, as he makes clear in 'Historiens critiques',
 230 there is an indispensable content to the myths which philology unmasks, which we
 231 should continue to value as philosophy, once we have learned not to read scripture
 232 literally. On the other hand, the work of myth-making has taken place not just around
 233 the founding figures of religions – who thereby become authorities and establish
 234 orthodoxies that scientific reason needs to take apart – but also on the scientific texts
 235 which, by constituting an orthodoxy, obstruct scientific progress. This myth-making
 236 serves the cause of the very scepticism and the critical use of reason which identify
 237 as mythical the central claims of Scripture.

238 Renan's view is, therefore, a complex one. It holds in tension and succeeds in valu-
 239 ing both the human spirit's fecundity in fostering myth and misinterpretation *and* the
 240 philologists' scientific expertise in demythologizing and in correcting error. Whilst
 241 Renan clearly enjoys the human spirit's 'revenge on the infallibility of the official
 242 text,' his job is to display that victory, and that can be done only with the scientific
 243 tools of philology, the enemies of the misinterpretation which he celebrates.

244 The reader who, having started *Averroès et l'averroïsme* by reading its conclusion,
 245 turns back to the preceding chapters is likely, then, to be disappointed. Despite his
 246 strictures against philology, Renan is a philologist – and, by the nature of the case, an
 247 outdated one; much of the book, so far from being mythography, consists in the pains-
 248 taking and critical assemblage of information to establish historical facts, and in care-
 249 ful analysis of texts. In these detailed investigations, however, Renan is consistently
 250 carrying through the aim which he reveals at the end in his methodological *credo*. For
 251 example, if Averroism is the story of misinterpretation – first of Aristotle and then of
 252 Averroes himself – Renan needs to show that Averroes was not just repeating Aristotle's
 253 doctrine. He is one of the first – perhaps the first – intellectual historian to express the
 254 insight (also stated in his concluding paragraph) that commentary can be a method of
 255 creating new ideas, under the guise of explaining old ones:

256 Although Ibn Rushd never aspired to any glory but that of a commentator, we should not let
 257 this apparent modesty deceive us. The human spirit always knows how to reclaim its inde-
 258 pendence. Chain it to a text, and it will be able to regain its liberty through interpreting this
 259 text. It will falsify it rather than give up the most inalienable of its rights, the individual
 260 exercise of thought. Under the pretext of commenting Aristotle, the Arabs, like the scholas-
 261 tic, were able to create a philosophy full of their own elements, and certainly very different
 262 from that which had been taught at the Lycaenum.²⁶

²⁶ AA¹, pp. 66–67; AA², pp. 84–85.

Renan also investigates how a myth comes to develop. The most obviously mythographic side of *Averroès et l'averroïsme* are the pages devoted to discussing the links between Averroes and the story of the three Impostors (Moses, Jesus and Muhammad). Renan both recognises that the real Averroes had nothing to do with this story, and yet that there is an aspect of his thought which gives a sense to his mythical responsibility for this blasphemy – a tendency to treat religions comparatively.²⁷ He sees, perhaps drawing on his own personal experience, that once this step is taken, however piously, religious constructs are likely to become weak and collapse.

The Historiography of Thirteenth-Century Latin Averroism: the Triumph of Philology

As historian of the whole Averroistic movement – in Jewish philosophy, in the Latin Middle Ages and in the Renaissance, Renan has had almost no followers. In a more specialised academic world, poorer in polymaths like Renan, each of these three branches has been followed by a different group of experts, often with little knowledge of each others' work. The one exception is a short but fine book written by a duo – a specialist on the Latin tradition, Alain de Libera, and a scholar of the Hebrew tradition, Maurice-Ruben Hayoun – and deliberately given the same name as Renan's own work.²⁸

In the field of thirteenth-century Latin Averroism, however, a whole tradition of history-writing has followed on from Renan's work, and it is here that Renan was at his most innovative. Earlier historians had noted the existence of Averroists in the universities in the fourteenth century and later, but Renan was the first to push Averroism back to the thirteenth century. As Ruedi Imbach has observed, 'without knowing a single text that corresponds to this current, without even being able to name a single author, he created from almost nothing thirteenth-century Averroism.'²⁹

The historiography of Latin Averroism since Renan began it has been well told by Imbach and others, and there is no need here to do more than recall its broad outlines.³⁰ In the period after Renan's book, inaugurated by Barthélémy Hauréau's 1886 article on Boethius of Dacia and the work of Pierre Mandonnet, the idea of thirteenth-century Averroism was given apparent historical solidity by the writings of Siger of Brabant and Boethius of Dacia (a figure not mentioned at all by Renan).³¹ Further texts were

²⁷ AA¹, pp. 233–234; AA², pp. 228–229. See Akasoy in this volume for further references.

²⁸ Alain de Libera and Maurice-Ruben Hayoun, *Averroès et l'averroïsme* (Paris: Presses universitaires de France, 1991).

²⁹ Ruedi Imbach, 'L'Averroïsme latin du XIIIe siècle', in *Gli studi di filosofia medievale fra Otto e Novocento. Contributo a un bilancio storiografico*, ed. Ruedi Imbach and Alfonso Maierù (Rome: Edizioni di storia e letteratura, 1991), pp. 191–208 (195).

³⁰ In addition to Imbach, 'L'Averroïsme', see Gianfranco Fioravanti, 'Boezio di Dacia e la storiografia sull'averroïsimo', *Studi medievali*, 3a ser., 7 (1966), pp. 283–322. A fascinating recent contribution on an aspect of the subject that has very little to do, however, with Renan is Luca Bianchi, *Pour une histoire de la double vérité* (Paris: Vrin, 2008).

³¹ Barthélémy Hauréau, 'Un des hérétiques condamnés à Paris en 1277: Boèce de Dacie', *Journal des Savants* (1866), pp. 176–183; Mandonnet's book, *Siger de Brabant et l'averroïsme latin au XIIIe siècle: étude critique et documents inédits* (Fribourg: Librairie de l'université) was published in 1899, but it had been preceded by articles: cf. Imbach 'L'Averroïsme', p. 195.

294 added to this body of work by Martin Grabmann's discoveries and attributions.³² But
 295 the historical construction that had been built on Renan's notion began to be dismantled
 296 from the 1930s onwards by the work of Fernand van Steenberghen. In Van Steenberghen's
 297 many important publications on the area, there are two ideas which are very much his
 298 own and which he proposes with great force. The first, which depends on contestable
 299 attributions, is that Siger gave up the extreme position of his early works that there is
 300 only one intellect for the whole human species and adopted and, later in his career,
 301 accepted Aquinas's position.³³ The second is that there was *no* Latin Averroism in the
 302 thirteenth century. From the time of John of Jandun (d. 1328), he accepts that we can
 303 speak of Averroism, but philosophers such as Siger of Brabant and Boethius of Dacia
 304 were, rather, 'Radical Aristotelians'.³⁴ Although many aspects of Van Steenberghen's
 305 work have been disputed, more recent scholars have tended to carry on his deconstruction
 306 of thirteenth-century Latin Averroism rather than to reverse it. René Antoine
 307 Gauthier's magnificently detailed research has led him to conclude that the earliest
 308 influence of Averroes on the Latin universities had little to do with the positions later
 309 considered Averroist, and that Siger of Brabant was a less substantial figure, intellectu-
 310 ally and in university politics, than had been supposed.³⁵ His view is extreme,³⁶ but
 311 most scholars now would, none the less, agree with Imbach that

312 the multiplication of the sources and a more precise readings of the texts has brought about
 313 the slow death of the spectre that Ernest Renan conjured into existence. It is not only Van
 314 Steenberghen who doubts the existence of a clearly delimited, uniform current called 'Latin
 315 Averroism'. Rather than chasing the shadow of this phantom, we should study how Averroes
 316 is used in texts.³⁷

317 Imbach may have the right prescription for how the mainstream of philosophi-
 318 cal work on Averroes and his influence should be conducted, and yet there is an
 319 aspect of Renan's work which he and most recent scholars should not dismiss.
 320 Granted, 'Latin Averroism' is in many respects a phantom; but Renan recognised

³² See Imbach 'L'Averroïsme', pp. 199–202.

³³ For basic bibliography (including details of the attack on Van Steenberghen's attribution by Bruno Nardi and others), see Imbach, 'L'Averroïsme', pp. 202–205.

³⁴ The fullest exposition of this idea, with many references to his earlier presentations of it and arguments against those who have criticised it, is in 'L'Averroïsme Latin' in Fernand van Steenberghen, *Introduction à l'étude de la philosophie médiévale* (Louvain and Paris: Publications Universitaires and Béatrice-Nauwelaerts, 1974), pp. 531–554.

³⁵ René Antoine Gauthier, 'Notes sur les débuts (1225–1240) du premier "averroïsme"'; 'Notes sur Siger de Brabant: I. Siger en 1265'; 'Notes sur Siger de Brabant: II. Aubry de Reims et la scission des Normands', *Revue des sciences philosophiques et théologiques*, 66; 67; 68 (1982; 1983; 1984), pp. 321–374; 201–232; 3–39. Gauthier is, however, mistaken in identifying the 'first Averroism' of the earlier thirteenth century (each human has their own agent and possible intellect) with Averroes's genuine doctrine and claiming that the 'second Averroism' (the agent intellect and the possible/material intellect are separate) – which is the doctrine of Averroes's long commentary on *On the Soul* – was the creation of Latin theologians.

³⁶ Other recent writers re-read Siger so as to make of him, rather, a weightier and more consistent thinker than had been thought: see, for example, François-Xavier Putallaz, *Insolente liberté. Controverses et condamnations au XIIIe siècle* (Paris and Fribourg: Éditions du Cerf and Éditions universitaires, 1995) (Vestigia 15), pp. 15–49.

³⁷ 'Averroïsme', p. 207.

it as such.³⁸ Chasing such phantoms is a dangerous occupation, and it may lead away from precise philosophical work – something to which, in any case, Renan had little inclination. But medieval philosophical speculation took place within a wider intellectual context, and some of that context is of the shadowy sort which occupied the young Renan. The great achievement of *Averroès et l'averroïsme* is to have shown that this too is open to scientific investigation.³⁹

An Afterword

I have not considered in this article a notorious aspect of Renan's thought: despite being a pioneer of the history of philosophy in Islam, he severely criticised the religion and culture of Islam on several occasions, as in 'L'Islamisme et la science' of 1883: for a short introduction, cf. Nelly Lahoud, 'Islamic Responses to Europe at the Dawn of Colonialism', in *Western Political Thought in Dialogue with Asia*, ed. Cary Nederman and Takashi Shogimen (Lanham, MD: Lexington Books, 2009), pp. 163–185 (pp. 170–172) and cf. Edward W. Said, *Orientalism* (London and Henley: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1978), pp. 130–148. On the one hand, he thought that religious orthodoxy had succeeded in stifling reason within Islam; on the other hand, he had – dating back at least to his first major work, the *Histoire générale et système comparé des langues sémitiques* – a racial theory according to which semitic peoples are not given to philosophy (the 'Arab' philosophers, he explained, were Persians or Spaniards [!]) and a linguistic theory according to which semitic languages are not fitted for philosophizing. His views are, however, quite complex, even in this area, since he also held that the semitic peoples had made an irreplaceable contribution to human progress as the inventors of monotheistic religion; and his attack on Islam for stifling reason is part of a more general attitude to religions, including Christianity. Some of Renan's arguments have been used by those today who wish to slight the intellectual achievements of Islam and see 'Christian Europe' as the saviour of 'Greek rationalism': Sylvain Gougenheim, *Aristotle au Mont Saint-Michel: Les racines grecques de l'Europe chrétienne* (Paris: Seuil, 2008); see the exposé by Djamel Eddine Kouloughli, 'Langues sémitiques et traduction. Critique de quelques vieux mythes', in *Les Grecs, les Arabes et nous: Enquête sur l'islamophobie savante*, ed. Philippe Büttgen et al. (Paris: Fayard, 2009), pp. 79–118, but, arguably, their position has almost nothing in common with his. Alain de Libera, however, takes a different view ('Préface', pp. 18–19), seeing Renan as the inventor of 'Arabism' and 'forger of the myth of Greek rationality.'

³⁸ For an argument that, even from a narrower philosophical point of view, it is worth keeping the label Latin Averroism, see John Marenbon, 'Latin Averroism', in *Islamic Crosspollinations. Interactions in the Medieval Middle East*, ed. Anna Akasoy, James E. Montgomery and Peter E. Pormann (Exeter: Gibb Memorial Trust, 2007), pp. 135–147.

³⁹ I should like to thank the anonymous reader of the volume for a valuable comment about Gauthier's understanding of Averroes, which I have followed.

Chapter 15

[AU1]

Leo Strauss and the Alethiometer

James E. Montgomery

There is much about Leo Strauss which I find peculiar, perplexing and confusing, principal among which is the following observation: that a twentieth century intellectual, trying to come to terms with the philosophical, moral and political legacy of Nietzsche, grappling with the implications of the theories of Heidegger, and unwilling to accommodate the demands of modernism, should have exerted arguably the most hegemonic influence (quantitatively, if not qualitatively) on the study of Arabic-Islamic philosophy.

I do not claim to be an expert on the theories of Leo Strauss, or to have read more than what I take to be a representative sample of his many writings.¹ I also do not claim expertise in Arabic-Islamic philosophy. The following contribution does not

This study is the product of my attempts over two academic years (2007–2008 and 2008–2009) to teach a fourth-year undergraduate and taught graduate course on classical Arabic philosophical writings at the University of Cambridge. I owe much to the engagement, acumen and imagination of my students in allowing me to discern the contours of Leo Strauss's presence in the study of these texts. I dedicate this article to them. I am also grateful to Anna and Guido, the organisers of the conference and the editors of this volume, for offering a soapbox to an impostor.

¹ A standard Straussian objection to non-Straussian engagements with Strauss's thought is to allege that the critic has not fully read all the relevant aspects of Strauss's thought. I shall accordingly be clear about what I have read: Leo Strauss, *Persecution and the Art of Writing* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1988 [1952]); 'Farabi's Plato', in *Louis Ginzberg: Jubilee Volume on the Occasion of his Seventieth Birthday* (New York: The American Academy for Jewish Research, 1945), pp. 357–393; *What is Political Philosophy? and Other Essays* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1988 [1959]); *On Tyranny, Including the Strauss-Kojève Correspondence*, eds Victor Gourevitch and Michael S. Roth (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 2000 [1961]); *Natural Right and History* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1965 [1953]). It is for my critics to decide whether I have read all the relevant aspects of Strauss's thought. The same caveat applies, *mutatis mutandis*, to my coverage of the scholarly studies of Strauss and the work of the Straussians. Two important works came to my attention too late for me properly to take account of

J.E. Montgomery (✉)

Trinity Hall, Cambridge University, Trinity Lane, CB2 1TQ Cambridge, UK

e-mail: jem33@cam.ac.uk

14 pretend to be authoritative, and is not intended to be overly polemical, for this is a
 15 topic about which many, varied views are *passionately* held (perhaps the second
 16 peculiar, perplexing and confusing feature of Leo Strauss's writings and his legacy
 17 is the passionate enthusiasm, both in defence and in condemnation, which they
 18 occasion).

19 This is not to say that I mean to write as a neutral (I suspect that such a piece of
 20 writing would be incomprehensible), but rather to emphasise that, even though I am
 21 unconvinced by Strauss's theories, I have tried to be respectful in my survey of those
 22 features of his thought which, as far as I can determine, are of especial relevance for
 23 understanding why he approached Arabic philosophy (and I use the term advisedly,
 24 in place of the less felicitous but more accurate, in terms of Strauss's interests,
 25 Arabic-Islamic philosophy) as he did.

26 In this article, a survey of *some* of the theories of Leo Strauss, based on *some* of
 27 his writings and published private correspondence, I will not address directly the
 28 interests of that group of disciples, converts and neophytes who are regularly associ-
 29 ated with the exploration, refinement and expansion of trends in Strauss's theories
 30 and their application to philosophical writings in Arabic – the group whom we
 31 Arabists normally intend when we use the label 'Straussian': Muhsin Mahdi,
 32 Charles Butterworth and others.

33 For just as the theories of the classical Islamic theological school of the
 34 Ash'ariyya or of the classical Islamic legal school of the Shāfi'iyya are not identical
 35 with the theories of their eponyms, al-Ash'arī and al-Shāfi'ī, so too the theories of
 36 the Straussians are not necessarily, as far as I can discern at any rate, identical with
 37 the theories of their eponym. In the Straussian interpretations I have read, filiations,
 38 genealogies, dependencies, as well as aberrations, refinements and exegetical rein-
 39 terpretations can be exemplified in almost equal measure.² I will also not explore
 40 the rumour which I sometimes hear that Strauss entrusted his secret teaching to
 41 Mahdi and that Mahdi's version of Straussianism is how Strauss would have
 42 intended his theories to evolve in the domain of Arabic philosophy, had he chosen
 43 so to do. For a thinker renowned *and* notorious in equal measure for his theory of
 44 esotericism in the writing of philosophy, viz. that pre-modern philosophers concealed
 45 secret doctrines 'between the lines' of exoteric writings, such a rumour is hardly
 46 surprising.

them in this study: Mark Bevir, 'Esotericism and Modernity: An Encounter with Leo Strauss', *Journal of the Philosophy of History*, 1 (2007), pp. 201–218 (an intelligent examination of the hermeneutic ramifications of holding an esoteric philosophy of history); the articles contained in *The Cambridge Companion to Leo Strauss*, ed. Steven B. Smith (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2009), especially the contributions by Leora Batnitzky, 'Leo Strauss and the "Theologico-Political Predicament"', pp. 41–62; Laurence Lampert, 'Strauss's recovery of Esotericism', pp. 63–92; and Joel L. Kraemer, 'The Medieval Arabic Enlightenment', pp. 137–170 (which is particularly illuminating on the centrality of Maimonides for Strauss).

² A convenient prospectus of Straussianism is to be found in Mahdi's two introductions and the foreword by Butterworth and Pangle in: Al-Fārābī, *Philosophy of Plato and Aristotle*, translated with an introduction by Muhsin Mahdi, revised edition with a foreword by Charles E. Butterworth and Thomas L. Pangle (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2001).

I will however note that this Straussianism raises for me the third peculiar, perplexing and confusing feature of Leo Strauss's writings and his legacy: his reverence as a vaticinator. In addition to his theory of esotericism, Strauss is perhaps most frequently associated with his supposed opposition of reason and revelation, of Athens and Jerusalem, in Straussian terminology (a matrix which is perhaps best approached as, in Strauss's own designation, the 'theologico-political problem'). According to many, then, Straussian and non-Straussian, Leo Strauss was a proponent of reason and an opponent of revelation and yet among this selfsame community, Strauss is often revered as a seer or a prophet, as a bringer of revelation, whose body of teaching supplants the revealed doctrines of Islam, Judaism or Christianity and is, at least as far as I can make out, hallowed as a new religion (and I hereby confuse, as many Straussians seem to, revelation and religion, and religion and theology).³ Perhaps this is a little unfair, and we should rather see the relationship between Straussians and Strauss in terms of the practice of *takhrīj*, derivation, which obtained in the Islamic legal *madhhab* system, between qualified jurist and eponym.⁴ In the practice of *takhrīj*, a *mujtahid*, a qualified jurist and independent legal reasoner, could arrogate his master's voice and, in pronouncing, for example, the words, 'al-Shāfi'ī said', might mean any of the following: 'al-Shāfi'ī said (in my hearing); al-Shāfi'ī said (in someone else's hearing); al-Shāfi'ī wrote; an adherent of al-Shāfi'ī said; and if al-Shāfi'ī were here to answer our question, I am sure he would say.'⁵

A fourth feature of Leo Strauss's writings which I find to be peculiar, perplexing and confusing is, perhaps, a purely personal one: I find it easier to read Derrida and Foucault, for example, than to read Strauss. Of course this statement may certainly speak volumes about my incapacities as a reader, but I suspect that there may be another aspect at play, for when I have worked my way through the at times seemingly impenetrable verbal thickets of the writings of the former (however long it takes), I think I may have understood the ideas which inform what it is that they are saying.

³ I owe this observation to a lecture delivered by Professor Raymond Geuss of the University of Cambridge.

⁴ See Wael Hallaq, *Authority, Continuity and Change in Islamic Law* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001); Christopher Melchert, 'The Meaning of *Qāla'l-Shāfi'ī* in Ninth Century Sources', in *Abbasid Studies: Occasional Papers of the School of 'Abbasid Studies*, Proceedings of the Cambridge Meeting 6–10 July 2002, ed. James E. Montgomery (Leuven: Peeters, 2004), pp. 277–301; James E. Montgomery, 'Al-Ġāhiz and Hellenizing Philosophy', in *The Libraries of the Neoplatonists*, ed. Cristina D'Ancona (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 443–456.

⁵ Melchert, 'The Meaning of *Qāla'l-Shāfi'ī*', p. 297. An anonymous reader's comment on this article brought home to me the fundamental ambiguity that *takhrīj* involves, not only for the authority, ownership and identification of the locutor's words but also for the interpretation of an eponym's words: an interpretation of what an eponym meant becomes in turn what he said. My reader is anonymous, and it is thus not clear to me whether s/he is a Straussian, though I suspect so (its criticism of incomplete comprehension is an inflection of a common Straussian defence of Strauss). *Takhrīj* bestows on this reader the full advantage of its ambiguity when pointing out a key underlying philosophical assumption about Strauss which I fail to see. In this way, *takhrīj* enables Strauss to talk for as long as those who are prepared to interpret and so talk in his words.

75 With Leo Strauss, I have the opposite experience. Strauss writes, on the whole, clear
 76 English and at first blush seems not to pose the reader any problems of verbal impen-
 77 etrability but even after repeated reading I find it very difficult to understand the ideas
 78 which inform what it is that he seems to be saying. As examples, I offer 'Farabi's
 79 *Plato*'; or Chapters Three to Four, 'The Setting' and 'The Teaching Concerning
 80 Tyranny', from *On Tyranny*, pp. 36–77, or even, in a nutshell, note 48 on pp. 111–112
 81 of this work.

82 There are a number of steps to my argument in this article. The first is a close
 83 reading of a foundational text, Strauss's article, 'Persecution and the Art of Writing.'
 84 This reading seeks to use Strauss's own words to elucidate his exposition of a number
 85 of tenets central to his approach to Arabic philosophy. It leads naturally to a summary
 86 consideration of some of the defences and criticisms of his theories. The second step
 87 of my argument hinges upon a reference to an observation of Umberto Eco's made
 88 by Dimitri Gutas in criticism of Strauss. This step involves a rehearsal of Wayne
 89 Booth's distinction between '*understanding*' and '*overstanding*' as part of a further
 90 close reading of a synopsis offered by Strauss of his article 'Farabi's Plato'. (I intend
 91 my survey of this synopsis to be a prolegomenon to a planned attempt in a future
 92 publication to overstand al-Fārābī's short treatise, *Falsafat Aflāṭūn*). The concluding
 93 step of my argument will be to review briefly some of the implications which the
 94 hegemonic understanding of the notion of philosophy entails for us as readers and
 95 writers of its history. Finally, I will highlight, by means of analogy, two aspects of
 96 how Strauss reads Arabic philosophy which I consider paramount for understanding
 97 the appeal of his approach.

98 **Persecution and the Art of Writing**

99 In this part of my chapter, I will first discuss Strauss's article, will briefly consider
 100 some of the arguments mustered by Strauss's most recent apologists and then survey
 101 the critiques of Strauss (and Straussians) voiced by some of his principal critics.

102 Now, the following is an exercise in close reading of one of Strauss's most famous
 103 short pieces, the article 'Persecution and the Art of Writing,' which originally
 104 appeared in the November issue of *Social Research* from 1941 (pp. 488–504) and
 105 published 11 years later in the collection of the same name. As another prominent
 106 strategy used by apologists for Strauss is the censure of non-Straussians for their
 107 distortion of his ideas, through misquotation of his words (thus establishing dubious
 108 methods, dubious motives and all too peccable scholarship), I have endeavoured to
 109 be as full and as accurate as possible in my use of his own words in the reconstruction
 110 of what I take to be his argument.

111 The article is, in Strauss's own words, an attempt to explore 'the relation
 112 between philosophy and politics ... by starting from certain well-known phe-
 113 nomena of our century' (*Persecution*, p. 5), a problematic relationship with which
 114 he became familiar 'while studying the Jewish and Islamic philosophy of the
 115 Middle Ages.'

Accordingly therefore this article ought to be read in conjunction with the third chapter of *Persecution and the Art of Writing*, 'The Literary Character of *The Guide for the Perplexed*', Strauss's study of Maimonides also from 1941.⁶ As, however, I know very little about Maimonides, it would be an imposture for me to attempt such an exercise and so will leave it out of consideration.

The article is divided into three parts and is preceded by an epigraph taken from a work by the Irish liberal, historian and moralist, William Edward Hartpole Lecky (d. 1903), in his day controversial author of works such as *A History of the Rise and Influence of Rationalism in Europe* (2 vols, 1865), and *A History of European Morals from Augustus to Charlemagne* (2 vols, 1869), the eight volume *A History of England* (1878–1890) and *Democracy and Liberty* (1896). The quotation declares how 'vice has often proved an emancipator of the mind' though it is unclear to me what, if any, relationship there is between Lecky's 'vice' and Strauss's 'persecution' or whether in fact the emphasis in the quotation is placed on the emancipation of the mind, to say nothing of what Lecky might actually have meant by this statement.

The first part of the article addresses two issues: the issue of opinion and lies, and the imposition by figures of authority ('compulsion, or persecution', p. 22) and public acceptance of opinion and lies ('conviction', p. 23); and the issue of freedom of thought and its verbal, or better its entextualised, communication, in 'a totalitarian society' (p. 24).

Strauss posits a difference between how 'a considerable number of countries' over the last century – presumably he means the age of European liberalism – 'have enjoyed a practically complete freedom of public discussion' and the current state of these countries in which 'freedom is now suppressed and replaced by a compulsion to coordinate speech with such views as the government believes to be expedient or holds in all seriousness' (p. 22) – presumably he means Nazi Germany. This compulsion, for Strauss, exercises an effect on 'thoughts' as much as it does on 'actions.' This is a key point because it will allow him to posit a fundamental distinction between what an individual thinks and how he acts, for according to the motto given in the footnote, *scribere est agere* ('to write is to act'), writing is an action which is not free when performed under compulsion.⁷

In his discussion of the public acceptance of opinion, be that opinion a truth or a falsehood, Strauss (as he reveals in a footnote) here models his analysis on the

⁶ First published in *Essays on Maimonides: An Octocentennial Volume*, ed. Salo Wittmayer Baron (New York: Columbia University Press, 1941), pp. 37–91.

⁷ The reference to Descartes, *Discourse on Method*, Part 6, is telling, for in that work Descartes explains how he delayed publication of the treatise in reaction to the condemnation by persons of authority (i.e., the Inquisition) to another thinker's theories on a matter of physics (i.e., Galileo), one which Descartes had previously found unexceptionable, but which had been deemed prejudicial to the interests of state and religion (the condemnation of the *Dialogue Concerning the Two Chief World Systems* in 1633 by the Congregation of the Holy Office). Descartes's text, however, is a supremely rhetorical and densely ambiguous exercise in self-justification, what one scholar has referred to as the ancestor of the modern grant application, and there seems to be artifice rather than self-censorship at work.

149 conversation between Socrates and Glaucon in Book Three of Plato's *Republic*,
 150 about the contrivance of a necessary falsehood and the myth of the varying metal-
 151 lurgic composition of mankind, created of gold, silver, and bronze and so on.

152 For Socrates and Glaucon, education, and repetition through constant exposure
 153 to such a necessary mythical falsehood is the mechanism whereby its acceptance by
 154 subsequent generations can be guaranteed (what the Muslim theologians, jurispru-
 155 dents and philosophers identified as *taqlīd*, the unquestioning acceptance of a
 156 dictum or doctrine of a previous authority, and *tawātur*, the uninterrupted and wide-
 157 spread acceptance of such a dictum or doctrine, to the point that its truthfulness is
 158 cognitively assured).

159 This discussion leads Strauss to the definition of what he terms, with a nod to
 160 Parmenides and Gulliver's beloved Houyhnhms, *logica equina*, 'that the truth of a
 161 statement which is constantly repeated by the head of a government and never
 162 contradicted is absolutely certain' (p. 23).

163 However there are inhabitants of such countries who do not 'follow the rules of
 164 *logica equina*' and they are those 'capable of truly independent thinking' (p. 23).
 165 Independent thinking is by its very nature not the acceptance of opinion, true or
 166 otherwise, and so it cannot be constrained by compulsion or persecution because it
 167 is independent. And just as independent thought cannot be suppressed in such
 168 regimes, so too the expression of that thought cannot be suppressed, because, in
 169 another nod to *The Republic*, 'it is a safe venture to tell the truth one knows to ...
 170 reasonable friends' (p. 23).⁸

171 The next move in Strauss's exposition is vital, for the independent thinker can
 172 entextualise his views yet still evade detection and escape from the iron grip of
 173 persecution, but only on one condition, that he be 'capable of writing between the
 174 lines' (p. 24). This 'peculiar technique' is the product of 'the influence of persecution
 175 on literature' because it 'compels all writers who hold heterodox views to develop'
 176 it. And then Strauss proceeds to an enigmatic utterance which I struggle to compre-
 177 hend. I will quote it in full. Of 'writing between the lines' he explains:

178 This expression is clearly metaphoric. Any attempt to express its meaning in unmetaphoric
 179 language would lead to the discovery of a terra incognita, a field whose very dimensions are
 180 as yet unexplored and which offers ample scope for highly intriguing and even important
 181 investigations... almost the only preparatory work to guide the explorer in this field is buried
 182 in the writings of the rhetoricians of antiquity.⁹

183 Let me pass over the lack of substantiation, in the form of referencing for
 184 example, of this allusion to antique rhetorics. What is Strauss actually saying?
 185 That an unmetaphorical expression of 'writing between the lines' (does he mean
 186 the word 'esotericism' and if so why does he not use it – or is this a veiled reference
 187 to his own work?) would lead to a modern equivalent of the New World. Why does

⁸ Plato, *The Republic*, V, 450 C-E. As I understand Socrates's point, it is not his personal security which he thinks is at risk but the damage he might do to the *intellectual* and *moral* wellbeing of his companions were he to make a mistake on the road to truth and implicate them in his error.

⁹ Strauss, *Persecution and the Art of Writing*, p. 24.

the figure he uses ('writing between the lines') not enable us to make this discovery? 188
 And is it really *terra incognita* if the antique rhetoricians have already adum- 189
 brated its cartography? And if this unknown land is as yet uncharted how can 190
 Strauss claim that it 'offers ample scope for highly intriguing and even important 191
 investigations'? I am reminded here of that feature of many classical Arabic 192
 esoteric texts which promise the initiate access to uncommon wisdom or unique 193
 insight and in so doing advertise, declare, their very esotericism. In this passage, 194
 I discern that aspect of Strauss which I previously referred to as his vaticination. 195

Strauss next coins an allegory, that of a historian living in a totalitarian country 196
 who is 'led by his investigations to doubt the soundness of the government-spon- 197
 sored interpretation of the history of religion' (p. 24). 198

Let me pause to note the parallels: Strauss's philosophical excavations of previ- 199
 ously held but forgotten or occluded truths on the proper relationship between 200
 philosophy and religion and philosophy and politics are represented by the historian 201
 whose researches have bestowed him with an Edenic moment, a vision of a long- 202
 forgotten creed; the 'government-sponsored interpretation' is, possibly, the 203
 Enlightenment and the ways in which it altered fundamentally the previous (proper) 204
 conception of philosophy by allying it to structures of power such as ruling regimes; 205
 and, a point which Strauss nowhere makes explicit, the dominant ideology is 206
 effectively a religion, i.e., 'utterances in the holy book or books of the ruling party' 207
 (p. 25). And let me note once again that this is a very particular conception of 208
 religion, of religion as revelation and its orthodoxies. The historian's promotion of 209
 his independently derived interpretation will take the form of a pro-governmental 210
 polemic directed against his independently derived interpretation, 'what he would 211
 call the liberal view' (p. 24). The polemic is well suited to such a means of divulging 212
 independent thought, for by its very nature a polemic must state the views of which 213
 it is polemical and he would achieve this 'in the quiet, unspectacular and somewhat 214
 boring manner' (p. 24) of the petty pedant. 215

However, 'when he reached the core of the argument' (and by this Strauss may 216
 intend a formal feature of this polemical text, i.e., its 'central passage' [p. 24]), the 217
 historian would 'write three or four sentences in that terse and lively style which is 218
 apt to arrest the attention of young men who love to think' (p. 24). Who are these 219
 young men, where have they suddenly come from, how do we know they love to 220
 think, and what is that style to which Strauss refers? As Strauss does not provide us 221
 with an answer, I think I am entitled to suggest that the notice of unmetaphorical 222
 language leading to the *terra incognita* which I have just discussed may be an exam- 223
 ple of this arresting style. 224

At this point in his tractate, the historian will remove his kid gloves and articulate 225
 the very essence of liberalism, in its pristine prelapsarian form, before it became 226
 through its success the ancillary of ruling regimes. This crystalline articulation 227
 becomes 'the forbidden fruit' (p. 25) of the Garden of Eden, the historian's (subver- 228
 sive) promotion of state-sponsored attacks on this doctrine will now repel the young 229
 man whose repeated perusal of the work will allow him to discern in 'the quotations 230
 from the authoritative books' (subversively and disingenuously being promoted) 231
 'significant additions to those few terse statements which occur in the center of the 232

rather short first part' (p. 25). And let me also note that, like the works of al-Fārābī, which Strauss studies, such as his *Falsafat Aflātūn (The Philosophy of Plato)*, one of this historian's principal techniques is a sort of ventriloquism, the use of another's statements to voice one's own views, and the essence of his craft is the telling juxtaposition of these statements so as to present the truth exclusively 'between the lines'.

The resultant texts are deceptive then: private communications masquerading as public declamations, aimed at careful readers. They avoid detection because firstly careless reading is a characteristic of thoughtlessness and because secondly, as Socrates knew, 'virtue is knowledge' (p. 25). As the thoughtful man is virtuous so he will also be knowledgeable and thus the esoteric author's secret is safe in his keeping and will not be divulged to hostile authorities. Moreover these compositional strategies and techniques of evasion will defeat the machinations of the official censor for the censor has to prove the author's intelligence, his excellence in the craft of writing and establish that his use of an ambiguous expression or poor construction of a sentence (other prominent techniques of writing 'between the lines') was intentional, a proof which is impossible of achievement because 'Homers nods from time to time' (p. 26).¹⁰

This is an important passage, for Strauss nowhere (to the best of my knowledge) explains why these techniques of 'writing between the lines' are not liable to Ockham's razor – slips and blunders may simply be slips and blunders. Yet, Strauss knows that they are not slips and blunders because there is in this process a perfect convergence of writer and reader, a convergence made possible by the process of independent thought and, it seems to me, only communicable through vatic insight.

Parts II (pp. 26–32) and III (pp. 32–37) address two issues which Part I raises: 'historicism' (p. 32), or the ancient-modern divide; and 'persecution'.

Part II begins with some 'reasonable' (p. 26) assumptions which I find very difficult to assess, for they seem to me to be as unlikely (or unreasonable) as they are likely (or reasonable) and so completely indeterminate without the provision of further evidence or discussion: the likely frequency in the past of 'suppression of independent thought;' and the curious claims 'that earlier ages produced proportionately as many men capable of independent thought as we find today;' and 'that at least some of these men combined understanding with caution' (p. 26). These assumptions lead Strauss to wonder whether 'some of the greatest writers of the past' presented 'their views on all the then crucial questions exclusively between the lines' (p. 26).

Before we can discern the adaptations of 'literary technique to the requirements of persecution' (p. 26), we must first reassess 'a comparatively recent progress in historical research,' the practice of reading an author and his works in terms which we may conveniently refer to as contextualist: 'each period' and 'each author' must

¹⁰ And here one of the principal weaknesses of Strauss's brand of authorial intentionalism (what I see as the impossibility of discerning when a nod is a nod and when it is a wink) is attributed to a Straussian bogey-man, the censor. See further the next paragraph.

be understood in their own terms and there must be coherence between the terms which we use to interpret a writer from the past and those which would at least have been 'in fairly common use in his time' (p. 27). Consequently an author's 'explicit statements' (p. 27) are hegemonic and decisive and thus 'between the lines' communication is excluded *a priori* from our practices of reading and interpretation.

Strauss concedes that 'explicit evidence showing that the author believed *a* not to be *b* ... cannot possibly be forthcoming' (p. 27). Consequently, Strauss's next move in Part II is to show how recent salient trends in interpreting authors of the past (from political thinkers such as Hobbes to the Greek Hippocratics, from Averroes to Aristotle, from Lessing to Montesquieu) are not the result of the inexorable march of 'progress in historical exactness' but rather the result of (a contextually conditioned?) 'change in the intellectual climate' (p. 29), the transformation or rejection of 'the rationalist tradition' (p. 29).

Thus the emergence of historicism is shown to be a modern phenomenon, to be itself historicist, a result of the abandonment of 'the tradition of historical exactness' (p. 29) and the *a priori* exclusion of 'the most important facts of the past from human knowledge' (p. 30), though it is by no means clear to me that Strauss has shown *in this work* what these facts are, or how he thinks that we know what they are. This is presumably the task of 'the philosopher' and not the 'historian', a revealing distinction for understanding his own studies which he makes on page 29, though once again it is unclear to me if and when Strauss ever ceases to write as both.

In order for us as historians to preserve 'the tradition of historical exactness' (p. 29) we must 'adapt the rules of certainty' which guide our research 'to the nature of the subject' (p. 30). But is this not the same claim as the historicists make, that it is the subject (and its context) which determines the hermeneutic devices we apply and not vice-versa? Yes, it is, I expect Strauss might answer, but these devices exclude one vital and determinative consideration – persecution and the suppression of independent thought. For if we start from persecution and its nature, we will radically re-conceptualise our understandings of the past, or rather: we will 'read between the lines'.

The act of reading between the lines is governed by several considerations:

1. Exactitude: 'reading between the lines is strictly prohibited in all cases where it would be less exact than not doing so' (p. 30)¹¹;
2. The validity of the explicit: 'only such reading ... as starts from an exact consideration of the explicit statements of the author is legitimate' (p. 30);
3. The interpretative relevance of genre and holistic structure: 'the literary character of the whole work ... must be perfectly understood before an interpretation of the statement can reasonably claim to be adequate or even correct' (p. 30)¹²;

¹¹ I am unsure as to how to tell the difference between the respective exactitudes of such readings.

¹² In his respect for the work viewed holistically, Strauss seems to share some of the concerns of the mid-twentieth century American literary movement known as the New Criticism.

- 311 4. Respect for the text: avoidance of deleting a passage or emending the text before
 312 full consideration of 'all reasonable possibilities of understanding the passage as
 313 it stands' (p. 30)¹³;
- 314 5. The possibility of the 'ironic': here 'irony' seems to signify saying one thing and
 315 intending its opposite¹⁴;
- 316 6. The intentionality of the erroneous: 'if a master of the art of writing commits
 317 such blunders as would shame an intelligent high school boy, it is reasonable to
 318 assume they are intentional, especially if the author discusses, however incidentally,
 319 the possibility of intentional blunders in writing' (p. 30)¹⁵;
- 320 7. The hermeneutics of ventriloquism: an author's views should not be confused
 321 with those of his characters, be it severally or jointly, or with those of his most
 322 'attractive characters' (p. 30);
- 323 8. The significance of paucity: 'the real opinion of an author is not necessarily
 324 identical with that which he expresses in the largest number of passages' (p. 30).

325 These considerations (and with the exception of numbers 6 and 8 they are fairly
 326 elementary literary critical devices which many scholars make regular use of) are
 327 informed by an avowal that tendentiousness (on the part of the reader) is deleterious
 328 to exactitude and should be eschewed in favour of 'understanding the thought of the
 329 great writers of the past' (p. 30). It is, of course, precisely such tendentiousness
 330 which Strauss's critics find his approach most liable to.

331 Strauss concedes that reading between the lines will not generate consensus,
 332 but then historicism has not produced consensus either, for in the very matter of
 333 canon-formation or the establishment of an authorial corpus more recent scholars
 334 ('the traditionalists' [p. 31]) have been more disinclined to the principle of exclu-
 335 sion than their predecessors ('the higher critics' [p. 31]), who were swayed in
 336 their evaluations of change in an author's thought by 'internal evidence' such as
 337 'contradictions or divergences within one book, or between two books by the same
 338 author' (p. 31).¹⁶

¹³This view, with which I have considerable sympathy, properly requires the historian to work with original manuscripts and codices, and I am not sure how far Strauss adopted this as a practice.

¹⁴For a discussion of irony and its interpretive possibilities, see James E. Montgomery, 'Jahiz on Jest and Earnest', in *Humor in der arabischen Kultur*, ed. Georges Tamer (Berlin: De Gruyter, 2009), pp. 209–239.

¹⁵This criterion, which draws on criteria 3, 4 and possibly 5, goes beyond merely admitting that Homer nods to asserting that Homer's nods are possibly more meaningful than when he does not nod, which is a position that differs in the significance it places on authorial intentionality from the postmodernist dictum of the uncontrollability of meaning, though what exactly a school boy's blunders are is unclear to me, as is what Strauss would make of the vagaries of textual transmission or scribal errors.

¹⁶It may be worth comparing Strauss's discussion of reading between the lines with what Yambo, the amnesiac protagonist of Umberto Eco's *The Mysterious Flame of Queen Loana*, trans. Geoffrey Brock (London: Vintage Books, 206 [2004]), pp. 179–180, says of reading the Italian press from the Second World War: 'I could have reconstructed the sequences of actual events simply by reading the Fascist press in the right light, as everyone probably had then.'

These unfashionable 'higher critics' may have been mistaken in the conclusions 339
 which they drew from their readings but they were alive to 'the literary problems 340
 involved – obscurity of the plan, contradictions within one work or between two or 341
 more works of the same author, omission of important links of the argument, and so 342
 on' (p. 31) – in other words, to some of the criteria which should inform any reading 343
 'between the lines.' 344

There is one vital omission, however: consideration of 'the phenomenon of per- 345
 secution' (p. 31). Traditional readings ('superficial and doxographic' [p. 31]) 'may 346
 reflect the exoteric teaching of the author', whereas the higher criticism is a halfway 347
 house, between exoteric and esoteric. 348

Thus, the burden of Strauss's case in favour of writing (and reading) 'between 349
 the lines' centres on persecution: 'so long as we confine ourselves to the view of 350
 persecution and the attitude toward freedom of speech and candor which have 351
 become prevalent during the last 300 years' (p. 32), we will be unable to under- 352
 stand the 'necessary correlation between persecution and writing between the 353
 lines' (p. 32). Indeed, we have even lost our recollection of 'an earlier tendency to 354
 read between the lines of the great writers'. And, what is more, we even overlook 355
 the 'explicit evidence proving that the author has indicated his views on the most 356
 important subjects only between the lines' (though Strauss unfortunately provides 357
 no examples) (p. 32). 358

Strauss does not seem to admit a crucial distinction: reading 'between the lines' 359
 does not say anything about the likelihood or even the presence of *writing* 'between 360
 the lines' – reading 'between the lines' does not entail the necessity of the presence 361
 of writing 'between the lines.' I think that this is a major weakness in Strauss's argu- 362
 ment: evidence which we as readers may find to support how we *read* between the 363
 lines does not constitute evidence for the presence of *writing* between the lines. In 364
 other words, Strauss conflates reading and writing, just as he conflates religion and 365
 theology. After all, I can read Shakespeare's *Macbeth* as a legal document outlaw- 366
 ing regicide but I very much doubt that my reading would entail the conclusion that 367
Macbeth was written as a legal document.¹⁷ Strauss makes this conflation because 368
 for him reading seems to be an act of discerning, salvaging and restoring a writer's 369
 intentions – a perfect equivalence of writer and reader, as was commonly held by the 370
 practitioners in the philological tradition.¹⁸ At all events, we as readers may rightly 371
 feel entitled to some form of justification in support of such a radical equivalence of 372

¹⁷ This is not to be confounded with whether Shakespeare intended *Macbeth* to be a legal document. He may have; we have no way of knowing. I may intend my shopping list to be a poem but it does not make a poem out of my shopping list. An author's intention for a text remains no more than that: one among many possible intentions (however much we may be minded to accord this intention a special privilege).

¹⁸ See the remark of Gadamer: 'the interpreter is absolutely simultaneous with his author. This is the triumph of philological method': Lorenz Krüger, 'Why Do We Study the History of Philosophy?', in *Philosophy in History. Essays on the Historiography of Philosophy*, eds Richard Rorty, Jerome B. Schneewind and Quentin Skinner (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), pp. 77–101 (88).

373 reading and writing. I will henceforth in my recapitulation of Strauss's argument
 374 follow his lead and refer to reading and writing 'between the lines'
 375 interchangeably.

376 In view of this, according to Strauss, necessary correlation, we must draw three
 377 inferences:

- 378 1. 'The book in question must have been composed in an era of persecution' (p. 32);
- 379 2. Persecution is to be defined as the enforcement 'by law or custom of some politi-
 380 cal or other orthodoxy' (p. 32);
- 381 3. A surreptitious or incidental contradiction, by 'an able writer who has a clear
 382 mind and a perfect knowledge of the orthodox view and all its ramifications',¹⁹
 383 of one of this orthodoxy's 'necessary presuppositions or consequences which he
 384 explicitly ... maintains everywhere else' is reasonable warrant for the suspicion
 385 'that he was opposed to the orthodox system as such' (p. 32).

386 In this case, we must return to the work once more and read it and reread it in line
 387 with the guiding principles of reading 'between the lines'.

388 Part III (pp. 32–37) discusses the phenomena of persecution, 'from the most
 389 cruel type, as exemplified by the Spanish Inquisition, to the mildest, which is social
 390 ostracism' (p. 32). Between these extremes one encounters 'the types which are
 391 most important from the point of view of literary or intellectual history' (p. 32).
 392 Societies (or 'periods' as Strauss refers to them [p. 33]) in which these phenomena
 393 manifested themselves include the 'comparatively liberal' cases of 'Athens of the
 394 fourth and fifth century B.C.... some Muslim countries of the early Middle Ages ...
 395 seventeenth-century Holland and England, and ... eighteenth-century France and
 396 Germany' (p. 33).

397 The role call of the persecuted, as we can read in their biographies (of course,
 398 always supposing that these biographies are reliable, trustworthy and accurate
 399 and are not the products of mythopoiesis) includes 'Anaxagoras, Protagoras,
 400 Socrates, Plato, Xenophon, Aristotle, Avicenna, Averroes', (what has happened to
 401 al-Fārābī?) 'Maimonides, Grotius, Descartes, Hobbes, Spinoza, Locke, Bayle,
 402 Wolff, Montesquieu, Voltaire, Rousseau, Lessing and Kant' (p. 33)! 'In some cases,
 403 even a glance at the title pages of their books' is testimony to their suffering from 'a
 404 kind of persecution ... more tangible than social ostracism' (p. 33). Strauss seems
 405 to imply that this 'kind of persecution' is not simply 'religious persecution' but
 406 'persecution of free inquiry,' for many periods and societies permitted 'a great variety
 407 of kinds of worship' but forbade 'free inquiry' (p. 33). At this point in his argument,
 408 I feel entitled to ask of Strauss whether he would allow for any consideration of the
 409 dynamics and insecurities of patronage, of the dependencies of thinkers on patrons,
 410 in his topography of persecution?

411 Persecution, however, is not a unilinear process, simply of the compulsion of a
 412 philosopher by an orthodoxy. For Strauss, there is a vital element to persecution

¹⁹Once again it is not clear to me how to identify such a writer, or how I would know what this kind of knowledge would be.

which is “considering one’s social responsibilities” (p. 36), which is ‘freedom
 which is not licence’ (p. 37), for persecution is the restraint which the philosopher
 imposes upon himself because he ‘presupposes ... that freedom of inquiry, and of
 publication of all results of inquiry, is not guaranteed as a basic right’ (p. 36). This is
 an act of self-preservation and of social conscience.²⁰ We can also reasonably infer
 therefore that, if the biography of a philosopher attests that he has been hurt, he has
 been so because of the unpleasant truths which he must have uttered and thus are
 justified in looking for truths which might qualify as unpleasant (i.e., looking for the
 signs of ‘writing between the lines’) and thereby we exclude from consideration the
 possibility that a philosopher may have been put on trial, say, or ‘persecuted’ for any
 other reason – involvement in a political conspiracy, or a homicide, or an attempt to
 defraud the state or a failure to pay his taxes.

The Enlightenment (the promoters of ‘the republic of universal light’ [p. 33])
 rejected this type of self-persecution,²¹ mistakenly presuming that ‘suppression of
 free inquiry ... was accidental, an outcome of the faulty construction of the body
 politic’, which faulty construction could be remedied ‘as a result of the progress of
 popular education’ (p. 33).

By ‘popular education’, Strauss intends the enlightenment of ‘an ever-increasing
 number of people who were not potential philosophers’ (p. 34). This transformation
 of the appropriateness and efficacy of education marks the most significant caesura
 between Enlightenment and pre-Enlightenment philosophers, a foundation of whose
 anthropology of nature recognised in ‘the gulf separating “the wise” and “the vulgar”
 ... a basic fact’ (p. 34), a deep pessimism which discerned in the majority of men
 not only a suspicion but a hatred of philosophy.

So potent and pervasive was this elitist and pessimistic philosophy that, whether
 they ‘had nothing to fear from any particular political quarter’ (p. 34) or not, they
 were ‘driven to the conclusion that public communication of the philosophic or
 scientific truth was impossible or undesirable, not only for the time being but for all
 times’ (p. 34). Such philosophers can only communicate their views to other
 philosophers, be it in the philosophical circle, or ‘by writing about the most impor-
 tant subject²² by means of “brief indication”’ (p. 35). Thus, it transpires, prior to the
 Enlightenment, self-persecution of this sort was the starting-point of all entextual-
 ised philosophical communication which would be compelled to the expression of
 ‘only such opinions as were suitable for the nonphilosophic majority’ (p. 35).

However, opinion (*doxa*) is not ‘in all respects consonant with truth’ and so the
 pre-modern philosopher must needs have reconciled himself with the telling of

²⁰There are basic truths which would not be pronounced in public by any decent man, because they
 would do harm to many people who, having been hurt, would naturally be inclined to hurt in turn
 him who pronounces the unpleasant truths’ (p. 36).

²¹An ever-increasing number of heterodox philosophers ... published their books not only to com-
 municate their thoughts but also because they desired to contribute to the abolition of persecution
 as such’ (p. 33).

²²I am unable to determine the significance of the singular, i.e., whether ‘the most important sub-
 ject,’ advertises the essential philosophical truth or not.

449 ““noble lies”” (p. 35), signalling to those in the know that he did not object to such
 450 a thing. It is in this attitude to the ““economy of the truth”” that we perceive the
 451 thorough and profound similarities between ‘the premodern philosopher’ and the
 452 ‘premodern poet’ (p. 35).²³

453 Strauss concludes his exposition of ‘writing between the lines’ by identifying two
 454 basic types of philosophical books: the ‘exoteric book’ which contains ‘a popular
 455 teaching of an edifying character, which is in the foreground; and a philosophic teaching
 456 concerning the most important subject, which is indicated only between the lines’;
 457 and the ventriloquistic text in which ‘certain important truths’ are stated ‘quite openly
 458 by using as a mouthpiece some *disreputable* character’ (p. 36, my emphasis).²⁴

459 There is one further important qualification. These writings are not addressed to the
 460 perfect philosopher or to the ‘*profanum vulgus*’ but to ‘the potential philosophers’ who
 461 ‘are to be led step by step from the popular views which are indispensable for all practical
 462 and political purposes to the truth which is merely and purely theoretical’ (p. 36). And, in
 463 this return to Socrates’s discussion with Glaucon in Book Three of *The Republic*, we
 464 realise that this philosophical *paideusis* is effected by means of the peculiar yet indica-
 465 tive features of ‘writing between the lines’ (as outlined earlier in the article).

466 The philosopher is thus Hermes the psychopomp and writing and reading
 467 ‘between the lines’ his caduceus. Such writings are sublime instances of philosophical
 468 philanthropy: as ‘exoteric books’ they are ““written speeches caused by love”” (p. 36).
 469 Their reward is the love which, in surely Strauss’s least felicitous phrase, ‘the
 470 puppies of his race’ lavish upon the ‘mature philosopher in turn’ (p. 36).

471 The final paragraph of the article contains another instance of what I see as Strauss
 472 writing in vatic mode. In a qualification of the famous statuary comparison made in
 473 the *Symposium* by Alcibiades, ‘that outspoken son of outspoken Athens’, between
 474 the outwardly ugly and inwardly beautiful Socrates (p. 37), Strauss writes:

475 The works of the great writers of the past are very beautiful even from without. And yet their
 476 visible beauty is sheer ugliness, compared with the beauty of those hidden treasures which
 477 disclose themselves only after very long, never easy, but always pleasant work (p. 37).

478 This always difficult ‘but always pleasant work’ is what the pre-modern philosophers
 479 intend by ‘education.’ It is not clear to me, alas, how this is an answer to the (rhetorical)
 480 question which Strauss poses of the use of ‘writing (and perhaps reading) between the
 481 lines’ ‘in a truly liberal society’ (p. 36).

482 I find this article very difficult to understand. At times, I confess it leaves me
 483 completely at a loss. Let me first defer to some apologists of Strauss who argue that
 484 we need also to take into account three features of Strauss’s system²⁵:

²³ This is an analogy which in many respects I find compelling, though not because of any veracious or verisimilitudinous stance, but because it forces us to reconsider what we might mean by ‘philosopher’ and ‘philosophy’ (and by ‘poet’ and ‘poetry’).

²⁴ I am drawn to wonder whether I can infer that for Strauss al-Fārābī presents his Plato as a character disreputable in the eyes of his contemporary Muslim readers?

²⁵ I have drawn these from my reading of: Steven B. Smith, *Reading Leo Strauss: Politics, Philosophy, Judaism* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 2006); Catherine and Michael Zuckert, *The Truth about Leo Strauss: Political Philosophy and American Democracy* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 2006).

The Nature of Political Communities

485

In *Persecution* Strauss revealingly claims that the Enlightenment philosophers who abandoned self-persecution did so because they wanted to reform 'the faulty construction of the body politic', believing, erroneously, that 'suppression of free inquiry, and of publication of the results of free inquiry, was accidental' (p. 33), implying therefore that suppression is somehow an essential feature of political communities. Such communities are predicated upon a preference and need for 'popular views which are indispensable for all practical and political purposes' over 'the truth which is merely and purely theoretical' (p. 36). At the heart of their very fabric is the problem of the reconciliation of 'order which is not oppression with freedom which is not licence' (p. 37). The archetypal political community is Athens at the time of the Trial of Socrates, the consequences of which trial reverberate through all of Strauss's writings on political philosophy.

The Threat of 'Historicism'

498

Strauss perceived in what he understood as the (epistemological and moral) relativism of Nietzsche as developed by Heidegger the single, most significant and far-reachingly genuine calamity of the twentieth century, an alliance between philosophy and political power which he traced back to Machiavelli, one which distorted the fundamental and seminal antipathy between philosophy as the Socratic quest for the truth (zeteticism) and the structure and ordering of political communities.

The Catastrophe of Modernity

505

The only antidote to this calamitous development was a Return to the Ancients, in attempt to determine an Edenic or utopian phase when the philosopher practised his subversion and not legitimization of political ideologies, a return which he shared with other twentieth-century philosophers such as Heidegger and Popper.²⁶

Such a return illuminated the tension which informs Strauss's intellectual project, the so-called 'theologico-political problem' (or how Jerusalem and Athens could co-exist), the distinction between 'a philosophy which believes it can refute the possibility of revelation – and a philosophy which does not believe

²⁶ Such a Return to the Ancients has latterly received powerful support from Charles Taylor as a way of doing philosophy: 'Philosophy and its History', in *Philosophy in History*, pp. 17–31 and from Quentin Skinner as a vital way of 'enlarging our present horizons instead of fortifying local prejudices': *Visions of Politics, Volume 1: Regarding Method* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2002), p. 125; see further p. 89 and pp. 125–127. In this point Skinner and Strauss are surprisingly similar.

514 that: this is the real meaning of la querelle des anciens et modernes.²⁷ It seems
 515 that Athens effectively needs Jerusalem, for Jerusalem poses a searching question
 516 of philosophy.

517 This is how Strauss puts it in the Notes to his lecture delivered on January 8,
 518 1948 at Hartford Theological Seminary:

519 If there is revelation, philosophy becomes something infinitely unimportant — the *possibility*
 520 of revelation implies the *possible meaninglessness* of philosophy. If the possibility of revela-
 521 tion remains an open question, the *significance of philosophy* remains an open question.

522 Therefore, philosophy stands and falls by the contention that philosophy is the One
 523 Thing Needful, or the highest possibility of man. Philosophy cannot claim less: it cannot
 524 afford being modest.²⁸

525 Thus revelation is for philosophy what persecution is for the philosopher who
 526 resorts to writing: it is somehow their *raison d'être*, though it is not their task ever
 527 to undo revelation or topple persecution, but rather to practice that form of self-
 528 persecution which is the mark of the true philosopher.²⁹

529 Such an account, informed by insights into the Straussian system, may allow me
 530 to understand why Strauss may think as he does but does not actually help me to
 531 decide why I should consider thinking as he does and joining, however notionally,
 532 his school, or why I should ever attempt a Straussian reading of a text, let alone what
 533 I might stand to gain or benefit from reading a Straussian reading of a text. In other
 534 words, why should I bother? But others have and do and this intrigues me, so let me
 535 make some observations.

536 Firstly, Strauss's theory is predicated, as is so common in the history of philosophy,
 537 upon a profound conviction in the hermeneutical viability of intentionalism, that an
 538 author's intentions can be recovered from a text and are thus the only way properly to
 539 read such a text; his notion of authorship is correspondingly strong – the author is the
 540 owner of the ideas in the work, is the guarantor of how to read them, is the authority
 541 to which we as readers must defer.

542 Secondly, our job as readers is to salvage the author's original meanings. We achieve
 543 this through close reading not only of the word or passage but also and simultaneously
 544 of the text conceived as a whole (a feature of his approach which is consonant with the
 545 New Criticism, though it had little truck with what it demonised as the intentionalist
 546 fallacy).

547 Thirdly, the text thus approached *must* be a whole, *must* be the holistic presentation
 548 of the author's intentions. Of course, in this case, when we detect that we are reading
 549 a work written 'between the lines', an author's intentions will not merely be what is
 550 left out of the text, or even what is left unsaid, but are to be determined from a set of
 551 textual clues around which the text will be structured.

²⁷ See Heinrich Meier, *Leo Strauss and the Theologico-Political Problem*, trans. Marcus Brainard (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2006), p. 5 and p. 177.

²⁸ Meier, *Leo Strauss*, p. 175; see pp. 22–23.

²⁹ See Strauss's letters voicing his concerns over his reading of Maimonides in Meier, *Leo Strauss*, pp. 23–24, n. 32.

Such a theory of authorship and readership, for this is what it really amounts to in my understanding of it, hinges upon a number of suppositions. 552 553

Firstly, the true philosopher-author is, like the truth which Strauss intimates that he has acquired, eternal and universal, atemporal and transcultural. 554 555

Secondly, persecution, as both external and internal compulsion, is also eternal and universal – it is the necessary counterpart of the acquisition of the truth: the price which the philosopher has to pay when he is given entry to the Garden of Eden. 556 557 558 559

Thirdly, the text which we have before us today must be an exact and faithful replica of the philosopher's autograph, for if we lay such interpretive emphasis on contradictions, blunders and inconsistencies (as indicants of genuine authorial intent), they simply cannot be attributable to the vagaries of the text's transmission or the ignorances of a scribe or the insertions of a reader: the text must somehow then be, like the philosopher and the truth, though perhaps to a lesser extent, beyond the reach of time. 560 561 562 563 564 565 566

Fourthly, as the reader of this quasi-miraculous or mythical artefact is effectively a cryptologist, the 'code-breaking' techniques which we bring to bear on the text must also, in their transcultural atemporality, resemble the philosopher, the truth and their text, and our acquisition of them as readers must somehow be integral to the process of our growth as potential philosophers. 567 568 569 570 571

And yet, surely Strauss's insight into these verities is through contemplating the writings of the Ancients and I cannot see how he can acquire knowledge of these cryptological techniques unless it be through what he himself rejects (*Persecution*, p. 7) as the 'sociology of knowledge', i.e., the concern 'with the relation of different types of thought to different types of society'. If I have understood him properly, his hermeneutical project hinges, then, in a real sense, on the very approach which he rejects: the ideology of 'historicism'. 572 573 574 575 576 577 578

Whether we think that all of this is likely or not will be a matter of conviction. I do not share the conviction that the history of philosophy or literature is thus: I am simply unable to read texts according to *all* of these rules. But, as I have said, many others can and do and I find this intriguing. Why do they do so? Before I consider this, I want turn to some of the critics of Strauss and Straussianism (Oliver Leaman, Dimitri Gutas and Quentin Skinner), and remark on what I take to be the fifth peculiar, perplexing and confusing feature of this phenomenon – that Straussianism rather than Strauss has attracted the lion's share of critical engagement. 579 580 581 582 583 584 585 586

Oliver Leaman

587

Leaman, who was not (in his works from 1980 to 1985 at least) antipathetical to the Straussian project, is nonetheless a critic of the enthusiasms of what he calls 'the esoteric interpretation.' He notes, for example, that to neglect consideration of how 'the *falāsifa* ... speak of the importance of concealing dangerous doctrines and presenting their ideas in such a way that they will not disturb the faith of the masses 588 589 590 591 592

593 or the suspicions of the theologians' would be to 'miss a great deal of significance,'
 594 declaring that 'the argument throughout this study is not opposed to the esoteric
 595 interpretation as such', for it 'provides a methodological paradigm in terms of
 596 which samples of philosophy are to be studied and analysed.'³⁰

597 As it is the *Faṣl al-maqāl* of Ibn Rushd which Leaman next proceeds to discuss,
 598 it is not unreasonable to assume that this textual *fatwā* on how *ḥikma* (philosophical
 599 sagacity) intersects with *sharī'a* (revealed law) is uppermost in his mind. He notes
 600 that these texts raise a major problem – 'with writing' for writing itself is 'indis-
 601 criminate and so unsatisfactory' (p. 188), and cannot 'duplicate the sorts of controls
 602 and safeguards they could apply to their oral teaching' (p. 188), though it has rarely
 603 seemed to occur to scholars apart from Strauss to wonder why, if writing is so indis-
 604 criminate and came so fraught with dangers, any would-be philosopher would even
 605 consider putting pen to paper and not simply confining himself to the oral quest for
 606 the truth. Strauss's answer, you will remember, is ingenious: it is to attract potential
 607 philosophers to the great vocation; and self-persecution is ever present to the true
 608 philosopher.

609 Of course, some philosophical texts may, as is often held of many of Aristotle's
 610 works, be lecture-notes taken by or written for students, or in the early 'Abbāsīd
 611 context, be what Gregor Schoeler calls 'school texts', books written for the school
 612 for use within the school, texts which are subsequently disseminated outwith the
 613 confines of the school. Many of the works of al-Fārābī strike me as being of this
 614 kind: not fully 'published' works (in the sense of works carefully written as books
 615 and edited and released for consumption beyond the confines of the school).

616 Leaman's explanation is representative of the account which many scholars have
 617 offered for this conundrum, when he posits a distinction 'between the claims the
 618 *falāsifa* make in their popular works and the claims they make in works unlikely to
 619 have been of much interest to the general public' (p. 189).³¹ But what on earth do we
 620 imagine a 'general public' to have been in the caliph al-Muqtadir's Baghdad of
 621 al-Fārābī's day or in the Almohad Spain of Ibn Rushd (unless by 'general public' we
 622 mean the Baghdadi Ḥanābila, for example, or the Mālikī *fuqahā*' of twelfth-century
 623 al-Andalus)? And I would not know how to distinguish in this context between a
 624 work for the general reader and one for the specialist, for this is not the same as to
 625 make a distinction between curricular and non-curricular works. But the original
 626 observation remains. The question is not why some thinkers adopted this strategy for
 627 presenting their ideas but what it means in the context of any given treatise for these

³⁰ Oliver Leaman, *An Introduction to Medieval Islamic Philosophy* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1985), p. 186 and p. 187.

³¹ Incidentally, the text from Ḥayy ibn Yaḡzān concerning the inconsistent position of al-Fārābī on the afterlife to which Leaman refers (*Introduction*, p. 188) does not make this distinction at all; Ibn Ṭufayl's artistry in the *muqaddima* to this work is at its most disingenuous in misdirecting his readers in his quest to deprive *falsafa* of ultimate authority in giving adequate accounts of existence. Thus, for example, Gutas has demonstrated the unreliability of the quotations from Ibn Sīnā and Ibn Ṭufayl presumably treats al-Fārābī no differently from Ibn Sīnā: see Dimitri Gutas, 'Ibn Ṭufayl on Ibn Sīnā's Eastern Philosophy', *Oriens*, 34 (1994), 222–241.

ideas to be presented in this manner. (This point is resumed in the discussion of Gutas's arguments on pp. @@-@@ below). 628
629

[AU2]

There are two distortions which the esoteric interpretation introduces in modern approaches to what Leaman identifies as Islamic philosophy: 630
631

1. the claim 'that the conflict between religion and philosophy is of *overriding* importance to the construction of Islamic philosophy and all the arguments within that philosophy' (p. 186); 632
633
634
2. 'the approach which Strauss advocates places the entire emphasis upon the historical aspects of Islamic philosophy', so much so that 'it is as though the philosophy itself is not worth considering as philosophy.'³² 635
636
637

In a subsequent publication, Leaman discerns in this last point an 'Orientalist' assumption 'that Islamic philosophy should not be regarded as philosophy primarily.'³³ While this may represent a hardening of his views over a decade and a half, it is consistent with his appeal to look to the arguments, 'picking out interesting points and judging the strength or otherwise of the reasoning process' which philosophical texts contain (p. 182) – that it is the 'philosophical arguments themselves' (p. 199) that we must understand.³⁴ 638
639
640
641
642
643
644

Thus, what for Strauss was the means to gain access to the presentation, however nebulous, however propaedeutic, however hortatory, of at least the intimations of eternal verities by true philosophers (i.e., reading 'between the lines') becomes for Leaman a gross distortion of the essence of philosophy. That Leaman's vision of philosophy as argumentative cherry-picking may not be consistent with what various Muslim societies and diverse intellectuals living in those societies (not exclusively Muslim, of course) have understood as *falsafa* seems irrelevant, despite the attention he pays in other publications 'to define the precise nature of Islamic philosophy'.³⁵ What one expects to find as philosophy is, as Leaman of course is well aware, what one will find as philosophy: what the philosopher, in Quentin Skinner's words, 'is *set* to expect'. Leaman's response to Strauss, then, raises the ever-present spectre of how we identify which writings of the past are philosophical and how we read them. 645
646
647
648
649
650
651
652
653
654
655
656
657

³² Leaman does not remark on the force of this paradox for Strauss who was, as we have seen, so professedly antipathetical to the historical aspects of all philosophy.

³³ Oliver Leaman, 'Orientalism and Islamic Philosophy', in *History of Islamic Philosophy*, eds Seyyed Hossein Nasr and Oliver Leaman, 2 vols (London: Routledge, 1996), II, pp. 1143–1148 (1145).

³⁴ See further Richard Rorty, 'The Historiography of Philosophy: Four Genres', in *Philosophy in History*, pp. 49–75 ('historical reconstruction... and rational reconstruction' 'should be seen as two moments in a continuing movement around the hermeneutic circle' [p. 53]); Bruce Kuklick, 'Seven Thinkers and How They Grew: Descartes, Spinoza, Leibniz; Locke, Berkeley, Hume; Kant', in *Philosophy in History*, pp. 125–139 (137, n. 13).

³⁵ Oliver Leaman, *A Brief Introduction to Islamic Philosophy* (Cambridge: Polity Press, 1999), pp. 13–22 (13).

658 *Dimitri Gutas*

659 Dimitri Gutas has been one of the most persistent and outspoken opponents of the
 660 'political approach' typical of the Straussians. For him, the issue is not merely *how*
 661 to read, but whether, in view of our current state of knowledge, we are in a position
 662 to read the philosophical writings of the past, without first concentrating on their
 663 edition, translation and study.

664 Such an enterprise also involves the archaeology of these texts, where appropri-
 665 ate, as, for example, is the case with al-Fārābī's adoption, in his treatise *What Must*
 666 *Precede the Learning of Aristotle's Philosophy*, of 'the formulation,' typical of
 667 'Alexandrian Aristotelianism,' 'of the doctrine that Aristotle deliberately cultivated
 668 obscurity in his works'³⁶ in order to test and train the student and to 'prevent the
 669 squandering of philosophy.'³⁷ It then becomes imperative for us to read at least this
 670 treatise as such an exercise.

671 Gutas notes that Strauss infers from his reading of Maimonides's *Guide for the*
 672 *Perplexed* a set of positions which he posited as 'valid for all Arabic philosophy,'³⁸
 673 misunderstanding and misrepresenting what Gutas elsewhere refers to as the 'withhold-
 674 ing of knowledge'³⁹ and misconstruing in the process al-Fārābī's attitudes to 'theology
 675 as a science' (I would prefer to say the truth claims of the theologians) and to religion
 676 in general, which are most definitely not of overriding importance for him. At the heart
 677 of it all, according to Gutas, lies 'the orientalist notion that all of Arabic philosophy is
 678 about the conflict between religion and philosophy,'⁴⁰ pointing to the inadequacy of this
 679 as a description of the religious neutrality of their writings on logic and physics.⁴¹

680 In his discussion of the Arabic branch of the Straussians, Gutas discerns in this
 681 theory of persecution two 'major negative consequences' (p. 21):

- 682 1. 'A hermeneutical libertarianism, or arbitrariness' of reading, with a concomitant
 683 abandonment of 'even the most elementary rules of philological and historical
 684 research' (noting that this sort of approach presumes that 'the Arabic philosophers
 685 had recourse to the same Greek texts of Plato and Aristotle as ours');

³⁶ Dimitri Gutas, *Avicenna and the Aristotelian Tradition: Introduction to Reading Avicenna's Philosophical Works* (Leiden: Brill, 1988), pp. 226–227.

³⁷ Gutas, *Avicenna*, p. 227, n. 13: *li-kay lā tubdhala al-falsafa*.

³⁸ Dimitri Gutas, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century', *British Journal of Middle Eastern Studies*, 29 (2002), pp. 5–25 (19).

³⁹ Gutas, *Avicenna*, pp. 225–234.

⁴⁰ 'The Study', p. 20. See also the comment on p. 22: 'the biased orientalist attitude that philosophy could not thrive in "Islam" because of the intrinsically anti-rationalist nature of the latter.'

⁴¹ Though we have seen earlier that Strauss can be quite coy about which texts to read between the lines, some of his acolytes, such as Charles Butterworth, have been less circumspect: see, e.g., Leaman's discussion of Butterworth's 1977 study of three of Ibn Rushd's short commentaries (on the *Topics*, *Rhetoric* and *Poetics*): *Introduction*, pp. 192–194; and the reviews of Butterworth's 1986 study of Ibn Rushd's Middle Commentary on the *Poetics* by John Mattock in *The Classical Review*, 37 (1989), pp. 332–333 and Dimitri Gutas in *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, 110 (1990), pp. 92–101.

2. an arrogant elitism which such libertarian reading between the lines bestows 686
upon its keeper. 687

In consequence, 'all Arabic philosophy until Averroes is seen as having a political 688
framework' – as being 'in essence, political philosophy' (p. 22). For Gutas, 689

There is no political philosophy as such in Arabic, as the term is normally understood, 690
before Ibn Khaldūn ... no independent field of study within Arabic philosophy which 691
investigates political agents, constituencies, and institutions as autonomous elements that 692
operate according to their own dynamic within the structure of the society.⁴² 693

Irrespective of the implications which such a view might have for texts outwith 694
the Arabic tradition, say, Plato's *Republic*,⁴³ Gutas is right to point to the poverty of 695
the evidence which the Arabic Straussians are able to muster, and their willingness 696
to cede the post-classical period to 'Islamic mysticism'⁴⁴ is an indictment of the 697
restrictions which their approach imposes upon them. 698

But let me state that this is in some ways a distortion of what I think is Strauss's 699
own position, which was that philosophy, because of the deleterious effects on civic 700
order which its verities would have were they to be bruited abroad, was political 701
malgré lui, as it were. It is not that all philosophy is relentlessly, exclusively and 702
self-avowedly political in interest and orientation but that it could not be anything 703
but political the moment it becomes entextualised. 704

In a footnote to his discussion of 'hermeneutical libertarianism', Gutas makes 705
one vital and abiding remark which I will resume presently and so I will quote it 706
almost in full: 707

The literary pathology of overinterpretation, where interpretation has no uniform criteria, is 708
analysed by Umberto Eco ... who brings out its paranoiacal and obsessive nature ... Though 709
Eco makes no reference to Strauss, his analyses are significant for placing the Straussian 710
enterprise both within a historically recognizable tradition and an ideological framework.⁴⁵ 711

Once again, the spectre of how we identify which writings of the past are 712
philosophical and how we read them haunts our discussion. 713

Quentin Skinner 714

In his survey of principal trends in the history of ideas, Quentin Skinner identifies 715
two predominant mythologies which are predicated upon the predisposition or expect- 716
tations of the historian: the mythology of doctrines; the mythology of coherence.⁴⁶ 717

⁴² Gutas, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century', p. 23.

⁴³ Cf. G. R. F Ferrari's 'Introduction' to Plato, *The Republic*, trans. Tom Griffith (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2000), pp. xi–xxxi, especially pp. xxii–xxv.

⁴⁴ See the comment of Muhsin Mahdi, quoted by Gutas, 'The Study', p. 23.

⁴⁵ Gutas, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century', p. 21.

⁴⁶ Skinner, *Visions*, pp. 59–72.

718 The mythology of doctrines comes in two principal articulations, each of which
 719 centres upon how to position any given theorist or writer with relation to those ideas
 720 or doctrines which are thought to be constitutive of the discipline within which the
 721 writer is operating. The positive version will take 'some scattered or incidental
 722 remarks by one of the classic theorists for their "doctrine" on one of the themes
 723 which the historian is *set* to expect' (*Visions*, p. 64). The negative approach, which
 724 is the approach of Strauss, will note that the classic theorist has failed 'to come up
 725 with a recognisable doctrine on one of the mandatory themes' (*Visions*, p. 64).
 726 Skinner then proceeds to discuss *in nuce* Strauss's 'belief in the desirability of
 727 resolving antinomies' (*Visions*, p. 71), or the phenomenon of persecution. He notes
 728 that it hinges upon 'two *a priori* assumptions':

- 729 1. Strauss assumes that 'to be original *is* to be subversive,' for originality as subversion
 730 is 'the means by which we know in which texts to look for doctrines between the
 731 lines' (*Visions*, p. 72);
- 732 2. insulation from criticism – 'to fail to "see" the message between the lines *is* to be
 733 thoughtless, while to "see" it is to be trustworthy and intelligent' (*Visions*, p. 72).

734 Skinner also remarks upon the unverifiability of identification of a period of persecu-
 735 tion, an identification which Strauss himself refers to in his plea for historical
 736 exactitude, for a period of persecution is one in which there will be writing 'between
 737 the lines', while we identify texts written 'between the lines' as indicants of a period
 738 of persecution. And as we have seen above, Strauss's argument that self-persecution
 739 is somehow a perduring feature of pre-Enlightenment philosophical writing renders
 740 the phenomenon even less verifiable.

741 The Synopsis of 'Farabi's Plato'

742 I wish now to consider further Gutas's remark (quoted above on p. @@) concerning
 743 Eco's concept of overinterpretation, for if the proof of the pudding is in the tasting,
 744 and if we, as readers and thinkers, are in any way sympathetic (as I am) to a reading
 745 of a text which 'consists of pursuing questions that the text does not pose to its
 746 model reader' (in Jonathan Culler's formulation),⁴⁷ then we might want to consider
 747 an Arabic text (in this instance, al-Fārābī's *Falsafat Aflāṭun*) and its reading by
 748 Strauss ('Farabi's Plato'). It has not proved possible for me in the present chapter to
 749 offer a close reading of al-Fārābī's text and so I shall attempt half the task by limiting
 750 myself to Strauss's synopsis of his study.

751 For Miles Burnyeat, to be sure, any enterprise to rehabilitate Strauss's way of
 752 reading Plato is doomed. It is from al-Fārābī that Burnyeat thinks Strauss 'apparently

⁴⁷ Jonathan Culler, 'In Defence of Overinterpretation', in Umberto Eco, *Interpretation and Overinterpretation*, ed. Stefan Collini (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1992), pp. 109–124 (114).

learned' 'to show in detail that Plato meant the opposite of what Socrates says' by means of the technique which he characterises as follows: 753
754

You paraphrase the text in tedious detail – or so it appears to the uninitiated reader. Occasionally you remark that a certain statement is not clear; you note that the text is silent about a certain matter; you wonder whether such and such can really be the case. With a series of barely perceptible nudges you gradually insinuate that the text is insinuating something quite different from what the words say. Strauss's description of Farabi describes himself: There is a great divergence between what Farabi explicitly says and what Plato explicitly says; it is frequently impossible to say where Farabi's alleged report of Plato's view ends and his own exposition begins.⁴⁸ 755
756
757
758
759
760
761
762

I hope, Burnyeat's trenchant critique notwithstanding, to be in a position at least to rehabilitate a text by al-Fārābī. Can reflecting upon Strauss's Farabi and Plato somehow enable us to cultivate an excess of wonder in our reading of *Falsafat Aflāṭun*? 763
764
765
766

Strauss and the Philosophy of Plato 767

In view of the centrality of Plato in his vision of philosophy, Strauss was naturally drawn to al-Fārābī's two treatises on Plato: *Falsafat Aflāṭun wa-ajzā'ihā wa-marātib ajzā'ihā min awalihā ilā ākhirihā*, *The Philosophy of Plato, its Parts and the Dispositions of its Parts from their First to their Last*; and *Plato's Laws*. 768
769
770
771

Strauss devoted two articles to these texts which had recently been edited and made available in Latin translations⁴⁹: 'Farabi's Plato' (from the Ginzberg volume in 1945) and 'How Farabi Read Plato's Laws' (first published in 1957 and available in *What is Political Philosophy?*, pp. 134–154). Strauss provided a synopsis of the first of these articles as part of the 'Introduction' to his volume *Persecution and the Art of Writing*, pp. 7–22 (pp. 9–19), which is the version I will discuss. In Strauss's hands, *The Philosophy of Plato* becomes a manifesto of *falsafa*. It is thus Hiram's key not only to al-Fārābī's understanding of Plato but for all philosophical activity in Arabic: 772
773
774
775
776
777
778
779
780

⁴⁸ Miles Burnyeat, 'Sphinx without a Secret' (Review of *Studies in Platonic Political Philosophy* by Leo Strauss), *New York Review of Books*, 32/9 (May 30, 1985), pp. 30–36 (35).

⁴⁹ Al-Fārābī, *De Platonis philosophia*, eds and trans. Franz Rosenthal and Richard Walzer (London: The Warburg Institute, 1943); Al-Fārābī, *Compendium Legum Platonis*, ed. and trans. Francesco Gabrieli (London: The Warburg Institute, 1952) respectively. Compare the Straussian reading of this latter work by Joshua Parens, *Metaphysics as Rhetoric: Alfarabi's Summary of Plato's Laws* (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1995) and the source-critical study by Dimitri Gutas, 'Galen's *Synopsis* of Plato's *Laws* and Fārābī's *Talḥīṣ*', in *The Ancient Tradition in Christian and Islamic Hellenism: Studies on the Transmission of Greek Philosophy and Sciences Dedicated to H. J. Drossaart Lulofs on his Ninetieth Birthday*, eds Gerhard Endress and Remke Kruk (Leiden: Research School CNWS, 1997), pp. 101–119 (= Article V in Dimitri Gutas, *Greek Philosophers in the Arabic Tradition* [Aldershot: Ashgate Variorum, 2000]).

781 What Fārābī regarded as the purpose of the two philosophers ... appears with all the clarity
 782 which one can reasonably desire, from his summary of Plato's philosophy ... This purpose
 783 is likely to prove the latent purpose of all *falāsifa* proper. Fārābī's *Plato* would thus prove
 784 to be the clue par excellence to the *falsafa* as such.⁵⁰

785 And because al-Fārābī and Strauss are engaged in the same activity, true philosophy,
 786 we can overlook the slippage in Strauss's argument from establishing al-Fārābī's
 787 'purpose' to promoting Strauss's vision. Although he does not explicitly acknowledge
 788 the uniqueness of al-Fārābī's treatise on Plato, Strauss does acknowledge that his
 789 reconstruction of these intentions is based on works by 'men like Yehuda Halevi and
 790 Maimonides' (*Persecution*, p. 11), whose interpretations are confirmed by 'at least
 791 some writings of Fārābī' (*Persecution*, p. 11). And although he explicitly promotes the
 792 representativeness of this Fārābian vision, he also acknowledges that 'it is impossible
 793 to say to what extent Fārābī's successors accepted his views in regard to the crucial
 794 point' (*Persecution*, p. 11).

795 Strauss begins his reading from the observation that *The Philosophy of Plato* is
 796 the second treatise in a tripartite composition (I am ignorant of the manuscriptural
 797 authority for this allegation, which is widely voiced in secondary studies): the first
 798 is the *Tahṣīl al-sa'āda*, *The Realisation of Felicity*, while the concluding treatise is
 799 devoted to the philosophy of Aristotle (this work was not available in edited format
 800 when Strauss was writing).

801 The first work provides Strauss with three clues: 'the chief requirement' 'for
 802 bringing about the complete happiness of nations and of cities' is 'the rule of
 803 philosophers' (*Persecution*, p. 12); Plato and Aristotle have given us the methods
 804 for attaining philosophy 'after it has been blurred or destroyed' (*Persecution*, p. 12);
 805 'the purpose of Plato and Aristotle was one and the same' (*Persecution*, p. 12).

806 He next summarises the treatise. It is concerned with happiness as perfection.
 807 This happiness consists in 'the science of the essence of every being,' i.e., phi-
 808 losophy. The lifestyle which leads to it is 'the royal or political art', for 'the
 809 philosopher and the king prove to be identical' and there is nothing 'higher in
 810 rank than philosophy' (*Persecution*, pp. 12–13). Thus philosophy nullifies
 811 revealed religion, for this philosophy is pagan philosophy and so al-Fārābī's
 812 vision is not confined to Islam. Plato is al-Fārābī's ventriloquist's dummy and he
 813 passes a damning 'verdict' on the 'cognitive value' of 'the religious knowledge
 814 available' in both their times (*Persecution*, p. 13).

815 Furthermore, *The Philosophy of Plato*, despite discussing the relevant Platonic
 816 dialogues in which 'the immortality of the soul' features, makes no mention of the
 817 distinction made in the *Tahṣīl* 'between "the happiness of this world in this life" and
 818 "the ultimate happiness in the other life"' (*Persecution*, p. 13) and so 'Fārābī's Plato
 819 silently rejects Plato's doctrine of a life after death' (*Persecution*, p. 13). He is

⁵⁰ Strauss, *Persecution and the Art of Writing*, p. 12. See *ibid.*, p. 17: 'Fārābī's remarks on Plato's policy define the general character of the activity of the *falāsifa*.' It is unclear whether this definition is valid for the *falāsifa* themselves or for Strauss's vision of al-Fārābī's vision of the *falāsifa*, though the distinction will be nugatory if we agree that all parties involved are engaged in the same enterprise.

empowered to take such a bold and dangerous step because *The Philosophy* is ‘the least exposed and the shortest part of a larger work’ (i.e., it is the second instalment of what Strauss identifies as a trilogy) and because ‘it sets forth explicitly the views of another man’ (*Persecution*, p. 14). 820–823

Strauss then compares the idiosyncrasy of the *Plato* with the ‘orthodox views’ and the ‘tolerable’ ‘if heretical’ views expressed ‘in works in which he speaks in his own name’ (*Persecution*, p. 14) and proposes that al-Fārābī takes advantage of ‘the specific immunity of the commentator or of the historian’ in order to address ‘grave matters in his “historical” works’ rather than those in his own name. 824–828

Viewed thus, this silent omission by al-Fārābī becomes so pregnant with significance and so momentous that it undermines the representativeness, in terms of al-Fārābī’s *true* philosophical views, of his other statements in support of the immortality of the soul, which ‘must be regarded as accommodations to the accepted views’ (*Persecution*, p. 15). 829–833

Strauss now turns his attention to politics, for although the *Plato* discusses the identity of the philosopher and the king, al-Fārābī does not mention the law-giver.⁵¹ It is therefore in the light of this absence (I think I am correct in drawing this conclusion) ‘not religion or Revelation but politics, if Platonic politics’ which is required and in so doing, al-Fārābī initiates ‘the tradition whose most famous representatives in the West are Marsilius of Padua and Machiavelli’ (*Persecution*, p. 15). Rejection of the immortal soul is a prelude to the call for ‘the virtuous city ... midway between this world and the other world ... existing not “in deed” but “in speech”’ (*Persecution*, p. 15). 834–841

Is it necessary for such a city to exist in actuality? Strauss thinks that al-Fārābī understood Plato and Aristotle as thinking not. He reaches this conclusion through consideration of a distinction made by al-Fārābī ‘between Socrates’s investigations and Plato’s investigations’, between the Socratic emphasis on justice and the virtues’ and the Platonic emphasis on ‘the science of the divine and of the natural things’ (*Persecution*, p. 16). These different emphases represent the crucial distinction of the choices both thinkers made when confronted with persecution: Socrates chose death through non-conformity; Plato elected to found ‘the virtuous city in speech’ (p. 16). 842–850

At this point in the text there occurs another epiphany, in the form of a repetition, for according to al-Fārābī, ‘Plato “repeated” his account of the way of Socrates and he “repeated” the mention of the vulgar of the cities and nations’ (*Persecution*, p. 16), the import of which is that we should understand al-Fārābī as interpreting Plato as maintaining that the way of Socrates is fit for the philosopher’s congress with the elite, the way of Thrasymachus necessary for his engagement with the vulgar. No need, then, to revolutionise the city. Instead what is proposed is a programme of gradual education (the ‘replacement of the accepted opinions by the truth or an approximation 851–858

⁵¹ We must remember that for Strauss ‘revelation as understood by Jews and Muslims has the character of Law’ and thus was ‘a social order, if an all-comprehensive order, which regulates not merely actions but thoughts or opinions as well’ (*Persecution*, pp. 9–10), i.e., it is a temporal and cultural zone of persecution. This seems to have led him to overlook the references to the *wāḍī’ al-nawāmīs* at *Philosophy of Plato*, VII, § 29, p. 21, l. 12 and VII, § 30, p. 22, l. 6–7.

859 to the truth') and the humanisation of 'an imperfect society', or the replacement by
860 al-Fārābī's Plato of

861 the philosopher-king who rules openly in the virtuous city, by the secret kingship of the
862 philosopher who, being "a perfect man" precisely because he is an "investigator," lives
863 privately as a member of an imperfect society.⁵²

864 His abbreviated reading of the treatise now complete, it is time for Strauss to
865 draw some conclusions:

- 866 1. We should not confound the 'teaching of the *falāsifa* with what they taught most
867 frequently or most conspicuously.'
- 868 2. The 'philosophic distinction between the exoteric and the esoteric teaching'
869 was, *The Philosophy of Plato* reminds us, because 'philosophy and the philoso-
870 phers were in "grave danger" ... There was no harmony between philosophy
871 and society' (p. 17).
- 872 3. 'The exoteric teaching was needed for protecting philosophy' (p. 18); it was thus
873 'political'; 'Fārābī presented the whole of philosophy within a political
874 framework.'
- 875 4. There is an intimation of the exoteric-esoteric distinction in the title which Averroes
876 gave to al-Fārābī's 'tripartite' composition (see also *Persecution*, p. 11).
- 877 5. The 'Neo-Platonism of the *falāsifa*' may represent their exoteric teaching because
878 (?) 'Fārābī's *Plato* shows no trace whatever of Neo-Platonic influence' (p. 18).⁵³
- 879 6. The freedom of philosophy in al-Fārābī's day was even more parlous than in
880 Plato's 'after "philosophy had been blurred or destroyed";' this parlous nature of
881 philosophy in the Islamic world, its incommensurability with 'the legal interpre-
882 tation of the Divine Law (*Talmud* or *fiqh*) ... explains partly the eventual collapse
883 of philosophic inquiry in the Islamic and in the Jewish world' (p. 19).

884 This is heady stuff. As a reader I am swept up by Strauss into the maelstrom of
885 events of an apocalyptic dimension. The very fate of philosophy is decided in this
886 short treatise by al-Fārābī (no more than 5,000 words long), an unusual composition
887 by a textually unusual if vitally important Arabic-Islamic philosopher of fourth/
888 tenth century Baghdad.

889 I am flattered that this aspect of the tradition in which I am interested is of a
890 cosmic significance but I am confused by the argumentative tergiversations of
891 Strauss's interpretation: when is a repetition not simply an error?; when is a silence
892 not the result of ignorance?; what evidence could we provide to corroborate the
893 contention that these treatises were composed according to this structural principle
894 (i.e., as a trilogy, the second item of which is the cherished locus of enhanced philo-
895 sophical freedom?); how did al-Fārābī gain such an intimate and such a specialised
896 knowledge of Platonic philosophy, one which, even with the whole Platonic corpus

⁵² Strauss, *Persecution and the Art of Writing*, p. 17.

⁵³ This last inference (on the exotericism of the Neoplatonism of the *falāsifa*) is entirely conjectural on my part.

at my disposal, in scientific editions and carefully crafted translations and meticulously argued analyses, I know I could never hope to emulate, let alone achieve? 897
898

Before proceeding, let me note that in his promotion of ventriloquism and his insistence that these texts dissemble, Strauss has emphasised cultural and intellectual phenomena which I think are of far-reaching significance for the ways in which ninth- and tenth-century intellectuals presented their ideas in Arabic. 899
900
901
902

Excessive Wonder or Overinterpretation? 903

In a spirit of constructive criticism, it is worth pausing to reflect more fully on whether we would prefer to defend Strauss's reading as an instance of excessive interpretation ('overstanding'), or condemn it, with Gutas, as overinterpretation. 904
905
906

Is it the task of the reader, the philosopher, critic or literary theorist, to remove the 'excess of wonder' which Eco thinks 'leads to overestimating the importance of coincidences which are explainable in other ways' (*Interpretation*, p. 50)? Or do we think, with Culler, that 'it would be sad indeed if fear of "overinterpretation" should lead us to avoid or repress the state of wonder at the play of texts and interpretation' (*Interpretation*, p. 123)?⁵⁴ In other words, do Strauss's readings of al-Fārābī arouse in us a sense of wonder at the play of his texts? 907
908
909
910
911
912
913

Before we are in a position to consider these questions, we must think about the distinction drawn by Wayne Booth between 'understanding' and 'overstanding' and first briefly rehearse the stances of Eco and Culler as they may apply to Strauss's reading of *The Philosophy of Plato*. 914
915
916
917

The second of Umberto Eco's published Tanner Lectures delivered at Clare Hall in the University of Cambridge in 1990 is 'Overinterpreting Texts' (*Interpretation*, pp. 45–66). It is a characteristically erudite and witty review of a tendency in textual interpretation which Eco christens 'Hermetic semiosis' – a poetics of suspicion based on the overestimation of clues and signs informed by an indiscriminate criterion of similarity, with a pronounced predilection for passing from 'sign to semiosis' with no more warrant than the presence of similarity. Eco proposes instead that the 'text is a device conceived in order to produce its model reader' noting that 'the empirical reader is only an actor who makes conjectures about the kind of model reader postulated by the text' (*Interpretation*, p. 64). Jonathan Culler ('In Defence of Overinterpretation', in Eco, *Interpretation*, pp. 109–124) is unhappy about Eco's condemnation of the term 'overinterpretation' and promotes the notion of 'overstanding' as developed by Wayne C. Booth in his *Critical Understanding: The Powers and Limits of Pluralism*.⁵⁵ 918
919
920
921
922
923
924
925
926
927
928
929
930
931

⁵⁴ My sympathies in the present essay lie with Culler, though in a companion piece I have promoted the Econian dialectic of *intentio operis* and *intentio lectoris*: James E. Montgomery, 'Abū Nuwās, the Justified Sinner?', *Oriens* 39 (2011), pp. 75–164.

⁵⁵ Wayne C. Booth, *Critical Understanding: The Powers and Limits of Pluralism* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1979).

932 Booth's book began as a set of seminar presentations, the Christian Gauss
 933 Seminars held in Princeton during 1974. It is a book of criticism of criticism of
 934 criticism, arguing for a critical pluralism based on engagement and community,
 935 deeply informed by a pragmatist ethic. One can quickly get a flavour of both its
 936 author's style and forthrightness from his 'A Hippocratic Oath for the Pluralist',
 937 with comments such as, 'I will publish nothing, favourable or unfavourable, about
 938 books or articles I have not read through at least once'; 'I will *try* to publish nothing
 939 about any book or article until ... I have reason to think that I can give an account
 940 of it that the author himself will recognise as just'; 'I will take no critic's word,
 941 when he discusses other critics, unless he can convince me that he has abided by
 942 the first two ordinances.'⁵⁶

943 A central feature of Booth's book, which I have found useful in thinking about
 944 al-Fārābī and how Strauss reads him, is his distinction between 'understanding' and
 945 'overstanding'.⁵⁷ I have italicised the prepositions because they provide the easiest
 946 way to perceive the points which I want to appropriate from Booth's argument. In
 947 'understanding' the text stands over us as readers. Its world dominates us from a
 948 position of superiority. It insists that we as readers respond to questions it asks of us
 949 and provide answers to those questions.⁵⁸ These questions differ, of course, from
 950 text to text: 'the boundaries of "appropriateness" are invariably set by the text'; and
 951 as readers we will 'infer different boundaries ... of appropriate questions.' Note
 952 however that

953 About what we might call the text's central preoccupations there is an astonishing agree-
 954 ment among us all.⁵⁹

955 The example which Booth gives is Shakespeare's *Coriolanus*, stressing that 'the
 956 amount of information about *Coriolanus* shared by all serious critics, regardless of
 957 their theories, is staggering.' (p. 244). 'Understanding' therefore is predicated upon
 958 a consensus about a given work and the data which relate to it (pp. 244–249).

959 (Of course in the case of many of al-Fārābī's texts, and of so many other Arabic
 960 texts from the ninth and tenth centuries, we simply do not have access to this data
 961 and information, or often the data and information which we do have access to can
 962 be shown to be produced by readers within the tradition responding to uncertainties
 963 about the demands of the text just as we are. Thus we are rarely in a position to
 964 imply that 'we know everything that is undeniable about the work' [p. 245]. There is
 965 often precious little data which could form the basis of such a consensus, as, to take
 966 one example among many, anyone who is familiar with the debates about al-Shāfi'ī's
 967 *Risāla* over the last three decades will readily agree.)

⁵⁶ *Ibid.*, pp. 351–352.

⁵⁷ I do not follow Booth's definition of 'understanding' as 'the goal, process, and result whenever one mind succeeds in entering another mind' (p. 262), largely because I am unsure how to recognise when this might happen to me.

⁵⁸ Booth, *Critical Understanding*, pp. 238–242.

⁵⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 241.

'Overstanding' is that moment when we as readers turn the tables on the text and position ourselves above the text in a moment of authority and refuse to be constrained by the questions which the text demands of us. It is, according to Booth, a 'violation of the text's demands' (p. 255), actuated by the process of question and response which we engaged in when seeking to understand the text.⁶⁰

(To be sure, I would argue in a different forum that the distinction between understanding and overstanding is artificial, despite the clarity which Booth allows us from his discussion of the process. Understanding and overstanding are, for me, both aspects of the same process: that of seeking to respect a text, in full knowledge that often the questions which a text seems to demand of me are questions which my reading of other texts has impelled me to discern as appropriate. So too the 'success' or 'tendentiousness' of my under/overstanding is often unclear to me. I look to my colleagues and the discipline to which I belong to pass verdict on their success or failure. My reading is limited by my ability to engage with the text and the suasiveness of my reading by my capacity for doing a good job in presenting my engagement; the limitations of my reading are determined by the community to which I belong.)

A characteristic feature of 'overstanding' therefore is that it pursues 'questions that the text does not pose to its model reader' (Culler, 'In Defence', p. 114), asking 'not what the work has in mind but what it forgets, not what it says but what it takes for granted' ('In Defence', p. 115). It is here that we encounter a major obstacle to a possible defence of Strauss's hermeneutic in terms of Culler's plea for overstanding, because Strauss's interpretation pursues questions which he thinks the text poses to its model reader and conceals from its ordinary reader, pointing the model reader to what it takes for granted and what it encourages the ordinary reader not to notice.

Now, rather than opening up the text, say in the ways in which Roland Barthes opened up Balzac or Michelet, Strauss seeks to control and determine the totalization of textual meaning by reconstructing the intention of the text, which is for him synonymous with the intention of the author. Overstanding, according to Culler, ought to encourage puzzlement over the features of a text which 'seem to resist the totalization of meaning' and 'those about which there might initially seem to be nothing to say' ('In Defence', p. 122).

Thus I would expect Strauss might from the very start be inclined to reject a defence of his reading of the text as overstanding, preferring instead to insist that it is understanding. And I suspect that his approach is essentially a pontifical discipline (one which presumes 'to pontificate explicitly on the methods appropriate to

⁶⁰ As with 'understanding' there are features of Booth's notion of 'overstanding' about which I am unsure, as when he holds that 'just "violations" will be those that are based on a prior act of understanding, and understanding will lead to deliberate violation when justice requires it' (p. 259). My lack of comfort with this statement is connected with my comments about 'data': when it comes to so many Arabic texts from the period, there is no possibility of the kind of consensus that would make any such shared notion of 'justice' feasible.

1005 inquiry'),⁶¹ masquerading as a divinatory discipline (one which is driven by a
1006 deciphering of signs).⁶²

1007 Overstanding can be a critical response to what Culler notes is the hermeneutic
1008 crisis which occurs when a text challenges 'the conceptual framework with which
1009 one attempts to interpret it' ('In Defence', p. 109).⁶³ Strauss developed his interpre-
1010 tative framework from a reading of Maimonides and applied it to al-Fārābī. I can
1011 discern no evidence of any challenge posed by *The Philosophy of Plato* to Strauss's
1012 theory of writing and/or reading between the lines. Quite the opposite – Strauss
1013 argues that the treatise is a perfect example of its dynamic. Indeed, in a very real
1014 sense, he uses his framework to challenge al-Fārābī's text.

1015 Culler argues, and Booth would agree to a limited extent, that 'interpretation is
1016 interesting only when it is extreme' ('In Defence', p. 110). Strauss's reading is
1017 certainly extreme and I do find it intriguing. When extreme, according to Culler,
1018 such readings 'have a better chance of bringing to light connections or implications
1019 not previously noticed or reflected on than if they strive to remain "sound" or moder-
1020 erate' ('In Defence', p. 110). Let me repeat: ventriloquism and dissemblance are
1021 two such features brought to light by Strauss's reading.

1022 Strauss's hermeneutic certainly brings to light other connections and implications
1023 not previously noticed, by modern readers that is, not by ancient philosophers,
1024 though the connections are often unsubstantiated (some of his critics, I am sure,
1025 would prefer that I say that they are beyond substantiation). Indeed, it is a moot
1026 point whether we can say that the implications thus extracted are 'sound' – I suspect
1027 that it depends on what the reader expects of a 'philosopher': several generations of
1028 Straussians have found them to be both 'sound' and fructiferous. And so, once
1029 again, the question of how we identify which writings of the past are philosophical
1030 and how we read them haunts our discussion.

1031 But in Culler's eyes, for any interpretation to be successful in exciting wonder it
1032 must be 'persuasive' ('In Defence', p. 110) and where appropriate there must be
1033 demonstrable 'independent evidence'. I do not find Strauss's reading persuasive, but
1034 would still be prepared to entertain it if it helped me to be a more perceptive reader
1035 of al-Fārābī's treatise, and, once again I repeat, I am intrigued by the observation
1036 that many have found it and continue to find it to be persuasive. What's more, any
1037 evidence Strauss might be able to muster probably does not qualify as 'independ-
1038 ent', for it is derived from his own readings of other texts, be they later or earlier
1039 (though principally from his reading of Maimonides), even though I am unsure
1040 about what would constitute 'independent evidence' for Culler.

⁶¹ Nicholas Jardine, *The Scenes of Inquiry: On the Reality of Questions in the Sciences* (Oxford: The Clarendon Press, 2000 [1991]), p. 99.

⁶² See Carlo Ginzburg, 'Clues: Roots of an Evidential Paradigm', in Id., *Clues, Myths and the Historical Method*, trans. John and Anne C. Tedeschi (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989), pp. 96–125; Jardine, *Scenes of Inquiry*, pp. 96–99.

⁶³ Terry Eagleton, *Literary Theory: An Introduction*, Anniversary Edition (Oxford: Blackwell, 2005 [1983]), p. 109 notes that 'literary texts are "code-productive" and "code-transgressive" as well as "code-confirming"'. In this respect I do not see any difference between the texts which we identify as 'literary' and those we identify as 'philosophical': see note @@ below.

But when I turn from Strauss's heady reading of al-Fārābī's *The Philosophy of Plato* to al-Fārābī's text itself, I begin to realise that my yearned for 'excess of wonder' is more academic bafflement at Strauss's wondrously arcane hermeneutical ingenuity: I am left more in confusion at how he reads the text than in wonder at the text thus revealed. In other words, I begin to think that I have learned little about al-Fārābī's treatise but much about Leo Strauss's method of reading.

So can Econian overinterpretation, as Gutas, 'The Study', p. 21, suggests, help us to understand the trajectories of Strauss's hermeneutical ingenuities? There is much in Eco's description which resonates. He identifies 'paranoiac' interpretation as suspicious reading which sees behind any example a secret to which the author alludes (*Interpretation*, p. 48), a reading predicated upon the elaboration of 'some kind of obsessive method' as a way of assessing evidence that leads to 'the overestimation of the importance of clues' (*Interpretation*, p. 49). Eco suggests that this is concomitant with, or attendant upon, the sacralization of secular texts within any culture.⁶⁴

The 'secular sacred' text which Eco discusses is the writings of Dante. Eco notes that 'Dante was the first to say that his poetry conveyed a non-literal sense, to be detected... beyond and beneath the literal sense' (*Interpretation*, p. 60) (as the Alexandrians maintained of Aristotle's acroatic writings). However (and like the Straussian philosopher) Dante also furnished the 'keys for finding out the non-literal senses' and thus, for example, some scholars have discerned papal invective in 'every reference to erotic matters and to real people' without pausing to wonder why Dante should have taken the trouble to conceal his invective thus when he did not take the trouble to conceal it elsewhere, for example in his explicit invectives.

Eco discerns as typical of this kind of reading 'the principle of *post hoc, ergo ante hoc*' (p. 59), according to which 'a consequence is assumed and interpreted as the cause of its own cause' (*Interpretation*, p. 51). Or, in our case, a matrix of phenomena which Strauss discerned in Maimonides's *Guide for the Perplexed* is uncovered in al-Fārābī's *The Philosophy of Plato* and thus becomes its cause. Suspicious reading, an obsessive method, the overestimation of clues: these are features of Strauss's reading 'between the lines' of al-Fārābī's text.

One of the reasons that his hermeneutic exerts such persuasive appeal on others is, I would like to propose, a further feature of the complex of overinterpretation: the sacralization of non-sacred texts. Strauss, it seems to me, takes a body of texts and not only canonises them but beatifies them (and their reader), elevating both to the level of the sacred. They thereby *become* Revelation. Texts are recalcitrant and often truculent in the way they resist reading. It can be fiendishly difficult to decide 'what

⁶⁴ 'As soon as a text becomes sacred for a certain culture, it becomes subject to the process of suspicious reading and therefore to what is undoubtedly an excess of interpretation ... in the case of texts which are sacred [...] one cannot allow oneself too much licence, as there is usually a religious authority and tradition that claims to hold the key to its interpretation ... this attitude towards sacred texts ... has also been transmitted, in secularised form, to texts which have become metaphorically sacred in the course of their reception' (*Interpretation*, p. 52–53). I will explore this observation in my projected article on overstanding al-Fārābī's *Falsafat Aflātun*, in the context of a discussion of the similarities I perceive between al-Fārābī's ambigiously oracular texts and the Quran.

1078 is being talked about' (Eco, *Interpretation*, p. 63). Strauss offers us a way to make
 1079 this decision with confidence and thus dispels the spectre of interpretative
 1080 uncertainty.

1081 **The History of Philosophy**

1082 As an undercurrent to much of the previous discussions there runs the questions
 1083 of what we intend by the term 'philosophy', how and which texts we identify as
 1084 philosophical, and whether we agree that philosophical (or theological) writing is
 1085 a particular kind of writing, one that marks it off as distinct from imaginative writing,
 1086 or historical writing or poetry, for example.⁶⁵ I am not sure, in the case of the
 1087 Arabic-Islamic philosophical (or theological) writings I am familiar with, that this
 1088 distinction is particularly helpful in all instances but in the present context I will
 1089 not push the point.⁶⁶ Two observations seem clear to me, however:

- 1090 1. most of the studies of what are identified as Arabic-Islamic philosophical
 1091 (and/or theological) writings are predicated upon a strong notion of what it is
 1092 to do philosophy: 'that philosophy is characterised by a specific set of tasks
 1093 which remain constant through history ... manifest in the continued recur-
 1094 rence of certain typical problems' – or in Rorty's phrase, 'that "philosophy" is
 1095 the name of a natural kind'⁶⁷; consequently, because philosophy is distinct and
 1096 autonomous, texts identified as philosophical must also be autonomous⁶⁸;
- 1097 2. most of the scholars who study Arabic-Islamic philosophical (and/or theological
 1098 writings) and who do not confine their interests exclusively to the arguments
 1099 presented in the texts (though even there I suspect that such exclusivity is impos-
 1100 sible) entertain perhaps something akin to Skinner's minimalist authorial inten-
 1101 tionalism based on speech-act theory or at least a fuzzy version of the Econian

⁶⁵ See the remarks on genre made by Alasdair MacIntyre, 'The Relationship of Philosophy to its Past', in *Philosophy in History*, pp. 31–48 (at p. 32); Skinner, *Visions*, p. 124.

⁶⁶ Eagleton, *Literary Theory*, p. 126, reminds us that 'philosophy, law, political theory work by metaphor just as poems do, and so are just as fictional.'

⁶⁷ Krüger, 'Why Do We Study', p. 79; Rorty, 'The Historiography of Philosophy', p. 63. Krüger, p. 86, clarifies the extension of this notion as 'transcendental' philosophy. An inflection of this approach is that when a scholar discerns in a text 'certain typical problems' or 'certain fundamental alternative approaches to the solution' (Krüger, p. 79), she identifies the text as philosophical. This, is of course, the hermeneutical circle: 'individual features are intelligible in terms of the entire context' (here the strong notion of 'philosophy') 'and the entire context becomes intelligible through the individual features': Eagleton, *Literary Theory*, p. 64.

⁶⁸ Krüger, developing an insight of Rorty's, argues that such autonomy is a corollary of this ideal of philosophy because 'philosophy investigated the time-transcendent structure of human reason or human nature'. In an observation which is evocative of the Arabic ninth- and tenth-century textual heritage, he likens it in this respect to theology, the object of which, 'God, is conceived as always present and immutable (more so than nature) but lacking availability' (p. 86).

model of interpretation. After all, this kind of writing seems to make claims on us as readers, claims relating, among other things, to persuasion, conviction, honesty and authority – or put simply, the true meaning of existence.

So we must first begin by assuming that the philosopher when he entextualises his ideas *intends* to be honest and, unless he tells us that this is not so, that he *means* the ideas or theories or arguments which he presents as his own to be at least representative, if not conclusive.⁶⁹

And once we have assented to the text in this manner and on these terms, a number of consequences occur:

1. We honour the texts which we christen as philosophy and are honoured by them in turn. The ‘sacralization’ of these works, discussed above in the context of Eco’s analysis of ‘paranoiac’ interpretation, is thus not a Straussian peccadillo but is an extreme formulation of a foundational strategy of the study of Arabic-Islamic philosophical texts.⁷⁰
2. It is a small step to confound the model author with the empirical author (in Eco’s terms) and thus to generate a biographical narrative of texts and their correspondingly entextualised arguments. This is even more compelling in writings which we identify as philosophical because for so many of us philosophy is almost always and by its very nature presumed to be systematic and held to seek the removal (often over time) of inconsistencies; it thus demands that its products be cast into a narrative which highlights this systematic consistency.
3. This again convinces us of the hegemony of intentionalism, according to which the empirical author-philosopher becomes more important than the text: the author-philosopher is recreated as the protagonist of the narrative biography of his philosophical writings.

This in turn leads to the following curious paradox:

4. That while some scholars with an interest in the history of Arabic-Islamic philosophy are undoubtedly among the closest and most sophisticated of readers, they may also and simultaneously be (viewed from the present methodological and critical perspective) the naivest of readers.

⁶⁹ That we know what al-Fārābī had in mind when he wrote implies that al-Fārābī knew what he had in mind, that he was in complete control of his meanings, that his intentions were fully achieved (that he set out to write a comedy but composed a tragedy, for example) and were not, say, contradictory, or deluded, or changed mid-way through composition; it also implies that the text which gives us access to al-Fārābī’s mind (intention) is a harmonious and integral whole, that it is not only an independent but also a coherent artefact; and anyway ‘an author’s intention is itself a complete “text”, which can be debated, translated and variously interpreted just like any other’; see Eagleton, *Literary Theory*, pp. 41, 60, 64, and 101. I would not want to dispense with all consideration of intentions completely, merely to argue for the insufficiency of any presumption that it is the hegemonic and over-riding consideration in interpreting the texts which we read.

⁷⁰ See Rorty, ‘The Historiography of Philosophy’, pp. 58–59, for the use of the term philosophy as a ‘honorific’.

1132 **Sigmund Freud and the Alethiometer**

1133 Heinrich Meier claims that ‘the sole political act of consequence that Strauss brought
 1134 himself to launch was to found a school’ (pp. xvii–xviii). Schools come about in a
 1135 variety of ways and for a variety of reasons: they do not always depend upon the
 1136 conscious decision of a founder. They can grow organically, as a development of the
 1137 success and appeal of a particular teaching combined with an enduring lifestyle
 1138 (the Ḥanābila, for example); they can be an act of piety, on the part of disciples
 1139 (the Shāfi‘iyya, for example); they can emerge as the result of regional practices (as in
 1140 the case Medinan *fiqh*, for example); they can be the result of a taxonomist’s mania for
 1141 classification, as is so often happens in the Arabic heresiographies, such as al-Ash‘arī’s
 1142 *Maqālāt al-Islāmiyyīn*. They can emerge as a consequence of a reaction-formation, as
 1143 when al-Ash‘arī repudiated his Mu‘tazilite teaching and his doctrines in turn were devel-
 1144 oped into the Ash‘ariyya. Or, they can represent, as Strauss’s case suggests to me (Meier’s
 1145 claim notwithstanding), an attempt on the part of a thinker to preserve his legacy and
 1146 perpetuate his teachings. In this respect, Strauss may resemble Sigmund Freud, the
 1147 founder of the psychoanalytic movement and a thinker much exercised, like Strauss,
 1148 though for quite different reasons, over his Jewish heritage.

1149 Consider the following statement. The book

1150 [w]as bound to be something fundamentally new and shattering to the uninitiated. Concern
 1151 for these uninitiated compels me to keep the completed essay secret.

1152 This statement, so redolently and, as it were, resolutely Straussian, does not in
 1153 fact originate with Strauss or one of the Straussians but is a comment by Freud, in a
 1154 letter written in Vienna describing his work *Moses and Monotheism*.⁷¹ The senti-
 1155 ments it voices are just those expressed by Strauss in a letter concerning his reading
 1156 of Maimonides (see note @@ above).

1157 There are other similarities. Both seem to have been gripped by a certain
 1158 ambivalence about contemporary Judaism, though in radically different ways,
 1159 with Freud seeking to analyse Judaism on account of the gift of monotheism
 1160 which he thought it gave to humanity and Strauss endeavouring to salvage Judaism
 1161 through Maimonides. The Straussian opposition of Athens and Jerusalem is
 1162 echoed in the Freudian polarity of science versus the delusion of religion.⁷² Freud
 1163 tends to view human nature as Strauss views philosophical works, as decontextua-
 1164 lised: neither thinker regularly takes into account how humans or texts may be
 1165 grounded in specific contexts. The unconscious, too, for Freud is decontextualised
 1166 in that it is timeless, just as philosophy is for Strauss: ‘the same primordial struggle’
 1167 endures over (or better: despite) time.⁷³

⁷¹ Quoted from Mark Edmundson, *The Death of Sigmund Freud: Fascism, Psychoanalysis and the Rise of Fundamentalism* (London: Bloomsbury, 2007), p. 145.

⁷² John Forrester, ‘Introduction’, in Sigmund Freud, *Interpreting Dreams*, trans. J. A. Underwood (London: Penguin, 2006), pp. xxiii–xxv.

⁷³ Jonathan Lear, *Freud* (New York and London: Routledge, 2005), p. 44.

Accordingly, we witness Freud grappling with the encoded expressions of the blurring in the unconscious of past, present and future whereas Strauss seeks to ensure the future of philosophy through the excavation in the present of its past. Our principal means of access to the unconscious is through the dream, which becomes in Freud's system what the philosophical writing is in Strauss's theories: the text of the philosophical writing is the manifest content of the dream, the philosophical message its latent content. Censorship (a Freudian form of persecution) is ever-present in the 'dream-work' as vital, repressed, wishes are distorted into indifferent and harmless images because they are rejected as unacceptable, just as the philosopher distorts and represses the true message of philosophy, tucking it away in his text in places where few would think to look. Just as there are rules for reading between the lines, so there are identifiable mechanisms (e.g. absences, elisions, compressions and displacements) which we should be on the look out for as we seek to read between the lines of the dream-images in order to gain access to the distorted dream-thoughts.⁷⁴

In order to interpret both these texts, we have to, in Freud's words, become 'accustomed to divine secret and concealed things from unconsidered or unnoticed details, from the rubbish heap, as it were, of our observations'.⁷⁵ Thus, both thinkers urge us to cultivate and apply what Paul Ricoeur has described as 'the hermeneutics of suspicion'.⁷⁶ The esotericism of both dream and philosophy has for me two important consequences for how I understand Strauss's project, both of which I owe to John Forrester's brilliant study of Freud's *Interpreting Dreams*. As Forrester points out, the presence of

Hidden meanings entails, interestingly enough, that the meaning is potentially shareable, that the dream is potentially a public act of revelation and communication, or can properly be rendered so.⁷⁷

Thus, Strauss, having stumbled upon the secret of true philosophy, must divulge its esoteric nature in his writings: esotericism must be communicable in order to be recognised as esotericism.

The dreamer requires the interpreter in order to assist her in interpreting the dream.⁷⁸ Even Freud, who made of himself his own patient, and who is both the subject and the object of *Interpreting Dreams*, a book filled with analyses of his own dreams, rejected the ultimate success of self-analysis.⁷⁹ Forrester notes that the very act of dream interpretation places the interpreter

⁷⁴ Eagleton, *Literary Theory*, p. 158; Forrester, 'Introduction', pp. xxxiii–xxxiv.

⁷⁵ Quoted from Ginzburg, 'Clues', p. 99.

⁷⁶ Paul Ricoeur, *Freud and Philosophy: An Essay in Interpretation*, trans. Denis Savage (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1970), p. 7.

⁷⁷ Forrester, 'Introduction', p. xxxvi.

⁷⁸ Lear's interesting observation (*Freud*, p. 93) that 'Freud is primarily concerned not with the interpretation of dream but the self-interpretation of dreamers' does not obviate the need for interpretative assistance in the form of Freud or his surrogate, his dream book.

⁷⁹ See Lear, *Freud*, pp. 88–89; Forrester, 'Introduction', p. xxvi.

1202 In the field of the 'latent,' beyond the manifest content and the resistances that prevent the
1203 dreamer going much beyond that content.⁸⁰

1204 In other words, the interpreter, the psychopomp, is a liminal figure, one who
1205 shares a presence in both the manifest and the latent content of the unconscious. So
1206 Strauss is simultaneously an exoteric and an esoteric philosopher, a liminal pres-
1207 ence whose liminality we require in order to grow as philosophers.

1208 Freud sought to hold his school together by means of precisely the kind of
1209 authoritarian patriarchy which so many of his writings seek to unseat. This did not
1210 prove hugely successful, though the success of the psychoanalytic movement more
1211 than amply compensated for Freud's idiosyncrasies as the 'father' of the school.⁸¹
1212 Strauss seems to have held his school together through what I can only describe as
1213 mythopoiesis: his vatic pronouncements on the writings which he sacralised are
1214 enrobed in the mythic and the holy and consequently exercise a passionate appeal to
1215 those initiated in the myth's mysteries.

1216 Thus, his approach becomes a sort of alethiometer, an imagined mechanism for
1217 divining the truth described in *Northern Lights*, the first novel in Philip Pullman's
1218 *His Dark Materials* Trilogy.⁸² This novel is a Straussian tale of free-thinking and
1219 independent philosophical rationalism: Lord Azrael is the true philosopher, whose
1220 scientific inquiries are dedicated to exploring the nature of reality (dust) while his
1221 daughter Lyra Belacqua struggles against the mightiest institution of persecution,
1222 the totalitarian Magisterium, which seeks to control human minds. Lyra Belacqua is
1223 the potential philosopher who comes into possession of an alethiometer, a golden
1224 compass which, when properly used by the person gifted to do so, always indicates
1225 the truth. The Straussian hermeneutic is such an alethiometer which when properly
1226 applied by the right person will reveal the occluded nature of true philosophy.

1227 Finally, let me point to what is for me the last peculiar, perplexing and confusing
1228 feature about Leo Strauss. Strauss thought that modern Judaism was in a state of
1229 deep crisis.⁸³ He seems to have turned to Maimonides's *Guide for the Perplexed* to
1230 help him discern a solution to this crisis. In so doing, as he says in 'Farabi's Plato',
1231 he realised that

1232 Only by reading Maimonides's *Guide* against the background of philosophy thus understood,
1233 can we hope eventually to fathom its unexplored depths.⁸⁴

1234 His influentially vatic reconstitution of 'the general character of all literary
1235 productions of "the philosophers"' ('Farabi's Plato', p. 384) (al-Fārābī included)
1236 is thus an act of exegesis of Maimonides's text.

⁸⁰ Forrester, 'Introduction', p. xxxi.

⁸¹ Edmundson, *The Death*, pp. 129–130.

⁸² Philip Pullman, *His Dark Materials* (London: Scholastic Ltd, 1995).

⁸³ See Kenneth Hart Green, 'Leo Strauss', in *The History of Jewish Philosophy*, eds Daniel H. Frank and Oliver Leaman, 2 vols (London: Routledge, 1997), II, pp. 820–853.

⁸⁴ Strauss, 'Farabi's Plato', p. 393.

Author Queries

Chapter No.: 15 0001629576

Queries	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Footnotes in Chapter title has been changed as an Article Note and the rest of the footnote has been renumbered.	
AU2	Please update the page numbers instead of using @@ here and elsewhere in the chapter.	

Uncorrected Proof

Chapter 16

Was Ibn Rushd an Averroist? The Problem, the Debate, and Its Philosophical Implications

[AU1] Anna Akasoy

Preliminary remark: The purpose of this contribution is not to discuss, let alone answer the question whether or not or in what sense Ibn Rushd was an Averroist. The problem has been discussed by several erudite scholars, and I am unable to contribute additional insights based on newly discovered or analysed source material. My aim is rather to explore the parameters which have determined the debate so far. Before we can determine the impact of certain philosophical ideas from the Islamic world in Western Europe, we need to reach an agreement about whether or not these ideas existed in the Islamic world in the first place, and if they did, in what shape and what was the position of the men who defended them. The deep divides among scholars studying the history of Islamic/Arabic philosophy have often made it impossible to reach such an agreement, especially in the case of controversial ideas.¹ The purpose of this contribution is to take the debate around the origin of

The argument presented in this article was first developed in a contribution for a workshop on the transmission of radical ideas from the Islamic world to the West. I would like to thank the organisers, Patricia Crone, Jonathan Israel, and Martin Mulso, as well as the participants for their responses.

¹ The question whether *falsafa* should be rendered as Islamic or Arabic philosophy has at least two levels. One of them concerns the body of texts: while 'Arabic philosophy' seems to exclude texts written in other languages of the Islamicate world, 'Islamic philosophy' seems to exclude Arabic texts written by Jewish and Christian authors which are part of the same tradition. The second level concerns the nature of the philosophy and its possible religious implications. For those who use the term 'Islamic philosophy' consciously, Islam is key and led to various strategies of harmonisation, while those who speak of 'Arabic philosophy' tend to suggest that the religious context is accidental. For the sake of convenience both terms are combined here. While I believe that the question of the body of texts is valid and important for the terminology, I doubt (as should become more obvious below) that this is a particularly useful battlefield for debating a much more complex set of questions.

[AU1] A. Akasoy (✉)
Ruhr University Bochum, Auf der Papenburg 14,
44801 Bochum, Germany
e-mail: akasoy@gmx.net

17 Averroism in the Islamic world as a starting point for analysing some of these
 18 divides. For this purpose, I found it useful to explore some of the methodological
 19 debates among scholars of the history of Western philosophy since some of the
 20 different tendencies in these debates align with those among scholars of the history
 21 of Islamic/Arabic philosophy.²

22 Introduction

23 Some of the edited volumes on Ibn Rushd and Averroism which have been published in
 24 the last decades include at least one article which, in one way or another, addresses the
 25 question 'Was Ibn Rushd an Averroist?'³ This question has been discussed and answered
 26 in various ways. The diversity of answers is due in part to the diversity of opinions
 27 among modern authors regarding the specific interpretation of Ibn Rushd/Averroes, and
 28 in part to the ways in which this question has been raised and understood.

29 One of the obvious difficulties involved in this question is the further, and equally
 30 thorny, question it contains, namely 'What is an Averroist?' The protagonists of the
 31 polemics against the Averroists in the thirteenth-century Latin West offer a mixed
 32 picture, which ranges from Averroes himself to those who base their radical ideas
 33 on his authority. Since my concern here is not with the Latin tradition, but with the
 34 ways in which modern scholars have sought to establish the extent, if any, to which
 35 radical notions of Averroism were indebted to Ibn Rushd, a very brief glance at some
 36 prominent testimonies shall suffice.

37 The first to use the expression 'Averroist' was Thomas Aquinas in his 1270 treatise
 38 *De unitate intellectus*, the target of which was a specific doctrine, the unicity of the
 39 intellect, i.e., denial of the immortality of the individual soul – the most prominent
 40 one among the heretic doctrines attributed to Averroes and the Averroists (often
 41 used interchangeably).⁴ What seems obvious is that in addition to this very specific
 42 problem Aquinas was concerned with a more general issue, the apparent conviction

²To this effect see also the postscript in Dimitri Gutas, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century: An Essay on the Historiography of Arabic Philosophy', *British Journal of Middle Eastern Studies*, 29 (2002), pp. 5–25 (25).

³Abdelmajid El Ghannouchi, 'Distinction et relation des discours philosophique et religieux chez Ibn Rushd: Faṣl al-maqāl ou la double vérité', in *Averroes (1126–1198) oder der Triumph des Rationalismus*, ed. Raif Georges Khoury (Heidelberg: Winter, 2002), pp. 139–145; Oliver Leaman, 'Is Averroes an Averroist?', in *Averroismus im Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, eds Friedrich Niewöhner and Loris Sturlese (Zurich: Spur, 1994), pp. 9–22.

⁴Thomas Aquinas, *De unitate intellectus contra Averroistas*, in *Aquinas against the Averroists. On There Being Only One Intellect*, trans. Ralph McInerny (West Lafayette, IN: Purdue University Press, 1993). The longer title *De unitate intellectus contra Averroistas*, which is often used to refer to the treatise, is a fourteenth-century emendation, as Dag Nikolaus Hasse reminds us in his 'Averroica secta: Notes on the Formation of Averroist Movements in Fourteenth-Century Bologna and Renaissance Italy', in *Averroès et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, ed. Jean-Baptiste Brenet (Turnhout: Brepols, 2007), pp. 307–331, at 309–310.

of the Averroists that if philosophy and religion make contradictory claims, the former is superior. It was also Aquinas's rendering of the Averroists' argument in this text which modern authors such as Friedrich Niewöhner have used in order to define the Averroists as a movement held together by their common claim that faith requires that one subscribes to positions which can be falsified with necessary arguments.⁵

Another well-known opponent of the Averroists in Paris who contributed to their definition as a group was Étienne Tempier, the Bishop of the city who, in 1277, famously condemned 219 theses taught by the masters of the *artes*. In the oft-quoted passage in the introduction to this document, the bishop accused them of having introduced ideas of non-Christian origin and presented them as irrefutable truths:

...cum errores predictos gentilium scripturis muniant, quas, proh pudor! ad suam imperitiam asserunt sic cogentes, ut eis nesciant respondere. Ne autem, quod sic innuunt, asserere videantur, responsiones ita palliant, quod, dum cupiunt vitare Scyllam, incidunt in Caripdim. Dicunt enim ea *esse vera secundum philosophiam, sed non secundum fidem catholicam, quasi sint due contrarie veritates*, et quasi contra veritatem sacre scripture sit veritas in dictis gentilium dampnatorum ...

(They support these mistakes with the texts of the gentiles which – o shame! –, as they stipulate because of their ignorance are so convincing that they cannot refute them. In order to disguise what they are claiming, they hide their responses so that while they intend to avoid Scylla, they are caught by Charybdis. They say that these are claims which are true according to philosophy, but not according to the Catholic faith as if they were two contrary truths and as if they were against the truth of the holy scripture true in what the damned gentiles say ...)⁶

The parameters in the criticism of the Averroists remained largely the same during the following centuries and doctrinal features were often interpreted as reflecting Ibn Rushd's own ideas. While problems arising from Averroism in Christian contexts were in all likelihood closer to the hearts of their critics, medieval polemicists of Islam also stressed the difficulties philosophers – here praised for their intellectual achievements – encountered in Islamic environments hostile to reason.⁷ When Leibniz discussed Averroes's arguments against the immortality of the individual soul and denounced them as a misinformed over-reliance on Aristotle, he pointed out that the Averroists held this position as a philosophical truth while protesting at the same time 'their acquiescence in Christian theology, which declares the soul's

⁵ Friedrich Niewöhner, 'Zum Ursprung der Lehre von der doppelten Wahrheit: Eine Koran-Interpretation des Averroes,' in *Averroismus im Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, eds Niewöhner and Sturlese, pp. 23–41, 25. The Latin text has: 'per rationem concludo de necessitate... firmiter tamen teneo oppositum per fidem. Ergo sentit quod fides sit de aliquibus, quorum contraria de necessitate concludere possunt.'

⁶ *Aufklärung im Mittelalter? Die Verurteilung von 1277: Das Dokument des Bischofs von Paris*, ed. Kurt Flasch (Mainz: Dieterich, 1989), p. 89. It was not Tempier's first condemnation. On 10 December 1270, he condemned 13 propositions including the unity of the intellect and the eternity of the world, but there is no trace yet of a doctrine referring to a possible superiority of philosophy or reason over revelation or religion.

⁷ John Tolan, "'Saracen Philosophers Secretly Deride Islam'", *Medieval Encounters*, 8 (2002), pp. 184–208.

77 immortality.⁸ Leibniz does not use the term ‘double truth’ here, but adds that ‘this
78 distinction was held suspect, and this divorce between faith and reason was vehe-
79 mently rejected by the prelates and the doctors of that time, and condemned in the last
80 Lateran Council under Leo X.’⁹ For Pierre Bayle, a contemporary of Leibniz and a
81 target of his criticism, this at least inward preference for reason seems to have been a
82 characteristic of the Muslim philosophers in general, but his particular focus was on
83 Averroes.¹⁰

84 In the reactions against the Averroists (and modern discussions of both Averroists
85 and their critics) we can thus identify two kinds of problems: one of them is a specific
86 set of doctrines, most prominently the denial of the immortality of the individual soul
87 and the eternity of the world, the other one the general approach to the relationship
88 between philosophy and revealed religion. The two levels are connected since the
89 double truth allows the Averroists to maintain their own, radical philosophical views
90 while accepting at the same time the opposed religious doctrines.

91 **Averroism, Averroes and Ibn Rushd**

92 One way of dealing with the question ‘Was Ibn Rushd an Averroist?’ would be to
93 discuss how far the ideas which held these people together (whether in their self-
94 image or in the polemics) were directly inspired by the philosophy of Ibn Rushd.
95 Some modern scholars, most notably Fernand van Steenberghen, have pointed out that
96 in fact thirteenth-century Averroism was nothing else than radical Aristotelianism,
97 limiting the role of Ibn Rushd to that of the commentator as which he was known.
98 Others, however, have objected to this and pointed out that – even though the conflict
99 between Aristotelian and Christian doctrines would have arisen with or without Ibn
100 Rushd – both according to the evidence of the texts and in the perception of contem-
101 poraries the Arabic tradition was decisive. Aquinas, for example, points out:

102 For a long time now there has been widespread an error concerning intellect that originates
103 in the writings of Averroes. He seeks to maintain that what Aristotle calls the possible, but
104 he infelicitously calls the material, intellect is a substance which, existing separately from
105 the body, is in no way united to it as its form, and furthermore that this possible intellect is
106 one for all men.¹¹

107 This leaves the question whether or not the Averroists interpreted the Arab philosopher
108 correctly and to what extent their thought was independent. Referring to ‘Latin
109 Averroism’ is a way of alluding to the possibility of an independent Latin development.

⁸ Leibniz, *Theodicy: Essays and the Goodness of God, the Freedom of Man and the Origin of Evil* (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1951), p. 80, available online on www.gutenberg.org (accessed 18 March 2008). See also Marco Sgarbi’s Chap. 13 in this volume.

⁹ Leibniz, *Theodicy*, p. 80. See also Jonathan Israel, *Enlightenment Contested: Philosophy, Modernity, and the Emancipation of Man, 1670–1752* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2006), p. 626.

¹⁰ Israel, *Enlightenment Contested*, pp. 621–622.

¹¹ Aquinas, *De unitate intellectus*, p. 19.

John Marenbon took up an earlier suggestion made by Renan and explored the creative use of Averroes, proposing the following criteria as distinguishing the Averroists who:

- (a) accepted Averroes's view that there is only a single potential intellect;
- (b) concentrated their efforts on reaching and examining an accurate account of Aristotle's ideas – usually based on that presented by Averroes – even where these positions are incompatible with Christian teaching (in particular, the position that the world has no beginning); and,
- (c) adopted some sort of strategy to explain why they, though Christians, did (a) and (b)¹²

In what follows, I will focus on the problems involved in (b) and (c), i.e., the relationship between philosophy and religion and various versions of the double truth thesis as attempts to solve these problems. In what follows, I will use the terms 'Averroism' and 'Averroists' primarily along those lines, unless specific doctrines concerning the intellect or the world are at stake.

Obviously, there were no direct personal interactions between Ibn Rushd and the Latin Averroists, and our discussion has to be one which is focussed on the transmission of his *texts* into Western Europe. Several of Ibn Rushd's writings include statements that are relevant for specific Averroistic doctrines and allow for speculation concerning the more general relationship between philosophy and religion. In addition to the Long Commentaries on *De anima* and the *Metaphysics*, his refutation of al-Ghazālī, *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, is an important source for his doctrines concerning the soul. As some modern scholars have argued, Ibn Rushd varies his statements about the mortality of the human soul according to the audience he addresses. While a non-philosophical audience has to be reassured that the soul is immortal, an audience trained in philosophical matters understands that this applies to the intellect.¹³

Another doctrine associated with the medieval conflict between philosophy and religion is that of the eternity of the world – Ibn Rushd presents arguments for this doctrine based on the Aristotelian principle that a *creatio ex nihilo* is impossible. He uses the argument from the eternity of matter in his commentaries on the *Physics* and *De caelo*. In *Faṣl al-maqāl* (*The Decisive Treatise*), where he argues that a lot of the conflict is due to different terminologies of philosophers and theologians, he distinguishes *muhdath*

¹² John Marenbon, 'Latin Averroism', in *Islamic Crosspollinations: Interactions in the Medieval Middle East*, eds Anna Akasoy, James E. Montgomery and Peter E. Pormann (Exeter: Gibb Memorial Trust, 2007), pp. 135–147.

¹³ For different statements and how they relate to different audiences see Herbert A. Davidson, *Alfarabi, Avicenna, and Averroes, on Intellect: Their Cosmologies, Theories of the Active Intellect, and Theories of Human Intellect* (New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1992), pp. 335–336; Arthur Hyman, 'Averroes' Theory of the Intellect and the Ancient Commentators', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Tradition: Sources, Constitution, and Reception of the Philosophy of Ibn Rushd (1126–1198)*, eds Gerhard Endress and Jan Aertsen (Leiden: Brill, 1999), pp. 188–198; Id., 'Averroes as Commentator on Aristotle's Theory of the Intellect', in *Studies in Aristotle*, ed. Dominic J. O'Meara (Washington: Catholic University of America Press, 1981), pp. 161–191; Alfred Ivry, 'Averroes' Three Commentaries on *De Anima*', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Tradition*, eds Endress and Aertsen, pp. 199–216.

142 ('created'), *qadīm* ('eternal') and an intermediate (*wāsiṭ*) state,¹⁴ and he suggests as a
143 solution that the world is eternal a *parte post*, but not a *parte ante*.¹⁵

144 What can be observed in both cases – the immortality of the soul and the eternity
145 of the world – is an attempt to harmonise mutually exclusive statements by identify-
146 ing them as parts of specific discourses and shaped by the intellectual premises of
147 very specific audiences. As a result of these premises, the claims made tend to be
148 quite extreme – but the truth can be found somewhere in between if the contingent
149 elements of the apparently mutually opposed doctrines are disregarded. It is also in
150 *Faṣl al-maqāl* where we find Ibn Rushd's underlying assumptions about the rela-
151 tionship between philosophy and religion more explicitly spelled out.

152 Interpretations of *Faṣl al-maqāl* with respect to the double truth have focused on
153 three elements.¹⁶ The first is Ibn Rushd's distinction between different natures
154 (*ṭabī'a*) of people and, resulting from them, different kinds of assent (*taṣdīq*). Some
155 people are only susceptible to rhetorical or dialectical arguments, whereas others
156 understand and use demonstrative arguments. The second element is that different
157 paths lead to assent concerning the prophetic revelation and that – in Ibn Rushd's
158 own words – 'truth does not contradict truth.' If, however, and this is the third aspect,
159 demonstrative reasoning contradicts revelation, revelation has to be interpreted
160 (*wa-in kāna mukhālīfan ṭuliba hunālika ta'wīluhu*). This is similar to the practice
161 used by the jurists, a parallel which is drawn throughout the text.

162 Ibn Rushd emphasises on more than one occasion that various senses of the rev-
163 elation appeal to various intellectual capacities of people and how important it is
164 that each person remain within the sphere indicated by his or her level of under-
165 standing. Contradictions alert those who are 'firmly grounded in knowledge' (the
166 *rāsikhūna fī'l-'ilm* mentioned in the Quran, 3:7) to ways of reconciling them (as in
167 the case of the eternity of the world mentioned above).¹⁷ Interpretation is allowed

¹⁴ Ibn Rushd, *The Book of the Decisive Treatise Determining the Connection between the Law and Wisdom*, ed. and trans. Charles Butterworth (Provo: Brigham Young University Press, 2001), p. 15.

¹⁵ Herbert Davidson, *Proofs for Eternity, Creation, and the Existence of God*, pp. 9 and passim.

¹⁶ Richard Dales, 'The Origin of the Doctrine of the Double Truth', *Viator*, 15 (1984), pp. 169–179; Niewöhner, 'Zum Ursprung der Lehre von der doppelten Wahrheit'; Richard Taylor, "'Truth Does not Contradict Truth': Averroes and the Unity of Truth', *Topoi*, 19 (2000), pp. 3–16.

¹⁷ For *al-rāsikhūna fī'l-'ilm* see Jane Dammen McAuliffe, 'Text and Textuality: Q. 3:7 as a Point of Intersection', in *Literary Structures of Religious Meaning in the Qur'ān*, ed. Issa J. Boullata (Richmond: Curzon, 2000), pp. 56–76 for the dynamic reception of the text. Stefan Wild, 'The Self-referentiality of the Qur'ān: Sura 3:7 as an Exegetical Challenge', in *With Reverence for the Word: Medieval Scriptural Exegesis in Judaism, Christianity, and Islam*, eds Jane Dammen McAuliffe, Barry D. Walfish and Joseph W. Goering (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2003), pp. 422–436. Q 3:7 (in Yusuf Ali's translation) says: 'He it is Who has sent down to thee the Book: In it are verses basic or fundamental (of established meaning); they are the foundation of the Book: others are allegorical. But those in whose hearts is perversity follow the part thereof that is allegorical, seeking discord, and searching for its hidden meanings, but no one knows its hidden meanings except Allah. And those who are firmly grounded in knowledge say: "We believe in the Book; the whole of it is from our Lord:" and none will grasp the Message except men of understanding.' There are two ways of reading the passage in italics. The alternative to Yusuf Ali's translation is: '... but no one knows its hidden meanings except Allah and those who are firmly grounded in knowledge. They say ...'

wherever an existing consensus is not based on certainty. Ibn Rushd distinguishes practical from theoretical matters here – in the case of the former a consensus has been reached and every Muslim can be aware of it, whereas concerning the latter, people have said from the early days of Islam onwards that there is an inner and an apparent sense and that the inner sense is not accessible to everybody. As far as the *rāsikhūna fī'l- 'ilm* are concerned, they are obliged to use interpretation (*ta'wīl*) among themselves because their category of faith and assent is based on demonstration. If they do not use interpretation they are as guilty of unbelief as are those who use it even though they lack the necessary intellectual skills. The hidden meanings and interpretations must only be discussed in books about demonstration (*kutub al-barāhīn*) in order to protect simple believers.

Most modern authors would probably agree that Ibn Rushd indeed claimed here there is only one truth even when it seems as if philosophy and religion contradict each other. However, they clearly do not agree on the theoretical and practical implications of the need to harmonise these superficially contradictory doctrines. Many scholars have come to the conclusion that Ibn Rushd was an Averroist in the sense that he used the idea of the double truth because some kind of strategy was required to deal with clashes between philosophical and religious doctrines, but for these modern authors the double truth did not always imply the same. A relatively 'harmless' reading of Ibn Rushd might simply stress the need to keep rational or intellectual descriptions of the truth hidden from uneducated people in order not to confuse them. Alternatively, Ibn Rushd may have thought that religion and philosophy were two completely separate spheres and that while p can be true according to the principles of one sphere, non- p can be true according to the principles of the other sphere.¹⁸ A more 'radical' reading might establish a hierarchy for such descriptions of the truth where revealed religion occupies a lower rank than philosophy or reason. It is the combination of the specific doctrines attributed to Ibn Rushd and this more theoretical framework which makes Averroism such an explosive phenomenon.

Friedrich Niewöhner took Ibn Rushd's reference to the need for interpretation in connection with Q 3:7 to be the starting point for his interpretation of the concept of the double truth in *Faṣl al-maqāl*. Just as rhetorical and dialectical arguments and their audiences need to be separated from demonstrative arguments and their audience, there are different ways of reading Q 3:7, one for those who have an understanding of philosophical matters, and another one for those who do not. While for the former it is only God who has an understanding of *ta'wīl* ('... but no one knows its hidden meanings except God'), the philosophers practice interpretation and, knowing that this is the true meaning, end the sentence after the *rāsikhūna fī'l- 'ilm*, i.e., '... but no one knows its hidden meanings except God and those who are firmly

¹⁸ For such a kind of medieval relativism see Marenbon, 'Latin Averroism', p. 140. This is also the way in which the *Dictionary of the History of Ideas: Studies of Selected Pivotal Ideas* (ed. Philip P. Wiener [New York: Scribner, 1973–1974], s.v.) explains the double truth as described by Tempier. To me, it is not clear that this is what the bishop criticised – he rather seems to say that the Averroists claim p based on philosophical doctrines, whereas religion demands non- p . He takes it for granted that religion provides the true view.

206 grounded in knowledge.' These two interpretations are mutually exclusive and
 207 a good example of the double truth. What Niewöhner's interpretation of the concept
 208 implies is that the philosophers have good reason not to worry about holding what
 209 appears to be heretical views, because they know that there are no real contradic-
 210 tions, only apparent ones, and that hiding them serves a purpose. While this inter-
 211 pretation may tell us something about the people involved – writers as well as
 212 audiences – it is inconclusive regarding a possible superiority of philosophy.

213 Oliver Leaman – after a revealing detour discussing Wittgenstein's critique of
 214 Moore (see below) – interprets Ibn Rushd as claiming that philosophy and religion
 215 are two different spheres, but also that philosophy is superior.¹⁹ For Leaman, the
 216 double truth reflects Ibn Rushd's philosophy of language (i.e., a clear difference
 217 between ordinary human language and knowledge and divine language and knowl-
 218 edge; the basic point seems to be that God's knowledge is perfect whereas ours is
 219 relatively uninformed) and his denial of the mystery in this world. This is obvious
 220 in his turn against Neoplatonism and his lack of interest in mysticism. Leaman sees
 221 here the doctrine which connects more than anything else Ibn Rushd and the
 222 Averroists and clearly recognises in Ibn Rushd a precursor of the Enlightenment.

223 Richard Taylor has emphasised Ibn Rushd's claim in *Faṣl al-maqāl* that 'truth
 224 does not contradict truth.' According to Taylor, Ibn Rushd derived this principle from
 225 Aristotle's logic, but could not present it as such because he lived in an environment
 226 hostile to philosophy.²⁰ Two key questions are: do religion and philosophy describe
 227 the same truth in different ways? Is there a priority of one over the other? Taylor
 228 distinguishes between the practical sphere in which truth is determined in terms of
 229 the end to be achieved independent of whether those who act are convinced to do so
 230 by demonstrative, dialectical or rhetorical arguments, and the speculative sphere, in
 231 which truth can essentially only be grasped as truth by someone who practises the art
 232 of demonstration correctly, i.e., the philosopher. 'In this way, then, truth when grasped
 233 through sound and proper demonstration is prior in nature and commanding in relation
 234 to any possible interpretation of a text of Religious Law.'²¹ Certain things in revealed
 235 law remain beyond possibilities of demonstrative proof, but the philosophers are
 236 in the position to point out what is clearly contrary to the demonstrated truth.
 237 'There can be no "Double Truth" ...,' Taylor concludes, 'although there may be
 238 truth doubly attained.'²²

¹⁹ 'Is Averroes an Averroist?' and *Averroes and his Philosophy* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1988), pp. 144–160. The statement is in accordance with Leaman's own view of Islamic philosophy. He denies that the compatibility of Islam and philosophy was a major concern for Muslim philosophers for the simple reason that Islam is a religion, not a philosophy. The *falāsifa* still assumed that religion and philosophy reflect the same truth. Oliver Leaman, 'Does the Interpretation of Islamic Philosophy Rest on a Mistake?', *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, 12 (1980), pp. 525–538, 529 and 535.

²⁰ Taylor, "'Truth Does not Contradict Truth'", p. 7.

²¹ *Ibid.*, p. 8.

²² *Ibid.*, p. 11.

Muhsin Mahdi, who bases his interpretation on a structural analysis of *Faṣl al-maqāl*,²³ comes to the conclusion that Ibn Rushd intends to show that divine law and human wisdom share the same intention because they perfect human nature. As far as divine law is concerned, it is the theoretical challenge to acquire complete knowledge of God and his creation which has priority and which clearly goes beyond the practical obligations derived from the law. Philosophical reasoning is an instrument essential to the requirements of a true divine law.

Charles Butterworth takes the notion of an identical intention of divine law and human wisdom as the starting point for his analysis.²⁴ Related to the perfecting capacity of divine law is the requirement that someone who uses the tools of philosophy for such a purpose use them with this intention in mind, i.e., he must have moral virtue.²⁵ Butterworth thus emphasises the practical implications of the text. Divine law and wisdom both aim at the well-being of people. 'So stated,' Butterworth concludes, 'the agreement between the two depends in no way upon determining to what extent individual philosophers privately assent to the Law nor in probing the sincerity of their various efforts to buttress its claims. The reasoning leading to this interpretation looks, rather, to what is required for sound political life.'²⁶ In Butterworth's reading of *Faṣl al-maqāl*, there is nothing which hints to a possible superiority of demonstrative reasoning. 'If anything,' Butterworth explains Ibn Rushd's argument, 'he tries to avoid juxtaposing the two [i.e. Law and wisdom] in such a hierarchical fashion. Neither priority nor ascendance is at issue: the connection to be determined eventually is close to one of parity, that is, agreement on all levels.'²⁷

Since Averroism is commonly regarded as a radical set of ideas, in what follows, double truth is usually taken in a strong sense, implying a disequilibrium between religion and philosophy in which the latter is the stronger side.

There is disagreement not only about which kind of double truth Ibn Rushd defended, but about the context of interpretation which has to be applied to *Faṣl al-maqāl*. This concerns first of all the nature of the text in a general sense. Authors of diverse inclinations have pointed out that *Faṣl al-maqāl* was written from a very specific perspective, i.e., that Ibn Rushd dealt in this text with the problem of revealed religious law and reason from a legal point of view rather than presenting

²³ Muhsin Mahdi, 'Remarks on Averroes' *Decisive Treatise*', in *Islamic Theology and Philosophy: Studies in Honor of George F. Hourani*, ed. Michael Marmura (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1984), pp. 188–202.

²⁴ Charles Butterworth, 'The Source that Nourishes: Averroes's Decisive Determination', *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, 5 (1995), pp. 93–119.

²⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 104.

²⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 119.

²⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 97.

271 a programmatic theoretical text.²⁸ To put it in Ibn Rushd's own words: his aim
 272 (*gharaḍ*) is to investigate from the point of view of law ('*alā jihat al-naẓar al-sha'ī*)
 273 whether the study of philosophy and logical sciences is permitted, prohibited or
 274 commanded. But what does such a perspective imply? And what could *Faṣl al-maqāl*
 275 have looked like had Ibn Rushd written it as a programmatic theoretical statement?
 276 There are texts in the history of Islamic law and religion which may give us an idea
 277 of what it could have meant to approach the same problem once from a legal per-
 278 spective and once from that of dogmatic theology. Ibn Qutayba's *Ta'wīl* and Shāfi'ī's
 279 *Risāla* are such examples. They are divided by different hermeneutic techniques.²⁹
 280 But it is difficult to imagine a similar difference between two versions of *Faṣl*
 281 *al-maqāl*. First of all, dogmatic theology and programmatic theoretical statements
 282 are not the same thing nor does *Faṣl al-maqāl* share the character of the *Risāla* as a
 283 theoretical legal text. In fact, the legal dimension of *Faṣl al-maqāl* is not identical
 284 with *fiqh*,³⁰ but rather with revealed law – indeed *shar'* seems much closer to 'reli-
 285 gion' here than to 'law'. *Fiqh*, as Ibn Rushd explains, is only part of the practical
 286 side of *shar'*.³¹ The legal dimension is perhaps also obvious in the role of the legal
 287 scholars who often serve as a yardstick in the text: this is how the jurists proceed
 288 with their way of reasoning – how much more must that be the case if we deal
 289 not only with *fiqh*, but with creation as a whole?

290 It is equally unclear what a legal as opposed to a programmatic theoretical *Faṣl*
 291 *al-maqāl* might imply with regard to Ibn Rushd the Averroist. Is the author of the
 292 legal text an Averroist, whereas the author of the programmatic theoretical text is
 293 not? Or is it the other way around? Perhaps one is more Averroistic than the other?
 294 Or one of them is interested in matters of practical application, while the other one
 295 is not? Is a programmatic *Faṣl al-maqāl* built on demonstrative arguments, but a
 296 legal *Faṣl al-maqāl* is merely founded on dialectical and rhetorical ones?³² Are both
 297 combined in the same text with the help of a very subtle double truth strategy? In
 298 any case, it does not seem likely that readers in the Latin West would have been

²⁸ Gutas, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century', p. 14. While I can see the point in Gutas's argument that *Faṣl al-maqāl* has been too uncritically taken by the Straussians as representing a typical discussion in Arabic philosophy which may correspond to the question whether history of philosophy is concerned with problems rather than doctrines, theories or systems (see below), I find it much more difficult to follow the implications of his stress on the character of the text as a legal discussion. For the text's legal perspective see also Niewöhner, 'Zum Ursprung der Lehre von der doppelten Wahrheit', p. 27.

²⁹ Joseph E. Lowry, 'The Legal Hermeneutics of al-Shāfi'ī and Ibn Qutayba: A Reconsideration', *Islamic Law and Society*, 11 (2004), pp. 1–41 (27ff).

³⁰ Pace Leaman, *Averroes*, p. 144.

³¹ Ibn Rushd, *Faṣl al-maqāl*, p. 23.

³² Mahdi, 'Remarks on Averroes' *Decisive Treatise*', describes the 'legal character' of the first part of *Faṣl al-maqāl* as follows: 'It seems clear that the kind of inquiry employed in the first part of the *Decisive Treatise* is not a demonstrative inquiry of the kind employed in demonstrative books. It is not clear, however, that it is identical with the promised "legal inquiry"; rather, it appears that Averroes' position is not legal nor demonstrative, but situated somewhere in between' (p. 189).

aware of such subtleties even if the text had been translated into Latin – and this is the key problem if we are interested in the question of the transmission of radical ideas associated with Averroism from the Islamic world to the West.

Since Harry Austryn Wolfson's article on the 'twice-revealed Averroes',³³ scholars have regarded Averroes less as a monolithic figure but rather as somebody whose character changed with the degree to which his works became known in the Latin West. The Averroes of the mid-thirteenth century, the commentator, is thus different from Averroes, the author of *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut*, the Latin translation of which was completed in 1328 by Kalonymos ben Kalonymos for Robert of Anjou. And both authors are different from the man who wrote not only the commentaries and the refutation of al-Ghazālī, but other commentaries and independent works which were never translated into Latin. *Faṣl al-maqāl* is one of these works, although it was translated into Hebrew in the Middle Ages – at the turn of the fourteenth century, as Norman Golb estimated.³⁴ The discrepancy between Averroes as the author of the translated commentaries and Averroes as the author of a whole variety of other texts is so substantial that Alfred Ivry has suggested dealing with them almost as separate figures, i.e., Averroes and Ibn Rushd.³⁵ Yet another person is the one created in the polemical tradition – the man who promoted the idea of the three impostors – a phenomenon John Marenbon has referred to as 'phantom Averroism'.³⁶

Can we perhaps then explain the different answers to the question 'Was Ibn Rushd an Averroist?' by suggesting that those who answer the question with 'yes' have limited their investigation to the texts which were available to the Averroists in Latin, whereas those who answer the same question with 'no' have studied all preserved texts and recognised that the Averroists were inspired by isolated statements which – when read in context – suggest different conclusions? The difference between Ibn Rushd and Averroes is important on two levels here because if we were to venture such a hypothesis, the assumption would be that: (1) it was only the Latin texts translated by the 1260s which originally inspired the movement of the Averroists, and (2) the extent to which Ibn Rushd and Averroes are identical in these texts (in other texts we are dealing with Ibn Rushd, but not with Averroes) depends on how much one thinks they need to be read in the context of other, untranslated

³³ Harry Austryn Wolfson, 'The Twice-Revealed Averroes', *Speculum*, 36 (1961), pp. 373–392 (repr. in Harry Austryn Wolfson, *Studies in the History of Philosophy and Religion*, ed. Isadore Twersky and George H. Williams, 2 vols [Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1973], I, pp. 371–401).

³⁴ Norman Golb, 'The Hebrew Translation of Averroes' "Faṣl al-maqāl", *Proceedings of the American Academy for Jewish Research*, 25 (1956), pp. 91–113 and 26 (1957), pp. 41–64.

³⁵ Alfred Ivry, 'Averroes and the West: The First Encounter/Non-Encounter', in *A Straight Path: Studies in Medieval Philosophy and Culture*, ed. Ruth Link-Salinger (Washington: Catholic University of American Press, 1988), pp. 142–158; see also Charles Burnett, 'The Second Revelation of Arabic Philosophy and Science', in *Islam and the Italian Renaissance*, eds Charles Burnett and Anna Contadini (London: The Warburg Institute, 1999), pp. 185–198.

³⁶ Marenbon, 'Latin Averroism', p. 144.

330 texts. While such an approach would probably not solve the problem, it would also
 331 lead to further difficulties. All the different interpreters assume that the texts they
 332 focus on are representative of what Ibn Rushd says in other texts or that different
 333 audiences explain differences between statements in various texts and that if read in
 334 the light of the respective audience, the conclusion remains the same. The tendency
 335 of modern scholars to present harmonised and consistent views of historical authors
 336 is a methodological problem which deserves to be discussed separately.

337 The Historical Ibn Rushd

338 As far as the interpretation of the text and matters of the transmission of *Faṣl al-maqāl*
 339 are concerned, we have thus reached a dead end. There is no consensus as to what a
 340 double truth could have meant for Ibn Rushd in *Faṣl al-maqāl*, whether he embraced
 341 such an idea and used it in texts translated by the mid-thirteenth century and how close
 342 his ideas were to those the Averroists (allegedly) held. Further studies of Ibn Rushd's
 343 texts may lead to further conclusions, but considering the already voluminous bibliog-
 344 raphy on these subjects they seem just as likely to perpetuate the existing disagree-
 345 ments. Further insights may be gleaned from a historical contextualisation of Ibn
 346 Rushd the person as well as from a broader philosophical interpretation. Let us aban-
 347 don for a moment the problem of the transmission of his ideas to the West. As far as
 348 the historical context is concerned, Ibn Rushd's Almohad background is undoubtedly
 349 decisive. There are two issues I would like to highlight: (1) the rationalist character of
 350 the Almohad movement, and (2) the *mihna* ('inquisition') of Ibn Rushd.

351 In his *Dhayl ta'riḫ Dimashq (Addendum to the History of Damascus)*, Ibn
 352 al-Qalānisī (d. 1160) famously attributed a *madhhab fikr* ('school of thought') to the
 353 Almohad mahdi Ibn Tūmart.³⁷ This expression has often been taken as a testimony
 354 to the rationalist character of Almohad ideology. Indeed, Almohad history provides
 355 several examples of such a *madhhab fikr*. A rationalist tendency became obvious in
 356 the use the Almohads made of al-Ghazālī in their propaganda. As a mystic and phi-
 357 losopher, al-Ghazālī allowed the Almohads to integrate the anti-Almoravid opposi-
 358 tion among the Andalusī Sufis and their own religious ideas which emphasised the
 359 need to approach the fundamental textual sources of the Islamic religion – Qur'ān
 360 and *ḥadīth* – with sound reason instead of relying blindly on human authorities
 361 (*taqlīd*).³⁸ Furthermore, the Almohads could count on a long tradition in al-Andalus
 362 to combine philosophy and Sufism.

³⁷ Ed. Henry Frederick Amedroz (Beirut: Maṭba'at al-Ābā' al-Yasū'īyyīn, 1908), pp. 291–293.

³⁸ Maribel Fierro, 'Spiritual Alienation and Political Activism: The Ghuraba' in al-Andalus during the Sixth/Twelfth Century', *Arabica*, 47 (2000), pp. 230–260; Ead., 'Revolución y tradición: Algunos aspectos del mundo del saber en al-Andalus durante las épocas almorávide y almohade', in *Biografías almohades*, II, eds María Luisa Ávila and Maribel Fierro (Madrid: Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 2000), pp. 131–165; Tilman Nagel, *Im Offenkundigen das Verborgene: Die Heilszusage des sunnitischen Islams* (Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 2002), pp. 33–175.

An episode which confirms an Almohad interest in philosophy is the patronage of the second Almohad Caliph, Abū Ya‘qūb Yūsuf (reg. 1163–1184), for Ibn Rushd, in particular the fact that he commissioned him to write commentaries on Aristotle’s works as al-Marrākushī famously describes in the following passage, where he quotes Ibn Rushd concerning their meeting in 1168/9:

When I entered into the presence of the Prince of the Believers, Abū Ya‘qūb, I found him with Abū Bakr Ibn Ṭufayl alone. Abū Bakr began praising me, mentioning my family and ancestors and generously including in the recital things beyond my real merits. The first thing that the Prince of the Believers said to me, after asking me my name, my father’s name and my genealogy was: ‘What is their opinion about the heavens?’ – referring to the philosophers – ‘Are they eternal or created?’ Confusion and fear took hold of me, and I began making excuses and denying that I had ever concerned myself with philosophic learning; for I did not know what Ibn Ṭufayl had told him on the subject. But the Prince of the Believers understood my fear and confusion, and turning to Ibn Ṭufayl began talking about the question of which he had asked me, mentioning what Aristotle, Plato and all the philosophers had said, and bringing in besides the objections of the Muslim thinkers against them; and I perceived in him such a copious memory as I did not think could be found [even] in any one of those who concerned themselves full time with this subject. Thus he continued to set me at ease until I spoke, and he learned what was my competence in that subject; and when I withdrew he ordered for me a donation in money, a magnificent robe of honour and a steed ...

Abū Bakr Ibn Ṭufayl summoned me one day and told me, ‘Today I heard the Prince of the Believers complain of the difficulty of expression of Aristotle and his translators, and mention the obscurity of his aims, saying, “If someone would tackle these books, summarise them (*yulakkhishuhā*) and expound their aims, after understanding them thoroughly, it would be easier for people to grasp them.” So if you have in you abundant strength for the task, perform it ...’ This was what led me to summarise (*talkhīṣ*) the books of the philosopher Aristotle.³⁹

This sounds like a familiar constellation – the ‘Abbāsīd caliphs in ninth-century Baghdad had sponsored the Graeco-Arabic translation movement, and later rulers too (such as the Būyīd ‘Aḍud al-Dawla) offered patronage to philosophers in their entourage. If we take the ‘Abbāsīd patronage as a model, the motives seem obvious: a rational interpretation of the sources made the rulers more independent of the emerging class of traditional scholars (*‘ulamā’*). This conflict broke out openly during the *miḥna* under the caliph al-Ma’mūn (reg. 813–833). The Almohads may very well have proceeded along similar lines. To be sure, there are numerous differences between the ‘Abbāsīds of the ninth century and the Islamic militant movement of Berbers inspired by messianism of the twelfth century, but rationalism may have had similar advantages for the political leaders in both cases.

A problem with the story about the Almohad patronage for Ibn Rushd is that – as Sarah Stroumsa has pointed out in a recent article – it relies too much on one particular source, the above-quoted al-Marrākushī, despite several reasons to consider this source unreliable: it is poorly transmitted in only one manuscript, the author wrote ca. 60 years after the meeting, and he knew fairly little of philosophical

³⁹ Translation Hourani from *Averroes on the Harmony of Religion and Philosophy*, trans. George F. Hourani (London: Luzac, 1961), pp. 12–13.

407 matters.⁴⁰ Nevertheless, what we can say is that the Almohads seem to have been
 408 interested in presenting themselves as patrons of philosophy.

409 Another problem concerns the episode which happened under Abū Ya'qūb
 410 Yūsuf's successor, Abū Yūsuf Ya'qūb (reg. 1184–1199), when Ibn Rushd was ban-
 411 ished from court and his books were burned. His disciples were also affected by
 412 these persecutions. Often quoted is the case of Ibn Ṭumlūs (ca. 1150–1156 until
 413 1123 or 1124), the author of a treatise on logic who does not mention his teacher's
 414 name. Ibn Rushd was only readmitted to court a year before he died in 1198. This
 415 event has puzzled scholars for a long time. While the conventional narrative claims
 416 that it was a religious turn against philosophy which provoked these events (a ver-
 417 sion of this narrative can be seen in the movie *Al-Maṣīr*, directed by the Egyptian
 418 Yusuf Shaheen), other scholars are more cautious. They suggest that Ibn Rushd's
 419 problems may very well have been due to a conflict among local Maliki legal schol-
 420 ars (a group which he was part of) or between individuals competing for the support
 421 of the ruler. The last person to have published a thorough study of the primary
 422 sources is Émile Fricaud in an article in 2005.⁴¹ The conclusion for the time being
 423 seems to be that the *miḥna* may have had something to do with Ibn Rushd's philo-
 424 sophical interests, but the exact role they played remains unclear.

425 But what are the implications of this for Ibn Rushd's possible Averroist identity
 426 and the double truth? If someone stresses the Almohad background he would prob-
 427 ably have to claim that for Ibn Rushd there was only one truth in accordance with
 428 the true *tawḥīd* (declaration of the unity of God) of the *muwahḥidūn*, the Almohads.
 429 But the pronounced educational outlook of the Almohad movement probably also
 430 meant that one and the same truth could or even had to be presented in different
 431 ways to different audiences. A contradiction like that implied by the Bishop of Paris
 432 would not be part of such an understanding of the double truth. Then again, Ibn
 433 Rushd's message was not necessarily identical with that of the Almohads. As seen
 434 above, the reference to the *rāsikhūna fī'l-'ilm* allows a variety of interpretations, and
 435 some readers such as Sarah Stroumsa have pointed out that Ibn Rushd actually pre-
 436 sented positions which contradicted the insistence of the Almohads that the masses
 437 reject anthropomorphism – this, according to Ibn Rushd, bore the risk of leading
 438 them away from the truth.⁴² Stroumsa agrees with Geoffroy's conclusion that Ibn
 439 Rushd was probably forced to revise his writing – this, however, remained a
 440 superficial revision (see below).

⁴⁰ Sarah Stroumsa, 'Philosophes almohades? Averroès, Maïmonide et l'idéologie almohade', in *Los Almohades: Problemas y perspectivas*, eds Patrice Cressier, Maribel Fierro and Luis Molina (Madrid: Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 2005), II, pp. 1137–1162 (in particular 1140–1141).

⁴¹ Émile Fricaud, 'Le problème de la disgrâce d'Averroès', in *Averroès et l'averroïsme (XIIIe–XVe siècle): Un itinéraire historique du Haut Atlas à Paris et à Padoue*, eds André Bazzana, Nicole Bériou and Pierre Guichard (Lyon: Presses Universitaires de Lyon, 2005), pp. 155–189. See also the article on Ibn Rushd in the *Biblioteca de al-Andalus* (eds Jorge Lirola Delgado and José Miguel Puerta Vilchez [Almería: Fundación Ibn Tufayl de Estudios Árabes, 2004-], IV, pp. 517–617) which offers an equally balanced view.

⁴² Stroumsa, 'Philosophes almohades', pp. 1147–1149.

Whatever the details of this matter and whatever the changes throughout the Almohad period, what seems clear is that there was a peculiar rationalist twist in the Almohad movement, its ideology and the way it presented itself. In the Almohad realm, the practice of philosophy had political implications. It is difficult to imagine that such a high-ranking figure as Ibn Rushd could have written books like *Faṣl al-maqāl* without the political elites taking an interest. But to what extent, to return to a possible transmission of Ibn Rushd's ideas, could this have been perceived in the Latin West? Should we perhaps assume that readers of Latin translations were aware of Ibn Rushd's Almohad background and interpreted his texts in this light? Again, it is important to look at the bigger picture here. If we consider Western European reactions to Islam and how they changed over the course of various centuries, there are two ways of explaining them: changes on the Christian side, and changes on the Muslim side. Even though much changed in the Latin West between the anti-Islamic polemics of the eleventh century and those of the Renaissance, it is also not the same kind of Islam Western Christians encountered. The Islam of the Andalusis and Berbers was very different from the Islam of the Ottoman Turks and the Arabs under their rule in the Eastern Mediterranean. Research so far has mostly focused on the internal Western dimension and largely ignored the possibility that diversity on the Muslim side provoked a diversity of reactions. When it comes to the role of philosophy in historical Islamic societies, some modern scholars have made claims of an essentialist nature, but pre-modern observers may have had more differentiated views.

As far as the Almohads are concerned, contemporary Christians living in the border region were almost certainly aware of the distinct character of the movement. Christian polemics in Spain reflect peculiarities of the intellectual landscape on the other side of the frontier, as Thomas Burman has shown in his research.⁴³ It is, of course, a different matter whether Christians regarded Almohad Islam as representative of Islam in general and whether or to what extent they thought that philosophy and rationalism were important in this context. Missionaries in the age of scholasticism, most prominently Ramón Llull, tried to use reason as a common ground between Christians and Muslims, but while somebody like Llull was clearly aware of the diversity within Islamic intellectual culture, it seems unlikely that he would have identified individual political movements or dynasties as defenders of reason. The irrational character of the Islamic religion, its opposition against reason even, remained an important theme in later polemics.

While it seems doubtful that there was much awareness of the details of inner-Islamic dividing lines among Christian writers in thirteenth-century Paris, later Western authors sometimes even display a blatant ignorance of the historical contexts of Muslim philosophers. When the fame of Averroes eclipsed that of Avicenna, Latin authors demonstrated a great inventiveness in rendering this development in the form of legends. Franciscus Calphurnius included the following account in his

⁴³ Thomas E. Burman, *Religious Polemic and the Intellectual History of the Mozarabs, c. 1050–1200* (Leiden: Brill, 1994), pp. 78 ff.

482 introduction to an edition of *The Canon* published in 1522: Avicenna, he says, was
 483 a prince in Cordova who built a hospital and offered medical treatment to the public.
 484 Averroes, a physician who lived at the same time, envied him this fame and tried to
 485 stir Algazel and Alfarabi against him, two colleagues who were living in the same
 486 house as Avicenna. When his efforts turned out to be in vain, Averroes resorted to
 487 more extreme measures and poisoned Avicenna.⁴⁴ To be sure, this is a very fanciful
 488 account, but it does not seem to suggest that the historical contexts of Averroes and
 489 the other authorities were well-known.

490 By the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, however, with the Marquis d'Argens
 491 and Pierre Bayle, we can discern a greater awareness of the historical situation and the
 492 difficulties which Ibn Rushd faced.⁴⁵ It seems as if their knowledge of Ibn Rushd's
 493 biography and context was decisive for the interpretation of an original Averroistic
 494 dimension of his work. His personal fate may very well have confirmed to seventeenth-
 495 century readers what earlier interpreters had to extract by way of speculation. As we
 496 have seen above, however, modern scholars do not always follow along these lines or
 497 subscribe to the interpretation of Ibn Rushd as a theoretical and practical Averroist.

498 The verdict on the explanatory potential of the historical context is similar to that
 499 on problems of text interpretation and transmission: there is no overwhelming evi-
 500 dence which would clearly show either that Ibn Rushd was an Averroist or that he
 501 was not, nor, if indeed he was, in what sense exactly. Several mutually exclusive
 502 scenarios seem plausible. There are certainly gaps in our knowledge which can be
 503 filled. The corpus of Ibn Rushd's Arabic works is perhaps not as definite as it may
 504 seem. As Marc Geoffroy has shown only recently, it may be possible to reconstruct
 505 important changes in the development of Ibn Rushd's texts due to Almohad interfer-
 506 ence.⁴⁶ Sources which preserve quotations from Ibn Rushd's works such as Ibn
 507 Taymiyya's *Dar' ta'ārūd al-'aql wa'l-naql* have not yet been exploited systemati-
 508 cally. Marginal figures who could have inherited elements of Ibn Rushd's philoso-
 509 phy and provide independent testimonies have yet to be studied in detail.⁴⁷ New
 510 manuscripts might surface in long ignored West African libraries.

511 The fuller historical picture which will emerge once we have completed these
 512 tasks, will provide a better basis for the philosophical evaluation of Ibn Rushd as
 513 well as whether there were any Averroist convictions or anti-Averroistic polemics

⁴⁴ Dag Nikolaus Hasse, 'King Avicenna: The Iconographic Consequences of a Mistranslation', *Journal of the Warburg and Courtauld Institutes*, 60 (1997), pp. 230–243; Marie-Thérèse d'Alverny, *Avicenne en Occident* (Paris: Vrin, 1993), article XV, pp. 79–87. See also Amos Bertolacci in the present volume.

⁴⁵ Israel, *Enlightenment Contested*, p. 622 for D'Argens and p. 626 for Bayle.

⁴⁶ Marc Geoffroy, 'Ibn Rushd et la théologie almohadiste: Une version inconnue du *Kitāb al-kašf 'an manāhiğ al-adilla* dans deux manuscrits d'Istanbul', *Medioevo*, 26 (2001), pp. 327–352.

⁴⁷ A list of potentially relevant characters can be extracted from Josep Puig, 'Materials on Averroes's Circle', *Journal of Near Eastern Studies*, 51 (1992), pp. 241–260 and and Muḥammad Ibn Sharīfa, *Ibn Rushd al-ḥafīd: Sīra wathā'iqiyya* (Casablanca: Maḥba'at al-najāḥ, 1999). Parallels can be found in Ibn Sab'īn's *Sicilian Questions*, see my *Philosophie und Mystik in der späten Almohadenzeit* (Leiden: Brill, 2006), pp. 264–289.

among Muslim writers parallel to what we can find in thirteenth-century Paris.⁴⁸ On 514
 the other hand, the differences among scholars regarding the Averroistic implica- 515
 tions of Ibn Rushd's works will not be solved by the discovery of further snippets of 516
 information. What is often at stake here is a very basic difference in methodology 517
 which leads us back to square one.⁴⁹ 518

The Straussians and Their Opponents 519

Scholars who believe in an Averroistic Ibn Rushd who had to adapt his form of 520
 expression to the threat of persecution are usually labelled Straussians, whereas 521
 their critics are classified as protagonists of an anti-Straussian backlash.⁵⁰ Very 522
 broadly speaking, their main disagreement concerns the nature of philosophy in 523
 historical Muslim societies and its possible political implications. The Straussians – 524
 in the tradition of Leo Strauss's interpretation of Maimonides's *Guide for the* 525
Perplexed in *Persecution and the Art of Writing* – base their interpretations on the 526
 assumption that because of the nature of Islam and the nature of philosophy, the 527
falāsifa had to disguise their real views. Straussians see what they refer to as Islamic 528
 political philosophy as part of an endeavour of philosophers to hide and protect 529
 Aristotle from the dominance of the revealed religions.⁵¹ They present Islamic intel- 530
 lectual history as determined by a dichotomy between rationalist philosophers on 531
 the one hand and anti-philosophical, anti-rationalist, 'fundamentalist' religious 532
 scholars on the other. Such dichotomies are characteristic of the work of Strauss – 533
 the most notable one probably being that between Jerusalem and Athens.⁵² Beginning 534

⁴⁸ See my 'Ibn Sab'īn's *Sicilian Questions*: the Text, its Sources, and their Historical Context', *al-Qanṭara*, 29 (2008), pp. 115–146.

⁴⁹ Methodology is used here in the sense of a set of methods including such of a philological nature (editorial principles such as how significant it is how an author should have interpreted Aristotle; how far should the Greek text of an Aristotelian work be used even if it was not at the disposal of the Muslim writer), historical contextualisation (should it be taken into consideration, for example, where an author got his money from or which audience he addressed) and philosophical interpretation (e.g. usefulness for today and whether a past philosopher was actually right) held together by a framework of more abstract ideas concerning the purpose of studying the history of philosophy.

⁵⁰ For what follows see, among other publications, Charles Butterworth, 'Averroës: Politics and Opinion', *The American Political Science Review*, 66 (1972), pp. 894–901; Id., 'Rhetoric and Islamic Political Philosophy', *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, 3 (1972), pp. 187–198; Id., 'Ethical and Political Philosophy', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic Philosophy*, eds Peter Adamson and Richard C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), pp. 266–286; Gutas, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century'; James Montgomery in the present volume.

⁵¹ Muhsin Mahdi, 'Philosophy and Political Thought: Reflections and Comparisons', *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, 1 (1991), pp. 9–29.

⁵² Rémi Brague's addition to Mecca as representing the harmonising tradition of Islam, al-Fārābī in particular, is an unfortunate choice given that the holy city never was a centre of philosophy. 'Athens, Jerusalem, Mecca: Leo Strauss's "Muslim" Understanding of Greek Philosophy', *Poetics Today*, 19 (1998), pp. 235–259.

535 with al-Fārābī, philosophers were constantly exposed to the threat of persecution
 536 and – following the model of Socrates – execution.⁵³ The idea of a ‘double truth’
 537 reflects their strategy to avoid such a fate. On the more positive side, the philoso-
 538 phers also wanted to avoid confusing their uneducated audience which would have
 539 had a bad effect on society. For scholars of the Straussian tradition, the troubled
 540 relationship between philosophy and society was very much at the heart of their
 541 own interpretations of these philosophers. They have to assume that the philoso-
 542 phers deliberately misled their readers – very much in accordance with the strategy
 543 that Maimonides described in his *Guide*. In what follows, ‘Straussianism’ will be
 544 used in this sense, i.e., as the default assumption that because of a threat of persecu-
 545 tion, philosophers in the Islamic world had to hide their real views between the
 546 lines. The term is neither meant to suggest a relationship between Strauss and the
 547 Straussians other than what is outlined above in broad terms nor does it claim to be
 548 an exhaustive description of the views of these scholars concerning the history of
 549 Islamic/Arabic philosophy. As I will discuss below in more detail, however, this
 550 attitude of the Straussians might be connected with general assumptions about what
 551 the history of philosophy as philosophy can or should contribute to the well-being
 552 of a society as the writings of Muhsin Mahdi in particular suggest.⁵⁴

553 The opponents of the Straussians, on the other hand, dismiss such assumptions as
 554 dogmatism without foundation in the texts themselves. According to these critics, the
 555 Jerusalem-Athens dichotomy is exaggerated and is not representative of the general
 556 concerns of Islamic/Arabic philosophy. In other words, in their view, the Straussians
 557 have already made up their minds and are looking in the Arabic texts for anything
 558 that confirms their opinions. For these critics, the Straussian claim that the philoso-
 559 phers did not express their genuine views openly makes their interpretations arbi-
 560 trary. Relying on metaphysical ideas, they fail to provide an empirical foundation for
 561 their conclusions in the form of historical evidence. Dimitri Gutas, for example, as a
 562 leading voice against the Straussians challenged them to name one example of a
 563 philosopher who was actually persecuted for his *philosophical* ideas.⁵⁵ Interestingly,
 564 Ibn Rushd is not among the philosophers Gutas mentioned as those who have been
 565 persecuted for reasons other than their philosophical ideas. Given Gutas’s emphasis
 566 on the legal character of *Faṣl al-maqāl*, one can only speculate that, according to
 567 him, it would have rather been Ibn Rushd’s role as a legal scholar which got him into
 568 trouble. The various ways in which the *mihna* against Ibn Rushd has been explained
 569 is a perfect illustration of the differences between the two camps – in fact, this is the
 570 litmus test for a scholar’s stance on Straussianism. This does not, of course, preclude
 571 the possibility that while Ibn Rushd was indeed persecuted for his philosophical
 572 ideas, this kind of persecution was it is not a general rule in Islamic history. In what
 573 follows, I will focus on the most prominent representatives of the two sides of the

⁵³ *Persecution and the Art of Writing* (New York: The Free Press, 1952), p. 33.

⁵⁴ See also ‘On Ibn Rushd, Philosophy and the Arab World (Interview)’, *Alif: Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 255–258.

⁵⁵ Gutas, ‘The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century’, p. 20.

debate, although other scholars will also be cited insofar as their views are related to more general differences in the study of Islamic/Arabic philosophy. 574

The divide between the Straussians and their opponents entails more than an argument about the relationship between religion and philosophy in the medieval Islamic world, the significance of this question for Islamic/Arabic philosophy, the position of the philosophers in Islamic societies and how these issues are intertwined. It also concerns their approach to the history of Islamic/Arabic philosophy on a more fundamental level. Scholars are divided not only by the answers they are giving, but by the very nature of the questions they are asking. Straussian scholars such as Charles Butterworth are interested in finding out whether a medieval philosopher was actually right, whereas their opponents such as Dimitri Gutas focus their research on reconstructing the ideas of such philosophers within their respective historical contexts. In other words, Straussians deal primarily with problems, whereas their opponents deal primarily with 'doctrines, theories and systems' (Lorenz Krüger; see below). 575
576
577
578
579
580
581
582
583
584
585
586
587
588

An example of divisions which have little to do with the existence and nature of Islamic political philosophy can be found in Gutas's review of Butterworth's translation of Ibn Rushd's Middle Commentary on Aristotle's *Poetics*.⁵⁶ Gutas mainly targeted Butterworth's aim to understand the text 'on its own terms' – an aim which, according to him, led the translator to disregard its historical and semantic context. The method which led to such disregard is that Butterworth assumed Ibn Rushd had the text of Aristotle's *Poetics* at his disposal as we have it today, thereby ignoring the transformations it experienced not least through its translation into Arabic. According to Gutas, Butterworth also ignored the fact that compared to modern readers Ibn Rushd knew very little about ancient Greek civilisation – the cultural context is of course key for a text like the *Poetics*. Gutas explained these methodological failures by referring to Butterworth's view that the ideas expressed in the texts in question are 'essentially sound and thus ... have an intrinsic value and ... [are] of relevance today.'⁵⁷ While he concedes that this is a legitimate point, he insists that it should not interfere with the work of a translator or editor. Butterworth replied to Gutas's criticism 4 years later. He distinguished two opposed views: that which tries to 'make sense of what the author actually says' and that which is limited to 'philological determinism.'⁵⁸ From an outside perspective, it is difficult to see why these two views should be regarded as mutually exclusive. In the opinion of the present writer, trying to make sense of 'what the author actually says' is only possible if we also try to establish what the author referred to. According to Butterworth, Ibn Rushd's lack of knowledge of ancient Greece was a concern 'not at issue.'⁵⁹ The task of 'serious 589
590
591
592
593
594
595
596
597
598
599
600
601
602
603
604
605
606
607
608
609
610

⁵⁶ 'Review: On Translating Averroes' Commentaries', *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, 110 (1990), pp. 92–101. Butterworth has replied in 'Translation and Philosophy: The Case of Averroes' Commentaries', *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, 26 (1994), pp. 19–35.

⁵⁷ Gutas, 'Review: On Translating Averroes' Commentaries', p. 93.

⁵⁸ Butterworth, 'Translation and Philosophy: The Case of Averroes' Commentaries', p. 21.

⁵⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 20.

611 scholars' was rather to make sense of the text based on the assumption that Ibn Rushd
612 had a 'coherent and thoughtful position'.⁶⁰ In a revealing phrase, Butterworth argued
613 that the philological method could not possibly tell us what Ibn Rushd says about the
614 *Poetics* – such arguments were those usually made by scientists.⁶¹ He sees his own
615 approach as 'in the service of philosophy,' one that seeks to 'achieve a better grasp of
616 the major problem.'

617 Analytical Versus Continental Philosophy

618 These differences clearly go beyond the simple argument about *Persecution and the*
619 *Art of Writing* and the political implications of Arabic/Islamic philosophy. I do not
620 therefore think that it is very helpful to summarise their differences solely under the
621 labels 'Straussianism' and 'anti-Straussianism'. What has also been nurturing my
622 doubts about these labels is the fact that as far as American foreign politics are
623 concerned, protagonists of both academic camps often share very similar views.
624 They are equally opposed to the views of the group of people in US politics who are
625 usually called Straussians and who have been identified as the driving force behind
626 the invasion in Iraq – among them Paul Wolfowitz. One of the main accusations
627 connected with this label is that because they endorsed the principles of esotericism,
628 disguising their real views was part of their agenda.⁶² As has already been alluded
629 to above, being a Straussian in our field implies thus a very specific set of opinions
630 regarding the role of philosophy in historical Islamic societies, but neither does it
631 bear any implications regarding other fields in which 'Straussianism' is a relevant
632 category, nor is it an accurate label for their overall approach to the history of
633 Islamic/Arabic philosophy.

634 Gutas establishes several categories of scholars who are guided by what he
635 regards as misinterpretations of Arabic philosophy, but while elucidating several
636 other fronts, they do not offer an explanation for the background of the dispute in
637 question.⁶³ A division which I have found very helpful to further analyse the
638 Straussian divide is that between analytical and continental philosophy. I would
639 like to use this division for two different aspects of the historiography of Islamic/
640 Arabic philosophy: (1) the method and (2) the purpose of studying the history of
641 philosophy.

⁶⁰ Ibid., p. 20.

⁶¹ Ibid., p. 21.

⁶² Among other journalists, Seymour M. Hersh pointed out the Straussian connection in his article 'Selective Intelligence' published 12 May 2003 in the *New Yorker*. A long critique of this theory of a Straussian conspiracy is Catherine and Michael Zuckert, *The Truth about Leo Strauss: Political Philosophy and American Democracy* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 2006).

⁶³ Gutas, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century'. In addition to Straussianism, Gutas highlights Orientalist and esoteric interpretations as erroneous.

By way of introducing my argument, I would like to distinguish three levels on which the difference between analytical and continental philosophy is important:

1. For the purposes of this chapter, the difference between the analytical and the continental tradition (a division which is arguably more important to philosophers in the Anglo-American world than on the European continent) is understood very broadly as a cultural difference reflected in different understandings of philosophy.⁶⁴ This cultural difference is behind many of the fundamental divisions in philosophy: knowledge vs. wisdom, science vs. art, Positivism vs. Romanticism. A very simple way of dividing analytical and continental philosophers is the different authorities they follow. Frege, Wittgenstein, Carnap and Quine are authorities of the analytical tradition, whereas the continentals follow Hegel, Nietzsche, Heidegger, Foucault and Derrida. Even though these authorities play a role only through their legacies and less as direct points of reference in the texts under consideration here, we do find the odd reference which may turn out to be revealing. The fact that Leaman uses Wittgenstein in his discussion of Ibn Rushd the Averroist may be a poor indicator, but fits into the general outlook of his approach.
2. The debate about analytical and continental traditions in the historiography of philosophy owes a lot to the rise of critical theory since the 1960s. It has been led for several decades already among those who study Western philosophy with major contributions from Quentin Skinner and Richard Rorty, among others.⁶⁵ The main division, or at least one of the main divisions, concerns the subject matter of philosophy as determined by the purpose of studying the history of philosophy. Scholars in the analytical tradition tend to practise history of ideas in a very strict sense – it is the philosophical value of the ideas that they are interested in. Philosophers of the continental tradition, broadly speaking, practise intellectual history in the broader sense of *Geistesgeschichte*, aiming at a more general contextualisation of ideas. What this implies is that these scholars take historical, religious, political and ideological concerns into consideration which their analytical counterparts either disregard or to which they assign a much lower priority. To put it in the words of the editors of a collection of articles on the philosophy of the history of philosophy, analytical philosophers fail to see past Xs in terms of present non-philosophical Zs because they tend to see past ideas in terms of present philosophical debates.⁶⁶ The approach of continental

⁶⁴ A concise and very readable definition is offered by Simon Critchley in his *Continental Philosophy: A Very Short Introduction* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2001) and his introduction to *A Companion to Continental Philosophy*, eds Simon Critchley and William R. Schroeder (Oxford: Blackwell, 1998).

⁶⁵ *Philosophy in History: Essays in the Historiography of Philosophy*, eds Richard Rorty, Jerome B. Schneewind and Quentin Skinner (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984). See also the first volume of Quentin Skinner, *Visions of Politics* ('Regarding Method') (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2002).

⁶⁶ Rorty, Schneewind and Skinner, 'Introduction', *Philosophy in History*, pp. 1–14 (12).

676 philosophers reveals a greater concern for history, based on the conviction that in
 677 order to appreciate ideas of past thinkers, we have to see them in context, but
 678 perhaps also based on the conviction that historical change is part of the philo-
 679 sophical lesson to be learned from studying the history of philosophy.⁶⁷ The com-
 680 parison with science is again revealing. Analytical philosophers approach the
 681 history of philosophy not unlike the history of science, where there is a clear
 682 consensus on whether a past scientist was right or wrong.⁶⁸

683 3. The third case in which this difference is relevant is in history of philosophy as
 684 part of a different field or discipline such as Arabic or Islamic Studies. Islamic
 685 intellectual history involves various kinds of academic enquiry and scholars are
 686 often eclectic in their methods. Sometimes they develop them more independ-
 687 ently as a reaction to their sources and interests, sometimes they are inspired by
 688 developments in related fields. There are clearly parallels and even direct con-
 689 nections between the debates mentioned under (1) and (2) and those who study
 690 the history of Islamic/Arabic philosophy, but so far scholars in our field have
 691 been reluctant to join the general debates more actively.

692 **Method: History of Philosophy as a Historical Exercise**

693 As far as their methods are concerned, I would like to identify an analytical
 694 tendency among the Straussians and a continental one among the opponents, most
 695 notably Gutas. This should not be misread as a claim that those identified here as
 696 Straussians are in fact analytical philosophers and their opponents continental
 697 philosophers. It rather establishes a parallel between their respective approaches to
 698 the history of philosophy. Gutas's review of Butterworth's edition and translation
 699 of Ibn Rushd's Middle Commentary on Aristotle's *Poetics* can serve as an exam-
 700 ple. Gutas criticises Butterworth for having stripped the text and its transmission of
 701 its historical context. A similar criticism may be implied in his attacks on the
 702 Straussians when he suggests that it is what they perceive as the perennial philo-
 703 sophical questions in historical texts that determines their analysis rather than the
 704 unbiased approach of an historian. This may be a topic of polemics among scholars
 705 more than anything else. Nevertheless, it is possible to identify Gutas's position
 706 here with the attitude of those historians of philosophy who follow the continental
 707 tradition and for whom history is essential – both for the interpretation of philoso-
 708 phers of past times and for their own self-perception as philosophers. Evidence
 709 for the concerns of the Straussians in the analytical tradition is also amply avail-
 710 able. Butterworth criticised Fritz Zimmermann, for example, for his focus on phil-
 711 ological history: 'the history of the idea alone matters, not the soundness of the

⁶⁷ Charles Taylor, 'Philosophy and its History', in *Philosophy in History*, pp. 17–30.

⁶⁸ Richard Rorty, 'The Historiography of Philosophy: Four Genres', in *Philosophy in History*, pp. 49–75.

idea itself.⁶⁹ Muhsin Mahdi, one of the most prominent Straussians and a student of Leo Strauss himself, once put his criticism of what was for him the Orientalist approach in the following words: 712
713
714

One of the strangest criticisms that continues to be made by some of the representatives of the older, historical and philological tradition of Islamic studies in the West has to do with the validity of attempts to think or rethink the thoughts of a philosopher such as Alfarabi, Avicenna, or Averroes. This means that one can treat their thought historically, biographically, sociologically, and so forth – that is good scholarship. But to think philosophically when dealing with the works of these philosophers, that is said not to be scientific. This view makes no sense, of course.⁷⁰ 715
716
717
718
719
720
721

What this observation confirms is the tendency of the Straussians to focus on problems whereas the scholars whom they criticise focus on doctrines, theories or systems. To put the implications of this difference in the words of Lorenz Krüger, the problem of some historians is that they ‘give up the quest for theoretical continuity in order to save continuity at the level of problems.’⁷¹ Furthermore, Krüger remarks, ‘the problem-history view replaces genuine temporal development by a spurious present.’⁷² I will return to this aspect in the next section. 722
723
724
725
726
727
728

One could, of course, object that scholars like Gutas do not define themselves as philosophers, but rather as historians of ideas, whereas Mahdi et al. see themselves very much as active participants in a philosophical debate. While I doubt that this solves the problem, since disagreements remain (e.g., did Ibn Rushd believe philosophy was superior to religion), I also doubt that this is a fair description. What Gutas defines as the historical dimension of a text exclusively concerns problems of textual transmission which are key to any philosophical interpretation of Averroes – other historical questions such as the social or political situation are not even included.⁷³ The questions over which they are divided are not simply those of historical methodology, but reveal genuine philosophical concerns. 729
730
731
732
733
734
735
736
737
738

⁶⁹ Charles Butterworth, ‘The Study of Arabic Philosophy Today’, in *Arabic Philosophy and the West: Continuity and Interaction*, ed. Thérèse-Anne Druart (Washington: Center for Contemporary Arab Studies, Georgetown University, 1988), pp. 55–140 (95).

⁷⁰ Muhsin Mahdi, ‘Orientalism and the Study of Islamic Philosophy’, *Journal of Islamic Studies*, 1 (1990), pp. 73–98 (93).

⁷¹ Lorenz Krüger, ‘Why do we Study the History of Philosophy’, in *Philosophy in History*, pp. 77–101 (80).

⁷² Krüger, ‘Why do we Study the History of Philosophy’, p. 81.

⁷³ Gutas criticises Butterworth for working on the assumption that Ibn Rushd had access to the text of Aristotle’s *Poetics* as we have it now and to ignore ‘factors such as translators’ misunderstandings, scribal errors, extrapolations, exegetical additions and elaborations that accumulated over the 12 centuries and more that separate classical Greek philosophy and the beginning of Arabic, and the semantic and connotative range of Arabic terms and expressions that were current at the time of each Arabic philosopher’ (Gutas, ‘The Study of Arabic Philosophy’, p. 22). In his *Greek Thought, Arabic Culture* (London: Routledge, 1998), Gutas employs a much broader notion of historical context.

739 Needless to say, these are complex issues and scholars rarely fit neatly into clear-
 740 cut categories. As mentioned above, the parallels between the divide into Straussians
 741 and anti-Straussians and continental vs. analytical methods are only partial. We can
 742 see this from such cases as Oliver Leaman who is clearly a critic of Straussianism
 743 but defends an analytical approach.⁷⁴ Furthermore, we are dealing here with gradual
 744 differences, not two completely separate camps.

745 **Purpose: History of Philosophy as a Philosophical Exercise**

746 I would like to return to Krüger's second observation concerning the balance of past
 747 and present. Because Straussians whom I have associated here with the analytical
 748 tradition focus on problems instead of reconstructing systems of thought, they are
 749 more likely to see a value in the philosophical ideas, but present them with a teleo-
 750 logical twist that is more typical of continental philosophy in the tradition of Hegel.
 751 They sometimes denounce their critics as 'historicists' (following Strauss's terminol-
 752 ogy) who endorse positivist, scientific principles. One can also find examples of
 753 such tendencies outside the group of those who are primarily identified as Straussians.
 754 A case in point is Richard Taylor who introduces his above-mentioned article with a
 755 comment on 'the era of Averroes' as 'one which can be seen to be a culmination of a
 756 long developing historical dialectic of rationalism and philosophical epistemological
 757 optimism on the one hand and fideistic literal interpretation of Scriptures on the part
 758 of fundamentalist theologians on the other.'⁷⁵ This might be fairly weak evidence, but
 759 perhaps it is not a coincidence that Taylor refers to a historical dialectic – a term
 760 usually associated with Hegel's philosophy of history. His interpretation may of course
 761 owe a lot to the view of the contemporary Moroccan philosopher Mohammed Abed
 762 al-Jabri, whom he refers to in this context.⁷⁶ Like those who embrace the Straussian
 763 narrative, Taylor also points out the practical use of Ibn Rushd's ideas.⁷⁷

764 Again, Mahdi offers a much more elaborate expression of this idea concerning
 765 the purpose of studying the history of Islamic philosophy. It should help us to

⁷⁴ Leaman, 'Does the Interpretation of Islamic Philosophy Rest on a Mistake?': *An Introduction to Medieval Islamic Philosophy* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1985), ch. 6 (pp. 182–201), *Averroes and his Philosophy*, pp. 9–11. Butterworth and Gutas are united in their criticism of Leaman's credentials. See Charles Butterworth, 'Review: On Scholarship and Scholarly Conventions', *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, 106 (1986), pp. 725–732, and Dimitri Gutas's review in *Der Islam*, 65 (1988), pp. 339–342.

⁷⁵ Taylor, "'Truth Does not Contradict Truth'", p. 3.

⁷⁶ Ibid. Mohammed Abed al-Jabri, *Introduction à la critique de la raison arabe* (Paris: La Découverte and Institut du monde arabe, 1994).

⁷⁷ Taylor, "'Truth Does not Contradict Truth'", p. 12: 'There are many contemporary philosophers of religion who follow some parts of the route of Averroes and it may be that further careful study of Averroes' thought on philosophy and religion will have something to contribute to current discussions of the interpretation of texts and the understanding of the powers and limits of philosophy, as well as of the relationship or connection between philosophy and religion.'

achieve the reconciliation that German Romanticism had been unable to bring about, the reconciliation between rationalism and poetics, in other words the creation of a kind of rationalism that leads mankind back to its authentic self and does not alienate or enslave it (to put it in words closer to those of Adorno and Horkheimer).⁷⁸ It is already Strauss's approach to the history of philosophy which has been described as a turn against the 'scientific' way of reading these texts.⁷⁹

The Straussians were not the first who interpreted Islamic/Arabic philosophy within a teleological framework. It has long been claimed (and it is sometimes still held) that the historical task of the Arabs/Muslims was to preserve Greek philosophy and science as an essentially European legacy while Europe passed its dark ages. When the continent started to rediscover its heritage, the package was duly returned by way of translation to its rightful owners. It was the Catholic view of the history of philosophy which contributed to such a narrative – a narrative which culminated in Paris and with the heroes Aquinas and Albertus Magnus. By and large, scholarship has abandoned this narrative, but this does not mean that teleology has been abandoned. We can see examples of other teleologies in historiographies of Islamic/Arabic philosophy which are not shaped by the Catholic, but rather by the Protestant tradition where Max Weber replaces Aquinas and Ibn Khaldūn takes the position of Ibn Sīnā.⁸⁰ Instead of a metaphysical we have a scientific, secular telos here, but a telos nonetheless. Likewise, an idea of progress in which enlightenment is a prominent term seems to constitute the telos of the Straussians.

Another important difference connected with teleological frameworks is how far Western scholars tell the history of Islamic/Arabic philosophy as part of their own history or as the history of someone else (the famous 'other') which may even follow different rules. Traditionally, this history is told as part of our own, Western history – the Muslims kept 'our' heritage safe. For scholars in the continental tradition, this aspect seems contingent. They may have private views, but these seem irrelevant in their scholarship. While according to the 'Orientalist' tradition different rules apply to the history and historiography of Islamic philosophy, these principles are nowadays dismissed by most scholars.

Straussians make the history of Islamic/Arabic philosophy in various ways part of their own philosophical practice as if we could establish a dialogue between past philosophers and ourselves.⁸¹ Even though Butterworth argues that Ibn Rushd was not a precursor of the enlightenment,⁸² in principle he seems to regard the usefulness of the

⁷⁸ Mahdi, 'Orientalism and the Study of Islamic Philosophy', p. 97.

⁷⁹ Catherine and Michael Zuckert, *The Truth about Leo Strauss*, p. 42.

⁸⁰ The significance of inner-Christian conflicts on German Oriental scholarship has recently been explored by Suzanne L. Marchand in her *German Orientalism in the Age of Empire: Religion, Race, and Scholarship* (Washington: German Historical Institute and Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2009).

⁸¹ Butterworth, 'Translation and Philosophy', p. 21.

⁸² Charles Butterworth, 'Averroës, Precursor of the Enlightenment?', *Alif: Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 6–18.

800 discussions of past philosophers as relevant to helping us to ask better questions. My
 801 impression is that (at least as a tendency) while it does not matter for the anti-Strauss-
 802 ians if they consider past discussions pointless, it is important for the Straussians that
 803 they themselves have an opinion regarding the questions past philosophers discussed
 804 or at least regarding the quality of past philosophers' arguments. Both, I believe, are
 805 perfectly legitimate attitudes, but they represent different exercises.

806 Conclusions

807 If we deal with various aspects pertinent to the history of Averroism in the Islamic
 808 world, such as the nature or even the very existence of Islamic political philosophy,
 809 it is difficult to ignore these debates which have been going on for the last few
 810 decades. The occasionally strong polemical tones make it sometimes a tedious task
 811 to appreciate specific arguments. If we want to answer the question raised in the title
 812 of my contribution – Was Ibn Rushd an Averroist? – we can return to our limited
 813 number of primary sources and will probably come up with one of the answers
 814 which have already been given. But, as I have tried to show, this only gets us so far
 815 and does not seem to yield any satisfactory conclusions. Especially in the case of
 816 problems which have been revisited by scholars many times and with contradictory
 817 results, it is time to confront the underlying methodological differences. While
 818 I should stress again that the categories I have suggested here are too neat to serve
 819 as comprehensive explanations of ongoing debates, they are a useful *tool* for analysing
 820 some of the implicit disagreements.

821 It is not only in the case of Ibn Rushd that we find these very basic methodological
 822 divides. Similar arguments can be perceived in the study of Ibn Khaldūn where some
 823 scholars are very much interested in the biographical and broader historical context
 824 of Ibn Khaldūn whereas others, most prominently Aziz al-Azmeh, make a case for
 825 limiting the analysis to the text alone (i.e., understanding, as Butterworth does, a text
 826 'on its own terms').⁸³ Another divide which can be found in both cases is that between
 827 the legal or the philosophical character of a text. Muhsin Mahdi, for example, empha-
 828 sised the philosophical foundation of Ibn Khaldūn's work and rejected Gibb's view
 829 who considered it based on legal principles.⁸⁴ The background of his argument was
 830 the 'Orientalist' conviction that law is the fundamental science of Islam, i.e., he con-
 831 sidered Islamic intellectual history to follow 'other' rules. Are there any parallels
 832 between this understanding of Ibn Khaldūn and Gutas's stress on the legal character
 833 of *Faṣl al-maqāl*? Like Mahdi, Gutas criticises the Orientalist idea of an essential
 834 contradiction between rationalism and the 'Muslim mind'.⁸⁵ He is also a scholar who

⁸³ Aziz al-Azmeh, *Ibn Khaldūn in Modern Scholarship: A Study in Orientalism* (London: Third World Centre for Research and Publishing, 1981).

⁸⁴ Mahdi, 'Orientalism and the Study of Islamic Philosophy', pp. 85 ff.

⁸⁵ Gutas, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century'.

does not deny the presence of philosophical arguments where he sees them. On the other hand, the problematic place of philosophy in societies shaped by the Islamic religion has long been an issue in his scholarship as is obvious from his insisting on the expression 'Arabic philosophy' instead of 'Islamic philosophy'.

As somebody whose philosophical education was in the hands of third-generation representatives of the *Frankfurter Schule*, I cannot but emphasise the advantages of the continental approach to the history of philosophy. But I also think that a pluralist attitude is helpful as in the view expressed by Josef van Ess in his review of Oliver Leaman's *Moses Maimonides* (London: Routledge, 1990) that we either take the best of both worlds or simply agree that we are talking about different things.⁸⁶ The scholars cited here make different kinds of claims when they study Ibn Rushd. Historians are translators – do they perhaps simply translate into different languages? It may not be a coincidence that the debate between Gutas and Butterworth is partly one about translation. But should a pluralist attitude go so far as to allow contradictory answers to the question of whether or not Ibn Rushd was an Averroist? Would it be a plausible solution to suggest, for example, that while the ideas of Ibn Rushd as he expressed them in his preserved texts suggest that he was an Averroist, we have to reach the opposite conclusion if we take his historical context into consideration? Tempting as it may be to give such an easy answer, it certainly does not solve the problem. First of all, the situation is much more complex and involves Straussianism as an additional dividing line independent of Ibn Rushd. Furthermore, scholars whom I have associated here with the continental tradition also approach Ibn Rushd's philosophy as part of the history of ideas (not least to challenge others whom I have associated with the analytical tradition here), not as part of an intellectual history in the broader sense. They would claim that the preserved texts only supported their own hypotheses. Finally, even though one should perhaps not dismiss the option of an inconsistent Ibn Rushd too easily, the solution would probably burden the philosopher with a problem created by modern interpreters.

⁸⁶ Published in *Die Welt des Islams*, 32 (1992), pp. 145–147. Whereas other reviewers including Butterworth and Gutas (see note 74 above) have doubted Leaman's academic credentials, van Ess at least acknowledges that Leaman approaches problems as a 'Systemiker'. This, however, is not the main point in the criticism of Butterworth and Gutas.

Author Query

Chapter No.: 16 0001629577

Query	Details Required	Author's Response
AU1	Please confirm the affiliation of the author "Anna Akasoy".	

Uncorrected Proof

Contributors

1

Anna Akasoy obtained her Ph.D. in Oriental Studies in 2005 from the University of Frankfurt. She has taught Islamic studies at different British universities and held a British Academy postdoctoral fellowship at the University of Oxford. She is currently a visiting research fellow at the Käte Hamburger Kolleg 'Dynamics in the History of Religions' at the University of Bochum. Her main interests are the history of the medieval Muslim West, medieval philosophy and Sufism and the relationship between Islam and other religions.

Michael J. B. Allen is a Distinguished Professor Emeritus at UCLA, a past President of the Renaissance Society of America, and an authority on Renaissance Platonism. His most recent book is Marsilio Ficino, *Commentaries on Plato: Volume I: Phaedrus and Ion*, in the Villa I Tatti Series (Cambridge, MA, 2008); and he is currently completing an edition and translation of Ficino's commentaries on the Pseudo-Dionysius.

Amos Bertolacci (Ph.D. in Philosophy and in Near Eastern Languages and Civilization) is Associate Professor of History of Islamic Philosophy at the Scuola Normale Superiore di Pisa. He is the author of *The Reception of Aristotle's Metaphysics in Avicenna's Kitāb al-Šifā': A Milestone of Western Metaphysical Thought* (Leiden: Brill, 2006), and of an Italian annotated translation of the metaphysics of Avicenna's *Šifā'* (Torino: UTET, 2007). He has co-edited, with R. Hissette, the Latin translation of Averroes' Middle Commentary on the *Categories* (Leuven: Peeters, 2010), and published several studies on the influence of Arabic philosophy in the Latin Middle Ages, with particular regard to Albert the Great.

Charles Burnett is Professor of the History of Islamic Influences in Europe at the Warburg Institute, University of London. His work has centred on the transmission of Arabic science and philosophy to Western Europe, which he has documented by editing and translating several texts that were translated from Arabic into Latin, and by describing the historical and cultural context of the translations.

29 **Carlos Fraenkel** is associate professor in the departments of Philosophy and Jewish
30 studies at McGill University in Montréal. He is the author of *From Maimonides to*
31 *Samuel ibn Tibbon: The Transformation of the Dalâlat al-Hâ'irîn into the Moreh*
32 *ha-Nevukhim* (Jerusalem: The Hebrew University Magnes Press, 2007), *Philosophical*
33 *Religions from Plato to Spinoza – Reason, Religion, and Autonomy* (Cambridge:
34 Cambridge University Press, 2012), and the forthcoming *Teaching Plato in Palestine*
35 (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2013).

36 **José Manuel García Valverde** received his Ph.D. in Philosophy (2004) from the
37 University of Sevilla, where he currently works as research fellow, teaching, among
38 other subjects, Renaissance philosophy. His main interest lies in the history of
39 Aristotelianism from antiquity to the sixteenth century. In this field, he has focused
40 his attention on the analysis and the critical edition of different texts by Aristotelians
41 such as Pietro Pomponazzi, Agostino Nifo, Girolamo Cardano and Jacopo Zabarella.
42 He has also produced the first Spanish translations of several texts by Alexander of
43 Aphrodisias. At the moment, he is preparing editions of Pomponazzi's *Tractatus*
44 *acutissimi* and Zabarella's *De rebus naturalibus*.

45 **Guido Gigliani** is the Cassamarca Lecturer in Neo-Latin Cultural and Intellectual
46 History at the Warburg Institute, School of Advanced Study, University of London.
47 He has published on Jean Baptiste or Jan Baptista van Helmont (*Immaginazione e*
48 *malattia*, Milan: Angeli, 2000) and Francis Bacon (*Francesco Bacone*, Rome:
49 Carocci, 2011) and has also edited a volume of manuscript papers of Francis Glisson
50 (Cambridge: Cambridge Wellcome Unit, 1996).

51 **Nicholas Holland** holds degrees from the Universities of Oxford, London and Hull.
52 His current research interests are in early modern philosophy, in particular the
53 Paduan philosophers of the late fifteenth and early sixteenth centuries. He also has
54 a forthcoming publication on the cultural context of the early modern English stage
55 (in the volume *I vincoli della natura: Magia e stregoneria nel Rinascimento*, Rome:
56 Carocci, 2012). He works as a senior university administrator in London.

57 **Sarah Hutton** holds a Chair at Aberystwyth University. Her publications include:
58 *Platonism at the Origins of Modernity. Studies on Platonism and Early Modern*
59 *Philosophy*, co-edited with Douglas Hedley (Springer, 2008). *Studies on Locke:*
60 *Sources, Contemporaries and Legacy*, co-edited with Paul Schuurman (Springer,
61 2008) *Benjamin Furly (1646–1714): a Quaker Merchant and his Milieu*, ed. S. Hutton
62 (Olschki: 2007). *Anne Conway. A Woman Philosopher* (CUP 2004). *Platonism and*
63 *the English Imagination* (co-edited with Anna Baldwin, CUP 1994), *Women,*
64 *Science and Medicine 1550–1700* (co-edited with Lynette Hunter, Sutton 1997).
65 She is Director of the international series, *International Archives in the History of*
66 *Ideas*, and a member of the editorial boards of *The British Journal for the History*
67 *of Philosophy*, *Notes and Records of the Royal Society*, *Oxford Studies in Early*
68 *Modern Philosophy*, *The Journal for the History of Philosophy*.

69 **John Marenbon** is a senior research fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, where
70 he has been based since he went there as an undergraduate in 1973. He also became,

in 2010, Honorary Professor of Philosophy in the University of Cambridge. He has worked especially on Boethius, Eriugena, Abelard and ninth to twelfth-century logic, as well as writing about Averroism in the Latin world and about its relation to Dante. His present interests span these areas, medieval philosophical discussions of paganism (the area of his current main project), and the chronology of medieval philosophy and its continuation beyond the Middle Ages. He is the editor of *The Oxford Handbook of Medieval Philosophy* (2012).

Craig Martin is associate professor of history at Oakland University. He is the author of *Renaissance Meteorology: Pomponazzi to Descartes* (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins University Press, 2011) and is presently writing a book on religion and interpretations of Aristotle in early modern Europe.

James E. Montgomery is Sir Thomas Adams's Professor of Arabic (1632) at the University of Cambridge and is a Fellow of Trinity Hall. His publications seek to encourage a history of ideas of classical Arabic textualities written against the grain by focussing on works which his discipline has traditionally tended to disqualify as material fit for this purpose. His edition and translation of the theological epistles of al-Jahiz will be published by New York University Press as part of the Library of Arabic Literature, of which he is an Executive Editor.

Gregorio Piaia is professor of the History of Philosophy at the University of Padua. His research has developed in three directions, towards the study of: (a) political, ethical and religious thought in the late medieval and renaissance period (*Marsilio da Padova nella Riforma e nella Controriforma*, Padova: Antenore, 1977; *Marsilio e dintorni. Contributi alla storia delle idee*, Padova: Antenore, 1999); (b) the history and theory of philosophical historiography (*Vestigia philosophorum. Il medioevo e la storiografia filosofica*, Rimini 1983; *Il lavoro storico-filosofico. Questioni di metodo ed esiti didattici*, Padova: 2007²; *Models of the History of Philosophy*, Vol. 2: *From the Cartesian Age to Brucker*, ed. by G. Piaia and G. Santinello (†), Dordrecht: Springer, 2011); and (c) the philosophical culture of the Veneto in the 18th and 19th centuries (*Le vie dell'innovazione filosofica nel Veneto moderno, 1700–1866*, Padova: CLEUP, 2011).

Marco Sgarbi works on Kantian Philosophy, German Enlightenment and on the Aristotelian tradition. He is the author of the following volumes: *La Kritik der reinen Vernunft nel contesto della tradizione logica aristotelica* (Hildesheim: Olms, 2010); *Logica e metafisica nel Kant precritico* (Frankfurt: Lang, 2010); *Immanuel Kant, Critica del Juicio* (Madrid: Maia 2011); *Kant e l'irrazionale* (Milan, forthcoming); *Kant on Spontaneity* (London: Continuum, 2012); *The Aristotelian Tradition and the Rise of British Empiricism* (Dordrecht: Springer, 2012). He has been awarded numerous fellowships, including a Frances A. Yates Short-Term Research Fellowship at the Warburg Institute, a Research Grant at the Università di Verona, a Fritz Thyssen-Stipendiat at the Herzog August Bibliothek of Wolfenbüttel and an Accademia dei Lincei-British Academy Research Fellowship. He is currently 'Jean-François Malle' Fellow at Villa I Tatti-The Harvard University Center for Italian Renaissance Studies.

114 **Leen Spruit** studied theology and philosophy at the University of Amsterdam,
115 where he received his PhD in 1987. He is now associate researcher at the Centre
116 for the History of Philosophy and Science (Radboud University Nijmegen), and
117 lecturer of Dutch language and literature at the 'Sapienza' University in Rome.
118 Publications include: *Il problema della conoscenza in Giordano Bruno* (Naples:
119 Bibliopolis, 1988); *Species intelligibilis: From Perception to Knowledge* (Leiden: Brill,
120 1994–1995); *Catholic Church and Modern Science: Documents from the Roman*
121 *Archives of the Holy Office and the Index*, 4 vols (vol. I: *The Sixteenth Century*,
122 Rome: Libreria Editrice Vaticana, 2009, with Ugo Baldini). He has edited Agostino
123 Nifo's *De intellectu* (Leiden: Brill, 2011) and in 2010 has discovered in the Vatican
124 Library the only surviving manuscript of Spinoza's *Ethics* which he has co-published
125 with Pina Totaro (Leiden: Brill, 2011).

Uncorrected Proof

Bibliography

126

Manuscript Sources

127

- Avicenna, *Kitāb al-shifā'*, Leiden, University Library, MS Or. 4. 128
- Avicenna, *Kitāb al-shifā'*, Leiden, University Library, MS Or. 84. 129
- Balsamo, Annibale, *Dubia aliquot in Posteriora circa mentem Averrois*, Milan, Biblioteca Ambrosiana, MS D 129 inf., fols 7^r-16^r. 130
- Corti, Matteo, *Recollectae in septimum colliget Averrois*, Venice, Biblioteca Marciana, MS Lat. VII, 50 (=3570), fols 1^r-65^r. 131
- Delmedigo, Elijah, letter to Giovanni Pico, Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale, MS Latin 6508, 71^a-77^b. 132
- Mainardi, Pietro, *Colliget Averrois cum explanationes super V, VI, VII libri*, Ferrara, Biblioteca Ariosteana, MS II 84, fols 2^v-287^v. 133
- Porzio, Simone, *Prologus Averrois super primum phisicorum Aristotelis*, Milan, Biblioteca Ambrosiana, MS A 153 inf., fol. 2^r. 134
- Storella, Francesco, *Animadversionum in Averroem, pars prima logicales locos comprehendens*, Milan, Biblioteca Ambrosiana, MS I 166 inf., fols 123^r-156^r. 135
- Storella, Francesco, *Observationum in Averroem liber secundus locos ad naturalem, medicinam, atque super naturalem philosophiam attinensque amplectens*, Milan, Biblioteca Ambrosiana, MS 166 inf., fols 158^r-214^v. 136

Printed Sources

144

- Achillini, Alessandro, *Quolibeta de intelligentiis* (Bologna: Benedetto Faelli, 1494). 145
- Achillini, Alessandro, *De elementis* (Venice: Giovanni Antonio de Benedetti, 1505) 146
- Albertus Magnus, *Opera omnia*, ed. Auguste Borgnet, 38 vols (Paris: Vives, 1890–1899). 147
- Albertus Magnus, *Opera omnia*, 40 vols, ed. Bernhard Geyer et al. (Münster: Aschendorff, 1951-). 148
- Albertus Magnus, *Book of Minerals*, trans. Dorothy Wyckoff (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1967). 149
- Alexander of Aphrodisias, *Praeter commentaria scripta minora*, ed. Ivo Bruns (Berlin: Reimer, 1887–1892). 150
- Aristotle, *Omnia quae extant opera* (Venice: Giunta, 1552–1550). 151
- Aristotle, *Opera cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562; repr. Frankfurt: Minerva, 1962). 152
- Aristotle, *De anima*; trans. W. S. Hett (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1936). 153

- 156 Aristotle, *Generation of Animals: The Arabic Translation commonly ascribed to Yaḥyā ibn*
 157 *al-Biṭrīq*, eds J. Brugmann and H. J. Drossaart Lulofs (Leiden: Brill, 1971).
- 158 Averroes, *Destructiones destructionum* (Venice: Ottaviano Scoto, 1497).
- 159 Averroes, *Colliget libri vii* (Venice: Giunta, 1564).
- 160 Averroes, *Tahāfut at-tahāfut*, ed. Maurice Bouyges (Beirut: Imprimerie Catholique, 1930).
- 161 Averroes, *Tafsīr mā ba'd al-ṭabī'a*, ed. Maurice Bouyges (Beirut: Imprimerie Catholique,
 162 1938–1948).
- 163 Averroes, *Compendia librorum Aristotelis qui Parva naturalia vocantur*, ed. E. Ledyard Shields
 164 (Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1949).
- 165 Averroes, *Commentarium magnum in Aristotelis De anima libros*, ed. F. Stuart Crawford
 166 (Cambridge, MA: The Medieval Academy of America, 1953).
- 167 Averroes, *Tahāfut al-Tahāfut (The Incoherence of the Incoherence)*, ed. Simon van den Bergh, 2
 168 vols (Oxford: Oxford University Press; London: Luzac, 1954).
- 169 Averroes, *Faṣl al-maqāl (Decisive Treatise)*, Hebrew trans. and ed. N. Golb in 'The Hebrew
 170 Translation of Averroes' "Faṣl Al-Maqāl"', *Proceedings of the American Academy for Jewish*
 171 *Research*, 25 (1956), pp. 91–113; 26 (1957), pp. 41–64.
- 172 Averroes, *Destructio destructionum philosophiae Algazelis in the Latin Version of Calo Calonymos*,
 173 ed. B. H. Zedler (Milwaukee: The Marquette University Press 1961).
- 174 Averroes, *Averroes on the Harmony of Religion and Philosophy*, trans. George F. Hourani (London:
 175 Luzac, 1961).
- 176 Averroes, *Epitome of Parva Naturalia*, translated from the original Arabic and the Hebrew and Latin
 177 versions by Harry Blumberg (Cambridge, MA: The Mediaeval Academy of America, 1961).
- 178 Averroes, *Kashf 'an manāḥij al-adilla fī 'aqā'id al-milla*, ed. Maḥmūd Qāsim (Cairo: Maktabat
 179 al-anjlū al-miṣriyya, 1964); English trans. Ibrahim Najjar, in *Faith and Reason in Islam:
 180 Averroes' Exposition of Religious Arguments* (Oxford: Oneworld, 2001).
- 181 Averroes, *Commentary on Plato's Republic*, Hebrew trans. Samuel ben Judah of Marseilles, ed. with
 182 Eng. trans. Erwin I. J. Rosenthal (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1956; repr. 1969).
- 183 Averroes, *Commentary on Plato's Republic*, ed. Ralph Lerner (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University
 184 Press, 1974).
- 185 Averroes, *Maqālāt fī'l-mantiq wa'l-'ilm al-ṭabī'ī*, ed. by Jamāl al-Dīn al-'Alawī (Casablanca: Dār
 186 al-nashr al-maghribiyya, 1983).
- 187 Averroes, *L'intelligence et la pensée. Grand commentaire du De anima, Livre III (429a 10-435b*
 188 *25)*, ed. and trans. Alain de Libéra (Paris: Flammarion, 1998).
- 189 Averroes, *La béatitude de l'âme*, eds and trans. Marc Geoffroy and Carlos Steel (Paris: Vrin, 2001).
- 190 Averroes, *Faṣl al-maqāl (Decisive Treatise)*, ed. George Hourani with corrections by Muhsin Mahdi,
 191 Eng. trans. Charles Butterworth in *The Book of the Decisive Treatise Determining the Connection*
 192 *between the Law and Wisdom* (Provo, UT: Brigham Young University Press, 2001).
- 193 Averroes, *El libro de las generalidades de la medicina* eds María de la Concepción Vázquez de
 194 Benito and Camilo Álvarez Morales (Madrid: Editorial Trotta, 2003).
- 195 Averroes, *Long Commentary on the De anima of Aristotle*, ed. and trans. Richard C. Taylor
 196 (New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2009).
- 197 Avicenna, *Opera in lucem redacta* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1508; repr. Frankfurt am
 198 Main: Minerva, 1961).
- 199 Avicenna, *Liber canonis* (Venice: Heirs of Lucantonio Giunta, 1562).
- 200 Avicenna, *De diluviis*, in Manuel Alonso Alonso, 'Homenaje a Avicena en su milenario. Las
 201 traducciones de Juan González de Burgos y Salomón', *Al-Andalus*, 14 (1949), pp. 291–319.
- 202 Avicenna, *Al-Shifā', al-Ṭabī'iyyāt, al-Ma'ādīn wa'l-Āthār al-'ulwiyya*, ed. 'Abd al-Ḥalīm Muntaṣir,
 203 Sa'īd Zāyid, 'Abd Allāh Ismā'īl (Cairo: al-Hay'a al-'amma li-shu'ūn al-maṭābi' al-amīriyya,
 204 1965).
- 205 Avicenna, *Al-Shifā', al-Ṭabī'iyyāt, al-Ḥayawān*, eds 'Abd al-Ḥalīm Muntaṣir, Sa'īd Zāyid, 'Abd
 206 Allāh Ismā'īl (Cairo: al-Hay'a al-miṣriyya al-'amma li'l-ta'lif wa'l-nashr, 1970).
- 207 Bacon, Francis, *The Essayes or Counsels, Civill and Morall*, ed. Michael Kiernan (Oxford:
 208 Clarendon Press, 1985).

- Bacon, Francis, *The Advancement of Learning*, ed. Michael Kiernan (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2003). 209
- Bacon, Francis, *The Instauration Magna Part II: Novum Organum and Associated Texts*, eds Graham Rees and Maria Wakely (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2004). 210
- Balduini, Girolamo, *Expositio aurea in libros aliquot Physicorum Aristotelis, et Averrois super eiusdem commentationem; et in prologum Physicorum eiusdem Averrois* (Venice: [s.n.], 1573). 212
- Barbaro, Ermolao, *Epistolae, orationes et carmina*, ed. Vittore Branca, 2 vols (Florence: Bibliopolis, 1943). 214
- Bayle, Pierre, *Dictionnaire historique et critique*, 1st edn, 2 vols (Rotterdam: Reinier Leers, 1697); 3rd edn, 4 vols (Rotterdam: Michel Bohm, 1720); 4th edn, 4 vols (Amsterdam: Brunel, Wetstein & Smith, 1730). 216
- Beati, Giovanni Francesco, *Quaesitum in quo Averrois ostendit quomodo verificatur corpora coelestia cum finita sint, et possibilia ex se acquirant aeternitatem ab alio* (Padua: s.n., 1542). 220
- Boccadiferro, Ludovico, *Explanatio libri I physicorum Aristotelis* (Venice: Academia Veneta, 1558). 221
- Boethius of Dacia, *Opuscula*, ed. Niels J. Green-Pedersen (Copenhagen: Gad, 1976). 222
- Bordelon, Laurent, *Théâtre philosophique, sur lequel on représente par des Dialogues dans les Champs Elisées les philosophes anciens & modernes, et où l'on rapporte ensuite leurs opinions, leurs reparties, leurs sentences & les plus remarquables actions de leur vie* (Paris: Claude Barbin and Jean Musier, 1692). 223
- Borro, Girolamo, *De motu gravium, et levium* (Florence: Giorgio Marescotti, 1575), p. 5. 227
- Boureau-Deslandes, André-François, *Histoire critique de la philosophie, où l'on traite de son origine, de ses progrès, et des diverses révolutions qui lui sont arrivées jusqu'à notre tems*, 3 vols (Amsterdam: François Changuion, 1737). 228
- Brito, Radulphus, *Quaestiones in Aristotelis librum tertium De anima*, in Winfried Fauser, *Der Kommentar des Radulphus Brito zur Buch III De anima* (Münster: Aschendorff, 1973), pp. 276–292. 231
- Brucker, Johann Jacob, *Historia critica philosophiae*, 2nd edn, 6 vols (Leipzig: Weidmann & Reich, 1767). 232
- Bruno, Giordano, *Opera Latine conscripta*, eds Francesco Fiorentino, Felice Tocco, G. Vitelli, Vittorio Imbriani and Carlo Maria Tallarigo, 8 vols (Naples and Florence: Morano and Le Monnier, 1879–1891). 233
- Bruno, Giordano, *Opere mnemotecniche*, eds Michele Ciliberto, Marco Matteoli, Rita Sturlese and Nicoletta Tirinnanzi, 2 vols (Milan: Adelphi, 2004–2009). 236
- Budde, Johann Franz, *Analecta historiae philosophicae* (Halle: Orphanotrophii, 1724). 237
- Budde, Johann Franz, *Traité de l'athéisme et de la superstition*, trans. L. Philon (Amsterdam: Pierre Mortier, 1740). 238
- Budde, Johann Franz, *Theses theologicae de atheismo et superstitione* (Leiden: Johannes Le Mair, 1767). 239
- Burton, Robert, *The Anatomy of Melancholy*, eds Thomas C. Faulkner, Nicolas K. Kiessling and Rhonda L. Blair, introduction and commentary by J. B. Bamrough and Martin Dodsworth, 6 vols. (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1989–2000). 240
- Campanella, Campanella, *Universalis philosophiae, seu metaphysicarum rerum, iuxta propria dogmata, partes tres, libri 18*, 3 vols (Paris: Denis Langlois, 1638; repr. Turin: Bottega d'Erasmus, 1961). 241
- Campanella, Campanella, *Legazioni ai Maomettani (Quod reminiscuntur, libro IV)*, ed. Romano Amerio (Florence: Olschki, 1960). 242
- Campanella, Campanella, *Del senso delle cose e della magia*, ed. by Germana Ernst (Rome and Bari: Laterza, 2007). 243
- Cardano, Girolamo, *Opera omnia*, ed. Charles Spon, 10 vols (Lyon: Jean-Antoine Huguétan and Marc-Antoine Ravaud, 1663; repr.: Stuttgart and Bad Cannstatt: Frommann, 1966). 244
- Cardano, Girolamo, *De immortalitate animorum*, ed. José Manuel García Valverde (Milan: Angeli, 2006). 245
- Celio Rodigino [Ricchieri], Ludovico, *Lectioinum Antiquarum Libri XVI* (Basel: Ambrose and Aurelius Froben, 1566). 246

- 262 Champier, Symphorien, *Cribratio, lima et annotamenta in Galeni, Avicennae et Consiliatoris*
 263 *opera* (Paris: Officina Ascensiana, 1516).
- 264 Coimbra Commentators, *In tres libros de anima Aristotelis* (Cologne: Lazar Zetzner, 1609).
- 265 Confalonieri, Giovanni Battista, *Averrois libellus de substantia orbis nuper castigatus et duobus*
 266 *capitulis auctus diligentique studio expositus* (Venice: Francesco Bindoni and Maffeo Pasini
 267 for Bernardino Benali, 1525).
- 268 Cudworth, Ralph, *True Intellectual System of the Universe* (London: Richard Royston, 1678).
- 269 Cudworth, Ralph, *A Treatise Concerning Eternal and Immutable Morality*, ed. Sarah Hutton
 270 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1996).
- 271 Culverwell, Nathaniel, *An Elegant and Learned Discourse of the Light of Nature*, eds Robert A.
 272 Greene and Hugh McCallum (Toronto: University of Toronto Press).
- 273 Delmedigo, Elijah, *Annotationes, De primo motore quaestio, De efficientia mundi*, in John of
 274 Jandun, *Quaestiones in libros Physicorum Aristotelis* (Venice: Heironymus de Sanctis, and
 275 Johannes Lucilius Santritter, for Petrus Benzon and Petrus Plasiis, 1488).
- 276 De Villemandy, Pierre, *Manuductio ad philosophiae Aristoteleae, Epicureae et Cartesianae,*
 277 *parallelismum*, 4th edn (Amsterdam: Henry Wetsten and Henry Desbordes, 1685).
- 278 Diels, Hermann (ed.), *Commentaria in Aristotelem Graeca*, 23 vols (Berlin: Reimer, 1882–1909).
- 279 Diels, Hermann (ed.), *Die Fragmente der Vorsokratiker: Griechisch und Deutsch*, 3 vols (Berlin:
 280 Weidmannsche Buchhandlung, 1922 [1903]).
- 281 Duns Scotus, John, in *Opera omnia*, a Patribus Franciscanis de observantia accurate recognita, *Opera*
 282 *omnia*, a Patribus Franciscanis de observantia accurate recognita, 26 vols (Paris: Louis Vivès,
 283 1891–1895; repr. Westmead, Franborough, and Hants: Gregg International Publishers, 1969).
- 284 Dupont-Bertris, *Eloges et caracteres des philosophes les plus célèbres, depuis la Naissance de*
 285 *Jesus-Christ, jusqu'à présent* (Paris: chez Henri-Simon-Pierre Gissey, 1726).
- 286 Etzwiler, J. P., 'John Baconthorpe, "Prince of the Averroists"', *Franciscan Studies*, 36 (1977 for
 287 1976), pp. 148–176.
- 288 Al-Fārābī, *De Platonis philosophia*, eds and trans. Franz Rosenthal and Richard Walzer (London:
 289 The Warburg Institute, 1943)
- 290 Al-Fārābī, *Compendium Legum Platonis*, ed. and trans. Francesco Gabrieli (London: The Warburg
 291 Institute, 1952).
- 292 Al-Fārābī, *Kitāb taḥṣīl al-sa'āda* ('The Attainment of Happiness'), ed. Ja'far Āl Yāsīn (Beirut: Dār
 293 al-Andalus, 1981); English trans. Muḥsin Mahdi in *Al-Farabi's Philosophy of Plato and*
 294 *Aristotle* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1962).
- 295 Al-Fārābī, *Al-Farabi on the Perfect State: Abū Naṣr al-Fārābī's Mabādī' Ārā' Ahl al-Madīna*
 296 *al-Fāḍila*, A revised Text with Introduction, Translation and Commentary by Richard Walzer
 297 (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1985; repr. 1988).
- 298 Al-Fārābī, *Kitāb al-milla (Book of Religion)*, ed. Muḥsin Mahdi (Beirut: Dār al-Mashriq, 1968);
 299 English trans. Charles Butterworth in *The Political Writings: Selected Aphorisms and Other*
 300 *Texts* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2001), pp. 85–113.
- 301 Al-Fārābī, *Philosophy of Plato and Aristotle*, translated with an introduction by Muḥsin Mahdi,
 302 revised edition with a foreword by Charles E. Butterworth and Thomas L. Pangle (Ithaca, NY:
 303 Cornell University Press, 2001).
- 304 Al-Fārābī, *Kitāb al-ḥurūf = Alfarabi's Book of Letters: Commentary on Aristotle's Metaphysics*,
 305 ed. Muḥsin Mahdi (Beirut: Dār al-Mashriq, 1969); English trans. of Book 2 in *Medieval Islamic*
 306 *Philosophical Writings*, ed. Muhammad Khalidī (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press,
 307 2005), secs 142–143.
- 308 Fernel, Jean, *Physiologia*, translated and annotated by John M. Forrester, with an introduction of
 309 John Henry and J. M. Forrester (Philadelphia: American Philosophical Society, 2003).
- 310 Ferrandus Hispanus, *De species intelligibili*, ed. Zdzisław Kuksewicz, *Medioevo*, 3 (1997), pp.
 311 187–235.
- 312 Ficino, Marsilio, *Opera omnia*, 2 vols (Basel: Heinrich Petri, 1576; repr. Turin: Bottega d'Erasmus,
 313 1962).

- Ficino, Marsilio, *Platonic Theology*, eds and trans. Michael J. B. Allen and James Hankins, with W. Bowen, 6 vols (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2001–2006). 314
315
- Gaetanus of Thiene, *Quaestio de sensu agente* (Vicenza: Enrico di Sant'Orso, 1486). 316
- Gassendi, Pierre, *Opera omnia*, 6 vols (Lyon: Laurent Anisson and Jean-Baptiste Devenet, 1658; repr. Stuttgart and Bad Cannstatt: Frommann, 1964). 317
318
- Genovesi, Antonio, *Dissertatio physico-historica de rerum origine et constitutione* [1745], eds Sara Boneschi and Maurizio Torrini (Florence: Giunti, 2001). 319
320
- Gesner, Konrad, *Bibliotheca universalis, sive catalogus omnium scriptorum locupletissimus* (Zurich: Froschauer, 1545) 321
322
- Al-Ghazālī, *The Incoherence of the Philosophers*, ed. Michael E. Marmura (Provo, UT: Brigham Young University Press, 2000). 323
324
- Giles of Rome, *Quodlibeta* (Bologna: Johann Schreiber, 1481) 325
- Glanvill, Joseph, *A Blow at Modern Sadducism in some Philosophical Considerations about Witchcraft* (London: James Collins, 1668) 326
327
- Glanvill, Joseph, *Sadducismus Triumphatus: Of Full and Plain Evidence Concerning Witches, with a Letter of Dr H. More on the Same Subject* (London: James Collins, 1681). 328
329
- Göckel, Rudolph, *Lexicon philosophicum* (Frankfurt: Matthias Becker's widow, 1613). 330
- Gozze, Nicolò Vito di, *In sermonem Averrois de substantia orbis, et in propositiones de causis* (Bologna: Bernardo Giunta, 1580). 331
332
- Hartmann, Georg Volckmar, *Anleitung zur Historie der Leibnitzisch-Wolffischen Philosophie*, in Christian Wolff, *Gesammelte Werke*, III. *Materialien und Dokumente*, IV (Hildesheim and New York: Olms, 1973), pp. 138–144. 333
334
335
- Herder, Johann Gottfried, *Sämmtliche Werke*, ed. Bernhard Suphan, 33 vols (Berlin: Weidmann, 1877–1899). 336
337
- Horn, Georg, *Historiae philosophicae libri septem, quibus de origine, successione, sectis et vita philosophorum ab orbe condito usque ad nostram aetatem agitur* (Leiden: Jean Elsevier, 1655). 338
339
340
- Hottinger, Johann Heinrich, *Bibliothecarius quadripartitus* (Zurich: Melchior Stauffacher, 1664). 341
- Hume, David, *Essays Moral, Political, and Literary*, eds Thomas H. Green and Thomas H. Grose (London: Longmans, Green and Co. 1889; repr. Aalen: Scientia, 1964). 342
343
- Iacobus de Pistorio, *Quaestio de felicitate*, ed. Irene Zavattero, in *La felicità nel Medioevo*, eds M. Bettetini and Francesco D. Paparella (Louvain-la-Neuve: Fédération Internationale des Instituts d'Études Médiévales, 2005), pp. 395–409. 344
345
346
- Ibn Bājja, *Opera metaphysica*, ed. Majid Fahri (Beirut: Dār al-Nahār, 1968). 347
- Ibn al-Qalānīsī, *Dhayl ta'rīkh Dimashq (Addendum to the History of Damascus)*, ed. Henry Frederick Amedroz (Beirut: Maṭba'at al-Ābā' al-Yasū'iyyīn, 1908). 348
349
- Israeli, Isaac ben Solomon. *Opera* (Lyon: Bartholomaeus Trot, 1515). 350
- John of Jandun, *Quaestiones in libros Physicorum Aristotelis* (Venice: Hieronymus de Sanctis, and Johannes Lucilius Santritter, for Petrus Benzon and Petrus Plasiis, 1488). 351
352
- John of Jandun, *Subtilissime quaestiones in octo libros Aristotelis de physico auditu nunc recens post omnes omnium excusiones accuratissime recognite cum triplici tabula his annectuntur quaestiones Helie Hebrei Cretensis* (Venice: Lucantonio Giunta, 1544). 353
354
355
- John of Jandun, *In libros Aristotelis de coelo et mundo quae extant quaestiones subtilissimae: quibus nuper consulto adiecimus Averrois sermonem De substantia orbis cum eiusdem Ioannis commentario ac quaestionibus* (Venice: Giunta, 1552). 356
357
358
- John of Jandun, *In duodecim libros metaphysicae* (Venice: Girolamo Scoto, 1553; repr. Frankfurt am Main: Minerva, 1966). 359
360
- John of Jandun, *Super libros de anima subtilissimae quaestiones* (Venice: Heirs of Girolamo Scoto, 1587; repr. Frankfurt am Main: Minerva, 1966). 361
362
- John of Jandun, *Quaestiones super Parvis naturalibus, cum Marci Antonii Zimarae de movente et moto, ad Aristotelis et Averrois intentionem, absolutissima quaestione* (Venice: Girolamo Scoto, 1589). 363
364
365
- Kant, Immanuel, *Gesammelte Schriften* (Berlin: Deutsche Akademie der Wissenschaften, 1900-). 366

- 367 Kant, Immanuel, *Anthropology, History, and Education*, ed. Günter Zöller and Robert B. Loudon
368 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007).
- 369 Keckermann, Bartholomäus, *Systema systematum*, ed. Johann Heinrich Alsted (Hanau: Heirs of
370 Wilhelm Antonius, 1613).
- 371 Lange, Johann Joachim, *Causa Dei et religionis naturalis adversus atheismum* (Halle:
372 Orphanotrophii, 1723).
- 373 Le Clerc, Jean, *Epistolario*, eds Maria Grazia and Mario Sina, 4 vols (Florence: Olschki,
374 1987–1997).
- 375 Leibniz, G. W., *Die philosophischen Schriften*, ed. C. J. Gerhardt, 7 vols (Berlin: Weidmann, 1885;
376 repr. Hildesheim: Olms 1960–1961).
- 377 Leibniz, G. W., *Theodicy: Essays and the Goodness of God, the Freedom of Man and the Origin
378 of Evil*, ed. Austin Farrer, trans. E. M. Huggard (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1951;
379 repr. La Salle, IL: Open Court, 1985).
- 380 Leone, Ambrogio, *Castigationes adversus Averroem* (Venice: Bernardino and Matteo Vitali,
381 1517).
- 382 Longo, Giovanni Bernardino, *Dilucida expositio in prologum Averrois in Posteriora Aristotelis*
383 (Naples: Mattia Cancer, 1551).
- 384 Macrobius, *In Somnium Scipionis commentarios*, ed. James Willis, 2 vols (Leipzig: Teubner,
385 1970).
- 386 Maimonides, *Dalālat al-ḥā'irīn* (*Guide of the Perplexed*), ed. Salomon Munk and Issachar Yoel
387 (Jerusalem: Yunovits, 1931);
- 388 Maimonides, *Moreh ha-Nevukhim*, Hebrew trans. Samuel ibn Tibbon, ed. Yehuda Even-Shmuel
389 (Jerusalem: Mosad ha-Rav Kook, 1987)
- 390 Maimonides, *The Guide of the Perplexed*, ed. Shlomo Pines, 2 vols (Chicago and London: The
391 University of Chicago Press, 1963).
- 392 Mainetti, Mainetto, *Commentarii in librum I. Aristotelis de coelo. Necnon librum Averrois de
393 substantia orbis* (Bologna: Giovanni Rossi, 1570).
- 394 Malebranche, Nicolas, *Oeuvres complètes* ed. André Robinet, 20 vols (Paris: Vrin, 1958–1970).
- 395 Malebranche, Nicolas, *The Search after Truth*, eds and trans. Thomas M. Lennon and Paul J.
396 Olscamp (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997), pp. 148–149.
- 397 Manzoni, Alessandro, *Liriche e tragedie*, ed. Vladimiro Arangio Ruiz (Turin: UTET, 1968).
- 398 Montesquieu, Charles-Louis de Secondat de, *Oeuvres complètes*, ed. Roger Caillois (Paris:
399 Gallimard, 1949).
- 400 More, Henry, *Philosophical Poems* (Cambridge: Roger Daniel, 1647).
- 401 More, Henry, *A Collection of Several Philosophical Writings* (London: James Flesher, 1662).
- 402 Moreri, Louis, *Le grand dictionnaire historique, ou le mélange curieux de l'histoire sacrée et pro-
403 fane*, 4 vols, 8th edn (Amsterdam - The Hague: Henry Desbordes, 1698).
- 404 Morhof, Daniel Georg, *Polyhistor literarius, philosophicus et practicus*, II: *Polyhistor philosophi-
405 cus*, 4th edn (Lübeck: Peter Boeckmann, 1747; repr. Aalen: Scientia, 1970).
- 406 Naudé, Naudé, *Advis pour dresser une bibliothèque*, 2 edn (Paris: Rolet le Duc, 1644).
- 407 Naudé, Naudé, *Apologie pour tous les grands personnages qui ont esté faussement soupçonnez de
408 magie* (The Hague: Adrien Vlac, 1653).
- 409 Nifo, Agostino, *Expositio*, in Averroes, *Destructiones destructionum* (Venice: Ottaviano Scoto,
410 1497).
- 411 Nifo, Agostino, *De sensu agente*, in Averroes, *Destructiones destructionum* (Venice: Ottaviano
412 Scoto, 1497).
- 413 Nifo, Agostino, *De intellectu. De daemonibus* (Venice: Petrus de Querengis, 1503).
- 414 Nifo, Agostino, *Averrois de mixtione defensio* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1505).
- 415 Nifo, Agostino, *In Averrois de animae beatitudine* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1508).
- 416 Nifo, Agostino, *Commentationes in librum de substantia orbis* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto,
417 1508).
- 418 Nifo, Agostino, *In duodecimum Metaphysices Aristotelis [et] Auerrois volumen... Commentarij in
419 lucem castigatissimi nuperrime prodeuntes* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1518).

- Nifo, Agostino, *De immortalitate anime libellus* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1518). 420
- Nifo, Agostino, *In libris Aristotelis Meteorologicis commentaria* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1547). 421
- Nifo, Agostino, *Expositio super octo Aristotelis Stagiritae libros de physico auditu... Averrois etiam Cordubensis in eosdem libros prooemium, ac commentaria* (Venice: Heirs of Lucantonio Giunta, 1552). 422
- Nifo, Agostino, *De intellectu libri sex. Eiusdem de demonibus libri tres* (Venice: Girolamo Scoto, 1554). 423
- Nifo, Agostino, *De primi motoris infinitate*, in *Interpretationes atque commentaria librorum Aristotelis de generatione et corruptione* (Venice: Heir of Girolamo Scoto, 1577). 424
- Nifo, Agostino, *De intellectu*, ed. Leen Spruit (Leiden: Brill, 2011). 427
- Patrizi, Francesco, *Discussiones peripateticae* (Basel: Pietro Perna, 1581; repr. Cologne: Böhlau, 1999). 430
- Paul of Venice, *Summa philosophie naturalis* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1503). 431
- Paul of Venice, *In libros de anima explanatio* (Venice: Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1504). 432
- Pereira, Benito, *De communibus omnium rerum principii libri quindecim* (Paris: Thomas Brumen, 1585). 433
- Pico della Mirandola, Gianfrancesco, *De rerum praenotione*, in *Opera omnia*, 2 vols (Basel: Henricpetri, 1557–1573). 434
- Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, Giovanni, *Disputationes adversus astrologiam divinatricem*, ed. and trans. Eugenio Garin, 2 vols (Florence: Vallecchi, 1946–1952; repr. Turin, 2004). 437
- Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, Giovanni, *De hominis dignitate, Heptaplus, De ente et uno e scritti vari*, ed. Eugenio Garin, 2 vols (Turin: Aragno, 2004). 438
- Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, Giovanni, *Oration on the Dignity of Man*, in *The Renaissance Philosophy of Man*, eds Ernst Cassirer, Paul Oskar Kristeller and John Herman Randall, Jr (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1948), pp. 223–254. 439
- Plotinus, *Opera omnia*, trans. Marsilio Ficino, eds Georg Friedrich Creuzer and Georg Heinrich Moser (Paris: Didot, 1855). 440
- Plotinus, *Enneads*, trans. A. H. Armstrong, 7 vols (Cambridge, MA: Cambridge University Press, 1934). 441
- Pomponazzi, Pietro, *Tractatus de immortalitate animae*, ed. Gianfranco Morra (Bologna: Nanni & Fiammenghi, 1954). 442
- Pomponazzi, Pietro, *Corsi inediti dell'insegnamento padovano*, ed. Antonino Poppi, 2 vols (Padua: Antenore, 1966). 443
- Pomponazzi, Pietro, *Trattato sull'immortalità dell'anima*, ed. Vittoria Perrone Compagni (Florence: Olschki, 1999), pp. V–CI. 444
- Proclus, *In Platonis Timaeum commentaria*, ed. Ernst Diehl, 3 vols (Leipzig: Teubner, 1903–1906). 445
- Rabe, Paul, *Cursus philosophicus, seu compendium praecipuarum scientiarum philosophicarum* (Königsberg: Boye, 1703). 446
- Rapin, René, *Les réflexions sur l'éloquence, la poétique, l'histoire et la philosophie. Avec le jugement qu'on doit faire des auteurs qui se sont signalez dans ces quatre parties des belles lettres*, 2nd edn (Amsterdam: Abraham Wolfgang, 1693). 447
- Salutati, Coluccio, *De nobilitate legum et medicina*, ed. Eugenio Garin (Florence: Vallecchi, 1947). 448
- Scaliger, Julius Caesar, *Hippocratis liber de somniis* (Lyon: Sébastien Gryphe, 1539). 449
- Scaliger, Julius Caesar, *Exotericarum exercitationum liber XV de subtilitate ad Hieronymum Cardanum* (Paris: Michel Vasconsan, 1557). 450
- Selden, John, *De iure naturali ac gentium* (London: Richard Bishop, 1640). 451
- Siger of Brabant, *Quaestiones in tertium de anima*, ed. Bernardo Bazán (Louvain: Publications Universitaires; Paris: Béatrice-Nauwelaerts, 1972). 452
- Simplicius, *In libros Aristotelis de anima commentaria*, ed. Michael Hayduck, in *Commentaria in Aristotelem Graeca*, ed. H. Diels, 23 vols (Berlin: Reimer, 1882–1909), XI (1882). 453

- 473 Simplicius, *On Aristotle's On the Soul, 3.1-5*, trans. H. J. Blumenthal (Ithaca, NY: Cornell
474 University Press, 2000).
- 475 Sionita, Gabriel, *Arabia, seu Arabum vicinarumque gentium orientalium leges, ritus, sacri et pro-*
476 *fani mores, instituta et historia* (Amsterdam: Jean Jansson, 1633).
- 477 Smith, John, *Select Discourses*, ed. John Worthington (London: James Flesher, 1660).
- 478 Spinoza, Benedictus de, *Opera*, ed. Carl Gebhardt, 4 vols (Heidelberg: Carl Winters
479 Universitätsbuchhandlung, 1925).
- 480 Spinoza, Benedictus de, *Tractatus theologico-politicus*, ed. Fokke Akkerman, French trans.
481 Jacqueline Lagrée and Pierre-François Moreau, in *Oeuvres complètes* (vol. 3), under the direc-
482 tion of Pierre-François Moreau (Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1999-).
- 483 Themistius, *Commentary on Aristotle's De Anima*, ed. M. C. Lyons (Oxford: Cassirer, 1973).
- 484 Themistius, *In libros Aristotelis de anima paraphrasis*, ed. Richard Heinze, in *Commentaria in*
485 *Aristotelem Graeca*, ed. H. Diels, 23 vols (Berlin: Reimer, 1882–1909), V, III (1890).
- 486 Themistius, *On Aristotle's On the Soul*, trans. Robert B. Todd (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University
487 Press, 1996).
- 488 Theophrastus, *Sources for His Life, Writings, Thought, and Influence*, ed. William W. Fortenbaugh,
489 Pamela M. Huby, Robert W. Sharples and Dimitri Gutas, 2 vols (Leiden: Brill, 1992).
- 490 Thomas Aquinas, *Opera omnia*, 50 vols (Rome: Leonine Edition, 1882-),
- 491 Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologiae*, Blackfriars edition, 61 vols (Cambridge: Cambridge
492 University Press, 1964–1976; repr. 2006).
- 493 Thomas Aquinas, *In duodecim libros Metaphysicorum Aristotelis expositio*, eds Marie-Raymond
494 Cathala and Raimondo M. Spiazzi (Turin: Marietti, 1964).
- 495 Thomas Aquinas, *Summa contra gentiles*, trans. Anton C. Pegis, James F. Anderson, Vernon J.
496 Bourke, and Charles J. O'Neil, 5 vols (Notre Dame, IN: University of Notre Dame Press,
497 1975).
- 498 Thomas Aquinas, *De unitate intellectus contra Averroistas*, in *Aquinas against the Averroists: On*
499 *There Being Only One Intellect*, ed. Ralph McInerny (West Lafayette, IN: Purdue University
500 Press, 1993).
- 501 Thomas Aquinas, *Commentaire du traité de l'âme d'Aristote*, ed. Jean-Marie Vernier (Paris: Vrin,
502 1999).
- 503 Thomas Aquinas, *L'astrologie. les opérations cachées de la nature. Les sorts*, trans. and ed. Bruno
504 Couillaud (Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 2008).
- 505 Trincavelli, Vittore, *Quaestio de reactione iuxta Aristotelis sententiam et commentatoris* (Venice:
506 Heirs of Ottaviano Scoto, 1520).
- 507 Vossius, Gerhard Johann, *Operum tomus tertius philologicus: De artium et scientiarum natura ac*
508 *constitutione libri quinque* (Amsterdam: P. & J. Blaev, 1696).
- 509 Wilmans, Karl Arnold, 'Anhang von einer reinen Mystik in der Religion', in Kant, *Gesammelte*
510 *Schriften*, VII, pp. 69–75.
- 511 Wilton, Thomas, *Quaestio disputata de anima intellectiva*, ed. Władysław Senko, in *Studia*
512 *Mediewistyczne*, 5 (1964), pp. 5–190.
- 513 Zabarella, Jacopo, *Opera logica*, (Cologne: Lazar Zetzner, 1597; repr. Hildesheim: Olms, 1966).
- 514 Jacopo Zabarella, *De rebus naturalibus libri XXX* (Frankfurt: Lazar Zetzner, 1607; repr. Frankfurt:
515 Minerva, 1966).
- 516 Zimara, Marcantonio, *Tabula dilucidationum in dictis Aristotelis et Averrois*, in Aristotle, *Opera*
517 *cum Averrois commentariis*, 12 vols (Venice: Giunta, 1562; repr. Frankfurt am Main: Minerva,
518 1962), supplementum III.

Critical Literature

519

- Açikgenc, Alparslan, 'Ibn Rushd, Kant and Transcendent Rationality: A Critical Synthesis', *Alif: Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 164–190. 520
521
- Akasoy, Anna, *Philosophie und Mystik in der späten Almohadenzeit* (Leiden: Brill, 2006), pp. 264–289. 522
523
- Akasoy, Anna, 'Ibn Sab'in's *Sicilian Questions*: The Text, Its Sources, and Their Historical Context', *al-Qanṭara*, 29 (2008), pp. 115–146. 524
525
- al-Azmeh, Aziz, *Ibn Khaldūn in Modern Scholarship: A Study in Orientalism* (London: Third World Centre for Research and Publishing, 1981). 526
527
- Albalat, Antoine, *La Vie de Jésus d'Ernest Renan* (Paris: Société française d'éditions littéraires et techniques, 1933). 528
529
- al-Jabri, Mohammed Abed, *Introduction à la critique de la raison arabe* (Paris: La Découverte and Institut du monde arabe, 1994). 530
531
- Allen, Michael J. B., *The Platonism of Marsilio Ficino* (Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1984). 532
533
- Allen, Michael J. B., 'Marsilio Ficino on Plato, the Neoplatonists and the Christian Doctrine of the Trinity', *Renaissance Quarterly*, 37 (1984), pp. 555–584. 534
535
- Allen, Michael J. B., *Icastes: Marsilio Ficino's Interpretation of Plato's Sophist* (Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1989), 536
537
- Allen, Michael J. B., *Nuptial Arithmetic: Marsilio Ficino's Commentary on the Fatal Number in Book VIII of Plato's Republic* (Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1994). 538
539
540
- Allen, Michael B., *Synoptic Art: Marsilio Ficino on the History of Platonic Interpretation* (Florence: Olschki, 1998). 541
542
- Allen, Michael J. B., 'Quisque in sphaera sua: Plato's Statesman, Marsilio Ficino's Platonic Theology, and the Resurrection of the Body', *Rinascimento*, 47 (2007), pp. 25–48. 543
544
- Allut, Paul, *Étude biographique et bibliographique sur Symphorien Champier* (Lyon: Nicolas Scheuring, 1859). 545
546
- Altmann, Alexander, 'The Philosophy of Isaac Israeli', in *Isaac Israeli: A Neoplatonic Philosopher of the Early Tenth Century*, eds A. Altmann and Samuel M. Stern (London: Oxford University Press, 1958), pp. 149–217. 547
548
549
- Babb, Lawrence, *The Elizabethan Malady: A Study of Melancholia in English Literature from 1580 to 1642* (East Lansing, MI: Michigan State College Press, 1951). 550
551
- Badawī, 'Abd al-Rahmān, 'Avicenne en Espagne musulmane: Pénétration et polémique', in *Milenario de Avicena* (Madrid: Instituto Hispano-Arabe de Cultura, 1981), pp. 9–25 (pp. 15–24). 552
553
554
- Baffioni, Carmela, 'Further Notes on Averroes' Embryology and the Question of the "Female Sperm"', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Heritage*, ed. C. Baffioni (Naples: Guida, 2004), pp. 159–172. 555
556
557
- Bakker, Paul J. J. M., 'Natural Philosophy, Metaphysics, or Something in Between? Agostino Nifo, Pietro Pomponazzi, and Marcantonio Genua on the Nature and Place of Science of the Soul' in *Mind, Cognition and Representation: The Tradition of Commentaries on Aristotle's De anima*, ed. P. J. J. M. Bakker and Johannes M. M. H. Thijssen (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2007), pp. 151–177. 558
559
560
561
562
- Ballester, Luis García, and Sánchez Salor, Eustaquio, 'Introduction' to Arnald of Villanova, *Commentum supra tractatum Galieni de malicia complexionis diverse*, in *Opera medica omnia* (Granada and Barcelona: Publicacions de la Universitat de Barcelona, 1975-), XV, pp. @@. 563
564
565
- Barnard, F. M., *Herder on Social and Political Culture* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1969). 566
567
- Barbotin, Edmond, *La théorie aristotélicienne de l'intellect d'après Théophraste* (Louvain and Paris: Publications Universitaires de Louvain, 1954). 568
569

- 570 Bartòla, Alberto, 'Eliyahu del Medigo e Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: La testimonianza dei
571 codici vaticani', *Rinascimento*, 33 (1993), pp. 253–278.
- 572 Batnitzky, Leora, 'Leo Strauss and the "Theologico-Political Predicament"', in *The Cambridge*
573 *Companion to Leo Strauss*, ed. Steven B. Smith (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press,
574 2009), pp. 41–62.
- 575 Soellner, Rolf, *Timon of Athens: Shakespeare's Pessimistic Tragedy* (Columbia, OH: Ohio State
576 University Press, 1979).
- 577 Belo, Catarina, *Chance and Determinism in Avicenna and Averroes* (Leiden: Brill, 2007).
- 578 Bertolacci, Amos, 'Avicenna and Averroes on the Proof of God's Existence and the Subject-Matter
579 of Metaphysics', *Medioevo*, 32 (2007), pp. 61–97.
- 580 Bertolacci, Amos, 'From Athens to İsfahān, to Cordoba, to Cologne: On the Vicissitudes of
581 Aristotle's *Metaphysics* in the Arab and Latin Worlds during the Middle Ages', in *Sciences et*
582 *philosophie: Circulation des savoirs autour de la Méditerranée (IXe-XVIIe siècles)*, eds
583 Graziella Federici Vescovini and Ahmed Hasnaoui (forthcoming).
- 584 Bertolacci, Amos, 'The "Andalusian Revolt Against Avicenna's Metaphysics": Averroes' Criticism
585 of Avicenna in the Long Commentary on the *Metaphysics*', in *Averroès, l'averroïsme,*
586 *l'antiaverroïsme* ed. by Alain de Libera (forthcoming).
- 587 Bettetini, 'Introduzione: La felicità nel Medioevo', in *La felicità nel Medioevo*, eds M. Bettetini
588 and Francesco D. Paparella (Louvain-la-Neuve: Fédération Internationale des Instituts d'Études
589 Médiévales, 2005), VII–XV.
- 590 Bazàn, Bernardo, 'L'authenticité du *De intellectu* attribué à Alexandre d'Aphrodise', *Revue*
591 *philosophique de Louvain*, 71 (1973), pp. 468–487.
- 592 Bevir, Mark, 'Esotericism and Modernity: An Encounter with Leo Strauss', *Journal of the*
593 *Philosophy of History*, 1 (2007), pp. 201–218.
- 594 Bianchi, Luca, and Randi, Eugenio, *Le verità dissonanti* (Rome and Bari: Laterza, 1990).
- 595 Bianchi, Luca, and Randi, Eugenio, *Pour une histoire de la double vérité* (Paris: Vrin, 2008).
- 596 Bianchi, Luca, 'Filosofi, uomini e bruti: Note per la storia di un'antropologia averroista', in Id.,
597 *Studi sull'aristotelismo del Rinascimento* (Padua: Il Poligrafo, 2003), pp. 41–61.
- 598 Bianchi, Luca, "'Reducing Aristotle's Doctrine to Simple Truth': Cesare Crivellati and His
599 Struggle against the Averroists', in *Christian Readings of Aristotle from the Middle Ages to the*
600 *Renaissance*, ed. by Luca Bianchi (Turnhout: Brepols, 2011), pp. 397–424.
- 601 Black, Deborah L., *Logic and Aristotle's Rhetoric and Poetics in Medieval Arabic Philosophy*
602 (Leiden: Brill, 1990).
- 603 Black, Deborah L., 'Consciousness and Self-Knowledge in Aquinas' Critique of Averroes'
604 Psychology', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 31 (1993), pp. 349–385.
- 605 Black, Deborah L., 'Conjunction and the Identity of Knower and Known in Averroes', *American*
606 *Catholic Philosophical Society*, 73 (1999), pp. 161–184.
- 607 Black, Deborah L., 'Imagination and Estimation: Arabic Paradigms and Western Transformations',
608 *Topoi*, 19 (2000), pp. 59–75.
- 609 Black, Deborah L., 'Psychology: Soul and Intellect', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic*
610 *Philosophy*, eds Peter Adamson and Richard C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University
611 Press, 2005), pp. 308–326.
- 612 Black, Deborah L., 'Averroes on the Spirituality and Intentionality of Sensation', in *The Age of*
613 *Averroes: Arabic Philosophy in the Sixth/Twelfth Century* (London and Turin: The Warburg
614 Institute and Aragno, 2011), pp. 159–174.
- 615 Bland, Kalman, 'Elijah del Medigo's Averroist Response to the Kabbalahs of Fifteenth-Century
616 Jewry and Pico della Mirandola', *The Journal of Jewish Thought and Philosophy*, 1 (1991), pp.
617 23–53.
- 618 Blaustein, Michael, *Averroes on the Imagination and the Intellect*, PhD thesis, Harvard University,
619 1984.
- 620 Bonin, Thérèse, 'The Emanative Psychology of Albertus Magnus', *Topoi*, 19 (2000), pp. 45–57.
- 621 Bonner, Anthony, *The Art and Logic of Ramon Llull: A User's Guide* (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp.
622 72–73.

- Booth, Wayne C., *Critical Understanding: The Powers and Limits of Pluralism* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1979). 623
624
- Brague, Rémi, 'Athens, Jerusalem, Mecca: Leo Strauss's "Muslim" Understanding of Greek Philosophy', *Poetics Today*, 19 (1998), pp. 235–259. 625
626
- Brenet, Jean-Baptiste, 'Perfection de la philosophie ou philosophe parfait? Jean de Jandun lecteur d'Averroès', *Recherches de théologie et philosophie médiévales*, 68 (2001), pp. 310–348. 627
628
- Brenet, Jean-Baptiste, *Transferts du sujet: La noétique d'Averroès selon Jean de Jandun* (Paris: Vrin, 2003), 629
630
- Brenet, Jean-Baptiste, 'S'unir à l'intellect, voir Dieu: Averroès et la doctrine de la jonction au cœur du Thomisme', *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, 21 (2011), pp. 215–247. 631
632
- Bürgel, J. Christoph, 'Averroes contra Galenum'. Das Kapitel von der Atmung im *Colliget* des Averroes als ein Zeugnis mittelalterlich-islamischer Kritik an Galen, eingeleitet, arabisch herausgegeben und übersetzt', *Nachrichten der Akademie der Wissenschaften in Göttingen*, 1 (1967), pp. 263–340. 633
634
635
636
- Burman, Thomas E., *Religious Polemic and the Intellectual History of the Mozarabs, c. 1050–1200* (Leiden: Brill, 1994). 637
638
- Burnett, Charles, 'The Second Revelation of Arabic Philosophy and Science: 1492–1562', in *Islam and the Italian Renaissance*, eds Charles Burnett and Anna Contadini (London: The Warburg Institute, 1999), pp. 185–198. 639
640
641
- Burnett, Charles, 'Arabic into Latin: The Reception of Arabic Philosophy into Western Europe', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic Philosophy*, ed. Peter Adamson and Richard C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), pp. 370–404. 642
643
644
- Burnyeat, Miles, 'Sphinx without a Secret' (Review of Leo Strauss, *Studies in Platonic Political Philosophy* by Leo Strauss), *New York Review of Books*, 32/9 (May 30, 1985), pp. 30–36. 645
646
- Butterworth, Charles, 'Averroës: Politics and Opinion', *The American Political Science Review*, 66 (1972), pp. 894–901 647
648
- Butterworth, Charles, 'Rhetoric and Islamic Political Philosophy', *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, 3 (1972), pp. 187–198. 649
650
- Butterworth, Charles, 'Review: On Scholarship and Scholarly Conventions', *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, 106 (1986), pp. 725–732. 651
652
- Butterworth, Charles, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy Today', in *Arabic Philosophy and the West: Continuity and Interaction*, ed. Thérèse-Anne Druart (Washington: Center for Contemporary Arab Studies, Georgetown University, 1988), pp. 55–140. 653
654
655
- Butterworth, Charles, 'Translation and Philosophy: The Case of Averroes' Commentaries', *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, 26 (1994), pp. 19–35. 656
657
- Butterworth, Charles, 'The Source that Nourishes: Averroes's Decisive Determination', *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, 5 (1995), pp. 93–119. 658
659
- Butterworth, Charles, 'Averroës, Precursor of the Enlightenment?', *Alif: Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 6–18. 660
661
- Butterworth, Charles, 'Ethical and Political Philosophy', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic Philosophy*, eds Peter Adamson and Richard C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), pp. 266–286. 662
663
664
- Campanini, Massimo, *Averroè* (Bologna: il Mulino, 2007). 665
- Canone, Eugenio, 'Giordano Bruno lettore di Averroè', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Heritage*, ed. Carmela Baffioni (Naples: Guida, 2004), pp. 211–247. 666
667
- Canziani, Guido, 'L'anima, la mens, la palingenesi. Appunti sul terzo libro del *Theonoston*', in *Cardano e la tradizione dei saperi*, eds Marialuisa Baldi and Guido Canziani (Milan: Angeli, 2003), pp. 209–248. 668
669
670
- Carey J., Leonard, 'A Thirteenth Century Notion of the Agent Intellect: Giles of Rome', *The New Scholasticism*, 37 (1963), pp. 327–358. 671
672
- Carlino, Andrea, 'Petrarch and the Early Modern Critics of Medicine', *Journal of Medieval and Early Modern Studies*, 35 (2005), pp. 559–582. 673
674

- 675 Cassirer, Ernst, *Individuum und Kosmos in der Philosophie der Renaissance* (Leipzig and Berlin:
676 Teubner, 1927).
- 677 Cassirer, Ernst, *The Individual and the Cosmos in Renaissance Philosophy*, trans. M. Domandi
678 (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1963).
- 679 Chaix-Ruy, Jules, "'L'Averroès" d'Ernest Renan', *Annales de l'Institut d'études orientales*, 8
680 (1949–50), pp. 5–60.
- 681 Chaix-Ruy, Jules, *Ernest Renan* (Paris: Vitte, 1956).
- 682 Charnet, Jean-Paul, 'Le dernier surgeon de l'Averroïsme en occident: *Averroès et l'Averroïsme de*
683 *Renan*', in *Multiple Averroès*, ed. Jean Jolivet (Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 1978), pp. 333–348.
- 684 Chastel, André, 'Le mythe de Saturne dans la Renaissance italienne', *Phoebus*, 1/3-4 (1946),
685 pp. 125–144
- 686 Chastel, André, *Marsile Ficin et l'art* (Geneva: Droz; Lille: Giard, 1954).
- 687 Chastel, André, *Art et humanisme à Florence au temps de Laurent le Magnifique: Études sur la*
688 *Renaissance et l'humanisme platonicien* (Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1959).
- 689 Chauvin, Charles, *Renan (1823–1892)* (Paris: Desclée de Brouwer, 2000).
- 690 Ciavolella, Massimo, and Iannucci, Amilcare A. (eds), *Saturn from Antiquity to the Renaissance*,
691 (Ottawa: Dovehouse Editions, 1992).
- 692 Clark, Stuart, *Vanities of the Eye: Vision in Early Modern European Culture* (Oxford: Oxford
693 University Press, 2007).
- 694 Coccia, Emanuele, *La trasparenza delle immagini: Averroè e l'averroismo* (Milan: Bruno
695 Mondadori, 2005).
- 696 Copenhaver, Brian P., and Schmitt, Charles B., *Renaissance Philosophy* (Oxford: Oxford University
697 Press, 1992).
- 698 Copenhaver, Brian P., 'Astrology and Magic', in *Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy*,
699 eds Charles B. Schmitt, Quentin Skinner, Eckhard Kessler and Jill Kraye (Cambridge:
700 Cambridge University Press, 1988), pp. 264–300.
- 701 Copenhaver, Brian P., 'Ten Arguments in Search of a Philosopher: Averroes and Aquinas in
702 Ficino's *Platonic Theology*', *Vivarium*, 47 (2009), pp. 444–479.
- 703 Couliano, Ioan Petru, *Eros and Magic in the Renaissance*, trans. Margaret Cook (Chicago: The
704 University of Chicago Press, 1987; originally published in French as *Eros et magie à la*
705 *Renaissance, 1484*, Paris: Flammarion, 1984).
- 706 Corti, Maria, *La felicità mentale: Nuove prospettive per Cavalcanti e Dante* (Turin: Einaudi,
707 1983).
- 708 Cranz, F. Edward, 'The Prefaces to the Greek Editions and Latin Translations of Alexander of
709 Aphrodisias, 1450-1575', *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society*, 102 (1958), pp.
710 510–556.
- 711 Cranz, F. Edward, 'Alexander Aphrodisiensis', in *Catalogus translationum et commentariorum:*
712 *Medieval and Renaissance Latin Translations and Commentaries*, ed. P. O. Kristeller, F. E.
713 Cranz et al., 8 vols (Washington, D.C.: Catholic University of America Press, 1960-), I, pp.
714 77–135.
- 715 Cranz, F. Edward, 'Editions of the Latin Aristotle Accompanied by the Commentaries of Averroes'
716 in *Philosophy and Humanism: Renaissance Essays in Honor of Paul Oskar Kristeller*, ed.
717 Edward P. Mahoney (Leiden: Brill, 1976), pp. 116–128.
- 718 Cranz, F. Edward, 'Two Debates about the Intellect: (1) Alexander of Aphrodisias and the Greeks;
719 (2) Nifo and the Renaissance Philosophers', in Id., *Reorientations of Western Thought from*
720 *Antiquity to the Renaissance*, ed. Nancy Struever (Aldershot and Burlington, VT: Ashgate,
721 2006), X, pp. 1–22.
- 722 Critchley, Simon, *Continental Philosophy: A Very Short Introduction* (Oxford: Oxford University
723 Press, 2001).
- 724 Critchley, Simon, and Schroeder, William R. (eds), *A Companion to Continental Philosophy*
725 (Oxford: Blackwell, 1998).
- 726 Cruz Hernández, Miguel, *Historia del pensamiento en el Andalus*, 2 vols (Sevilla: Editoriales
727 Andaluzas Unidas, 1985).

- Cruz Hernández, Miguel, *Abū-l-Walīd Muḥammad Ibn Rušd, Averroes: Vida, obra, pensamiento, influencia* (Cordoba: Publicaciones de la Obra Social y Cultural Cajasur, 1997 [1986]), pp. 371–375. 728
729
730
- Culler, Jonathan, 'In Defence of Overinterpretation', in Umberto Eco, *Interpretation and Overinterpretation*, ed. Stefan Collini (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1992), pp. 109–124. 732
733
- Dales, Richard, 'The Origin of the Doctrine of the Double Truth', *Viator*, 15 (1984), pp. 169–179. 734
735
- De Libera, Alain, 'Existe-il une noétique "averroïste"? Note sur la réception latine d'Averroès au XIII^e et XIV^e siècle', in *Averroism in Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, eds Friedrich Niewöhner and Loris Sturlese (Zurich: Spur1994), pp. 51–80. 736
737
738
- De Libera, Alain, 'Introduction', in Averroès, *L'intelligence et la pensée. Sur le De anima*, ed. by A. de Libera (Paris: Flammarion, 1998), pp. 7–45. 739
740
- D'Alverny, Marie-Thérèse, 'Survivance et renaissance d'Avicenne à Venise et à Padoue', in *Venezia e l'Oriente fra tardo Medioevo e Rinascimento*, ed. Agostino Pertusi (Florence: Sansoni, 1966); repr. in Ead., *Avicenne en Occident* (Paris: Vrin, 1993), pp. 75–102. 741
742
743
- D'Alverny, Marie-Thérèse, 'Pseudo-Aristotle, *De Elementis*', in *Pseudo-Aristotle in the Middle Ages: The Theology and Other Texts*, eds Jill Kraye, Charles B. Schmitt and W. F. Ryan (London: The Warburg Institute, 1986), pp. 63–83. 744
745
746
- D'Alverny, Marie-Thérèse, *Avicenne en Occident* (Paris: Vrin, 1993), article XV, pp. 79–87. 747
- Dammen McAuliffe, Jane, 'Text and Textuality: Q. 3:7 as a Point of Intersection', in *Literary Structures of Religious Meaning in the Qur'ān*, ed. Issa J. Boullata (Richmond: Curzon, 2000), pp. 56–76. 748
749
750
- Davidson, Herbert A., *Proofs for Eternity, Creation and the Existence of God in Medieval Islamic and Jewish Philosophy* (New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1987). 751
752
- Davidson, Herbert A., *Alfarabi, Avicenna, and Averroes, on Intellect: Their Cosmologies, Theories of the Active Intellect, and Theories of Human Intellect* (New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1992). 753
754
755
- De Bellis, Ennio, *Bibliografia di Agostino Nifo* (Florence: Olschki, 2005). 756
- De Libera, Alain, and Hayoun, Maurice-Ruben, *Averroès et l'averroïsme* (Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1991). 757
758
- De Libera, Alain, and Hayoun, Maurice-Ruben, 'Préface', in *Les Grecs, les Arabes et nous: Enquête sur l'islamophobie savante*, ed. Philippe Büttgen, Alain de Libera, Marwan Rashed and Irène Rosier-Catach (Paris: Fayard, 2009), pp. @@. 759
760
761
- De Smet, Daniel, 'Scarabées, Scorpions, Cloportes et Corps Camphrés: Métamorphose, Réincarnation et Génération Spontanée dans l'Hétérodoxie Chiite', in *O ye Gentlemen: Arabic Studies on Science and Literary Culture in Honour of Remke Kruk*, eds Arnoud Vrolijk and Jan P. Hogendijk (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 39–54. 762
763
764
765
- Di Giovanni, Matteo, 'Substantial Form in Averroes's Long Commentary on the Metaphysics', in *In the Age of Averroes: Arabic Philosophy in the Sixth/Twelfth Century* (London and Turin: The Warburg Institute and Arago, 2011), pp. 175–194. 766
767
768
- Dillon, John, *The Middle Platonists: 80 B.C. to A.D. 220* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press: 1977). 769
770
- Duhem, Pierre, *Système du monde: Histoire des doctrines cosmologiques de Platon à Copernic*, 10 vols (Paris: Hermann, 1913–1959). 771
772
- Eagleton, Terry, *Literary Theory: An Introduction* (Oxford: Blackwell, 2005 [1983]). 773
- Edmundson, Mark, *The Death of Sigmund Freud: Fascism, Psychoanalysis and the Rise of Fundamentalism* (London: Bloomsbury, 2007). 774
775
- El Ghannouchi, Abdelmajid, 'Distinction et relation des discours philosophique et religieux chez Ibn Rushd: Faṣl al-maqāl ou la double vérité', in *Averroes (1126–1198) oder der Triumph des Rationalismus*, ed. Raif Georges Khoury (Heidelberg: Winter, 2002), pp. 139–145. 776
777
778
- Emilsson, Eyjólfur, *Plotinus on Intellect* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2007). 779

- 780 Endress, Gerhard, 'The Cycle of Knowledge: Intellectual Traditions and Encyclopaedias of the
781 Rational Sciences in Arabic Islamic Hellenism', in *Organizing Knowledge: Encyclopaedic*
782 *Activities in the Pre-Eighteenth Century Islamic World*, ed. G. Endress (Leiden: Brill, 2006),
783 pp. 103–133.
- 784 Ermatinger, Charles J., 'Urbanus Averroista and Some Early Fourteenth Century Philosophers',
785 *Manuscripta*, 11 (1967), pp. 3–38.
- 786 Farmer, Alan, *Syncretism in the West: Pico's 900 Theses (1486): The Evolution of Traditional,*
787 *Religious, and Philosophical Systems* (Tempe: Arizona Center for Medieval and Renaissance
788 Studies, 1998).
- 789 Fattori, Marta, and Bianchi, Massimo L. (eds), *Phantasia-Imaginatio*, (Rome: Edizioni
790 dell'Ateneo, 1998).
- 791 Ferrari, G. R. F., 'Introduction' to Plato, *The Republic*, trans. Tom Griffith (Cambridge: Cambridge
792 University Press, 2000), pp. xi–xxxi.
- 793 Field, Arthur, *The Origins of the Platonic Academy of Florence* (Princeton: Princeton University
794 Press, 1988).
- 795 Field, Arthur, 'The Platonic Academy of Florence', in *Marsilio Ficino: His Theology, His*
796 *Philosophy, His Legacy*, eds Michael J. B. Allen and Valery Rees, with Martin Davies (Leiden:
797 Brill, 2002), pp. 359–376.
- 798 Fierro, Maribel, 'Spiritual Alienation and Political Activism: The Ghuraba' in al-Andalus during
799 the Sixth/Twelfth Century', *Arabica*, 47 (2000), pp. 230–260
- 800 Fierro, Maribel, 'Revolución y tradición: Algunos aspectos del mundo del saber en al-Andalus
801 durante las épocas almorávide y almohade', in *Biografías almohades*, II, eds María Luisa Ávila
802 and Maribel Fierro (Madrid: Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 2000), pp.
803 131–165.
- 804 Fioravanti, Gianfranco, 'Boezio di Dacia e la storiografia sull'averroismo', *Studi medievali*, 7
805 (1966), pp. 283–322.
- 806 Flasch, Kurt (ed.), *Aufklärung im Mittelalter? Die Verurteilung von 1277: Das Dokument des*
807 *Bischofs von Paris* (Mainz: Dieterich, 1989).
- 808 Flashar, Hellmut, *Melancholie und Melancholiker in den medizinischen Theorien der Antike*
809 (Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1966).
- 810 Forrester, John, 'Introduction', in Sigmund Freud, *Interpreting Dreams*, trans. J. A. Underwood
811 (London: Penguin, 2006), pp. xxiii–xxv.
- 812 Fraenkel, Carlos, 'Philosophy and Exegesis in Al-Fārābī, Averroes, and Maimonides', *Laval*
813 *Théologique et Philosophique*, 64 (2008), pp. 105–125.
- 814 Fraenkel, Carlos, 'Could Spinoza Have Presented the Ethics as the True Content of the Bible?', in
815 *Oxford Studies in Early Modern Philosophy*, IV, eds Daniel Garber and Steven Nadler (Oxford:
816 Clarendon Press, 2008), pp. 1–50.
- 817 Fraenkel, Carlos, 'Spinoza on Philosophy and Religion: The Averroistic Sources', in *The*
818 *Rationalists: Between Tradition and Innovation*, eds Carlos Fraenkel, Dario Perinetti, and
819 Justin Smith (Dordrecht: Springer, 2010), pp. 58–81.
- 820 Fraenkel, Carlos, 'Legislating Truth: Maimonides, the Almohads, and the Thirteenth-Century
821 Jewish Enlightenment', in *Studies in the History of Culture and Science: A Tribute to Gad*
822 *Freudenthal* 2011, eds Resianne Fontaine, Ruth Glasner, Reimund Leicht and Giuseppe Veltri
823 (Leiden: Brill, 2011), pp. 209–231.
- 824 Frank, Richard, *Creation and the Cosmic System: Al-Ghazālī and Avicenna* (Heidelberg: Winter,
825 1992).
- 826 Freudenthal, Gad, '(Al-)Chemical Foundations for Cosmological Ideas: Ibn Sīnā's on the Geology
827 of an Eternal World', in *Physics, Cosmology and Astronomy, 1300–1700: Tension and*
828 *Accommodation*, ed. Sabetai Unguru (Dordrecht, Boston and London: Kluwer 1991); repr. in
829 Id., *Science in the Medieval Hebrew and Arabic Traditions* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2005), XII,
830 pp. 47–73.

- Freudenthal, Gad, 'The Medieval Astrologization of Aristotle's Biology: Averroes on the Role of the Celestial Bodies in the Generation of Animate Beings', *Arabic Science and Philosophy*, 12 (2002), pp. 111–137; repr. in Id., *Science in the Medieval Hebrew and Arabic Traditions*, XV. 831
832
- Freudenthal, Gad, 'Samuel Ibn Tibbon's Avicennian Theory of an Eternal World', *Aleph*, 8 (2008), 833
834
pp. 41–129. 835
- Fricaud, Émile, 'Le problème de la disgrâce d'Averroès', in *Averroès et l'averroïsme (XIIe-XVe siècle): Un itinéraire historique du Haut Atlas à Paris et à Padoue*, eds André Bazzana, Nicole Bériou and Pierre Guichard (Lyon: Presses Universitaires de Lyon, 2005), pp. 155–189. 836
837
838
- Gabbey, Alan, "'Philosophia cartesiana triumphata", Henry More, 1646-71', in *Problems in Cartesianism*, eds Thomas M. Lennon, John M. Nicholas, and John W. Davis (Kingston and Montreal: McGill-Queen's University Press: 1982), pp. 171–509. 839
840
841
- Gätje, Helmut, 'Die "inneren Sinne" bei Averroes', *Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft*, 115 (1965), pp. 255–293. 842
843
- García Valverde, José Manuel, 'Estudio preliminar', in Girolamo Cardano, *De immortalitate animorum*, ed. J. M. G. Valverde (Milan: Angeli, 2006), pp. 19–105. 844
845
- Gauthier, René Antoine, 'Notes sur les débuts (1225–1240) du premier "averroïsme"?'; 'Notes sur Siger de Brabant: I. Siger en 1265'; 'Notes sur Siger de Brabant: II. Aubry de Reims et la scission des Normands', *Revue des sciences philosophiques et théologiques*, 66; 67; 68 (1982; 1983; 1984), pp. 321–374; 201–232; 3–39. 846
847
848
849
- Genequand, Charles, 'Introduction', in Ibn Rushd, *Metaphysics: A Translation with Introduction of Ibn Rushd's Commentary on Aristotle's Metaphysics, Book Lām*, ed. C. Genequand (Leiden: Brill, 1984; repr. 1986), pp. 1–58. 850
851
852
- Geoffroy, Marc, 'Ibn Rushd et la théologie almohadiste: Une version inconnue du *Kitāb al-kaṣf 'an manāhiḡ al-adilla* dans deux manuscrits d'Istanbul', *Medioevo*, 26 (2001), pp. 327–352. 853
854
- Geoffroy, Marc, 'Averroès sur l'intellect comme cause agente et cause formelle, et la question de la "jonction" - I', in *Averroès et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, ed. Jean-Baptiste Brenet (Turnhout: Brepols, 2007), pp. 77–110. 855
856
857
- Geffen, David M., 'Insights into the Life and Thought of Elijah Del Medigo Based on His Published and Unpublished Works', *Proceedings of the American Academy for Jewish Research*, 61–62 (1973–1974), pp. 69–86. 858
859
860
- Geoffroy, Marc, 'À la recherche de la *béatitude*', in Averroès, *La béatitude de l'âme*, eds and trans. Marc Geoffroy et Carlos Steel (Paris: Vrin, 2001), pp. 9–81. 861
862
- Gigliani, Guido, 'Mens in Girolamo Cardano', in *Per una storia del concetto di mente*, ed. Eugenio Canone, 2 vols (Florence: Olschki, 2005–2007), II, pp. 83–122. 863
864
- Gigliani, Guido, 'Fantasy Islands: *Utopia, The Tempest* and *New Atlantis* as Places of Controlled Credulousness', in *World-Building in Early Modern Natural Philosophy*, ed. Allison Kavey (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2010), pp. 90–117. 865
866
867
- Gigliani, Guido, 'Coping with Inner and Outer Demons: Marsilio Ficino's Theory of the Imagination', in *Diseases of the Imagination and Imaginary Diseases: Disease in the Early Modern Period*, ed. Yasmin Haskell (Turnhout: Brepols, 2011), pp. 19–50. 868
869
870
- Gimaret, Daniel, *La doctrine d'al-Ash'arī* (Paris: Éditions du Cerf, 1990). 871
- Ginzburg, Carlo, 'Clues: Roots of an Evidential Paradigm', in Id., *Clues, Myths and the Historical Method*, trans. John and Anne C. Tedeschi (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989), pp. 96–125. 872
873
874
- Glasner, Ruth, 'Levi ben Gershom and the Study of Ibn Rushd in the Fourteenth Century', *Jewish Quarterly Review*, 86 (1995), pp. 51–90. 875
876
- Glasner, Ruth, *Averroes' Physics: A Turning Point in Medieval Natural Philosophy* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009). 877
878
- Golb, Norman, 'The Hebrew Translation of Averroes' "Faṣl al-maqāl"', *Proceedings of the American Academy for Jewish Research*, 25 (1956), pp. 91–113; 26 (1957), pp. 41–64. 879
880
- Gougenheim, Sylvain, *Aristotle au Mont Saint-Michel: Les racines grecques de l'Europe chrétienne* (Paris: Seuil, 2008). 881
882

- 883 Gowland, Angus, *The Worlds of Renaissance Melancholy: Robert Burton in Context* (Cambridge:
884 Cambridge University Press, 2006).
- 885 Grafton, Anthony, 'Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: Trials and Triumphs of an Omnivore', in Id.,
886 *Commerce with the Classics: Ancient Books and Renaissance Readers* (Ann Arbor: University
887 of Michigan Press, 1997), pp. 93–134.
- 888 Grant, Edward, *A Sourcebook in Medieval Science* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press,
889 1974).
- 890 Green, Kenneth Hart, 'Leo Strauss', in *The History of Jewish Philosophy*, eds Daniel H. Frank and
891 Oliver Leaman, 2 vols (London: Routledge, 1997), II, pp. 820–853.
- 892 Green, Otis, 'El Ingenioso Hidalgo', *Hispanic Review*, 25 (1957), pp. 175–193.
- 893 Griffel, Frank, *Al-Ghazali's Philosophical Theology*, Oxford University Press, Oxford 2009.
- 894 Gutas, Dimitri, *Avicenna and the Aristotelian Tradition: Introduction to Reading Avicenna's*
895 *Philosophical Works* (Leiden: Brill, 1988).
- 896 Gutas, Dimitri, 'On Translating Averroes' Commentaries', *Journal of the American Oriental*
897 *Society*, 110 (1990), pp. 92–101.
- 898 Gutas, Dimitri, 'Galen's Synopsis of Plato's Laws and Fārābī's Talhīs', in *The Ancient Tradition in*
899 *Christian and Islamic Hellenism: Studies on the Transmission of Greek Philosophy and*
900 *Sciences Dedicated to H. J. Drossaart Lulofs on his Ninetieth Birthday*, eds Gerhard Endress
901 and Remke Kruk (Leiden: Research School CNWS, 1997), pp. 101–119; repr. in Dimitri Gutas,
902 *Greek Philosophers in the Arabic Tradition* (Aldershot: Ashgate Variorum, 2000), V.
- 903 Gutas, Dimitri, *Greek Thought, Arabic Culture: The Graeco-Arabic Translation Movement in*
904 *Baghdad and Early 'Abbāsīd Society (2nd–4th/8th–10th centuries)* (London: Routledge,
905 1998).
- 906 Gutas, Dimitri, 'Averroes on Theophrastus, though Themistius', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian*
907 *Tradition: Sources, Constitution and Reception of the Philosophy of Ibn Rushd (1126–1198)*,
908 eds by Gerhard Endress and Jan A. Aertsen, with the assistance of Klaus Braun (Leiden: Brill,
909 1999), pp. 125–144.
- 910 Gutas, Dimitri, 'The Study of Arabic Philosophy in the Twentieth Century: An Essay on the
911 Historiography of Arabic Philosophy', *British Journal of Middle Eastern Studies*, 29 (2002),
912 pp. 5–25.
- 913 Gyekye, Kwame, 'The Terms "Prima Intentio" and "Secunda Intentio" in Arabic Logic', *Speculum*,
914 46 (1971), pp. 32–38.
- 915 Guttmann, Julius, 'Elias del Medigos Verhältnis zu Averroes in seinem Bechinat ha-Dat', in *Jewish*
916 *Studies in Memory of Israel Abrahams*, ed. Alexander Kohut (New York: Press of the Jewish
917 Institute of Religion, 1927), pp. 192–208.
- 918 Hallaq, Wael, *Authority, Continuity and Change in Islamic Law* (Cambridge: Cambridge University
919 Press, 2001).
- 920 Hamilton, Alastair, *William Bedwell the Arabist* (Leiden: Brill, 1985).
- 921 Hamilton, Alastair, 'A "Sinister Conceit": The Teaching of Psychopannychism from the
922 Reformation to the Enlightenment', in *La formazione storica dell'alterità: Studi di storia della*
923 *tolleranza nell'età moderna offerti a Antonio Rotondò*, eds Henry Méchoulan, Richard H.
924 Popkin, Giuseppe Riciperati and Luisa Simonutti, 3 vols (Florence: Olschki, 2001), III,
925 pp. 1107–1127.
- 926 Hankins, James, *Humanism and Platonism in the Italian Renaissance*, 2 vols (Rome: Edizioni di
927 Storia e Letteratura, 2004).
- 928 Hankins, James, 'The Platonic Academy of Florence and Renaissance Historiography', in *Forme*
929 *del Neoplatonismo: Dall'eredità ficiniana ai platonici di Cambridge*, ed. Luisa Simonutti
930 (Florence: Olschki, 2007), pp. 75–96.
- 931 Hankins, James, 'Monstrous Melancholy: Ficino and the Physiological Causes of Atheism', in
932 *Laus Platonici Philosophi: Marsilio Ficino and His Influence*, eds Stephen Clucas, Peter J.
933 Forshaw and Valery Rees (Leiden: Brill, 2011), pp. 25–43 (published in Italian as '*Malinconia*
934 *mostruosa: Ficino e le cause fisiologiche dell'ateismo*', *Rinascimento*, 47 (2007), pp. 3–23).

- Harvey, Elizabeth R., *The Inward Wits: Psychological Theory in the Middle Ages and the Renaissance* (London: The Warburg Institute, 1975). 935
936
- Harvey, Steven, 'The Hebrew Translation of Averroes' Prooemium to his Long Commentary on Aristotle's *Physics*', *Proceedings of the American Academy for Jewish Research*, 52 (1985), 937
pp. 55–84. 938
939
- Harvey, Steven, 'Averroes' Use of Examples in his *Middle Commentary on the Prior Analytics*, and Some Remarks on his Role as Commentator', *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, 7 (1997), 940
pp. 91–113. 941
942
- Harvey, Steven, 'Arabic into Hebrew: The Hebrew Translation Movement and the Influence of Averroes upon Medieval Jewish Thought', in *The Cambridge Companion to Medieval Jewish Philosophy*, ed. Daniel H. Frank and Oliver Leaman (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 943
2003), pp. 258–280. 944
945
946
- Hasse, Dag Nikolaus, 'King Avicenna: The Iconographic Consequences of a Mistranslation', 947
Journal of the Warburg and Courtauld Institutes, 60 (1997), pp. 230–243. 948
- Hasse, Dag Nikolaus, 'Averroes in the Renaissance', in *Averroes Latinus: A New Edition* (Leuven: 949
Peeters, 2002), pp. xv–xviii. 950
- Hasse, Dag Nikolaus, 'Plato Arabico-Latinus: Philosophy – Wisdom Literature – Occult Sciences', 951
in *The Platonic Tradition in the Middle Ages: A Doxographic Approach*, eds Stephen Gersh, 952
Maarten J. F. M. Hoenen and Pieter T. van Wingerden (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 953
2002), pp. 31–64. 954
- Hasse, Dag Nikolaus, 'Aufstieg und Niedergang des Averroismus in der Renaissance: Niccolò 955
Tignosi, Agostino Nifo, Francesco Vimercato', in "*Herbst des Mittelalters*"? *Fragen zur* 956
Bewertung des 14. und 15. Jahrhunderts, eds Jan A. Aertsen and Martin Pickavé (Berlin and 957
New York: De Gruyter, 2004), pp. 447–473. 958
- Hasse, Dag Nikolaus, 'The Attraction of Averroism in the Renaissance: Vernia, Achillini, 959
Prassicio', in *Philosophy, Science and Exegesis in Greek, Arabic and Latin Commentaries*, eds 960
Peter Adamson, Han Baltussen and M. W. F. Stone, 2 vols (London: Institute of Classical 961
Studies, 2004), II, pp. 131–147. 962
- Hasse, Dag Nikolaus, '*Averroica Secta*: Notes on the Formation of Averroist Movements in 963
Fourteenth-Century Bologna and Renaissance Italy', in *Averroès et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, 964
ed. Jean-Baptiste Brenet (Turnhout: Brepols, 2007), pp. 307–331. 965
- Hasse, Dag Nikolaus, 'Arabic Philosophy and Averroism', in *The Cambridge Companion to* 966
Renaissance Philosophy, ed. James Hankins (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007), 967
pp. 113–133. 968
- Hasse, Dag Nikolaus, 'Spontaneous Generation and the Ontology of Forms in Greek, Arabic and 969
Medieval Latin Sources', in *Classical Arabic Philosophy: Sources and Reception*, ed. Peter 970
Adamson (London and Turin: The Warburg Institute and Aragno, 2007), pp. 150–175. 971
- Hauréau, Barthélemy, 'Un des hérétiques condamnés à Paris en 1277: Boèce de Dacie', *Journal* 972
des Savants (1866), pp. 176–183. 973
- Haym, Rudolf, *Herder nach seinem Leben und seinen Werken dargestellt*, 2 vols (Berlin: Gärtner, 974
1880–1885). 975
- Hayoun, Maurice-Ruben, and De Libera, Alain, *Averroès et l'averroïsme* (Paris: Presses 976
Universitaires de France, 1991). 977
- Heimsoeth, Heinz, 'Persönlichkeitsbewußtsein und Ding an sich in der Kantischen Philosophie', 978
in Id., *Studien zur Philosophie Immanuel Kants*, ed. H. Heimsoeth (Bonn: Bouvier, 1971), pp. 979
227–257. 980
- Hübsch, Adolph, 'Elia Delmedigos Bechinat ha-Dath und Ibn Roshd's Facl al-maqal', *Monatsschrift* 981
für Geschichte und Wissenschaft des Judentums, 31 (1882), pp. 552–563; 32 (1883), pp. 982
28–48. 983
- Hutton, Sarah, 'Henry More, Ficino and Plotinus: The Continuity of Renaissance Platonism', in 984
Forme del neoplatonismo: Dall'eredità ficiniana ai Platonici di Cambridge, ed. Luisa Simonutti 985
(Florence: Olschki, 2007), pp. 281–296. 986

- 987 Hutton, Sarah, 'Aristotle and the Cambridge Platonists: The Case of Cudworth', in *Philosophy in the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries: Conversations with Aristotle*, eds Constance
988 T. Blackwell and Sachiko Kusukawa (London: Ashgate, 2000), pp. 337–349.
- 989 Hutton, Sarah, 'Marsilio Ficino and Ralph Cudworth', in *The Rebirth of Platonic Theology in Renaissance Italy*, ed. James Hankins and Fabrizio Meroi (forthcoming).
- 992 Hyman, Arthur, 'Averroes' Theory of the Intellect and the Ancient Commentators', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Tradition: Sources, Constitution, and Reception of the Philosophy of Ibn Rushd (1126–1198)*, eds Gerhard Endress and Jan Aertsen (Leiden: Brill, 1999), pp. 188–198
- 993
994
995 Hyman, Arthur, 'Averroes as Commentator on Aristotle's Theory of the Intellect', in *Studies in Aristotle*, ed. Dominic J. O'Meara (Washington: Catholic University of America Press, 1981),
996 pp. 161–191.
- 997
998 Ibn Sharīfa, Muḥammad, *Ibn Rushd al-ḥafīd: Sīra wathā'iqīyya* (Casablanca: Maṭba'at al-najāh,
999 1999).
- 1000 Imbach, Ruedi, 'L'Averroïsme latin du XIIIe siècle', in *Gli studi di filosofia medievale fra Otto e*
1001 *Novocento. Contributo a un bilancio storiografico*, ed. Ruedi Imbach and Alfonso Maierù
1002 (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1991), pp. 191–208.
- 1003 Ingegno, Alfonso, *Saggio sulla filosofia di Cardano* (Florence: La Nuova Italia, 1980).
- 1004 Ingegno, Alfonso, 'Cardano tra *De sapientia* e *De immortalitate animorum*. Ipotesi per una peri-
1005 odizzazione', in *Girolamo Cardano, le opere, le fonti, la vita*, eds Marialisa Baldi and Guido
1006 Canziani (Milan: Angeli, 1997), pp. 61–79.
- 1007 Iorio, Dominick A., *The Aristotelians of Renaissance Italy: A Philosophical Exposition* (Lewiston,
1008 ME: Edwin Mellen, 1991).
- 1009 Israel, Jonathan, *Enlightenment Contested: Philosophy, Modernity, and the Emancipation of Man, 1670–1752* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2006).
- 1010
1011 Ivry, Alfred L., 'Averroes on Intellection and Conjunction', *Journal of the American Oriental*
1012 *Society*, 86 (1966), pp. 76–85.
- 1013 Ivry, Alfred L., 'Moses of Narbonne's "Treatise on the Perfection of the Soul": A Methodological
1014 and Conceptual Analysis', *The Jewish Quarterly Review*, 57 (1967), pp. 271–296.
- 1015 Ivry, Alfred L., 'Remnants of Jewish Averroism in the Renaissance', in *Jewish Thought in the*
1016 *Sixteenth Century*, ed. Bernard D. Cooperman (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press,
1017 1983), pp. 243–265.
- 1018 Ivry, Alfred L., 'Averroes and the West: The First Encounter/Non-Encounter', in *A Straight Path: Studies in Medieval Philosophy and Culture*, ed. Ruth Link-Salinger (Washington, DC: Catholic University of American Press, 1988), pp. 142–158.
- 1019
1020
1021 Ivry, Alfred L., 'Averroes' Three Commentaries on *De Anima*', in *Averroes and the Aristotelian Tradition: Sources, Constitution, and Reception of the Philosophy of Ibn Rushd (1126–1198)*, eds Gerhard Endress and Jan Aertsen (Leiden: Brill, 1999), pp. 199–216.
- 1022
1023
1024 Jacquot, Danielle, and Micheau, Françoise, *La médecine arabe et l'Occident médiéval* (Paris: Maisonneuve & Larose, 1996).
- 1025
1026 Nicholas Jardine, *The Scenes of Inquiry: On the Reality of Questions in the Sciences* (Oxford: The Clarendon Press, 2000 [1991]).
- 1027
1028 Judson, Lindsay, 'Chance and "Always or For most Part" in Aristotle', in *Aristotle's Physics: A Collection of Essays*, ed. L. Judson (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1991), pp. 73–74.
- 1029
1030 Kellner, Menachem, *Dogma in Medieval Jewish Thought* (Oxford: Oxford University Press,
1031 1986).
- 1032 Kemal, Salim, *The Philosophical Poetics of Alfarabi, Avicenna and Averroës: The Aristotelian Reception* (Richmond: Curzon, 2003).
- 1033
1034 Kessler, Eckhard, 'The Intellective Soul', in *The Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy*, eds Charles B. Schmitt, Quentin Skinner, E. Kessler and Jill Kraye (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988), pp. 485–534.
- 1035
1036
1037 Kibre, Pearl, *The Library of Pico della Mirandola* (New York: Morningside Heights, 1936).
- 1038 Klibansky, Raymond, Panofsky, Erwin, and Saxl, Fritz, *Saturn and Melancholy: Studies in the History of Natural Philosophy, Religion, and Art* (London: Nelson, 1964).
- 1039

- Klubertanz, George P., *The Discursive Power: Sources and Doctrine of the vis cogitativa according to St. Thomas Aquinas* (Saint Louis, MO: The Modern Schoolman, 1952). 1040
1041
- Knowles, David, *Evolution of Medieval Thought* (Baltimore: Helicon, 1962). 1042
- Kogan, Barry S., *Averroes and the Metaphysics of Causation* (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1985). 1043
1044
- Korolec, Jerzy B., 'Free Will and Free Choice', in *Cambridge History of Later Medieval Philosophy*, pp. 623–641. 1045
1046
- Kouloughli, Djamel Eddine, 'Langues sémitiques et traduction. Critique de quelques vieux mythes', in *Les Grecs, les Arabes et nous: Enquête sur l'islamophobie savante*, ed. Philippe Büttgen, Alain de Libera, Marwan Rashed and Irène Rosier-Catach (Paris: Fayard, 2009), pp. 79–118. 1047
1048
1049
1050
- Kraemer, Joel L., 'The Medieval Arabic Enlightenment', in *The Cambridge Companion to Leo Strauss*, ed. Steven B. Smith (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2009), pp. 137–170. 1051
1052
- Kraye, Jill, 'Philologists and Philosophers', in *The Cambridge Companion to Renaissance Humanism*, ed. Jill Kraye (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1996), pp. 142–160. 1053
1054
- Kraye, Jill, 'Aristotle's God and the Authenticity of *De mundo*: An Early Modern Controversy', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 28 (1990) pp. 339–358; repr. in Ead., *Classical Traditions in Renaissance Philosophy* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2002), XI. 1055
1056
1057
- Kristeller, P. O., *The Philosophy of Marsilio Ficino* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1943). 1058
1059
- Kristeller, P. O., *Iter Italicum: A Finding List of Uncatalogued or Incompletely Catalogued Humanistic Manuscripts of the Renaissance in Italian and Other Libraries*, 6 vols and Index (London and Leiden: The Warburg Institute and Brill, 1963–1997). 1060
1061
1062
- Kristeller, P. O., 'Paduan Averroism and Alexandrism in the Light of Recent Studies', in Id., *Renaissance Thought and the Arts* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1990 [1964, 1980]), pp. 111–118. 1063
1064
1065
- Kristeller, P. O., *Renaissance Thought and Its Sources* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1979). 1066
1067
- Kristeller, P. O., *Studies in Renaissance Thought and Letters*, 4 vols (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1984–1996). 1068
1069
- Krüger, Lorenz, 'Why do we Study the History of Philosophy', in *Philosophy in History: Essays in the Historiography of Philosophy*, eds Richard Rorty, Jerome B. Schneewind and Quentin Skinner (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), pp. 77–101. 1070
1071
1072
- Kruk, Remke, 'A Frothy Bubble: Spontaneous Generation in the Medieval Islamic Tradition', *Journal of Semitic Studies*, 35 (1990), pp. 265–282 1073
1074
- Kruk, Remke, 'Ibn Ṭufayl: A Medieval Scholar's Views on Nature', in *The World of Ibn Ṭufayl: Interdisciplinary Perspectives on Ḥayy Ibn Yaqzān*, ed. Lawrence I. Conrad (Leiden: Brill, 1996), pp. 69–89. 1075
1076
1077
- Kruk, Remke, 'Ibn Sīnā on Animals: Between the First Teacher and the Physician', in *Avicenna and His Heritage*, ed. Jules Janssens and Daniel De Smet (Leuven: Leuven University Press, 2002), pp. 325–341. 1078
1079
1080
- Kuklick, Bruce, 'Seven Thinkers and How They Grew: Descartes, Spinoza, Leibniz; Locke, Berkeley, Hume; Kant', in *Philosophy in History: Essays in the Historiography of Philosophy*, eds Richard Rorty, Jerome B. Schneewind and Quentin Skinner (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), pp. 125–139. 1081
1082
1083
1084
- Kuksewicz, Zdzisław, *Avverroïsme bolonais au XIVe siècle* (Wrocław, Warsaw and Krakow: Ossolineum, 1965). 1085
1086
- Kuksewicz, Zdzisław, *De Siger de Brabant à Jacques de Plaisance: La théorie de l'intellect chez les Averroïstes latins des XIIIe et XIVe siècles* (Wrocław, Warsaw and Krakow: Ossolineum, 1968). 1087
1088
1089
- Kuksewicz, Zdzisław, 'The Latin Averroism of the Late Thirteenth Century', in *Averroismus in Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, ed. Friedrich Niewöhner and Loris Sturlese (Zürich: Spur, 1994), pp. 101–113. 1090
1091
1092

- 1093 Kuksewicz, Zdzisław, 'La découverte d'une école averroïste inconnue: Erfurt', in *Averroès et les*
 1094 *averroïsmes juif et latin*, ed. Jean-Baptiste Brenet (Turnhout: Brepols, 2007), pp. 299–306.
- 1095 Lahoud, Nelly, 'Islamic Responses to Europe at the Dawn of Colonialism', in *Western Political*
 1096 *Thought in Dialogue with Asia*, ed. Cary Nederman and Takashi Shogimen (Lanham, MD:
 1097 Lexington Books, 2009), pp. 163–185.
- 1098 Lampert, Laurence, 'Strauss's recovery of Esotericism', in *The Cambridge Companion to Leo*
 1099 *Strauss*, ed. Steven B. Smith (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2009), pp. 63–92.
- 1100 Langermann, Y Tzvi, 'Another Andalusian Revolt? Ibn Rushd's Critique of Al-Kindi's
 1101 *Pharmacological Computus*', in *The Enterprise of Science: New Perspectives*, ed. Jan P.
 1102 Hogendijk and Abdelhamid I. Sabra (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 2003), pp. 351–372.
- 1103 Leaman, Oliver, 'Does the Interpretation of Islamic Philosophy Rest on a Mistake?', *International*
 1104 *Journal of Middle East Studies*, 12 (1980), pp. 525–538.
- 1105 Leaman, Oliver, *An Introduction to Medieval Islamic Philosophy* (Cambridge: Cambridge
 1106 University Press, 1985).
- 1107 Leaman, Oliver, *Averroes and his Philosophy* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1988; rev. ed. Richmond:
 1108 Curzon, 1998).
- 1109 Leaman, Oliver, 'Is Averroes an Averroist?', in *Averroism in the Middle Ages and in the Renaissance*,
 1110 eds Friedrich Niewöhner and Loris Sturlese (Zurich: Spur, 1994), pp. 9–22.
- 1111 Leaman, Oliver, 'Orientalism and Islamic Philosophy', in *History of Islamic Philosophy*, eds
 1112 Seyyed Hossein Nasr and Oliver Leaman, 2 vols (London: Routledge, 1996), II, pp.
 1113 1143–1148.
- 1114 Leaman, Oliver, *A Brief Introduction to Islamic Philosophy* (Cambridge: Polity Press, 1999).
- 1115 Leaman, Oliver, Lear, Jonathan, *Freud* (New York and London: Routledge, 2005).
- 1116 Leech, David, *'No Spirit, No God': An Examination of the Cambridge Platonist Henry More's*
 1117 *Defence of Soul as a Bulwark against Atheism* (PhD Thesis, Cambridge, 2006).
- 1118 Leedham-Green, E. S., *Books in Cambridge: Book-Lists from Vice-Chancellor's Court Probate*
 1119 *Inventories in the Tudor and Stuart Periods*, 2 vols (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press,
 1120 1986).
- 1121 Lennox, James G., 'Teleology, Chance, and Aristotle's Theory of Spontaneous Generation', *Journal*
 1122 *of the History of Philosophy*, 20, 1982, pp. 219–238.
- 1123 Lirola Delgado, Jorge, and Puerta Vélchez, José Miguel (eds), *Biblioteca de al-Andalus* (Almería:
 1124 Fundación Ibn Tufayl de Estudios Árabes, 2004).
- 1125 Litt, Thomas, *Les corps célestes dans l'univers de Saint Thomas d'Aquin* (Louvain: Publications
 1126 Universitaires de Louvain; Paris: Béatrice-Nauwelaerts, 1963).
- 1127 Lohr, Charles, 'Renaissance Latin Aristotle Commentaries: Authors So-Z', *Renaissance Quarterly*,
 1128 35 (1982), pp. 164–256.
- 1129 Long, A. A., 'Astrology: Arguments Pro and Contra', in *Science and Speculation: Studies in*
 1130 *Hellenistic Theory and Practice*, eds Jonathan Barnes, Jacques Brunschwig, Myles Burnyeat
 1131 and Malcolm Schofield (Cambridge and Paris: Cambridge University Press and Editions de la
 1132 Maison des Sciences de l'Homme, 1982), pp. 165–193.
- 1133 Longo, Mario, 'Scuola di Gottinga e *Popularphilosophie*', in *Storia delle storie generali della*
 1134 *filosofia*, ed. Giovanni Santinello, 5 vols (Brescia and Padua: La Scuola and Antenore, 1979–
 1135 2004), III, pp. 690–694, 722–758.
- 1136 Longo, Mario, 'The History of Philosophy from Eclecticism to Pietism', in *Models of the History*
 1137 *of Philosophy, II: From the Cartesian Age to Brucker*, ed. Gregorio Paia and Giovanni Santinello
 1138 (Dordrecht: Springer, 2011), pp. 301–386.
- 1139 Loop, Jan, 'Johan Heinrich Hottinger (1620–1667) and the *Historia Orientalis*', *Church History*
 1140 *and Religious Culture*, 88 (2008), pp. 169–203.
- 1141 Lowry, Joseph E., 'The Legal Hermeneutics of al-Shāfi'ī and Ibn Qutayba: A Reconsideration',
 1142 *Islamic Law and Society*, 11 (2004), pp. 1–41.
- 1143 Lyons, Bridget Gellert, *Voices of Melancholy: Studies in Literary Treatments of Melancholy in*
 1144 *Renaissance England* (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1971).

- MacClintock, Stuart, *Perversity and Error: Studies on the 'Averroist' John of Jandun* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1956). 1145
1146
- MacIntyre, Alasdair, 'The Relationship of Philosophy to its Past', in *Philosophy in History: Essays in the Historiography of Philosophy*, eds Richard Rorty, Jerome B. Schneewind and Quentin Skinner (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), pp. 31–48. 1147
1148
1149
- Mack, Peter, 'Early Modern Ideas of Imagination: The Rhetorical Tradition', in *Imagination in the Later Middle Ages and Early Modern Times*, eds Lodi Nauta and Detlev Pätzold (Leuven: Peeters, 2004), pp. 59–76. 1150
1151
1152
- Maclean, Ian, 'Cardano on the Immortality of the Soul', in *Cardano e la tradizione dei saperi*, eds Marialuisa Baldi and Guido Canziani (Milan: Angeli, 2003), pp. 191–208. 1153
1154
- Maclean, Ian, 'Cardano's Eclectic Psychology and its Critique by Julius Caesar Scaliger', *Vivarium* 46 (2008), pp. 392–417. 1155
1156
- Mahdi, Muhsin, 'Remarks on Averroes' *Decisive Treatise*', in *Islamic Theology and Philosophy: Studies in Honor of George F. Hourani*, ed. Michael Marmura (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1984), pp. 188–202. 1157
1158
1159
- Mahdi, Muhsin, 'Orientalism and the Study of Islamic Philosophy', *Journal of Islamic Studies*, 1 (1990), pp. 73–98. 1160
1161
- Mahdi, Muhsin, 'Philosophy and Political Thought: Reflections and Comparisons', *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, 1 (1991), pp. 9–29. 1162
1163
- Mahdi, Muhsin, 'On Ibn Rushd, Philosophy and the Arab World (Interview)', *Alif: Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 255–258. 1164
1165
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Agostino Nifo's Early Views on Immortality', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 8 (1970), pp. 451–460. 1166
1167
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Agostino Nifo', in *Dictionary of Scientific Biography*, 16 vols (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1970–1980), X, pp. 122–124. 1168
1169
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Agostino Nifo's *De Sensu Agente*', *Archiv für Geschichte der Philosophie*, 53 (1971), pp. 119–142. 1170
1171
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Albert the Great and the Studio Patavino in the Late Fifteenth and Early Sixteenth Centuries', in *Albertus Magnus and the Sciences: Commemorative Essays*, ed. James A. Weisheipl (Toronto: Pontifical Institutes of Medieval Studies, 1980), pp. 537–563. 1172
1173
1174
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Philosophy and Science in Nicoletto Vernia and Agostino Nifo', in *Scienza e filosofia all'Università di Padova nel Quattrocento*, ed. Antonino Poppi (Padua and Trieste: Edizioni Lint, 1983), pp. 135–202 (repr. in Id., *Two Aristotelians of the Italian Renaissance: Nicoletto Vernia and Agostino Nifo* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2000), I). 1175
1176
1177
1178
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'John of Jandun and Agostino Nifo on Human Felicity', in *L'homme et son univers au Moyen Âge*, ed. Christian Wenin (Louvain-la-Neuve: Éditions de l'Institut Supérieur de Philosophie, 1986), pp. 465–477. 1179
1180
1181
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Marsilio Ficino's influence on Nicoletto Vernia, Agostino Nifo and Marcantonio Zimara', in *Marsilio Ficino e il ritorno di Platone: Studi e documenti*, ed. Gian Carlo Garfagnini, 2 vols (Florence: Olschki, 1986), II, pp. 509–351. 1182
1183
1184
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Plato, Pico, and Albert the Great: The Testimony and Evaluation of Agostino Nifo', *Medieval Philosophy and Theology*, 2 (1992), pp. 165–192. 1185
1186
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Albert the Great and the Studio Patavino in the Late Fifteenth and Early Sixteenth Centuries', in *Albertus Magnus and the Sciences. Commemorative Essays*, ed. James A. Weisheipl (Bologna: Edizioni Studio Domenicano, 1994), pp. 537–563. 1187
1188
1189
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Giovanni Pico della Mirandola and Elia del Medigo, Nicoletto Vernia and Agostino Nifo', in *Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: Convegno internazionale di studi nel cinquecentesimo anniversario della morte (1494–1994)*, ed. Gian Carlo Garfagnini, 2 vols (Florence: Olschki 1997), II, pp. 127–156. 1190
1191
1192
1193
- Mahoney, Edward P., 'Plato and Aristotle in the Thought of Agostino Nifo (ca. 1470–1538)', in *Two Aristotelians of the Italian Renaissance* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2000), V, pp. 81–101. 1194
1195
- 'Agostino Nifo and Neoplatonism', in *Two Aristotelians of the Italian Renaissance*, VI, pp. 205–231. 1196
1197

- 1198 Maier, Anneliese, 'Wilhelm von Alnwicks Bologneser Quaestiones gegen den Averroismus', in
 1199 *Ausgehendes Mittelalter: Gesammelte Aufsätze geistesgeschichte des 14. Jahrhunderts*, 3 vols
 1200 (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1964–1977), I, pp. 1–40.
- 1201 Maier, Anneliese, 'Ein unbeachteter "Averroist" des 14. Jahrhunderts: Walter Burley', in
 1202 *Ausgehendes Mittelalter: Gesammelte Aufsätze geistesgeschichte des 14. Jahrhunderts*, 3 vols
 1203 (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1964–1977), I, pp. 101–121.
- 1204 Maier, Anneliese, 'Die Bologneser Philosophen des 14. Jahrhunderts', *Ausgehendes Mittelalter:
 1205 Gesammelte Aufsätze geistesgeschichte des 14. Jahrhunderts*, 3 vols (Rome: Edizioni di Storia
 1206 e Letteratura, 1964–1977), II, pp. 335–349.
- 1207 Malagola, Carlo (ed.), *Statuti delle università e dei collegi dello studio bolognese* (Bologna:
 1208 Zanichelli, 1888).
- 1209 Mandonnet, Pierre, *Siger de Brabant et l'averroïsme latin au XIII^e siècle: Étude critique et docu-
 1210 ments inédits* (Fribourg: Librairie de l'université, 1899).
- 1211 Marchand, Suzanne, *German Orientalism in the Age of Empire: Religion, Race, and Scholarship*
 1212 (Washington, DC: German Historical Institute, and Cambridge: Cambridge University Press,
 1213 2009).
- 1214 Marcialis, Maria Teresa, 'Storia della scienza e universalità del senso comune in Antonio Genovesi',
 1215 in *Identità nazionale e valori universali nella moderna storiografia filosofica*, eds Gregorio
 1216 Piaia and Riccardo Pozzo (Padua: CLEUP, 2008), pp. 53–71.
- 1217 Macor, Laura Anna, *Die Bestimmung des Menschen (1748–1800): Eine Begriffsgeschichte*
 1218 (Stuttgart-Bad Cannstatt: Frommann-Holzboog, forthcoming).
- 1219 Malusa, Luciano, 'The First General Histories of Philosophy in England and in the Low Countries',
 1220 in *Models of the History of Philosophy, I: From Its Origins in the Renaissance to the 'Historia
 1221 Philosophica'*, ed. Giovanni Santinello, trans. Constance W. T. Blackwell and Philip Weller
 1222 (Dordrecht, Boston and London: Kluwer, 1993), pp. 236–259.
- 1223 Marenbon, John, 'Dante's Averroism', in *Poetry and Philosophy in the Middle Ages: A Festschrift
 1224 for Peter Dronke*, ed. John Marenbon (Leiden: Brill, 2001), pp. 349–374.
- 1225 Marenbon, John, 'Latin Averroism', in *Islamic Crosspollinations: Interactions in the Medieval
 1226 Middle East*, eds Anna Akasoy, James E. Montgomery and Peter E. Pormann (Exeter: Gibb
 1227 Memorial Trust, 2007), p. 135–147.
- 1228 Marmura, Michael E., 'Al-Ghazālī's Second Causal Theory in the 17th Discussion of his *Tahāfut*',
 1229 *Islamic Philosophy and Mysticism*, ed. Parviz Morewedge (Delmar [New York]: Caravan
 1230 Books, 1981), pp. 85–112.
- 1231 Meier, See Heinrich, *Leo Strauss and the Theologico-Political Problem*, trans. Marcus Brainard
 1232 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2006).
- 1233 Melchert, Christopher, 'The Meaning of *Qāla'l-Shāfi'ī* in Ninth Century Sources', in *Abbasid
 1234 Studies: Occasional Papers of the School of Abbasid Studies*, ed. James E. Montgomery
 1235 (Leuven: Peeters, 2004), pp. 277–301.
- 1236 Merlan, Philip, *From Platonism to Neoplatonism* (The Hague: Nijhoff, [1953] 1960).
- 1237 Merlan, Philip, *Studies in Epicurus and Aristotle* (Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1960).
- 1238 Merlan, Philip, 'Averroes über die Unsterblichkeit des Menschengeschlechtes', in *L'homme et son
 1239 destin d'après les penseurs du Moyen Âge* (Louvain and Paris: Nauwelaerts and Béatrice-
 1240 Nauwelaerts, 1960), pp. 305–311.
- 1241 Merlan, Philip, *Monopsychism, Mysticism, Metaconsciousness: Problems of the Soul in the Neo-
 1242 Aristotelian and Neoplatonic Tradition* (The Hague: Nijhoff, [1963] 1969).
- 1243 Millepierres, François, *La Vie d'Ernest Renan, sage d'Occident* (Paris; Rivière, 1961).
- 1244 Mohammed, Ovey N., *Averroes' Doctrine of Immortality: A Matter of Controversy* (Waterloo:
 1245 Wilfred Laurier University Press, 1984).
- 1246 Monfasani, John, 'The Averroism of John Argyropoulos', in *I Tatti Studies: Essays in the
 1247 Renaissance*, V (Florence: Villa I Tatti, 1993), pp. 157–208.
- 1248 Monfasani, John, 'George of Trebizond's Critique of Theodore of Gaza's Translation of the
 1249 Aristotelian *Problemata*', in *Aristotle's Problemata in Different Times and Tongues*, eds Pieter
 1250 De Leemans and Michèle Goyons (Leuven: Leuven University Press, 2006), pp. 273–292.

- Montero Moliner, Fernando, 'El "averroismo" en la filosofía moral de Kant', *Anales del Seminario de Historia de la Filosofía*, 9 (1992), pp. 39–58. 1251
1252
- Montgomery, James E., 'Al-Ġāhiz and Hellenizing Philosophy', in *The Libraries of the Neoplatonists*, ed. Cristina D'Ancona (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 443–456. 1253
1254
- Montgomery, James E., 'Jahiz on Jest and Earnest', in *Humor in der arabischen Kultur*, ed. Georges Tamer (Berlin: De Gruyter, 2009), pp. 209–239. 1255
1256
- Montgomery, James E., 'Abū Nuwās, the Justified Sinner?', *Oriens* 39 (2011), pp. 75–164. 1257
- Mott, Lewis F., *Ernest Renan* (London: Appleby, 1923). 1258
- Motzkin, Aryeh L. 'Elija del Medigo, Averroes and Averroism', *Italia*, 6 (1987), pp. 7–20. 1259
- Musca, Giosuè, "'Omne genus animalium". Antichità e Medioevo in una biblioteca privata inglese del Seicento', *Quaderni Medievali*, 25 (1988), pp. 25–76. 1260
1261
- Nagel, Tilman, *Im Offenkundigen das Verborgene: Die Heilszusage des sunnitischen Islams* (Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 2002), pp. 33–175. 1262
1263
- Nardi, Bruno, *Sigieri di Brabante nel pensiero del Rinascimento italiano* (Rome: Edizioni Italiane, 1945). 1264
1265
- Nardi, Bruno, *Saggi sull'aristotelismo padovano dal secolo XIV al XVI* (Florence: Sansoni, 1958). 1266
1267
- Niewöhner, Friedrich, 'Zum Ursprung der Lehre von der doppelten Wahrheit: Eine Koran-Interpretation des Averroes,' in *Averroismus im Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, eds Loris Sturlese and F. Niewöhner (Zürich: Spur, 1994), pp. 23–41. 1268
1269
1270
- Ogren, Brian, 'Circularity, the Soul-Vehicle and the Renaissance Rebirth of Reincarnation: Marsilio Ficino and Isaac Abarbanel on the Possibility of Transmigration', *Accademia*, 6 (2004), pp. 63–94. 1271
1272
1273
- Ottosson, Per-Gunnar, *Scholastic Medicine and Philosophy: A Study of Commentaries on Galen's Tegni (ca. 1300–1450)* (Naples: Bibliopolis, 1984). 1274
1275
- Panofsky, Erwin, and Saxl, Fritz, 'Dürers "Melencolia I": Eine quellen- und typengeschichtliche Untersuchung' (Leipzig and Berlin: Teubner, 1923). 1276
1277
- Panofsky, Erwin, and Saxl, Fritz, *Albrecht Dürer* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1943). 1278
- Parens, Joshua, *Metaphysics as Rhetoric: Alfarabi's Summary of Plato's Laws* (Albany: State University of New York Press, 1995). 1279
1280
- Pasnau, Robert, *Metaphysical Themes: 1274–1671* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2011). 1281
- Pingree, David, 'The Diffusion of Arabic Magical Texts in Western Europe', in *La diffusione delle scienze islamiche nel Medio Evo europeo*, ed. Biancamaria Scarcia Amoretti (Rome: Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei, 1987), pp. 57–102. 1282
1283
1284
- Perfetti, Stefano, 'Agostino Nifo', *New Dictionary of Scientific Biography*, 8 vols (Detroit: Charles Scribner's Sons and Gale/Cengage Learning 2008), V, pp. 280–281. 1285
1286
- Perrone Compagni, Vittoria, 'Introduzione', in Pietro Pomponazzi, *Trattato sull'immortalità dell'anima*, ed. V. Perrone Compagni (Florence: Olschki, 1999), pp. V-CI. 1287
1288
- Pessin, Sarah, 'Jewish Neoplatonism: Being above Being and Divine Emanation in Solomon ibn Gabriol and Isaac Israeli', in *The Cambridge Companion to Medieval Jewish Philosophy*, eds Daniel H. Frank and Oliver Leaman (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003), pp. 91–110. 1289
1290
1291
1292
- Petagine, Antonio, *Aristotelismo difficile: L'intelletto umano nella prospettiva di Alberto Magno, Tommaso d'Aquino e Sigieri di Brabante* (Milan: Vita e Pensiero, 2004). 1293
1294
- Petersen, Peter, *Geschichte der aristotelischen Philosophie in protestantischen Deutschland* (Leipzig: Meiner, 1921). 1295
1296
- Peyre, Henri, *Renan* (Paris: Presses universitaires de France, 1969). 1297
- Piaia, Gregorio, 'European Identity and National Characteristics in the *Historia Philosophica* of the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries', *Journal of the History of Philosophy*, 34 (1996), pp. 593–605. 1298
1299
1300
- Piaia, Gregorio, 'The General Histories of Philosophy in France and in Italy 1650–1750', in *Models of the History of Philosophy, II: From the Cartesian Age to Brucker*, eds Gregorio Piaia and Giovanni Santinello (Dordrecht: Springer, 2011), pp. 29–50. 1301
1302
1303

- 1304 Piaia, Gregorio, 'Philosophical Historiography in France from Bayle to Deslandes', in *Models of*
 1305 *the History of Philosophy*, II, pp. 93–175.
- 1306 Piaia, Gregorio, 'L'immagine di Averroè in Pierre Bayle', forthcoming in the Acts of the
 1307 Symposium *Averroès, l'averroïsme, l'antiaverroïsme*, ed. Alain de Libera.
- 1308 Pigeaud, Jackie, *La maladie de l'âme: Étude sur la relation de l'âme et du corps dans la tradition*
 1309 *médico-philosophique antique* (Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 1981).
- 1310 Pine, Martin L., *Pietro Pomponazzi: Radical Philosopher of the Renaissance* (Padua: Antenore,
 1311 1986).
- 1312 Pommier, Jean, *Renan d'après des documents inédits* (Paris: Perrin, 1923).
- 1313 Poppi, Antonino, *Causalità e infinità nella scuola padovana dal 1480 al 1513* (Padua: Antenore,
 1314 1966).
- 1315 Poppi, Antonino, 'Fate, Fortune, Providence and Human Freedom', in *Cambridge History of*
 1316 *Renaissance Philosophy*, eds Charles B. Schmitt, Quentin Skinner, Eckhard Kessler and Jill
 1317 Kraye (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988), pp. 641–667.
- 1318 Pozzo, Riccardo, 'Tracce zabarelliane nella logica kantiana', *Fenomenologia e Società*, 18 (1995),
 1319 pp. 58–69.
- 1320 Pozzo, Riccardo, 'Kant on the Five Intellectual Virtues', in *The Impact of Aristotelianism on*
 1321 *Modern Philosophy*, ed. Riccardo Pozzo (Washington, DC: The Catholic University of America
 1322 Press, 2004), pp. 173–192.
- 1323 Pozzo, Riccardo, 'L'ontologia nei manuali di metafisica della *Aufklärung*', *Quaestio*, 9 (2009), pp.
 1324 285–301.
- 1325 Psichari, Henriette, *Renan d'après lui-même* (Paris: Plon, 1937).
- 1326 Puig Montada, Josep, 'Materials on Averroes's Circle', *Journal of Near Eastern Studies*, 51 (1992),
 1327 pp. 241–260.
- 1328 Puig Montada, Josep, 'Elia del Medigo and his Physical *Quaestiones*', in *Was ist Philosophie im*
 1329 *Mittelalter?*, eds Jan Aertsen and Andreas Speer (Berlin: De Gruyter, 1998), pp. 929–936.
- 1330 Puig Montada, Josep, 'On the Chronology of Elia del Medigo's Physical Writings', in *Jewish*
 1331 *Studies at the Turn of the Twentieth Century*, eds Judit Targarona Borrás and Angel Sáenz-
 1332 Badillos, 2 vols (Leiden: Brill, 1999), II, pp. 54–56.
- 1333 Puig Montada, Josep, 'El Proyecto vital de Averroes: Explicar e interpretar a Aristóteles',
 1334 *al-Qanṭara*, 32 (2002), pp. 11–52.
- 1335 Pullman, Philip, *His Dark Materials* (London: Scholastic Ltd, 1995).
- 1336 Randall, John H., Jr, *The School of Padua and the Emergence of Modern Science* (Padua: Antenore,
 1337 1961).
- 1338 Remes, Pauline, *Neoplatonism* (Stocksfield: Acumen, 2008).
- 1339 Renan, Ernest, 'Les historiens critiques de Jésus', *Liberté de penser*, 3 (1849), 365–384.
- 1340 Renan, Ernest, *Averroès et l'averroïsme* (Paris: Durand, 1852; Paris: Maisonneuve & Larose,
 1341 2002).
- 1342 Renan, Ernest, *De philosophia peripatetica apud Syros* (Paris: Durand, 1852; repr. Paris: Michel
 1343 Lévy Frères, 1861).
- 1344 Renan, Ernest, *Œuvres Complètes*, ed. Henriette Psichari, 10 vols (Paris: Calmann-Lévy,
 1345 1947–1961).
- 1346 Renan, Ernest, *Histoire de l'étude de la langue grecque dans l'Occident de l'Europe depuis la fin*
 1347 *du Ve siècle jusqu'à celle du XIVe*, ed. Perrine Simon-Nahum (Paris: Cerf, 2009).
- 1348 Rice, Eugene F., Jr, 'Humanist Aristotelianism in France: Jacques Lefèvre and his Circle', in
 1349 *Humanism in France at the End of the Middle Ages and in the Early Renaissance*, ed. Anthony
 1350 H. T. Levi (Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1970), pp. 132–149.
- 1351 Richter-Bernburg, Lutz, '*Medicina Ancilla Philosophiae*: Ibn Ṭufayl's Ḥayy Ibn Yaqzān', in *The*
 1352 *World of Ibn Ṭufayl: Interdisciplinary Perspectives on Ḥayy Ibn Yaqzān*, ed. Lawrence I.
 1353 Conrad (Leiden: Brill, 1996), pp. 90–113.
- 1354 Ricoeur, Paul, *Freud and Philosophy: An Essay in Interpretation*, trans. Denis Savage (New Haven:
 1355 Yale University Press, 1970).

- Rodriguez Molero, Francisco X., 'La neurología en la "Suma anatómica" de Averroes', *Archivo Iberoamericano de Historia de la Medicina y Antropología Médica*, 2 (1950), pp. 137–188. 1356
1357
- Rodriguez Molero, Francisco X., 'Originalidad y estilo de la anatomía de Averroes', *Revista Al-Ándalus*, 15 (1950), pp. 47–63. 1358
1359
- Rodriguez Molero, Francisco X., 'Averroes, médico y filósofo', *Archivo Iberoamericano de Historia de la Medicina y Antropología Médica*, 8 (1956), pp. 187–190. 1360
1361
- Rodriguez Molero, Francisco X., 'Un maestro de la medicina árabe-española: Averroes', *Miscelanea de Estudios Árabes y Hebraicos*, 11 (1962), pp. 55–73. 1362
1363
- Roling, Bernd, 'Glaube, Imagination und leibliche Auferstehung: Pietro Pomponazzi zwischen Avicenna, Averroes und jüdischem Averroismus', in *Wissen über Grenzen. Arabisches Wissen und lateinisches Mittelalter*, eds Andreas Speer und Lydia Wegener (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 2006), pp. 677–699. 1364
1365
1366
1367
- Rorty, Richard, Schneewind, Jerome B., and Skinner, Quentin (eds), *Philosophy in History: Essays in the Historiography of Philosophy* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984). 1368
1369
- Rorty, Richard, 'The Historiography of Philosophy: Four Genres', in *Philosophy in History: Essays in the Historiography of Philosophy*, eds Richard Rorty, Jerome B. Schneewind and Quentin Skinner (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), pp. 49–75. 1370
1371
1372
- Rosemann, Philipp W., 'Wandering in the Path of the Averroean System: Is Kant's Doctrine on the *Bewusstsein Überhaupt* Averroistic?', *American Catholic Philosophical Quarterly*, 73 (1999), pp. 185–230. 1373
1374
1375
- Ross, J. J., 'Introduction', in Elijah Delmedigo, *Sefer behinat ha-dat*, critical edition with introduction and commentary by J. J. Ross (Tel Aviv: Chaim Rosenberg School of Jewish Studies, 1984) (in Hebrew). 1376
1377
1378
- Roth, Leon, 'The *Abscondita Sapientiae* of Joseph del Medigo', *Chronicon Spinozanum*, 2 (1922), pp. 54–66. 1379
1380
- Roy, Ian, 'The Libraries of Edward, Second Viscount Conway, and Others. An Inventory and Valuation of 1643', *Bulletin of the Institute of Historical Research*, 41 (1968), pp. 35–46. 1381
1382
- Said, Edward W., *Orientalism* (London and Henley: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1978). 1383
- Schipperges, Heinrich, *Die Assimilation der arabischen Medizin durch das lateinische Mittelalter* (Wiesbaden: Steiner, 1964). 1384
1385
- Schleiner, Winfried, *Melancholy, Genius and Utopia in the Renaissance* (Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1991). 1386
1387
- Schmieja, Horst, 'Urbanus Averroista und die mittelalterlichen Handschriften des Physikkomentars von Averroes', *Bulletin de philosophie médiévale*, 42 (2000), pp. 133–153. 1388
1389
- Schmitt, Charles B., *Aristotle and the Renaissance* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1983). 1390
1391
- Schmitt, Charles B., 'Renaissance Averroism Studied through the Venetian Editions of Aristotle-Averroes (with Particular Reference to the Giunta Edition of 1550–2)', in *L'averroismo in Italia* (Rome: Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei, 1979), pp. 121–142; repr. in Charles B. Schmitt, *The Aristotelian Tradition and Renaissance Universities* (London: Variorum Reprints, 1984), pp. 121–142. 1392
1393
1394
1395
1396
- Schmitt, Charles B., 'Girolamo Borro's *Multae Sunt Nostrarum Ignoracionum Causae* (Ms. Vat. Ross. 1009)', in Id., *Studies in Renaissance Philosophy and Science* (London: Variorum, 1981), XI. 1397
1398
1399
- Sgarbi, Marco, 'Kant, Rabe e la logica aristotelica', *Rivista di Storia della Filosofia*, 64 (2009), pp. 269–293. 1400
1401
- Sgarbi, Marco, 'Metaphysics in Königsberg Prior to Kant (1703–1770)', *Trans/Form/Ação*, 33 (2010), pp. 31–64. 1402
1403
- Sgarbi, Marco, *Logica e metafisica nel Kant precritico: L'ambiente intellettuale di Königsberg e la formazione della filosofia kantiana* (Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang, 2010). 1404
1405
- Sgarbi, Marco, *La Kritik der reinen Vernunft nel contesto della tradizione logica aristotelica* (Hildesheim: Olms, 2010). 1406
1407

- 1408 Siraisi, Nancy G., *Arts and Sciences at Padua: The Studium of Padua before 1350* (Toronto:
1409 Pontifical Institute of Medieval Studies, 1973).
- 1410 Siraisi, Nancy G., *Avicenna in Renaissance Italy: The Canon and Medical Teaching in Italian*
1411 *Universities after 1500* (Princeton, Princeton University Press, 1987).
- 1412 Skinner, Quentin, *Visions of Politics*, 2 vols (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2002).
- 1413 Smith, Steven B., *Reading Leo Strauss: Politics, Philosophy, Judaism* (Chicago: The University of
1414 Chicago Press, 2006).
- 1415 Smith, Steven B., (ed.), *The Cambridge Companion to Leo Strauss* (Cambridge: Cambridge
1416 University Press, 2009).
- 1417 Soellner, Rolf, *Timon of Athens: Shakespeare's Pessimistic Tragedy* (Columbia, OH: Ohio State
1418 University Press, 1979).
- 1419 Sorabji, Richard, *Necessity, Cause and Blame: Perspectives on Aristotle's Theory* (London:
1420 Duckworth, 1980).
- 1421 Sorabji, Richard, *Matter, Space and Motion: Theories in Antiquity and their Sequel* (London:
1422 Duckworth, 1988).
- 1423 Sorge, Valeria, 'L'Aristotelismo averroista negli studi recenti', *Paradigmi*, 50 (1999), pp.
1424 243–264.
- 1425 Sorge, Valeria, *Profili dell'averroismo bolognese: Metafisica e scienza in Taddeo da Parma [fl.*
1426 *1318/25]* (Naples: Luciano, 2001).
- 1427 Spruit, Leen, *Species Intelligibilis from Perception to Knowledge*, 2 vols (Leiden: Brill,
1428 1994–1995).
- 1429 Spruit, Leen, 'Leone, Ambrogio', in *Dizionario Biografico degli Italiani* (Istituto dell'Enciclopedia
1430 Italiana: Rome, 1960-), LXIV, pp. 560–562.
- 1431 Spruit, Leen, 'Agostino Nifo's *De intellectu*: Sources and Ideas', *Bruniana et Campanelliana*, 8
1432 (2007), pp. 625–639.
- 1433 Spruit, Leen, 'Introduction', in Agostino Nifo, *De intellectu*, ed. Leen Spruit (Leiden: Brill, 2011),
1434 pp. @@.
- 1435 Steel, Carlos, 'Medieval Philosophy: An Impossible Project? Thomas Aquinas and the "Averroistic"
1436 Ideal of Happiness', in *Was ist Philosophie in Mittelalter?*, eds Jan A. Aertsen and Andreas
1437 Speer (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 1998), pp. 152–174.
- 1438 Steel, Carlos, 'Siger of Brabant versus Thomas Aquinas on the Possibility of Knowing the Separate
1439 Substances', in *Nach der Verurteilung von 1277: Philosophie und Theologie an der Universität*
1440 *von Paris im letzten Viertel des 13. Jahrhunderts*, eds Jan A. Aertsen, Kent Emery, Jr, and
1441 Andreas Speer (Berlin and New York: De Gruyter, 2001), pp. 211–232.
- 1442 Steel, Carlos, 'La tradition latine du traité', in Averroes, *La béatitude de l'âme*, eds and trans. Marc
1443 Geoffroy and Carlos Steel (Paris: Vrin, 2001), pp. 83–129.
- 1444 Steinschneider, Moritz, *Die hebräischen Übersetzungen des Mittelalters und die Juden als*
1445 *Dolmetscher: Ein Beitrag zur Literaturgeschichte des Mittelalters, meist nach handschriftli-*
1446 *chen Quellen* (Berlin: Kommissionsverlag des Bibliographischen Bureaus, 1893), pp.
1447 330–332.
- 1448 Stone, Harold 'Why Europeans Stopped Reading Averroës: The Case of Pierre Bayle', *Alif:*
1449 *Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 77–95.
- 1450 Strauss, David Friedrich, *Das Leben Jesu, kritisch bearbeitet*, 2 vols (Tübingen: Osiander,
1451 1835–1836).
- 1452 Strauss, David Friedrich, *The Life of Jesus Critically Examined* trans. by George Eliot (1846, repr.
1453 London: SCM Press, 1973).
- 1454 Strauss, Leo, 'The Literary Character of *The Guide for the Perplexed*', in *Essays on Maimonides:*
1455 *An Octocentennial Volume*, ed. Salo Wittmayer Baron (New York: Columbia University Press,
1456 1941), pp. 37–91.
- 1457 Strauss, Leo, 'Farabi's Plato', in *Louis Ginzberg: Jubilee Volume on the Occasion of his Seventieth*
1458 *Birthday* (New York: The American Academy for Jewish Research, 1945), pp. 357–393.
- 1459 Strauss, Leo, *Persecution and the Art of Writing* (New York: The Free Press, 1952; Chicago: The
1460 University of Chicago Press, 1988).

- Strauss, Leo, *Natural Right and History* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1965 [1953]). 1461
1462
- Strauss, Leo, *What is Political Philosophy? and Other Essays* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1988 [1959]). 1463
1464
- Strauss, Leo, *On Tyranny, Including the Strauss-Kojève Correspondence*, eds Victor Gourevitch and Michael S. Roth (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 2000 [1961]) 1465
1466
- Street, Tony, 'Arabic and Islamic Philosophy of Language and Logic' (<http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/arabic-islamic-language/>). 1467
1468
- Stroumsa, Sarah, 'Philosophes almohades? Averroès, Maïmonide et l'idéologie almohade', in *Los Almohades: Problemas y perspectivas*, eds Patrice Cressier, Maribel Fierro and Luis Molina (Madrid: Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 2005), II, pp. 1137–1162. 1469
1470
1471
- Stroumsa, Sarah, *Maimonides in His World: Portrait of a Mediterranean Thinker* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2009). 1472
1473
- Sturlese, Loris, "'Averroè quantumque arabo et ignorante di lingua greca . . ." Note sull'averroismo di Giordano Bruno', in *Averroismus im Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, eds Loris Sturlese and Friedrich Niewöhner (Zürich: Spur, 1994), pp. 319–348. 1474
1475
1476
- Taylor, Charles, 'Philosophy and its History', in *Philosophy in History: Essays in the Historiography of Philosophy*, eds Richard Rorty, Jerome B. Schneewind and Quentin Skinner (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), pp. 17–30. 1477
1478
1479
- Taylor, Richard C., 'Cogitatio, Cogitativus and Cogitare: Remarks on the Cogitative Power in Averroes', in *L'élaboration du vocabulaire philosophique au Moyen Âge*, eds Jacqueline Hamesse and Carlos Steel (Turnhout: Brepols, 2000), pp. 110–146. 1480
1481
1482
- Taylor, Richard C., "'Truth Does not Contradict Truth": Averroes and the Unity of Truth', *Topoi*, 19 (2000), pp. 3–16. 1483
1484
- Taylor, Richard C., 'Intelligibles in Act in Averroes', in *Averroès et les averroïsmes juif et latin*, ed. Jean-Baptiste Brenet (Turnhout: Brepols, 2007), pp. 111–140. 1485
1486
- Taylor, Richard C., 'The Agent Intellect as "Form for Us" and Averroes's Critique of al-Fârâbî', *Proceedings of the Society for Medieval Logic and Metaphysics*, 5 (2005), pp. 18–32. 1487
1488
- Taylor, Richard C., 'Averroes: Religious Dialectic and Aristotelian Philosophical Thought', in *The Cambridge Companion to Arabic Philosophy*, eds Peter Adamson and R. C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), pp. 181–200. 1489
1490
1491
- Thillet, Pierre, 'Renan, Averroes et l'Averroïsme', in *Mémorial Ernest Renan*, ed. Jean Balcou (Paris: Champion, 1993), pp. 239–250. 1492
1493
- Tielroy, Johannes, *Ernest Renan, sa vie et ses œuvres* (Paris: Mercure de France, 1958). 1494
- Todisco, Orlando, *Averroè nel dibattito medievale: Verità o bontà?* (Milan: Angeli, 1999). 1495
- Tolan, John, *Saracens: Islam in the Medieval European Imagination* (New York: Columbia University Press, 2002). 1496
1497
- Tolan, John, "'Saracen Philosophers Secretly Deride Islam'", *Medieval Encounters*, 8 (2002), pp. 184–208. 1498
1499
- Tolomio, Ilario, *The 'Historia Philosophica' in the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries*, in *Models of the History of Philosophy, I: From Its Origins in the Renaissance to the 'Historia Philosophica'*, ed. Giovanni Santinello, trans. Constance W. T. Blackwell and Philip Weller (Dordrecht, Boston and London: Kluwer, 1993), pp. 82–85. 1500
1501
1502
1503
- Tonelli, Giorgio, 'Kant's Ethics as a Part of Metaphysics: A Possible Newtonian Suggestion? With Some Comments on Kant's "Dream of a Seer"', in *Philosophy and the Civilizing Arts: Essays Presented to Herbert W. Schneider*, eds Craig Walton and John Peter Anton (Athens, OH: Ohio University Press, 1974), pp. 236–263. 1504
1505
1506
1507
- Toomer, G. J., *Eastern Wisdom and Learning: The Study of Arabic in Seventeenth-Century England* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1996). 1508
1509
- Torre, Esteban, *Averroes y la ciencia médica* (Madrid: Ediciones del Centro, 1974). 1510
- Toussaint, Stéphane, 'Sensus naturae, Jean Pic, le véhicule de l'âme et l'équivoque de la magie naturelle', in *La Magia nell'Europa moderna: Tra antica sapienza e filosofia naturale*, eds 1511
1512

- 1513 Fabrizio Meroi and Elisabetta Scapparone, 2 vols (Florence: Olschki, 2007 [2008]), I, pp.
1514 107–145.
- 1515 Twetten, David, 'Averroes' Prime Mover Argument', in *Averroes et les averroïsmes juif et latin*,
1516 ed. Jean-Baptiste Brenet (Turnhout: Brepols, 2007), pp. 9–75.
- 1517 Urvoy, Dominique, *Ibn Rushd (Averroes)* (London: Routledge, 1991).
- 1518 Van Steenberghen, Fernand, *Les ouvres et la doctrine de Siger de Brabant* (Brussels: Palais des
1519 Académies, 1938).
- 1520 Van Steenberghen, Fernand, *Introduction à l'étude de la philosophie médiévale* (Louvain and
1521 Paris: Publications Universitaires; Béatrice Nauwelaerts, 1974), pp. 531–554.
- 1522 Van Steenberghen, Fernand, *Maître Siger de Brabant* (Louvain and Paris: Publications
1523 Universitaires; Vander Oyez, 1977).
- 1524 Walker, D. P., *Spiritual and Demonic Magic from Ficino to Campanella* (London: The Warburg
1525 Institute, 1958; repr. Stroud: Sutton, 2000).
- 1526 Wallace, William A., *Causality and Scientific Explanation*, 2 vols (Ann Arbor: The University of
1527 Michigan Press, 1972–1974), I, pp. 139–144.
- 1528 Wallace, William A., 'The Scientific Methodology of Albert the Great', in *Albertus Magnus:*
1529 *Doctor Universalis 1280/1980*, eds Gerbert Meyer and Albert Zimmermann (Mainz: Matthias
1530 Grünewald Verlag, 1980), pp. 385–407.
- 1531 Wardman, Harold W., *Ernest Renan: A Critical Biography* (London: Athlone Press, 1964).
- 1532 Wardman, Harold W., *Renan, historien philosophe* (Paris: Société d'Enseignement Supérieur,
1533 1979).
- 1534 Weinrich, Harald, *Das Ingenium Don Quijotes* (Münster: Aschendorf, 1956).
- 1535 Weisheipl, James A., 'The Axiom *Opus Naturae Est Opus Intelligentiae* and Its Origins', in
1536 *Albertus Magnus: Doctor Universalis 1280/1980*, eds Gerbert Meyer and Albert Zimmermann
1537 (Mainz: Matthias Grünewald Verlag, 1980), pp. 441–463.
- 1538 Weisheipl, James A., 'The Interpretation of Aristotle's Physics and the Science of Motion', in *The*
1539 *Cambridge History of Later Medieval Philosophy*, eds Norman Kretzmann, Anthony Kenny
1540 and Jan Pinborg (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1982), pp. 521–536.
- 1541 Wieland, Georg, 'The Perfection of Man: On the Cause, Mutability, and Permanence of Human
1542 Happiness in 13th Century Commentaries on the *Ethica nicomachea* (EN)', in *Il commento*
1543 *filosofico nell'Occidente latino (secoli XIII-XV)*, eds Gianfranco Fioravanti, Claudio Leonardi
1544 and Stefano Perfetti (Turnhout: Brepols, 2001), pp. 359–377.
- 1545 Wiener, Philip P. (ed.), *Dictionary of the History of Ideas: Studies of Selected Pivotal Ideas* (New
1546 York: Scribner, 1973–1974).
- 1547 Wild, Stefan, 'The Self-Referentiality of the Qur'ān: Sura 3:7 as an Exegetical Challenge', in *With*
1548 *Reverence for the Word: Medieval Scriptural Exegesis in Judaism, Christianity, and Islam*, eds
1549 Jane Dammen McAuliffe, Barry D. Walfish and Joseph W. Goering (Oxford: Oxford University
1550 Press, 2003), pp. 422–436.
- 1551 Wind, Edgar, *Pagan Mysteries in the Renaissance* (London: Faber & Faber, 1958; revised edition,
1552 New York: Norton, 1968).
- 1553 Wisnovsky, Robert, 'Avicenna and the Avicennian Tradition', in *The Cambridge Companion to*
1554 *Arabic Philosophy*, eds Peter Adamson and Richard C. Taylor (Cambridge: Cambridge
1555 University Press, 2005), pp. 92–136.
- 1556 Wittkower, Rudolf and Margot, *Born under Saturn: The Character and Conduct of Artists: A*
1557 *Documented History from Antiquity to the French Revolution* (London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson,
1558 1963).
- 1559 Wolf-Gazo, Ernest, 'Contextualizing Averroës within the German Hermeneutic Tradition', *Alif:*
1560 *Journal of Comparative Poetics*, 16 (1996), pp. 133–163.
- 1561 Wolfson, Harry Austryn, 'The Internal Senses in Latin, Arabic, and Hebrew Philosophic Texts',
1562 *The Harvard Theological Review*, 28 (1935), pp. 69–113; repr. in Id. *Studies in the History of*
1563 *Philosophy and Religion*, eds Isadore Twersky and George H. Williams, 2 vols (Cambridge,
1564 MA: Harvard University Press, 1973–1977), I, pp. 250–314.

- Wolfson, Harry Austryn, 'Colcodea', *The Jewish Quarterly Review*, 36 (1945), pp. 179–182; repr. in *Studies in the History of Philosophy and Religion*, II, pp.573-576. 1565
1566
- Wolfson, Harry Austryn, 'The Twice-Revealed Averroes', *Speculum*, 36 (1961), pp. 373–392; repr. in *Studies in the History of Philosophy and Religion*, I, pp. 371–401. 1567
1568
- Wood, Allen W., *Kant's Ethical Thought* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999). 1569
- Wolfson, Harry Austryn, 'Translator's Introduction', in Immanuel Kant, *Anthropology, History, and Education*, ed. Günter Zöllner and Robert B. Loudon (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007), pp. 121–123. 1570
1571
1572
- Yates, Frances A., *The Art of Memory* (London: Pimlico, 1992). 1573
- Zambelli, Paola, 'I problemi metodologici del necromante Agostino Nifo', *Medioevo*, 1 (1975), pp. 129–171. 1574
1575
- Zambelli, Paola, 'Albert le Grand e l'astrologie', *Recherches de théologie ancienne et médiévale*, 49 (1982), pp. 141–158. 1576
1577
- Zambelli, Paola, 'Fine del mondo o inizio della propaganda? Astrologia, filosofia della storia e propaganda politico-religiosa nel dibattito sulla congiunzione del 1524', in *Scienze, credenze occulte, livelli di cultura: Convegno internazionale di studi* (Florence: Olschki, 1982), pp. 291–368. 1578
1579
1580
1581
- Zambelli, Paola, *L'ambigua natura della magia: Filosofi, streghe, riti nel Rinascimento* (Milan: Il Saggiatore, 1991). 1582
1583
- Zambelli, Paola, *L'ambigua natura della magia* (Milan: Il Saggiatore, 1991). 1584
- Zambelli, Paola, *Una reincarnazione di Pico ai tempi di Pomponazzi* (Milan: Il polifilo, 1994). 1585
- Zedler, Beatrice H., 'Introduction', in Averroes, *Destructio destructionum philosophiae Algazelis in the Latin Version of Calo Calonymos*, ed. B. H. Zedler (Milwaukee: The Marquette University Press 1961), pp. 24–29. 1586
1587
1588
- Zemon Davis, Natalie, *Trickster Travels: A Sixteenth-Century Muslim between Worlds* (New York: Hill and Wang, 2006). 1589
1590
- Zuckert, Catherine and Michael, *The Truth about Leo Strauss: Political Philosophy and American Democracy* (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 2006). 1591
1592